
THE LIBRARY OF CONGRESS
1800

213.

HARPER'S

NEW-YORK CLASS-BOOK:

COMPRISING

OUTLINES OF THE GEOGRAPHY AND HISTORY OF NEW YORK;
BIOGRAPHICAL NOTICES OF EMINENT INDIVIDUALS;
SKETCHES OF SCENERY AND NATURAL HISTORY;
ACCOUNTS OF PUBLIC INSTITUTIONS, ETC.

ARRANGED AS

A Reading-book for Schools.

BY WILLIAM RUSSELL,
PROFESSOR OF ELOCUTION, IN BROOKLYN FEMALE ACADEMY; EDITOR OF THE "AMERICAN JOURNAL OF EDUCATION," (FIRST SERIES.)

NEW YORK:
HARPER & BROTHERS, PUBLISHERS,
82 CLIFF STREET.
1847.

COPYRIGHT 1871 WASHINGTON D.C.

Entered, according to Act of Congress, in the year one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven, by

HARPER & BROTHERS,

in the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the Southern District of New York.

F119
R87

PREFACE.

The following explanatory remarks are respectfully submitted to the attention of parents and teachers, and of individuals whose official duties are connected with education.

The primary design of the present work, is, to furnish the youth of New York with a manual of reading lessons, embodying useful and interesting information regarding their native State. The subjects embraced in this volume, will, also, it is hoped, render it an entertaining and instructive course of reading for young persons, throughout the Union.

The time usually devoted, in schools, to exercises in reading, admits, in advanced classes, the introduction of various subjects, for which no separate assignment is made, in arranging the customary departments of instruction. The sphere of general knowledge may thus be enlarged, and taste and imagination cultivated, without encroaching on hours otherwise appropriated; while a special opportunity is afforded for the immediate application of principles of elocution previously acquired, and the formation of a correct and appropriate style of reading, as a useful accomplishment.

To secure these results, no expedient is more effectual than that of furnishing the proper materials for the practice of the requisite exercises. These should combine a sufficient proportion of solid fact, for the exercise of the understanding, and for the application of distinctive

emphasis, pausing, and inflections, in the plain style of narration, description, and remark; while they are not left deficient in topics addressed to feeling and imagination, in forms of expression which call for the varying tones of sentiment and emotion. History, biography, and descriptive writing, in general, are the most appropriate sources from which instructive and interesting subjects for reading exercises can be derived.

The contents of the following pages, have been selected in accordance with these views; and the compiler trusts that they lose nothing of their value by being drawn from local sources. They are thus invested with an additional attraction to young minds, and favor the acquisition of an animated and impressive style of reading; at the same time that they supply a want hitherto felt, as regards the useful intelligence which education should furnish, in relation to the scenes and associations of actual life.

The author would, by no means, claim a paramount importance for subjects of only an immediate and restrictive utility. A narrow feeling of exclusive preference for home scenes and mere local information, is no proper fruit of education. But an early and enlightened attachment to local associations, while it forms a distinctive basis of social character, in communities, is, in no respect, incompatible with that enlarged and liberal regard to national interests and relations, which should ever distinguish the citizens of the United States. Local preferences may be justly cherished, without incurring the faults of local prejudice; and it would seem to be one of the proper offices of education to cultivate, in the young mind, a desire for knowledge on whatever subjects are likely to prove most useful or interesting, in years subsequent to the period of school instruction.

No part of general information can ultimately be more serviceable to any individual, than that which concerns the community of which he is, ere long, to become an active member; and no scenes possess, for him, a truer interest than those in which he is to occupy the successive periods of his life, in the pursuit of his daily duties.

There can be, it is thought, but one opinion as to the importance of having all our youth well informed regarding their native State; and the form of a class-book, adapted to the exercise of reading, in schools, would seem to be the most convenient vehicle for such information, which might, in this way, be furnished without overburdening teachers and pupils, by multiplying the branches of education, or making additions to the established routine of school instruction.

The whole book, it is hoped,—while, by the instructive and interesting character of its subjects, it may serve to cherish an early taste for knowledge,—will be found not less adapted, by variety of matter and style, to aid young persons in acquiring the invaluable habit of true and animated expression, in the exercise of reading aloud; since a large part of the volume is, from the nature of its subjects, occupied with descriptions of interesting scenes and objects, narratives of striking events, and delineations of noble characters.

How far the compiler has succeeded in the selection of topics, and in the requisite adaptation of expression to his subject, and to the minds of youthful readers, others will decide. His endeavor has been to furnish a volume substantially useful, and, at the same time, pleasing and attractive,—whether for the purpose of being read aloud, as a series of exercises, in practical elocution, or perused silently, for mental occupation, in leisure hours.

The plan which has been adopted, in compiling the following pages, comprises a concise view of the

*geography** of the state of New York; the narrative of its *civil history; biographical notices* of its eminent *public characters;* sketches of *scenery* and *modes of living;* local outlines of *natural history;* and accounts of *public institutions.*—The prominent features, only, of subjects so extensive, could be presented in a volume limited to the usual compass of a schoolbook. But care has been taken not to omit particulars important to elementary knowledge, or to the wants of the young mind. Selection has not always, in this respect, been found an easy task. The compiler's endeavor, however, has uniformly been to avoid an accumulation of uninteresting and dry details, on the one hand, and the style of merely puerile amusement, on the other.

To give unity and character to the work, and to adapt it to its special uses, the *history* has been written expressly for the purposes in view in the present volume. But, to avoid sameness of style, in a book designed for a class reader, extracts preserving the language of various authors, have been freely interspersed. A similar course has been adopted, in preparing the other portions of the work. Variety of style has thus, it is hoped, been secured, in conjunction with exactness of information. To adapt both matter and expression, however, to young readers, some omissions of detail, and some changes of phraseology, were necessarily made, in transferring materials to the

* The author takes pleasure in referring teachers, to Mather's Geography of New York, as a work well suited to the purposes of instruction, in this department. The book having been received, only within a few days, and after the body of our own work had passed through the press, it was not in our power to mention it more particularly. But the care with which its subject has been investigated, and the thoroughly practical character of the whole work, seem to render it a very desirable manual for instruction in chorography and topography, which are the true foundation of geographical science, in relation to the actual purposes of life.

pages of the present volume. These modifications, however, have been rendered as few as practicable; and the compiler trusts that their design will be fully understood by the writers to whose labors he stands indebted.

The subjects comprehended in the following work, are, in themselves, so ample, that, to have compiled from them several volumes, rather than one, would have been the easier task of the two. But, for the purposes of education, and, particularly, for those of a reading-book, it seemed preferable to furnish a volume which, while it should not prove deficient in information, should serve rather as an incitement to farther application in the pursuit of knowledge, than as a copious work for reference. Exactness as to facts, however, has, in all cases, been strictly regarded as indispensable in a volume like the present, designed as a source of correct information on subjects of moment.

The extent and variety of actual knowledge, requisite to constitute the compiler of such a volume as the present, a personal authority, on all its topics, no individual, it is believed, can be reasonably expected to possess. All, however, that seemed practicable has been done to secure accuracy in every important statement, by particular inquiry, or by recourse to the best sources and diligent collation. Much valuable aid has also been derived from individuals whose scientific labors and official duties have rendered them competent to decide on the correctness of details, and who have taken a generous interest in the character and objects of the present work.

The style of expression which has been necessarily adopted, as a standard, in compiling the following pages, is,—so far as could be done, in justice to subjects and facts,—graduated with a view to readers of the age usually prevailing in the highest classes of schools. This circumstance will serve sufficiently, it is thought, to ex-

plain the modifications of language which have, in some instances, been found necessary, in transferring passages from various works to the following pages. Such changes have, unavoidably, been, in some instances, too extensive to comport with the forms of expression being justly ascribed to the original authors.—The compiler would take this opportunity to express his full conviction that, whatever value his volume may be deemed to possess, is, so far as facts are concerned, due to the sources whence these are derived. He has therefore drawn freely from all that he could command; and the more so that the nature of this compilation, as a reading-book, permits a transfer of matter, without encroachment on the province of original writers. Many acknowledgments, on this score, are due to authors who have, with the utmost readiness, expressed their willingness to be thus laid under tribute to the common cause of education. To these the compiler would return his best thanks for the personal favor so conferred.

With these explanations, the author respectfully offers this volume as a contribution to the means of general education,—in the hope, also, that it may, in conjunction with other aids, subserve the purposes of that generous system of public instruction which distinguishes the state of New York.

CONTENTS.

	Page
PREFACE	3
CONTENTS	9
PRINCIPLES OF ELOCUTION	12
GEOGRAPHY OF THE STATE	13
Position and Boundaries	13
Geographical Division	14–18
Map delineating the boundaries of New Netherland, as claimed by the Dutch	20
Original features of the country; Scenery; Vegetable Productions	21
Animals	22
Map exhibiting the positions of the Indian nations	24

HISTORY.

CHAP. I. ABORIGINAL PERIOD.

Sec. I. Origin of the Indian Race	25–30
Sec. II. Geographical position of the Indians of New Netherland	31–34
Sec. III. Character and Habits of the Indians	35, 36
Sec. IV. Indian Life	37–39
Sec. V. Indian Warfare	40–42
Sec. VI. Customs, superstitions, amusements	42–46
Sec. VII. Treatment of the Indians	47, 48

CHAP. II. DISCOVERY AND EXPLORATION.

Sec. I. Early Voyages	48–51
Sec. II. Exploration of the river	52, 53
Sec. III. Dutch trading voyages. 1610–1620	53–57
Sec. IV. The Dutch West-India company	58, 59

CHAP. III. NEW YORK, UNDER THE DUTCH WEST-INDIA COMPANY.

Sec. I. Administration of director Minuit. 1624–1633	59–67
Sec. II. Administration of director Van Twiller. 1633–1637	67–73
Sec. III. Administration of director Kieft. 1638–1646	73–101
Sec. IV. Early history of Albany	101–106
Sec. V. Administration of director Stuyvesant. 1647–1664	106–111

CHAP. IV. NEW YORK, UNDER THE SUPREMACY OF ENGLAND.

Sec. I. Administrations of governors Nicolls, Lovelace, Colve, and Andros. 1664–1682	111–113
Sec. II. Administration of governor Dongan. 1683–1688	113–121
Sec. III. Administration of Leisler. 1688–1690	121–125
Sec. IV. Administrations of governors Sloughter, Fletcher, and Bellamont. 1691–1702	125–132
Sec. V. Administrations of lords Cornbury and Lovelace, and lieutenant-governors Ingoldsby and Beekman. 1702–1711	133–137

HISTORY—*continued.* Page

Sec. VI. Administration of governor Hunter. 1711–1720 . 137–142
Sec. VII. Administration of governor Burnet. 1720–1728 . 142–147
Sec. VIII. Governors Montgomerie and Cosby. 1728–1736 . 147–151
Sec. IX. Lieutenant-governor Clarke. 1736–1743 . . 151–157
Sec. X. Governors Clinton and Sir Danvers Osborn. 1743–1753 157–166
Sec. XI. First administration of lieutenant-governor Delancey. 1753–1755 166–178
Sec. XII. Administration of governor Hardy. 1755–1757 . 178–186
Sec. XIII. Second administration of lieutenant-governor Delancey. 1757–1760 186–198
Sec. XIV. Lieutenant-governor Colden, and governors Monckton and Moore. 1760–1769 199–205
Sec. XV. Governors Dunmore and Tryon. 1770–1774 . 205–213

CHAP. V. PERIOD OF THE REVOLUTION.

Sec. I. Events of 1775 213–232
Map of Lake Champlain and the surrounding region . . 218
Sec. II. Events of 1776 232–249
Map of the vicinity of the city of New York . . . 239
Sec. III. Events of 1777 249–262
Sec. IV. Events of 1778 and 1779 262–273
Sec. V. Events of 1780 and 1781 273–281
Sec. VI. Events of 1782 and 1783 281–286

CHAP. VI. OCCURRENCES BETWEEN THE PEACE OF 1783, AND THE WAR OF 1812.

Sec. I. Events from 1784 to 1791 287–291
Sec. II. Events from 1791 to 1795 291–293
Sec. III. Events from 1795 to 1812 293–295

CHAP. VII. PERIOD OF THE WAR OF 1812.

Sec. I. Events of 1812 and 1813 295–298
Sec. II. Events of 1814 298–302

CHAP. VIII. EVENTS FROM 1814 TO 1847. . 302–304

BIOGRAPHY.

Introductory Observations 305, 306
Captain Willet 307, 308
Lion Gardiner 308–311
Capt. John Underhill 311–314
Lieutenant-governor Colden 315–323
Madame Schuyler 323–353
Rev. Dr. Samuel Johnson 354
Hon. Philip Livingston 355
Dr. Jacob Ogden 355, 356
General Woodhull 356–367
Samson Occom 367
Lewis Morris 368
Philip Schuyler 369
General Floyd 370–372
General James Clinton 372, 373
General Montgomery 374
Governor George Clinton 375–377
Stephen Sayre 377–379
John Jay 379–381
Hon. Egbert Benson 381–385

BIOGRAPHY—*continued.* Page

Capt. Caleb Brewster 386–389
Gouverneur Morris 389–391
Colonel Benjamin Tallmadge 392–397
General Morgan Lewis 397–401
Hon. Rufus King 401–404
Alexander Hamilton 404–408
General Armstrong 408–412
Colonel Burr 412–416
Brockholst Livingston 416
Dr. Macneven 417–419
Dr. Samuel L. Mitchill 419–421
Edward Livingston 421–425
Thomas Addis Emmet 426–428
Robert Fulton 428–431
James Wadsworth 431–448
Dr. Hosack 448–450
De Witt Clinton 450–452
Cadwallader D. Colden 453–456
Mrs. Frances P. Lupton 456, 457
Rev. Dr. John M. Mason 457, 458
Dr. Adrain 458–461
General Brown 461–465
Jesse Buel 465–467
William L. Stone 467, 468
Robert C. Sands 468, 469
Henry Inman 470, 471
William Leggett 472, 473
Lucretia Davidson 473–482
Willis Gaylord Clarke 482, 483
Margaret Davidson 483–508

PRIMITIVE COLONIAL LIFE.

Modes of living in Albany 509–535
Style of living among the wealthy landholders of colonial New York 535–546

NOTICES OF EARLY SETTLEMENTS, INLAND TOWNS, AND VILLAGES 547–564
Migration and Settling 564–574

SKETCHES OF SCENERY.

The Hudson River 575–579
Otsego Lake 580, 581
The Catskill Mountains 582, 583
Fall on the Kaaterskill 583, 584
Adirondac Pass 585–588

LOCAL OUTLINES OF NATURAL HISTORY.

ANIMALS.

Introductory Observations 589
Reptiles 590–594
Fishes 595–600
Quadrupeds 600–618
Birds 618–641

APPENDIX.

Institutions connected with education 643–647
Constitution of the State 649–669

PRINCIPLES OF ELOCUTION,

APPLIED TO THE READING OF HISTORY.

☞ *The attention of teachers is respectfully solicited to the following rules, as indispensable to the right performance of the exercise of reading aloud, in classes.*

I. The proper style of reading, in geographical description and historical narrative, requires attention, in the first place, to *distinctness of utterance*, without which the reader cannot be understood, or the facts be impressed upon the mind.

II. Distinctness of style in reading, depends on, 1st, *due loudness of voice*; 2d, *proper slowness of utterance*; 3d, *exactness and energy in articulation*; 4th, *attentive observance of pauses, so as to regulate the sense of what is read, and renew the reader's supply of breath.*

III. The dignity and importance of historical and biographical subjects, forbid any approach to careless familiarity and negligence of style in *pronunciation*, and demand a becoming attention to *propriety* and *refinement*, as the standards of good usage.

IV. The interest which naturally belongs to scenic description and historical narration, requires, in reading, *an animated, energetic, and varied style of expression*, in the voice, and is quite incompatible with flatness and sameness of tone, unmeaning utterance, and "schoolboy" style.

V. To read any passage well, the reader must himself *understand it fully*, and enter into its *spirit*, that his reading may give the meaning and sentiment of the author, by appropriate *emphasis, inflections*, and *pauses*. Hence the necessity that *every lesson should be carefully studied, before it is read aloud.*

VI. It will be of great assistance in securing a correct style of reading, if the teacher adopts the practice of, every day, attracting the attention of his pupils to *those words in the lesson of the following day, which are most liable to be mispronounced.* Such words may be either *repeated orally*, at the moment, or *marked with a pencil.**

* Teachers who wish to give their pupils the advantage of systematic and progressive instruction in elocution, are referred to the author's Elementary and Common-School Series of Reading-books, or to his Orthophony and his American Elocutionist.

NEW-YORK CLASS-BOOK.

GEOGRAPHY

OF THE STATE OF NEW YORK.

Reading Lesson I.

Position and Boundaries of the State.

The geographical position of the state of New York, is defined, on the map, by the Atlantic ocean, and the states of New Jersey and Pennsylvania, which bound it, on the south; the states of Connecticut, Massachusetts, and Vermont, on the east; the river St. Lawrence and lake Ontario, which separate it from Canada, on the north and northwest; the Niagara river, on the west; and lake Erie, on the west and northwest. Chatauque county, in the southwestern part of the state, has a portion of the state of Pennsylvania for its western boundary.

The form of the state, as projected to the eye, is that of a rude triangle, with its base on the northwest, and its apex, or peak, at the southwest. If viewed from the eastern toward the western boundary, the delineation of the surface presents the shape of one side of an irregular and broken pyramid, bisected.

The state is situated between forty degrees, thirty minutes, and forty-five degrees of north latitude, and between five degrees, five minutes of east, and two degrees, fifty-five minutes of west longitude, from the city of Washington.

The area of the state is upwards of forty-six thousand square miles,—nearly equal to that of all England. The state is divided into fifty-nine counties. The population of the state amounted, by the census of 1840, to two millions, four hundred and twenty-eight thousand, nine hundred, and twenty-one.

The climate of New York, although the latitude of the state coincides with that of the warmer regions of Europe, corresponds, rather, in its mean annual temperature, with that of European countries lying from fifteen to twenty degrees farther north. The mean duration of winter, for the city of New York, is about five months. The warmth of the summer exceeds that of even the southern parts of Europe.

A broad view of the surface of the state of New York, as it would present itself to the eye of an observer, elevated to a sufficient height in the air, would coïncide, most nearly, with that sketched by Dr. De Kay, in the preface to his copious and instructive Report on the zoölogy of the state. By the aid of the map and imagination combined, his description is rendered remarkably clear and impressive. It is, in substance, as follows.

"The surface of New York is considerably elevated; much of it lying on the great Alleghany table land. The diversity of surface is, however, so great, that, for the purposes of more intelligible description, we may consider it as divided into four principal districts,—each sufficiently distinct in itself, but, of course, so much blended, at the lines of separation, as not to be contra-distinguished."

Reading Lesson II.

Geographical Division of the State.

"*The Western District*, the first of the four which have been mentioned, includes that portion of the state which is bounded, on the west and north, by lakes Erie and Ontario, and, on the south, by the boundary line separating it from the state of Pennsylvania. It extends eastwardly until it is lost in the valley of the Mohawk, on the north, and the mountainous part of the Hudson district.

"A large portion of this district, is an elevated region, furrowed by valleys running in a north and south direction; supposed once to have been the outlets of a great inland ocean, but now the beds of rivers, which, pursuing opposite courses, discharge themselves, on the one hand, through lake Ontario into the gulf of St. Lawrence, and, on the other, into the Delaware and Chesapeake bays, and into the gulf of Mexico.

"The central portion of this district, is a level table land, rising, in its southern parts, into elevations of from a thousand to twelve hundred feet above tide, and abruptly subsiding, on its western borders, to the level of the great lakes.

"In the western part, we have the Cataraugus and Tonawanda streams, pouring into lake Erie and Niagara river; the sources of the Alleghany river, one of the branches of the Ohio, itself a tributary to the Mississippi; and another branch of the Alleghany takes its rise from Chatauque lake, a sheet of water sixteen miles in length, twelve hundred and ninety-one feet above tide, and seven hundred and twenty-six above lake Erie.

"Eastward of these, is the Genesee river, which, taking its rise in Pennsylvania, crosses the whole district, in a north direction, and empties into lake Ontario. As we proceed eastwardly, we cross successively, in the southern portions of this district, the Canisteo, Conhocton, Chenango, and great western branch, or principal source, of the Susquehannah, which takes its rise in the Otsego lake, a sheet of water nine miles long, with a breadth varying from three quarters of a mile to three miles.

"The central portions of this district, are occupied by a series of from ten to twelve lakes, stretching, generally, to north and south, varying from fifteen to thirty-eight miles, in length; all discharging themselves, by one common outlet, the Oswego river, into lake Ontario.

"On the extreme eastern border, rises the Mohawk, a tributary of the Hudson, which connects it, zoölogically, with the Hudson river district.—The great inland seas of Erie and Ontario,—the one, two hundred and seventy miles in length, with a breadth from twenty to fifty miles, and the other, one hundred and ninety miles, with an average breadth of forty miles,—exercise a great influence on its climate and consequent zoölogical character. Lake Erie, the surface of which is three hundred and thirty-four feet above lake Ontario, discharges its waters, through the rapids and falls of Niagara river, into that lake, within a distance of thirty-six miles.

"This entire district is exceedingly fertile, and is covered by a vigorous growth of forest trees, in the uncultivated portions. Without entering into undue details, it will be perceived, that, while, on the one hand, the vicin-

ity of such large masses of water must meliorate its climate; its fertile soil, irrigated by so many streams, will furnish the means of subsistence to numerous species of animals. It is zoölogically connected, by its valleys and water courses, with the great basin of the St. Lawrence; and we accordingly find, in this district, animals common to both, although not to so great an extent as in the region next to be described. Among the mammalia, we find the northern lynx, the deer, moose, and porcupine; while all the lakes in the interior of this district, that empty into lake Ontario, formerly abounded with salmon, which found their way from the sea, through the gulf and river St. Lawrence. In its southern portions, it is similarly connected with the basin of the Mississippi; and the intermediate regions are watered by the streams which empty into the Delaware and Chesapeake."

Reading Lesson III.

Geographical Division of the State.

"2. *The Northern District* comprises, as its name imports, the northern portion of the state, which forms an irregular truncated triangle, bounded, on its western side, by lake Ontario and the river St. Lawrence,—on its eastern side, by lake Champlain and lake George,—and lying north of the Mohawk valley.

"This district,—in its southern and southeastern portions,—rises into numerous conical peaks and short ranges, attaining, in some places, an elevation of more than five thousand feet. Towards lakes Champlain and George, these subside, suddenly, to the level of those sheets of water. To the north and northwest, this elevation descends, by a gradual and almost imperceptible slope, towards the river St. Lawrence. This slope is watered by the Oswegatchie, the Moose, and Black rivers, and by the Raquet, Grass, and St. Regis rivers; all arising from numerous lakes embosomed in the mountainous regions of its southern parts.

"Lake Champlain, a part of its eastern boundary, extends, north and south, one hundred and forty miles, is twelve miles wide, in its broadest part, and discharges its waters through the Sorel river into the St. Lawrence. Into the southern part of this lake are also poured the

waters of lake George, or Horicon, thirty-seven miles long, and varying from one to seven miles in breadth.

"The cluster of mountains in its southeastern portions, may be considered as an offset from the great Appalachian system, which, descending through the states of Maine, New Hampshire and Vermont, passes southwestwardly between the western and Hudson river districts, and is continued under the name of the Alleghany range of mountains. In this region, too, we find the Sacondaga, Cedar, Jessup, and other tributaries of the Hudson, within a short distance of those which pour into the St. Lawrence.

"This mountainous region comprises the counties of Essex, Hamilton, Herkimer, and Warren, and the southern part of the counties of Clinton, Franklin, and St. Lawrence, and has been estimated to contain an area of about six thousand square miles. Its zoölogical character is strongly impressed by the features before described.

"The chief growth of trees, in this district, are the spruce, pine, larch, balsam, fir and cedar. We find here many of the fur-bearing animals, such as the sable, the fisher, and the beaver. Here, too, roam the moose, the wolverine, and others now only found in high northern latitudes. This district also forms the southern limits of the migration of many arctic birds; and we accordingly meet here with the Canada jay, and the spruce grouse, the swan, the raven, and the Arctic woodpecker."

Reading Lesson IV.

Geographical Division of the State.

"3. *The Hudson Valley District*, includes those counties watered by the river Hudson and its tributaries. Its chief tributary, the Mohawk, after a course of about one hundred and forty miles, enters the Hudson, from the west, at the distance of one hundred and sixty miles from its entrance into the ocean.

"The shape of this district is of course modified by the length and direction of the Mohawk river, and bears some resemblance to the letter ⅂ inverted. Smaller than either of the two preceding, it is nevertheless of much zoölogical interest. At its upper portion, it is connected with

the northern district, and contains many animals in common with the states bordering on the eastern margin.

"Along its western border, it becomes elevated into high ranges of mountains, called the Kaaterskills; some of which attain an elevation of nearly four thousand feet; containing deer, wolves, panthers, and bears. By the valley of the Mohawk, it is zoölogically connected with the western district; and this connection is becoming daily more obvious, by the great artificial water channels which reflect so much honor on the zeal and enterprise of the inhabitants. Thus, the soft-shelled turtle and rock bass of lake Erie, are now found in the Hudson; in the same way that the yellow perch, the muskallonghee, and others peculiar to the great lakes, have, by means of the Ohio canal, found their way into the Mississippi, through the Ohio.

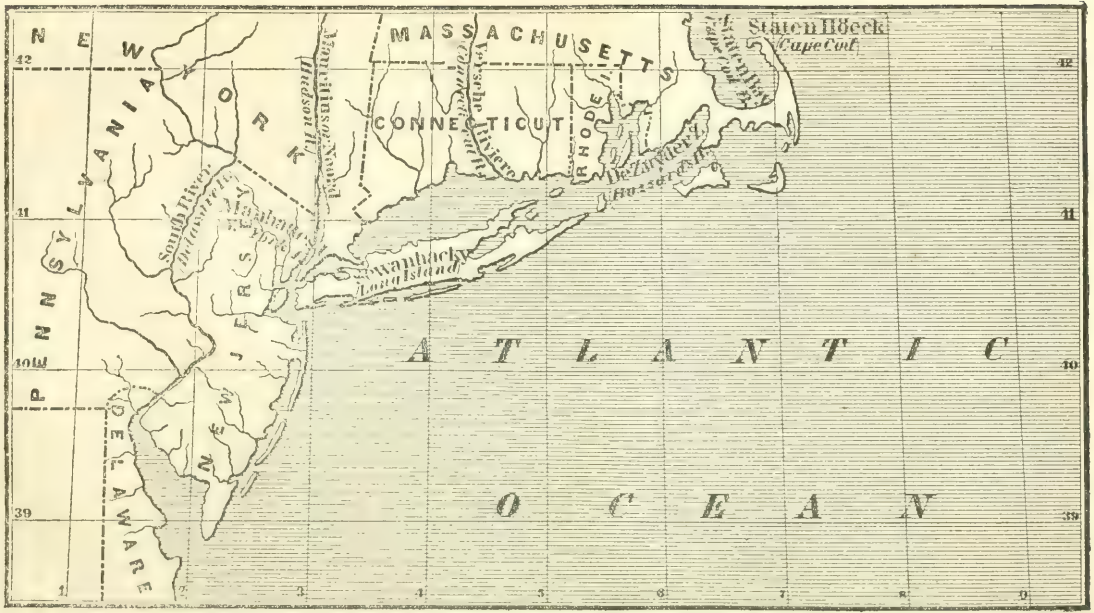
"On the south, this district is connected with the Atlantic; and, accordingly, we find it teeming with the inhabitants of the ocean. On the other hand, the Hudson river appears to form a natural geographical limit to the extension of some species,—at least in any considerable numbers. Thus, the opossum of the South rarely, if ever, outsteps this boundary; among reptiles, the chain snake and brown swift; and the buzzard and many other species, among the birds. From the north, also, this river appears to be a barrier to their progress south."

Reading Lesson V.

Geographical Division of the State.

"4. *The Atlantic District* comprises Long Island, with a medium breadth of ten miles, extending in a northeasterly direction one hundred and fifty miles. Its insular position influences its climate; and we accordingly find a great difference between its temperature and that of the main land. It is a low sandy region, with extensive plains, and rising, along its northern borders, into hills of moderate elevation, at but one point only exceeding three hundred feet in height.

"Although much smaller than any of the preceding districts, yet it possesses some zoölogical features of interest. Its insular position, and its early settlement, have occasioned the extirpation of some of the larger


NEW YORK
MASSACHUSETTS
CONNECTICUT
RHODE ISLAND
Staten Höeck
Cape Cod
Cape Cod Bay
Vineyard Sound
Buzzards Bay
Nantucket Shoals
Nantucket
Block Island
Long Island
Hudson River
Delaware Bay
South River
Raritan Bay
Hackensack River
Passaic River
Newark Bay
Kill van Kull
Staten Island
NEW JERSEY
PENNSYLVANIA
DELAWARE
ATLANTIC
OCEAN
42
41
40
39
74W
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9

quadrupeds, such as the otter, wolf, and bear; but deer are still numerous. It is more remarkable for the abundance and variety of its birds, than for the number of its mammalia. Here we find the extreme southern limits of the migrations of the arctic species, and the northernmost termination of the wanderings of the birds of the torrid zone. Thus we find, in winter, in this district, the eider duck, the little white goose, the great cormorant, the auk, and many others from the arctic ocean. During the heats of summer, we meet with the turkey buzzard and swallow-tailed kite, the fork-tailed flycatcher from the tropical wilds of Guiana, and numerous others from the south. This region seems, also, to be the boundary between the fishes and other classes of the northern and tropical seas, and occasionally furnishes specimens from either extremity."

Reading Lesson VI.

Original Features of the Country.

Boundaries claimed by the Dutch.—The voyage in which Hudson discovered and explored the river which bears his name, led him to visit the American coast, at various points between Penobscot bay and the Chesapeake. The Dutch, in whose service this voyage was undertaken, claimed, in virtue of the right of discovery and partial exploration, the whole region lying between cape Cod and Delaware bay.

Scenery.—The majestic rivers and capacious bays of this extensive region, not only gave a character of magnificence to its scenery, but indicated its peculiar adaptation to the purposes of traffic,—a consideration of great moment in the estimation of a people so devoted to commercial pursuits as the Dutch. The aspect of the whole country, however, was that of an unbroken wilderness, covered with primeval forests. The coast was principally low and sandy; and the distant interior apparently rocky and mountainous. But the intervening soil, along the river courses, was rich and loamy.

Vegetable Productions.—The primitive vegetation, in its wild luxuriance, intimated the abundant fertility which might be expected to reward the diligent hand of cultivation. The trees of the forest were of the noblest dimen-

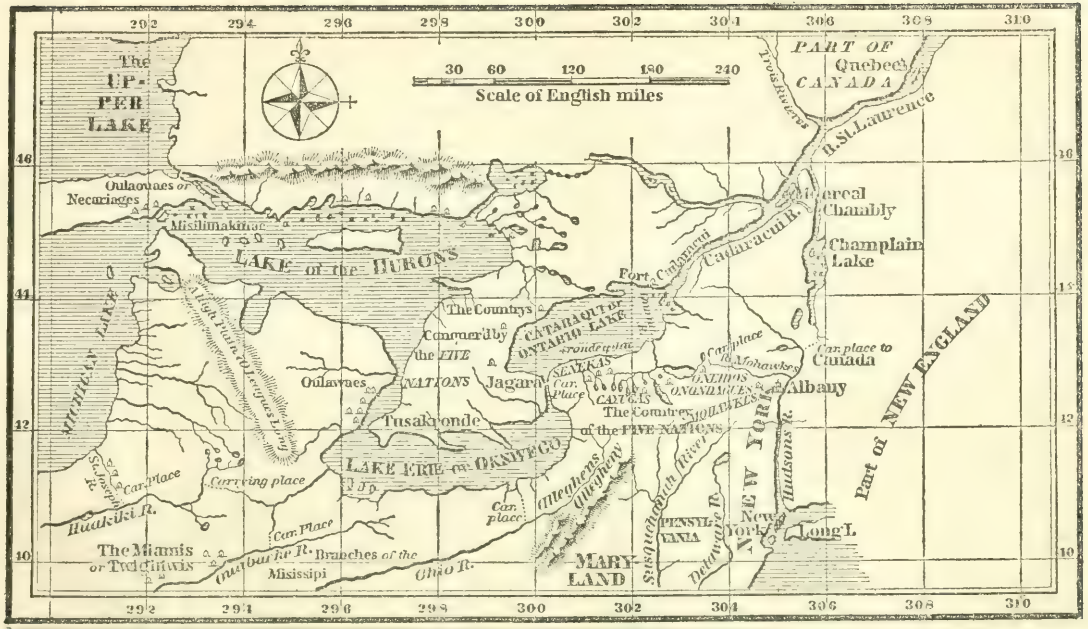
sions; the wild fruits of all sorts abundant; the meadow and forest flowers bloomed in boundless profusion and variety. Medicinal herbs of rare virtue, but well known to the natives, in the cure of wounds and diseases, were the common and spontaneous productions of the soil.

Animals.—Nor was animal life less abundant, or less varied in its forms, than vegetable nature. The forest and the river banks were frequented by innumerable herds of buffaloes, elks, and deer. The beaver, the otter, and the raccoon were found, in multitudes, in their accustomed haunts. Nor were the fiercer races wanting, to call forth the vigilance and energy of man. The panther, the bear, the wild cat, the wolf, and the fox, with countless varieties of the smaller annoying tribes which infest the homestead, seemed almost to counterbalance the advantage arising from the abundant supply of game.

The peculiar birds of this new region, charmed the eye of the European visitants, by the unwonted beauty and splendor of their plumage. Besides the well-known eagle, the falcon, the raven, the turkey, the partridge, the quail, and the pigeon, were the less familiar forms of the gaudy American woodpeckers, and the hitherto unseen, diminutive figure and dazzling plumage of the humming bird,—the fairy of the feathered tribes.

The waters teemed yet more abundantly than the earth and the air, with their appropriate tenants; and the voyagers, when visiting the rivers, regaled their appetites on the plenteous supplies of salmon, sturgeon, bass, shad, carp, perch, pike, trout, and other fresh-water fish. The sea, with its sounds and bays, furnished them, in exhaustless abundance, with shell-fish, among which were copious supplies of lobsters, oysters, clams, and turtles. Cod, halibut, mackerel, bass, and many other valuable kinds of fish, were found in shoals of vast extent. Waterfowl, too, were exceedingly numerous. Among these were swans, geese, ducks, teal, widgeons, and brant; all corresponding to the profusion of animal life in other forms, throughout the productive regions of New Netherland.*

* The word *Netherland*, like the corresponding phrase, the *Low* Countries, referred, originally, to the regions on the *nether* or *lower*, part of the river Rhine,—including Holland and Belgium. The phrases, *High* and *Low* Dutch, refer, distinctively, to the languages spoken in the countries on the *higher* and *lower* portions of the same river.


292
294
296
298
300
302
304
306
308
310
46
44
42
40
30 60 120 180 240
Scale of English miles
The UPPER LAKE
PART OF Quebec CANADA
Trois Rivieres
R. St. Lawrence
Mercreal
Chambly
Champlain Lake
Outlawaes or Necariages
Mislimakinac
LAKE of the HURONS
Outlawaes
Fort Cataracui
Cataraqui R.
The Countrys Conquer'd by the FIVE NATIONS
CATARAQUI or ONTARIO LAKE
Frondequat
Jagara
SENEKAS
Car. Place
CAYUGAS
ONEIDOS
ONONDAGUES
MOHAWKES
Car. place
Mohawkes
Car. place to Canada
Albany
The Countries of the FIVE NATIONS
Tusakronde
LAKE ERIE or OKNEYO
Carrying place
Car. place
Allegheny
Allegheny River
Hudsons R.
Part of NEW ENGLAND
NEW YORK
PENSILVANIA
New York
Long I.
Delaware R.
Susquehanna River
MARYLAND
Ohio R.
Branches of the Misisipi
Ouabache R.
The Miamis or Twightwies
Car. Place
Huskiski R.
Sandusky R.
Car. place
Outlawaes
Missisipi

HISTORY.

CHAPTER I.—ABORIGINAL PERIOD.

SECTION I.—ORIGIN OF THE INDIAN RACE.

Reading Lesson VII.

**Sources of information regarding the Indians.*—The history of the races which originally inhabited the North American continent, is involved in much obscurity. In the region now designated as the state of New York, the plantations of European colonists, began, soon after the discovery of the country, to encroach rapidly on the homes and hunting-grounds of the natives; and the intercourse between the two races, was, so early, of a hostile character, that little opportunity was afforded to the curious, or to the benevolent, for inquiries into the condition of the primitive tribes.

Little has been preserved to our times, regarding the origin of the Indians, but their own dim and fabulous traditions, imperfectly caught by resident traders, busied with other pursuits than those of historical investigation; and of the enduring monuments, in the form of mounds and fortifications, which time has not wholly obliterated, no satisfactory knowledge can be gleaned.

Relics of the early races.—The state of New York, in common with other portions of the North American continent, possesses many interesting but obscure traces of once powerful nations, which seem to have existed previous to the savage tribes occupying the country, at the period of its discovery by Europeans. The ruins of ex-

* The italics, in this and similar instances, indicate the principal topics of every Section and every Reading Lesson, and are intended to furnish the matter for *oral questions* by the teacher, when examining his classes on the *subject* of the lessons. Thus, "What is said of the *sources of information regarding the Indians?*" &c.

tinct cities and of military fortifications, the traces of agriculture, and the remains of art, in several of its ornamental as well as its useful branches,—all of which have been brought to light, in various parts of the state, and examined and commented on by men of learning and research, —bespeak the existence of a people entirely distinct from the savage roamers of the forest, who were found here by our ancestors. Our museums furnish us with specimens of the relics of such a race; and in the Albany Institute are preserved not a few of these interesting memorials of the far distant past. But such objects provoke, rather than gratify, the curiosity of the mind, regarding this period of obscurity. They resemble the dawnings and glimpses of thought in childhood, so justly described by the poet, as

"fallings from us,—vanishings."

Traces of early European visitors.—A similar strain of conjecture and fancy, is all that attends the contemplation of another class of our local antiquities,—the traces of early European visitors of whose wanderings we have no record; but whose unquestionable vestiges, are still, at intervals, disinterred from our soil. So indistinct and unsatisfactory are these, that we can venture no farther than to pronounce such remains European, and not Asiatic or American, in their character. Armor, and other relics which cannot be mistaken, have been dug up,—all indicating early communications with America, which have found no historian, and the objects of which are, to us, wrapped in mystery.

Origin of the present Indian race.—Over the origin even of the present Indian nations, a similar veil of uncertainty hangs. The question still remains undecided, whence sprang the warlike tribes which our fathers found on the shores of the new world.

Reading Lesson VIII.

*Histories of the Five Nations.**—The chief sources of

* The designation, "Five Nations," applies to the five united Indian tribes, the Mohawks, the Oneidas, the Senecas, the Onondagas, and the Cayugas. To these the Tuscarora tribe afterward joined themselves.—Hence the subsequent designation of the whole confederacy, as the "Six Nations."

information respecting the original condition of the Indian races of the region now designated as the state of New York, are the early notices of French travellers and residents, and the history of the Five Nations by Dr. Cadwallader Colden, who, for nearly half a century preceding the American revolution, filled several important public offices, under the British government, in the then colony of New York.

"The work of Dr. Colden,"—says the late Mr. W. L. Stone, in a paper communicated to the New-York Historical Society, and published in the volume of their proceedings for 1845,—"the work is valuable, although it comes down only to a very short period subsequent to the peace of Ryswick. The French travellers and historians had occupied this field of historical research, at a much earlier day. Doctor Colden availed himself of their labors, —particularly of those of Charlevoix ;* and, having access to the archives of the colonial Indian commissioners, in regard to the Six Nations,† he was enabled not only to make his history of that great family of the Indian race more full, but also to correct many of the errors into which the French writers had fallen. Nevertheless, the Doctor relied chiefly upon the French, for the Indian speeches he has given in the text of his work ; which accounts for the fact, that these specimens of aboriginal eloquence, are more florid than those which have generally been rendered by English interpreters.

"Colden was a man of a benevolent spirit. He admired the unsophisticated character and the genius of the Iroquois, and felt deeply for their wrongs. He wrote, therefore, with a somewhat partial pen. Yet his work has become a standard, and is justly considered authoritative. Certainly it is such as a record of facts. His Introduction, giving an account of the form of government of the Six Nations, and of their religious manners, customs, and laws, is highly interesting, and has scarcely been improved by subsequent writers.

"It is a curious fact, that, in the organization of the government of the Aquanuschioni, at the time of the discovery, is found the very organization of the government of the United States. Each of the Five Nations was a distinct and independent republic, so far as its own par-

* Pronounced, *Sharlvwáw*. † See foot-note on preceding page.

ticular government and affairs were concerned; but all matters affecting the whole confederacy were discussed in a general central council, or congress, held as occasion required at Anondaga. Officers of every grade, sachems, or civil magistrates, and war-chiefs, acquired and held their places only by merit. They served always without compensation; and bad conduct was invariably followed by disgrace and degradation. On one point, the Doctor is clearly in the wrong. He has adopted the French notion, that the confederates,—the Iroquois of the French, —were but recent occupants of the beautiful country in which they were found at the time of the discovery. But the evidence afforded by the traditions of the Iroquois themselves, proves, beyond doubt, that their residence had been long in the country in which they were found at the time of the discovery."

David Cusick, an educated Tuscarora Indian, attempted to supply the deficiency of historical records regarding his countrymen, by publishing a work embodying some of the Indian traditions on that subject. But it is of so wild and fabulous a character, that it cannot be relied on, for anything authentic or satisfactory.

An able summary of the history of the Six Nations, was given by governor De Witt Clinton, in a discourse pronounced before the New-York Historical Society, in the year 1811. A very valuable source of information on the aborigines of New York, is to be found in Dr. Adrian Van der Donck's Description of New Netherland, translated by Mr. Johnson of Brooklyn, and published by the New-York Historical Society.

Reading Lesson IX.

Bradford's researches on Indian Antiquities.—The most extensive work of research, on the subject of the origin of the red races of this continent, is that of Mr. Alexander W. Bradford. "His investigations," says Mr. Stone, "have by no means been confined to the history of the United States, or to that of the northern division of the New World; but the north and the south have been included, and the ruins of all been investigated, from the snow-huts of the Esquimaux to the palaces of the Incas. The work bears indubitable evidences of laborious and careful research;

and the result is a faithful description of all the monuments yet discovered, which can throw the least light upon the history of the aboriginals of either continental division. In these descriptions are included the mounds, fortifications, relics of pottery, implements of warfare, and other ancient remains in the United States;—the pyramids, temples, sculptures, and hieroglyphics of Mexico, the ruins of Huexotla,* Palenqué,† Copan, Mitlan, and other Mexican cities; and the mounds, public roads, and aqueducts of Peru, and other portions of America farther south. The results of the author's inquiries, everywhere bearing evidence of great accuracy, are summed up as follows:—

"1. The three great groups of monumental antiquities in the United States, New Spain, and South America, in their style and character present indications of having proceeded from branches of the same human family.

"2. These nations were a rich, populous, civilized, and agricultural people; constructed extensive cities, roads, aqueducts, fortifications, and temples; were skilled in the arts of pottery, metallurgy, and sculpture; had obtained an accurate knowledge of the science of astronomy; were possessed of a national religion, subject to the salutary control of a definite system of laws; and were associated under regular forms of government.

"3. From the uniformity of their physical appearance; from the possession of relics of the art of hieroglyphic painting, from universal analogies in their language, traditions, and methods of interring the dead; and from the general prevalence of certain arbitrary customs, nearly all the aborigines appear to be of the same descent and origin;—and the barbarous tribes are the broken, scattered and degraded remnants of society, originally more enlightened and cultivated.

"4. Two distinct ages may be pointed out in the history of the civilized nations,—the first and most ancient subsisting, for a long and indeterminate period, in unbroken tranquillity, and marked, toward its close, by the signs of social decadence;—the second, distinguished by national changes, the inroads of barbarous or semi-civilized tribes, the extinction or subjugation of the old, and the foundation of new, and more extensive, empires; and

"5. The first seats of civilization were in Central

* Pronounced, *Hooayhōtla*; † *Palainkay*.

America, whence population was diffused through both continents, from cape Horn to the Arctic ocean.

"In relation to the question of their *origin*,

"1. The red race, under various modifications, may be traced physically into Etruria, Egypt, Madagascar, ancient Scythia, Mongolia, China, Hindostan, Malaya, Polynesia, and America, and was a primitive and cultivated branch of the human family; and

"2. The American aborigines are, more or less, connected with these several countries, by striking analogies in their arts, their customs, and traditions, their hieroglyphical painting, their architecture and temple-building, their astronomical systems, and their superstitions, religion, and theocratical governments.

"His conclusions are, that all the various nations and tribes inhabiting America, at the period of the discovery, had the same origin, from the same primitive civilized source; and that they came to America, probably, from the Indian archipelago, and across the islands of the Pacific ocean. From this last conclusion I have intimated my dissent. My own convictions are strong, that the aboriginal race,—at least, of the northern division of the continent, and probably of the whole,—emigrated from northern Asia across Behring's Straits, or from northern Europe, or perhaps from both."

Reading Lesson X.

Additional sources of local information regarding the Indian tribes.—Mr. Stone's lives of Brant and Red Jacket, distinguished chiefs of the Iroquois confederacy, and the notices of Indian history in Mr. Campbell's Annals of Tryon County, together with Mr. Schoolcraft's Researches, furnish many interesting particulars concerning those tribes of the primitive races of North America, which inhabited the region of New Netherland, at the time when it was discovered by Europeans.

From these various sources we glean the materials of the following paragraphs. Some lover of antiquarian research, will, it is to be hoped, furnish, ere long, a complete and satisfactory work on this interesting subject. We would, in the meantime, earnestly recommend to our readers the perusal of such of the above-mentioned works

as may, from time to time, become accessible to them. To an American mind, the contents of these volumes form one of the most interesting portions of the romance of authentic history. We know of no way in which so much entertaining and, at the same time, useful knowledge may be acquired by young readers.

For perusal, at leisure moments, we may mention, also, the vivid and beautiful sketches of Indian life, wrought into the exciting tales of Mr. Cooper, which, though tinged with the hue of romantic fiction, are true, in the main, to the spirit of history, and well fitted to incite the mind to farther reading on this interesting branch of our local history.

SEC. II.—GEOGRAPHICAL POSITION OF THE INDIANS OF NEW NETHERLAND.

Early condition of the principal Indian tribes found in New Netherland.—The whole region visited by Hudson, was occupied by various tribes, which constituted branches of the great primitive race of the Algonquin Lenape. Along the eastern border of New Netherland, dwelt the Pequods and the Wampanoags,—afterwards so famed for their hostility to the Puritan settlers of New England and their descendants. The upper region of the Cohotatea, or North River, to the distance of seventy miles from the head of navigation, was occupied by the fierce tribe of the Mohawks, or Maquaas, as they were sometimes called. These held in subjection the surrounding tribes, on the western bank of the river. The Mahicanders, Mohegans, or River Indians, dwelt along the banks of the Hudson to its mouth; their domain extending eastward to the Connecticut. The Montauks, or Matouacs, of Sewanhacky, or Long Island, renowned among their contemporaries, for their warlike character, were supreme in that region, and held in dependence more than a dozen petty tribes.

Subordinate tribes.—South of the Mohegans dwelt the Waraouckins on the east, and the Waranancongins on the west. The latter of these tribes subsequently acquired the name of Wappingi. The Wicquaeskeeks occupied a tract extending from the North to the East River, and lying along the banks of two tributary streams, called the Sintsinck and the Armonck. Immediately south of the Wicquaeskeeks, were the Manhattes, or Manhattans.

Manhattan Island.—This name the Dutch settlers gave to the island which was the chief scene of the national council-fires of that fierce tribe. The island of the Manhattans is now not unfrequently called New-York Island, —a name which looks to the future rather than the past, and seems to anticipate the day, probably not very distant, when the wild scene of the council-fire and war-dance of the primitive savage, shall be universally covered with the spacious streets, the busy marts, and the elegant abodes of civilized and polished life.

Imagination itself can now scarcely figure, from the levelled surface of modern New York, the varied scene of hill and dale, stream and forest, which was presented to the eye of the Dutch trader, as he landed to communicate with the naked Indian, and to traffic with him for furs, obtained from wild animals then frequenting the spots which are now the haunts of beauty and fashion. It seems easier, indeed, to anticipate the time when the whole island shall be but the site of the enlarged city of New York, the maritime queen of this western hemisphere, and the emporium of, perhaps, the larger share of the commerce of the world.

Reading Lesson XI.

The Hackingsack and Raritan tribes.—The Hackingsacks were a tribe dwelling on the western side of the river, opposite to the Manhattans; and, between the latter and the ocean shore, were the Raritans, whose national appellation yet remains, in the river and bay which bear their name. This tribe Hudson found occupying the fertile valley of the river which fell into Navesinck bay, on the south side of the great bay of the North River, between Sandyhook and Eghquaous, or Staten island. The Raritans, however, were subsequently driven from their pleasant home, partly in consequence of successive spring floods, unusually heavy, which destroyed their subterranean magazines of grain, and partly by incursions of the Lenno Lenape, or Delaware and Minsi Indians, called, by the Dutch, Sankhicans, a fierce and overbearing race, which claimed the highest antiquity of origin, and a prescriptive right of dominion over their red brethren in general.

The Delawares.—This haughty nation occupied the whole region bounded east and south by the Hudson River and the Atlantic, west by the ridge which parts the tributaries of the Delaware from those of the Susquehannah and Chesapeake. Their northern boundary extended to the sources of the Schuylkill. The Kaaterskill* mountains separated them from the Wappings and from the Minquas,—a Mohawk tribe of that region.

The Delaware Indians, like all other savage tribes occupying regions of great extent, were subdivided into clans, each bearing a local name; as the Assunpinks of Stony creek; the Mingoes and others, about Wilmington; and the Minnisinks, above the forks of the Delaware.

Indian tribes of Long Island.—Some authors who have written on the early history of the Indians, consider the aborigines of Long Island as a branch of the great Delaware race. Others have controverted this opinion. The chief resorts of these islanders were the shores, where they could obtain the fish on which they principally subsisted, and the shells from which the sewan, or wampum, was made. This, most of our readers are aware, was the substitute used, both by the natives and the early colonists, for metallic currency.

Wampum.—The use of small shells of beautiful form and color, seems to have been commonly resorted to, by barbarous races, in all ages, and in all parts of the world, for the same purposes of convenience in traffic as the gold and silver money of civilized nations. The peculiar sort of currency used by the Indians, was, by them, called sewan, or, when collected into bands or belts, wampum. The former designation was retained by the Dutch; the latter was commonly used by the English. It was not an original marine production, but a bead manufactured, with much labor and skill, from the inner part of the conch and the muscle. The beads which were obtained from the former were small, roundish, smooth, and white; those from the latter, bluish in color, oblong in shape, and

* In the early part of our history, proper names sometimes occur in the Dutch orthography. This natural trait it was deemed proper to follow, as an appropriate portion of historical delineation. The resemblance of the Dutch to the English spelling, is usually sufficient to prevent mistakes as to location.

about a third of an inch in length, resembling a portion of a straw or a pipe-stem. Both sorts were perforated, so as to become capable of being strung, and woven into bands, or festooned into fanciful shapes, for ornament.

The laborious mode of obtaining sewan, made it, of course, a commodity of great value, in the early traffic between the natives and the European voyagers and traders. So much were the former attached to the use of it, that they looked with contempt on the gold and silver coins of their visitants, or used them merely as personal ornaments. The colored glass beads introduced by Europeans, however, met with a better acceptance among the Indians, and, ere long, became substitutes for their own manufacture.

The currency of the colonists themselves, for local purposes, seems to have continued long in this barbarous form. Six of the white, and three of the dark beads, were equivalent to a penny. We read that, in the year 1683, the schoolmaster in Flatbush was paid his salary in wheat, "wampum value," and received twelve styvers, in wampum, at every baptism, as compensation for providing the requisite basin of water. In 1693, the ferriage from New York to Brooklyn, was eight styvers in wampum, or a silver twopence.

Wampum belts were used for personal ornaments, for presents, for tribute, for the ratification of treaties, for the expiation of murder,—for every purpose, in short, to which money has been applied, in any stage of society.

Position of the Island tribes.—It is difficult to assign, with accuracy, the limits of the various subdivisions of the island tribes. The Canarisse occupied King's county, and parts of the adjacent region. The Rockaways dwelt in the vicinity of the spot which still bears their name. The Marsapeagues occupied the country extending from Rockaway, through Queen's county, to Huntington; the Mattinnecocks, that reaching from Flushing to Cowharbor; the Manhassetts dwelt on Shelter island; and the Montauks occupied the peninsula, the point of which retains their name. The Dutch usually styled the chief of the last-mentioned tribe sachem, or head chief, of Long Island.

SEC. III.—CHARACTER AND HABITS OF THE INDIANS.

Reading Lesson XII.

Personal appearance of the Indians.—To the eye of the first European visitants, the Indians presented a noble form and dignified mien,—an advantage for which they were indebted to their free mode of life. But this natural air of superiority, was counteracted by the absence of expression and intelligence in the countenance; by the broad, flat features, high cheekbones, low forehead, sunken eyes, small nose, large mouth, and coarse hair, which seemed universally characteristic of the race. The habit, too, of eradicating the beard, and of smearing the face, and even the person, with thickly coated paint, tended to render them, personally, somewhat disgusting to European taste.

Indian dress.—The scanty covering of skins and furs, to which the Indians were habituated, seemed a more natural accompaniment of savage life. But the gaudy decoration of their persons to which they accustomed themselves, on great occasions, was, in the estimation of Europeans, fantastic and puerile. Their winter covering was usually a loose robe of furs; their summer costume amounted to no more than a scanty piece of skin, wrapped or tied round the waist. Children, in their early years, wore nothing in the form of clothing. Women wore, —in addition to an under-garment of dressed deer-skin, fringed with wampum,—an outer robe, fastened by a girdle, and reaching from the waist below the knee.

But after their traffic with the whites gave them access to woollen garments, both sexes usually adopted a mantle of coarse cloth, which they hung over the right shoulder. Their fine natural taste for appropriate color in costume, and their rude but rich style of decoration, often rendered the Indian, when thus equipped, a fitting study for the artist. The robe of the Indian became yet more convenient, when it assumed the form of a blanket, useful at night as well as by day.

The Indian's mode of life, which led him to traverse swamp and forest, rendered indispensable a covering for the legs and feet. The moccasons, or shoes, and the leggings which he wore, were usually made of dressed deerskin, tastefully ornamented.

The Indian style of wearing the hair was peculiar, and, usually, distinctive of the individual;—some wearing it only on the crown of the head, some preferring to have it grow in the form of a ridge or mane, in one strip, from the brow to the neck, and to have this ridge cropped and erected into a crest, by the aid of bear's grease.

The Indian women wore their hair bound, at the back of the head, in a club, shaped like a beaver's tail, over which they wore a square cap, decorated with wampum. Both sexes wore ornaments of feathers, shells, and plates of copper, suspended from the ears and the nose. The taste of the men inclined them often to appropriate the finery which the Europeans designed for the women.—An amusing instance of this nature is given in the work of an early French traveller, who tells of a Huron warrior's plundering his bride of her wedding-dress, and parading in it with great pomp, before the French donors.

The men prided themselves on their success in smearing themselves with the most hideous colors, when preparing for battle, and desirous of striking terror into the hearts of their enemies. In this process they were eminently successful, when, in subsequent times of war, they presented themselves, in such fiendish guise, to the terrified women and children of the whites.

Reading Lesson XIII.

Indian prowess.—The first impressions which the Europeans derived from the appearance and habits of the Indians, were, as might naturally be expected, false and exaggerated. The natives were, at first, thought to be as powerful in body as their aspect implied. But a nearer acquaintance proved them to be inferior to the European race, in muscular vigor and energy, although capable of enduring privation and fatigue, to a wonderful extent. —This result they owed partly to the experience of want, occasionally incident to savage life, and their accustomed long fasts and vigils, with the use of bitter draughts,—a discipline to which their stoic pride of endurance, and their ambition of distinction, led them to submit, to a degree that appears to have bordered, sometimes, on self-destruction.

From such training, the Indian derived his noted habits

of patient perseverance, in pursuit of game, on his long hunting excursions, and his fortitude in suffering the personal tortures to which he was sure to be subjected, when he fell into the hands of a hostile tribe, in time of war. In the latter case, his glory was to die scoffing at the vain attempts of his enemies to cause him once to writhe or groan. To evince a feeling of pain, or even of grief, was, in his estimation, to degrade the character of a warrior to that of a boy or a woman. At the stake itself, he chanted his death-song, as a prelude to the scene of torment, and, in a spirit of sublime triumph, offered up his life, with all the solemnity and deliberation of an accepted sacrifice, on the altar of war.

With all his peculiar fortitude, however, in the hour of captivity, and in the act of suffering an inevitable death, there was nothing noble, nothing human in his mode of warfare: he delighted to steal unperceived upon his enemy, and murder him, while yet asleep. His warfare was always, if practicable, one of extermination; and he glutted his savage vengeance with the blood of women and children.

SEC. IV.—INDIAN LIFE.

Indian modes of hunting.—The Indians were universally expert in the art of killing or securing game of all sorts, whether for the purpose of obtaining food or clothing from the animals which they hunted. Traps, nets, and snares, of various forms and ingenious contrivance, they used with wonderful skill and success, in the capture of the bear, and the beaver, and of the smaller tribes of animals which come under the designation of game.

But the hunting excursions from which the Indian derived his chief annual supplies of food, to be dried and stored against winter, were commenced after solemn ceremonies connected with abstinence and watching, and the careful observation of dreams. The hunt was, on these occasions, an expedition embracing the force of a whole tribe; and the mode of attacking the game was that, formerly pursued in Europe, of driving all the wild animals of a given region into a central spot, where they were destroyed, in vast numbers, by spears, arrows, clubs, and other weapons, such as the skill of savage contrivers could furnish.

After the chase was over, feasting, and formal songs and dances followed; and these ceremonies were sometimes renewed, on the return of the party to the homes of their tribe.

Indian agriculture.—Labor, in any form, the Indian deemed a servile employment; and, with the prejudices natural to the savage, regarding woman as inferior, he devolved on the sex not only the customary toils of the household, but those also of the field, or, rather, the garden; for farming could hardly be said to exist among the Indian tribes. Maize, beans, and pumpkins, were the chief vegetable productions to which the natives devoted their attention; and these they cultivated in small spots favorable for the purpose, in the immediate vicinity of their wigwams. The grain which they did not wish immediately to use, was stored under ground, in holes lined with bark. When wanted, it was taken out, and ground or bruised between stones. From the coarse meal thus obtained, they made cakes, and their favorite porridge, called sappaan.*

Reading Lesson XIV.

Indian dwellings.—The abodes of the Indian tribes were of the simplest and rudest structure. They were formed of hickory saplings stuck in the ground, and bent, at top, into an arch. This frame-work was covered with bark, save where an opening was left, in the central part, for the escape of the smoke of their fire. The size of their dwellings, varied, with the wealth of the owner, from that of a small hut to that of an ample house.

Their furniture was limited to couches of rushes or of skins. Tables and chairs were, to them, unnecessary. Their domestic utensils were usually limited to a few pots and kettles; wooden mortars and stone pestles, for pounding corn; hollow shells, for spoons; and flat ones, sharpened, for knives; with stone hatchets. To these were added the paddles of their canoes, and the nets and other implements used in hunting, and the rude wooden spade with which the squaw dug the soil, in their limited style of gardening. The only decoration of the walls, consisted in the pipe and weapons of the warrior, festooned

* Pronounced, *sappawn.*

with the scalps taken in war, from the heads of his enemies.

Indian villages.—The aborigines of New Netherland, like other Indian tribes, dwelt, for the advantage of mutual security and aid, in little communities, each under its own chief. Their villages were at a distance of, sometimes, twenty miles from each other, and were situated, usually, on the sunny side of a small but steep hill, sloping down to a lake or stream; the common cornfield lying on the level between. The whole was enclosed by a strong stockade, to protect the inhabitants from surprise or attack; as war was an event by no means rare among the Indian tribes of this region.

The life of the Indians, though social, was migratory. In summer, they frequented the streams, lakes, and bays, for the facility of fishing. In winter, they frequented the forests, where they practised the chase, in pursuit of deer and other wild animals.

Indian canoes.—The summer life of the Indian races, rendered them dependent, to a great extent, on the canoes in which they pursued their occupation of fishing. Imperfect as were the resources of the natives, their canoes exhibited one of the chief triumphs of their skill and perseverance. Some of these vessels were formed by burning out the heart of massive logs, and afterwards finishing them with their rude stone hatchets. Others were neatly and compactly formed by stitching together, by means of withes and thongs, large pieces of the bark of the white birch-tree. In these slight fabrics, impelled by a broad paddle, the Indians glided, with amazing swiftness, over the surface of lake and stream. Some of their canoes would hold a dozen persons, and vast loads of grain, furs, or fish.

Government and laws.—The form of government universally prevalent among the Indian nations of North America, combined the twofold character of an absolute monarchy, in time of war, and a republic, in time of peace. The affairs of the nation were managed by a council of the eldest and bravest of each tribe. But, in their warlike expeditions, they were under the sole irresponsible direction of their sachem, or war-chief, who was chosen from among the bravest, by universal suffrage, and who, although the office never was hereditary, usually held his post till death or old age,—when another election

took place. The honor of holding the office was all the remuneration which an Indian chief received. Not only was there no compensation for service; but custom imposed on the sachem the necessity of giving away the spoils which he had taken, or which had been awarded to him, in war.

SEC. V.—INDIAN WARFARE.

Reading Lesson XV.

Warlike life of the Indian races.—The habits of savage life, in all climates of a bracing temperature, incline to the condition of war, as the natural state of man, while subsisting by the chase. Of this fact the Indians of New Netherland were conspicuous examples. They lived in perpetual hostilities, caused either by the warlike ambition and traditional feuds of the great nations among them, or by the quarrels of subordinate tribes, and even of petty villages.

Preliminary ceremonies.—The warlike expeditions of the Indians, were undertaken with great parade and formality. The head chief consecrated himself to his office by fasting, watching, and abstinence, and the use of bitter draughts, supposed to have the power of causing vivid dreams, or visions approaching to hallucination. The prophet, or priest, of the tribe, united the virtue of his incantations and divinations, to the vigils of the war-chief.

Solemn assemblies were, meantime, held; in the intervals of which the orators of the tribe harangued the warriors on the glorious character and achievements of their own tribe, and poured contempt on their enemies. On these occasions, all the graphic incentives and sententious pith of Indian eloquence, were used to inflame the martial spirit of the tribe. A wampum belt was thrown down in the midst of the circle, which none but he who felt himself entitled to hold the second place in command, dared to take up.

The war-feast.—As the day of the expedition drew near, the war-chief exchanged the sable coat of paint which he had hitherto worn, for one of varied color, on a ground of bright red. The caldron for the great war-feast, was now suspended over a huge fire, and received the contributions of all present, to the grand banquet. When the feast was over, the head chief sang his war-song, and

was followed, in the act, by the principal warriors of the tribe. The war-song was a rhythmical chant, setting forth the exploits of the hero and his ancestors. The war-dance accompanied the recital; and the time of the whole movement was marked on a rude sort of drum.

The eve of battle.—The night following the great war-feast, was devoted to the solemnities of arming and decorating the person of the warrior, and assuming his favorite emblems and colors. Their "manittous," or images of their guardian deities, were now deposited in a common box, and borne before the advancing host. The war-whoop of the tribe was raised, and repeated, at intervals, along the march; its fiendlike screech indicating the atrocities which were to ensue.

On approaching the enemies' country, the strictest silence succeeded, and was preserved till the moment of assault. The invaders, approaching with stealthy caution and noiseless tread, at length, with a simultaneous yell of their war-whoop, sprang upon their startled foes, and commenced the havoc of their merciless warfare. The attack ceased not but with the destruction or capture of the men, the massacre of the women and children, and the scalping of the dead, amid the burning and plundering of the wigwams.

Warlike implements.—The principal weapons of the Indians, were bows and arrows: the former, remarkably powerful and elastic; the latter, headed with sharp stones, fastened to the stem with resinous cement. To these were added,—previous to the period when the natives became acquainted with European fire-arms,—a war-club, the head of which was formed principally of extremely hard and well sharpened stone; a scalping-knife, of strong, sharp shell; and, more rarely, a wooden spear and shield, of the hardest sort of wood, carefully seasoned, and yet farther hardened by fire.

Indian triumph.—With the scalps of the slain, and the persons of their captives, the Indian victors returned home, in triumph; exhibiting these trophies in the villages of their allies, through which they passed. The unfortunate prisoners were compelled, at every halt, to run the gauntlet, and in some instances, reached the abode of their enemies, barely alive, to undergo a yet more excruciating torture. On these occasions, the women and

children vied with each other in inflicting the most atrocious cruelties on the captives.

Some of the prisoners, however, were, according to Indian custom, adopted into the families of the victorious tribe, to replace the members who had fallen in battle; and these were immediately received into the wigwams of those by whom they were adopted, provided with abundance of food, clothed with the richest attire, and uniformly treated with the utmost kindness.

Death-scene at the stake.—The captive who found no one disposed to adopt him, was now subjected to all the horrors of the most painful form of death. These, however, he bore with the characteristic fortitude of his race, and expired in the very act of singing his death-song, or of taunting his enemies with the number of their tribe who had fallen by his hand; and mocking at the vain attempts of his torturers, to wring from him one groan of anguish.

SEC. VI.—NATIONAL CUSTOMS AND SUPERSTITIONS,—AMUSEMENTS.

Reading Lesson XVI.

Treaties of peace.—These were usually conducted with solemn public ceremonies. On such occasions, a deputation of distinguished chiefs from the tribe which desired peace, went, in state, carrying the calumet, or great pipe of peace,—the hallowed emblem of truce,—everywhere respected among the Indians; and, with the calumet, usually were carried the wampum belts designed as presents, in reparation of injuries, or remuneration for losses, or intended to be used as marks of the different stipulations proposed in the act of forming a treaty.

The orator of the suppliant tribe, was received at a great national council, where he proposed terms, and urged their acceptance; depositing, at each proposal, a belt of wampum. If these offerings were accepted by the opposite party, similar returns were made; and the interchange of presents denoted the ratification of the treaty, which was consummated by a solemn public act of burying the hatchet, in token of peaceful intentions.

Religion of the Indian tribes.—The ideas entertained by the Indians, on the subject of religion, were exceedingly crude and absurd, as well as grossly material, in

their character. The representations, indeed, of the early French writers on America, would lead to a very different conclusion. They seem to have regarded the Indians as actuated by a deep and intelligent feeling of natural piety, as recognizing a purely spiritual god, the creator of all things, whom they designated by the appellation of the Great Spirit.

Such impressions, however, were derived from the imaginations of European observers, little versed in the actual habits of the aborigines, beyond the customary intercourse of civilized men with savages, and incapable, therefore, of forming or communicating correct ideas of what they saw. Subsequent travellers, visiting the Indian tribes, and carrying with them the impressions already formed, were naturally led to cherish and perpetuate the erroneous representations of their predecessors. An extensive currency was thus given to such errors.

Indian notions of deity.—The actual faith and worship of the Indians, were of the lowest character. The supreme Being they regarded as indifferent to the world which he had created, and inaccessible to the mind of man. But when sick, or unsuccessful in war and hunting, they used every expedient which their ingenuity could suggest, to pacify and propitiate the author of Evil. Hence their numerous ceremonies and sacrifices, in homage to a malignant rather than a benevolent Power.

"*Powow.*"—One of their national rites, of the description just mentioned, was that which bore the name of the 'powow." This was a sort of grotesque incantation, performed at sunset, and consisted of a series of simultaneous jumpings, contortions, and grimaces, accompanied by the most hideous bellowing, around large fires, which, whether they served to chase away the dreaded Evil One or not, displayed, in the most striking manner, all the preternatural horrors of the scene, while every performer seemed to vie with his fellows, in uncouth postures, tumbling and rolling, in every variety of style that a savage fancy could suggest.

An omen of their success was drawn from the first animal that presented itself, at the close of the scene. This animal was believed to be endowed with supernatural power, for the purpose of responding to their interrogations, and, if ravenous, was supposed to indicate evil; if

harmless, to betoken good. The presence of a European, on such occasions, was avoided, as fatal to the effect of the powow.

Belief in "manittous."—The absence of a superintending deity the Indian made up for, by his belief in the innumerable manittous, or guardian demons, whom he believed to preside over the elements, and over every creature possessed of life. Each individual had his manittou, who protected him, from the moment of his birth to that of his death. The image of this manittou, carved in the shape of a human head, was worn around the neck, as a protection from evil, when the Indian was abroad, or occupied in his customary pursuits. In war, the manittous of the whole host were, as was mentioned before, gathered into one coffer, and borne before the army, on its march. At night, they were intrusted with the protection of the camp.

Reading Lesson XVII.

Indian notions of immortality.—Rude as the ideas of the Indian were, regarding the being of a god, they were of a much higher order, in relation to the nature and destination of the soul. The spirituality of the soul was distinctly recognized, in the Indian's faith, as was also the doctrine of retribution. The souls of the good and brave were thought to depart to a scene of bliss, where a genial clime and a prolific soil afforded perpetual enjoyment; while those of the vile and the cowardly went to a region of disquiet and misery, or wandered about, moaning in the night winds, and howling in the depths of the forest.

Indian mode of burial.—The regard paid by the Indians to the interment of their dead, was a remarkable point in their customs. The body of a deceased warrior lay in state, for several days, decorated with all its festive equipments, and, honored by the lamentations of his family. It was then interred in a sitting attitude, to be ready for a speedy resurrection. The accustomed implements of the hero were placed around him, and, near to these, utensils and food, for his long journey to the spirit land. A rude notion of the resurrection of the body, mingled with their ideas of a future life.

The body of the deceased was protected from injury, by piles of wood, bark, or stone, which were enclosed

within a palisade. The burial-ground was, in the estimation of the Indian, a hallowed place. It was visited, at intervals, by the relations of the deceased, who there renewed their lamentations for his death. The Indian widow, sometimes, would stain her face, shave off her hair, and burn it on the grave of her departed husband.

Indian cosmogony.—The notions which the Indian tribes entertained regarding the creation of the world, were grotesque, in the extreme. A female, they imagined, fell from heaven, and, taking her stand on the back of a tortoise, scraped up and fashioned the earth, from the bottom of the great deep. Subsequently, she gave birth to all the tribes of animated nature, and, at last, returned to her native heaven.

Indian "medicine-men."—Sunk in ignorance and superstition, the Indian races were subjected to all manner of imposition and delusion, at the hands of their "medicine-men,"—as they called those by whose cunning and jugglery they were habitually influenced. These sorcerers usually presided at their powows, expounded dreams, and practised medicine and surgery. Their modes of cure were, for the most part, the administering of beverages obtained from the leaves, twigs, and roots of various plants; the application of balsams and cautery; and the use of alternate vapor and water baths.

When such means failed to effect a cure, the medicine-man resorted to sorcery, as the only means of counteracting the malignant demon of disease. He invoked, with wild cries, accompanied by grotesque dancing, the aid of his manittou; and, at length, as if he had discovered the seat of the disease, rushed upon his patient, tore the body of his victim with his teeth, and pretended thus to extract the malady. If the disease continued obstinate, many other hideous devices, resembling, not a little, the alleged practices of witchcraft, were put in force; such as surrounding the sufferer with images wearing frightful masks, to scare away the spirit of disease, or setting up an image to personify the ailment, and piercing it with an arrow or dart, so as to destroy the malignant power.

Reading Lesson XVIII.

Indian amusements.—In times of peace, and of relaxation from the toils of the chase, the Indians recreated

themselves with social singing and dancing. The former exercise consisted, on such occasions, in chanting, in rude style, the might of the bear or other animal which the reciter had slain. The dancing was then either the calumet or peace dance, the dance after the chase, the corn-dance, at harvest home, the marriage-dance, or a mystic dance, resembling, somewhat, that before described, which was designed to propitiate the spirit of Evil. The last-mentioned was an exercise of the most degrading and disgusting character, and was led by their medicine-men.

The aborigines seem to have practised, among their social recreations, a sort of carnival, or time of universal riot and unbounded extravagance. This license continued for fifteen days; and, during this time, the sole object of each individual seemed to be the wildest violation of the usual gravity and decorum of Indian life. The revellers ran about disguised, playing every sort of mad prank upon one another, even to the destruction of furniture and implements, and throwing water, ashes, or dirt at whatever individual did not furnish an agreeable interpretation to a pretended dream of the interrogator. These Indian saturnalia seem to have resembled those of the European world, in the olden-time carnival sport of "read me my riddle!"

Decorum was restored, after these extravagances, by a regulated public feast, at which due compensation for all damage done to individuals, was carefully made.

Gaming.—One of the customary amusements of the Indian people, was gaming, which their deep and intense passions rendered irresistibly attractive to them; and which they regarded as, in a measure, a solemn ceremony, to be preceded by devotional fasting, and the interpretation of dreams. A favorite form of play, among them, was, "the game of the bones," which was played somewhat in the manner of dice; the bones being thrown up in the air, and the position in which they fell deciding the progress of the game. Like the gamesters of more polished nations, the Indian devotees to this destructive practice, frequently cast their whole property on the hazard of the game, and lost it, and, sometimes, even pledged the earnings of a whole future season of the chase.

SEC. VII.—TREATMENT OF THE INDIANS.

Influence of the whites on the Indian race.—The original character and condition of the natives of New Netherland, have undergone a vast change, in consequence of their communication with Europeans. The selfish eagerness of the whites to acquire territory, led them to displace the aborigines, without a thought of the fatal consequences to the red men. The unreflecting savages were induced to sell their land, in exchange for clothing, weapons, and toys of little value; and the bargain was not unfrequently driven while the poor Indian was staggering under the intoxicating liquor administered by the European. Tract after tract was thus purchased by the one party, and relinquished by the other. Nor has the Indian even yet found "rest for the sole of his foot." Another and another treaty is made, at short intervals; and the red man continues to recede, till imagination can foresee no end to the process, but in the extinction of the unfortunate race.

The policy which is now pursued, in negotiating with the Indian tribes, is, it is true, more just and humane than formerly; and the state of New York yet preserves, within the bosom of her territory, the living evidences of her comparative kindness in the treatment of the red men. But the temptation to become possessed of their domain, is still too strong for the sense of justice in the mind of the "speculator," whose eye is fixed only on gain, and who seems never to have heard the Divine precept, "Whatsoever ye would that men should do unto you, do ye even so unto them." The legislature of our state, is, we believe, prepared to check every encroachment on the rights of the fallen race, and to evince that New York is entitled in this, as in all her other relations, to wear her suggestive motto,* so characteristic of the spirit of the state.

Private philanthropy is now coöperating with public justice, to meliorate the condition of the Indian. Teachers, and missionaries, and mechanics, are now uniting their endeavors, in the spirit of christian zeal, to enlighten and civilize and save the remnant of the Indian race, in this, as in other states of the Union; and their success has, of late years, been such as to encourage the best hopes of every philanthropic heart.

* "*Excelsior!*"—higher.

The general government of our country has taken a decisive step towards improving the condition of the Indians, in the fact of its discouraging the introduction of ardent spirits among them, as an article of traffic, and in various other measures which it has adopted for the purpose of securing the otherwise defenceless Indian from falling a prey to the cupidity of unprincipled traders, or of his own weakness and ignorance.

The diligent efforts of piety and philanthropy, are thus effectually seconded; and the result cannot fail of accomplishing immense and permanent good for the natives. The demon of rum once expelled from their borders, and the blessing of a permanent home secured to them, the useful arts introduced among them, and the spirit of industry infused into their habits by the benign influence of christianity, the Indian tribes will have a new career opened to them, in which to prove themselves men "of one blood" with those who are now exclusively invested with the high advantages of civilization.

CHAP. II.—DISCOVERY AND EXPLORATION.

SEC. I.—EARLY VOYAGES TO NORTH AMERICA.

Reading Lesson XIX.

English claims to North America.—We proceed to offer to our readers an outline of the principal events which are recorded in the history of New York, from the date of its discovery and exploration, to the present era. The plan of our work limits our historical sketch to prominent features only; and we shall feel satisfied if the matter which we present in this part of the Class-Book, shall have the effect of leading our readers to consult, for themselves, whatever volumes on this subject, may fall into their hands, in the course of their reading.*

* It is earnestly to be hoped, by all who are interested in education, that an extensive and complete history of New York, for adult readers, may, ere long, be published. Mr. O'Callaghan's excellent volume is, we trust, the commencement of such a work.

The history of any portion of the western continent, refers us to the national custom, formerly current in Europe, of claiming possession of newly discovered countries, in virtue of what was termed the right of discovery. The subjects of any European power, who happened to be the first christian visitants of any region not occupied by civilized nations, claimed, in virtue of that circumstance, the exclusive right to the actual possession, or, at all events, to the privilege of pre-emption, or first purchase, of the country which they discovered. This practice, absurd though it was, had obtained a consent so general as to give it, in the minds of men who lived at the period of the discovery of this continent by Columbus, a sanction invested with all the sacredness of justice.

The English nation, acting under the influence of the custom then prevalent, asserted a right, on this ground, to the whole northern portion of the American continent, because it had been discovered, though not explored, by John and Sebastian Cabot, during the voyage which they made to the western hemisphere, under the patronage of Henry, the Seventh, of England, in 1497–98.

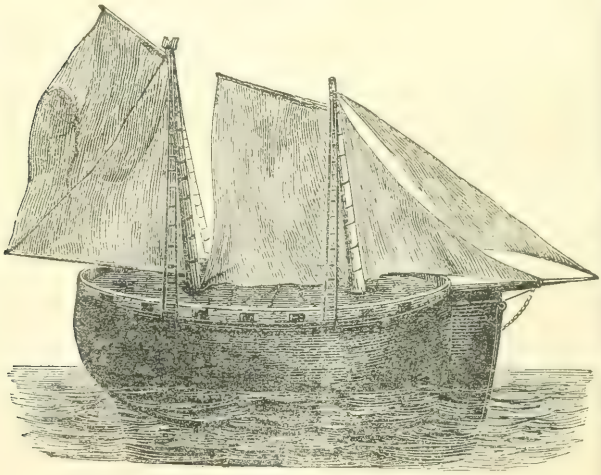
*Verrazano.**—The bay of New York, however, was first visited in the year 1524, by Verrazano, a Florentine navigator, in the service of the French sovereign, Francis the First, an ardent patron of science and art. Of this voyage Verrazano's own account is extant. The French monarch, however, seems to have been content with the glory accruing from the patronage of a voyage of discovery; for no steps were taken by him or his subjects, to secure possession of the region then visited on behalf of the French crown.

Hudson's Voyage, undertaken for the Amsterdam Company.—The states of Holland, when they threw off their subjection to the Spanish rule, lost, of course, the commercial benefits resulting from their connection with that power; and they now prosecuted, with great spirit, extensive voyages of discovery and exploration, with a view to replace the advantages which they previously derived from their extensive commerce, not only with Spain and its colonies, but with all other parts of the German empire, as it existed under Charles the Fifth. Among the proj-

* Pronounced, *Verratsáno;*—the accented *a* sounding as in the word *arm*.

ects then attempted for these purposes, was that of exploring a northern passage to India.

Repeated failures in such attempts, did not discourage Henry Hudson, an English mariner, from offering his services to the Dutch East-India company, for yet another voyage with the same object in view. The Amsterdam chamber of commerce accepted his proposals, and provided him with a small vessel, rigged somewhat like a large wherry, or fly-boat, a favorite style of naval architecture with the Dutch. This diminutive but somewhat clumsy "rover of the deep," was named the Half-Moon, and was manned with a crew, partly English and partly Dutch, amounting to nearly twenty men.



THE HALF-MOON.

[Drawn from the model which has been preserved.]

Hudson sailed from Amsterdam, early in the month of April, 1609; and, baffled by ice and fogs, yet unwilling to relinquish his enterprise, he boldly attempted the discovery of a northwest passage. That he should have failed of accomplishing what the united science, skill, and daring of British navigators,—furnished with the ample means and the immense resources of England, at the present day,—

have not yet been able to effect, is no discredit to the gallant Hudson. His attempt, however, led to a result more useful to the world, than that at which he aimed.

Reading Lesson XX.

Hudson's voyage along the American coast.—After a tempestuous voyage, in which his vessel suffered much damage, Hudson reached the banks of Newfoundland, early in July, descried, soon after, the American coast, and entered Penobscot bay, where he communicated with the natives, and refitted his vessel. Coasting southward, he passed cape Cod, which, under the impression that it was an island, he named New Holland. Here, too, he held friendly intercourse with the natives. Continuing his course, he entered Chesapeake bay, about the middle of August, but soon determined to relinquish the farther prosecution of his voyage in a southerly direction, and, returning, entered Delaware bay.

Hudson's entrance into the bay and harbor of New York.—Resuming his voyage, Hudson coasted northward, till he descried the Highlands of Navesinck, and, early in September, rounded Sandyhook, and anchored, near the shore, in what he termed the Great North River of New Netherland. Here he was visited by large numbers of the natives, who offered tobacco, in exchange for knives and beads. The dress of these savages consisted of mantles of feathers and furs: their decorations were ornaments of copper. The bowls of their pipes seemed to be formed of the same metal.

Resolving to explore the river, which, in honor of his enterprise, has since borne his own name, Hudson despatched a boat's crew, in advance, to examine the channel. These men, on their return, after a survey of a few miles, were attacked by the natives; and one of their number was killed. The name of this individual, Colman, was given to the spot near Sandyhook, where he was interred.

On the occasion of the next visit of the natives, Hudson detained three as hostages; but one made his escape. On the 11th of September, Hudson, in his solitary vessel, passed the Narrows, and anchored in the inner harbor, where now so often may be seen, entering and departing, in vast numbers and ceaseless succession, the stately merchantmen of both hemispheres.

SEC. II.—EXPLORATION OF THE HUDSON.

Hudson's passage up the North River.—The prompting idea of Hudson's mind, in his attempt to explore the river which he had entered, was that, in the distant regions of its source, might be discovered some accessible outlet connected with the long-desired passage to the Indies. Pursuing his course, therefore, he reached the region of the gorge of the Highlands. Here his two remaining hostages made their escape, venting, in yells of rage, their indignation at their detention.

At his successive landings, Hudson and his people were kindly received by the natives, and furnished with all requisites for their comfort, which the resources of these rude people could afford. A brisk traffic was carried on between the natives and their new visitants; the latter receiving furs and other articles, in exchange for the commodities usually found attractive to the people of savage tribes.

Here took place the memorable experiment on the poor natives, in which one of their number, an aged chief, fell the first victim to the intoxicating drink of the white men. And "the long arrear of" similar "guilt," since then contracted, by those who call themselves christians, is yet unwashed out. The Indians, in this case, were, at first, appalled at the effect produced on their sachem, and, in their joy on his recovery, innocently loaded with presents the author of the evil. But the exciting draught had wrought its fatal charm on the ignorant savage; and the thirst for the insidious poison induced him to remain, for a time, with its dispensers. From that hour to this, the "fire-water," has been doing its accursed work,—consuming man after man, and tribe after tribe, till the day seems not distant when not one of the unhappy race who welcomed the white man to their shores, shall remain to intimate that they ever had an existence.

Hudson's return down the North River.—The exploring voyage of the Half-Moon, was prosecuted to a point a little below the city of Albany, where Hudson became satisfied that he could not proceed farther up, with any hope of success in his main purpose. He returned, therefore, as speedily as a southerly wind would permit; landing, however, occasionally, and enjoying the beauty of the scenery, and the hospitality of the natives.

Unhappily, the good understanding, hitherto maintained with the natives, was broken up, while the Half-Moon lay at anchor off Stony Point, in Haverstraw bay. Here an Indian was killed, while making off with some articles which he had pilfered from the vessel. Farther violence followed; and on the next day, large numbers of the natives attacked the vessel. The cannon of the whites killed some, and dispersed the remainder of the assailants. The natives rallied, ere long, however, and again and again renewed the attack, but were, of course, easily repulsed by the fire-arms of the Europeans, and several of their number, in every instance, slain.

Hudson's homeward voyage.—Early in October, Hudson set sail for Holland, "via" England, where, when he arrived, he despatched accounts of his voyage, to his employers in Holland. But the English sovereign, jealous of the Dutch, would not permit Hudson to return to them. The issue was that Hudson entered the service of the London East-India company. His fate was a sad one, in the end; for, on a voyage undertaken for that body, having fallen a victim to a mutiny among his crew, he was exposed in an open boat, and perished at sea.

SEC. III.—DUTCH TRADING VOYAGES, FROM 1610–1620.

Reading Lesson XXI.

Establishment of forts on Manhattan Island.—The accounts of Hudson's successful voyage kindled a spirit of enterprise among the merchants of Holland, and, particularly, those of Amsterdam. The furs which Hudson reported as so easily to be obtained of the natives of New Netherland, were, to the Dutch people, a valuable article not only of domestic use but of foreign traffic; and the fur trade of nearly all Europe subsequently continued long in their hands.

A vessel was fitted out, in 1610, and despatched to the Manhattans, for the purpose of procuring furs in exchange for European goods. This voyage proved so successful as to lead to more extensive measures for prosecuting the profitable trade. In 1612, two vessels, bearing the characteristic names of the Little Fox and the Little Crane, though equipped ostensibly for the farther prosecution of the attempt to explore a northwest passage to India,

visited the North River, in the following year, and established some permanent forts on Manhattan island, for the protection of the fur trade, which they briskly resumed, and which now began to be of acknowledged importance to the people of Holland.

The Dutch establishments on Manhattan island, were all under the care of Hendrick Corstiaensen, a bold, active, and enterprising individual, who ran his small craft into every accessible inlet, and collected a vast amount of valuable furs.

Argal's usurpation of the Dutch trading establishments.—The imperfect ideas, as yet entertained by Europeans, regarding the new regions hitherto but partially explored by the subjects of any government, led to great confusion regarding the rights and claims of various nations to the possession of certain parts of this western continent. The English asserted a right to the whole of North America, in virtue of the voyage of the Cabots, as formerly mentioned, and pretended to regard as intruders the colonists of the Dutch, French, and Spanish nations, who successively established themselves in different parts of the newly discovered regions.

In 1613, accordingly, captain Argal of Virginia, on his return from a hostile expedition to the French settlements in Nova Scotia, called at Manhattan island, and compelled Corstiaensen to submit to the authority of the governor of Virginia, and to acknowledge dependence on the crown of England.

Decree of the States General, in 1614.—With a view to avert, in future, the evils to which the Manhattan colony had been subjected, the States General, or Dutch parliament, issued, in March, 1614, a decree securing to all discoverers the exclusive right of trading, for four successive voyages, in the regions which they had explored. This decree was doubtless intended to have the double effect of securing adventurers of the same nation against encroachments from one another, and from any interference on the part of foreigners; as the protection of the States General was thus pledged to the first occupants.

Expedition of Block, Mey, Corstiaensen, etc.—This decree, although it took no effect on the Manhattan colony, stirred up the Dutch merchants to great activity in the fitting out of fresh expeditions to the new world. The

first of these was despatched from Amsterdam and Hoorn.* It consisted of the following ships,—the Little Fox, the Nightingale, the Tiger, and two vessels both bearing the name of the Fortune. One of these two was from Hoorn, and was commanded by Cornelis Jacobson Mey, whose name is retained in cape May. The Tiger was commanded by Adriaen Block, whose name was given to Block Island. The Amsterdam vessel, called the Fortune, was under the command of the energetic Hendrick Corstiaensen.

Reading Lesson XXII.

Block's exploring voyage.—Soon after the arrival of the above vessels, the three captains, before mentioned, proceeded to explore the mouth of the Great River of the Manhattans, as it was then sometimes called. Here, Block had the misfortune to lose his vessel by fire. But the Dutch sailors of those times being generally ship-carpenters of great skill, he immediately set his men to work; and they soon constructed the first vessel built in North America,—a yacht, forty-four feet in length, and eleven and a half in width. This vessel, sufficiently well adapted to a coasting survey, was named the Onrest, (the Restless,) in allusion to the roving spirit of enterprise which caused her to be built.

Origin of the name Hellgate.—Setting sail in his new craft, Block proceeded to explore the coast east of Manhattan island. To the East River he gave the name of Hellegat,†—that of one of the branches of the river Scheldt‡ in Flanders. This name the English corrupted into its present form, Hellgate, which was afterwards falsely supposed to have been given with reference to the perils which that rocky spot presents to navigation; and the desire to avoid the allusion suggested by the sound of this name, has led to the mistake of spelling it Hurl Gate.

Discovery of Housatonic and Connecticut rivers.—Prosecuting his voyage eastward, Block discovered the river called by the natives, Houestenuc, or River of the Red Mountain, and afterwards, by the English, Housatonic.

* Pronounced, *Hôrn.*

† Hellegat, (clear or bright river,) pronounced, *Hayllaygát.*

‡ *Shaylt.*

Proceeding still eastward, he discovered and sailed up the Connecticut, as far as to latitude 41° 48′ where he found a village of the Nawaa* Indians. To the stream he gave the name of Fresh River, which was not retained.

Navigation of Long-Island Sound.—After returning down the Connecticut, he still pursued an easterly course through Long-Island Sound, which he imagined a bay, till he regained the ocean, and ascertained Long Island to be properly so called. To one of two small islands, at the eastern extremity of the great island, he gave his own name, which it retains to this day. To the other he gave the name of his fellow navigator Corstiaensen. But posterity has not, in this case, observed equal justice, by retaining the name of the hardy Dutch skipper who was so conspicuous in the early history of New Netherland.

Narragansett Bay.—Block, on this voyage, discovered and explored Narragansett bay, which, in compliment to the prince of Orange-Nassau, of his native land, he called the bay of Nassau. The natives along its shores he found shy and distrustful, and could hold little communication with them.

Pursuing his course to cape Cod, he there rejoined Corstiaensen, and thus terminated his exploring voyage.

Voyage of Cornelis Mey.—While Block was exploring the Sound, Mey coasted the southern shore of Long Island, which he examined with great care. He then followed the line of the coast southward to Delaware bay; and from his visit capes Cornelis and May derived their names. The great south cape, now Henlopen, he named after Hindlopen, a town in the province of Friesland.

Origin of the name New Netherland.—The discoveries made by Block and his associates were duly reported in Holland; and the company for whose benefit they had been made, secured their monopoly of trade, for the lawful period, by presenting a map of the whole region, then first called "Nieu Nederlandt,"—New Netherland.

Reading Lesson XXIII.

First trading-houses erected on the North River.—Overlooking the previous exploration by Hudson, the Dutch government granted to the claimants, in the present in-

* *Naw-wâw.*

stance, the exclusive right to trade in the whole region of New Netherland; and the company, thus authorized, proceeded to erect a trading-house, strongly fortified, on an island, a few miles below Albany, at the head of navigation, on the North River,—then named Mauritius river, in honor of prince Maurice of Holland. They built also another, on the southern extremity of Manhattan island. The former was under the command of a humane and enlightened man, Jacob Eelkens,* who conducted the Indian trade on principles of strict justice and humane feeling. The latter station was assigned to the intelligent and enterprising Corstiaensen.

To these two posts, the one serving as a check on the warlike Mohawks, and the other on the fierce Manhattans, flocked the people of the native tribes, to dispose of their furs; and thither came, every year, the ships of the New-Netherland company to receive the furs which, during the year, had been collected from all the surrounding region, and even from the remotest haunts of the Five Nations. No pains were spared to maintain extensive and friendly communications with all the native tribes accessible to Europeans; and the traffic thus secured was, owing to the high value of furs, abundantly lucrative to the Dutch traders and their employers, many of whom thus accumulated immense fortunes.

Dutch treaty with the Five Nations.—The fort commanded by Eelkens suffered such damage from the breaking up of the ice, and from the spring flood, in the year 1618, that it had to be abandoned. A new site was chosen on the Norman's Kill,—the name given to Tawalsontha creek, from the surname of an early settler, Andries Bratt De Noorman,—of Danish origin.

As a proper measure of security, at this time, a treaty was here ratified with the Iroquois,† or Five Nations. The territory of these tribes extended from the North River and lake Champlain, on the east, to lake Erie and the river Niagara, on the west, and from lake Ontario and the St. Lawrence, on the north, to the country of the Delaware Indians, on the south.

The Iroquois, at the time when the Dutch established themselves in their country, were at war with the Algonquins, a nation inhabiting the adjoining regions of Cana-

* Pronounced, *Ailkins.* † *Eeroqwaw.*

da, then colonized by the French. The aid of fire-arms, derived from their French allies, gave to the Algonquins an easy surperiority over the Iroquois; and the latter, therefore, gladly embraced the opportunity of cultivating the friendship of the Dutch, as the means of securing the same advantages which their enemies enjoyed through their alliance with the French.

The treaty ratified on the banks of the Norman's Kill, was celebrated with all the forms and ceremonies to which the Indians were so devotedly attached. The advantages derived from it, by both parties, were of the utmost value to each. The Dutch secured, by it, the whole fur trade of the Iroquois nations; and the latter obtained the means of rendering themselves formidable to all the surrounding tribes.

SEC. IV.—THE DUTCH WEST-INDIA COMPANY.—1621-1638.

Reading Lesson XXIV.

Origin of the Company.—One of the most opulent and powerful commercial establishments of Europe, in the seventeenth century, was the Dutch East-India company. The struggle which Holland so long and successfully maintained for its independence of the Spanish sovereignty, had imparted a spirit of energy and enterprise to the Dutch merchants, which led them to embark, on the most extensive scale, in colonial and maritime adventures, and to cherish, in their mariners, every means of attaining a consummate skill in naval warfare. Their magnificent East-India-men, equipped in the amplest style for every purpose of commerce and of war, were among the wonders of the day. They were the pride of the nation, and seemed to sanction the claim of the Dutch to the supremacy of the seas.

The brilliant success of their maritime enterprises in the East, led to the formation of the Dutch West-India company,—an association which extended itself throughout the principal cities of Holland. The executive authority of this powerful body, was vested in the chamber of commerce at Amsterdam.

The States General, regarding the new company as an important source of national revenue and power, and an additional arm to be wielded against the naval force of

Spain, secured to the association the freedom of navigation and traffic, together with an ample marine for protection, in case of war. The privileges granted to private adventurers, were, in the meantime, restricted to the date anticipated for the commencement of operations on the part of the company.

English protest against Dutch colonization.—The English colonial companies whose interests were at stake in Virginia and in New England, took the alarm at these formidable preparations, on the part of Holland; and remonstrances against these proceedings, were despatched to their "High Mightinesses," the States General; as the English nation still asserted their original claim, in virtue of the right of discovery and partial occupation, to that part of America which lay between the Spanish possessions on the south, and those of the French on the north.

The Dutch government at first parried this application by denying any intention of colonizing, although they persisted in the undertaking so far as regarded purposes of traffic; and the English, content, for the time, with the implied concession of their claims, prosecuted the matter no farther.

CHAP. III.—NEW YORK, UNDER THE DUTCH WEST-INDIA COMPANY.

SEC. I.—ADMINISTRATION OF DIRECTOR MINUIT.—1624-1633.

Reading Lesson XXV.

First Dutch colonial expedition.—After the death of King James I. of England, the silence of the English claimants seems to have induced a revival of the Dutch project of colonization. Preparations for this purpose were commenced in 1622; and, in the summer of the following year, New Netherland was erected into a province of Holland. Colonists, consisting, at first, of the company's agents and servants, were sent out, to establish permanent settlements. Of one of these expeditions captain Mey, formerly mentioned, was commander; and, re-

turning to the river which he had first explored, he erected fort Nassau on a site near to the present town of Gloucester. A new post, called fort Orange, was, about the same time, established on the Hudson, a few miles north of that formerly mentioned as erected on the Norman's Kill.

Peter Minuit, the first Dutch governor of New Netherland.—In the year 1624, Peter Minuit, or Minnewit, a Westphalian, came out to New Netherland, with the formal appointment of director, or governor, of the colony. In company with the governor, arrived a colony of Walloons,* a people distinguished, since the days of Julius Cæsar, for fierce and warlike character, and, in modern history, for their steadfast devotion to the Protestant faith.

Origin of the names Wallabout and Brooklyn.—Some of these Walloon emigrants settled, at first, on Staten island, but afterwards removed to the vicinity of Wallabout bay,—originally named from these early settlers, Waal-boght, or Wahle-bocht, (Foreigners' Bay.) This settlement extended, at a subsequent period, to the site of the modern city of Brooklyn, the original name of which was Breukelen,—that of a Dutch village, in the province of Utrecht.

Colonial government of New Netherland.—The primitive form of government in New Netherland, included, in addition to the director, a council of five, and a prosecuting officer, called the "schout fiscal," whose duties combined those of sheriff and attorney-general.

Purchase of Manhattan Island.—Under the guidance and control of these guardians, the Dutch establishments advanced rapidly in prosperity; and, in 1626, the West-India company deemed it worth while to assign an armed ship and a yacht, as a permanent naval protection to the colony. Manhattan island was also purchased of the natives, who, in their simplicity, accepted the paltry sum of twenty-four dollars, as an equivalent for one of the noblest sites which any commercial city in the world can boast.

Origin of the name New Amsterdam.—The purchase of Staten island and other portions of the adjacent country, soon followed; and a substantial blockhouse was erected at the southern point of Manhattan island. This post,

* Inhabitants of the frontier region between Belgium and France.

called fort Amsterdam, in compliment to the city which was the European head quarters of the West-India company, became the central point of New Amsterdam,—the capital of New Netherland, and the original of the modern city of New York.

Correspondence with the English colony at New Plymouth.—The year 1627 is distinguished, in the early history of New York, by the commencement of a correspondence between the Dutch authorities at fort Amsterdam and the English colonists established at Plymouth, in Massachusetts. This correspondence was opened by the former, with expressions of friendly regard, and proposals for traffic. The English governor replied in terms of courtesy, but warned the Dutch against trading with the Narragansetts, or extending their traffic beyond the limits of forty degrees, north latitude.

The reply of the Dutch authorities, was friendly and respectful, but firmly maintained their right to trade, as previously, with the natives. A present of sugar and cheese, for the English governor's larder, accompanied the written communication. The correspondence, it may be observed, was maintained by the Dutch through the medium of the French language.

Governor Bradford acknowledged the civilities of the Dutch colonists, and proposed that they should send a deputation to confer on the subject of trade at New Plymouth. In the meantime, he suggested the great importance of a mutual understanding between the Dutch and English home governments, on matters of territory and commercial traffic.

Isaac De Razier* was accordingly deputed from fort Amsterdam, and received with due ceremony at New Plymouth. An opening of the commerce between the two colonies, was made, on the occasion, by purchases, on the part of the English. The intercourse thus begun, was continued, for many years, to the great advantage of both parties; the English disposing of fish and corn, in exchange for the manufactures of Holland, and for the sewan, or wampum, which formed so important an article in trading with the natives.

* Pronounced, *Ratseer.*— The English pronunciation of Dutch names, is inappropriate, in reading our local history, till it comes down to the English period.

The terms of subsequent commerce, were, however, left to be adjusted at a future day; as the English colony was awaiting the return of an agent who had been despatched to Europe for the purpose of securing appropriate supplies. In the meantime, the Dutch were again reminded of the urgent necessity of a formal recognition of rights of occupancy, on both sides, lest their claims should, hereafter, prove cause of hostility.

Alarmed by this hint, the government at fort Amsterdam wrote home, on this subject, to the Dutch West-India company. But the application had been anticipated, and a treaty made with the English government, in consequence of which all British ports were thrown open to the trading vessels of New Netherland, as well as those of all other parts of the Dutch dominions.

Reading Lesson XXVI.

Efforts to promote colonization.—The affairs of the Dutch West-India company, although well conducted by their agents in America, began to retrograde, in consequence of the diminution in both the supply and the value of furs obtained from the natives. The attention of the company was, from this cause, directed to colonization, on a more extensive scale, as a means of furnishing requisite supplies, and diminishing the cost of trade, if not, ultimately, of affording a lucrative commerce.

The Spanish fleet, returning from the Rio de la Plata, in the autumn of 1628, was captured in the bay of Matanzas by admiral Heyn, in command of the Dutch company's ships. The value of the prizes accruing to the company, was nearly five millions of dollars. This seasonable aid revived the spirit of the directors, and induced them to propose liberal and advantageous terms to persons who were disposed to establish themselves, as colonists, in New Netherland.

*Origin of the title "Patroon."**—Among the inducements held out by the West-India company, for the purpose of securing an able and efficient body of colonists, was that of assigning to wealthy proprietors the

* A term derived from the Latin *patronus*,—the designation of a Roman senator,—one of the *patres*, (fathers,)—with reference to his clients, or dependents.

nominal dignity of patroon, on condition of their planting a colony of at least fifty persons upwards of fifteen years old, within a limited period. The company retained the supremacy of "the island of Manhattes." But the patroons were at liberty to select, elsewhere, such tracts of land as they chose, to the extent of four Dutch miles, (sixteen English,) along one side of a navigable river, or two miles, (Dutch,) along both sides, and reaching as far inland as the situation of the occupiers should permit, with the reservation, only, of a distance of seven or eight miles from the limits of the nearest colony, which space was reserved by the company, to be disposed of at their pleasure, or allowed to be temporarily enjoyed by the nearest patroon.

All the rights of absolute ownership and possession, were to be enjoyed by the patroons and their heirs, under allegiance, merely, to the authority of the States General. Restrictions, however, were laid on traffic, requiring all articles, (with a few specified exceptions,) to be brought to the company's establishments on the island of the Manhattes, for farther disposal. The fur trade was reserved for the exclusive benefit of the company. The colonists, however, were exempted from all imposts whatever, for ten years, and were to be protected by the company, in case of war.

Private individuals, not aspiring to the dignity of patroons, were allowed to select as much land as they could occupy and improve, and to enjoy the full and untrammelled possession of it. But all were forbidden to engage in any form of manufacture; this unjust restriction being, then, a common stipulation, on the part of the mother country, with the colonists of all nations.

Three other conditions, of very different character and consequences, formed part of the company's bill of stipulations and immunities. One of these was an obligation, on the part of the company, to provide the colonists "with as many blacks as they can," on certain stipulated terms. Another, and a more benign regulation, was, that the patroons and colonists should, "in the speediest manner endeavor to find out ways and means whereby they may support a minister and schoolmaster, that thus the service of God, and zeal for religion, may not grow cool, and be neglected among them; and that they do, for

the first, procure a comforter of the sick there." An express stipulation, universally binding, was that, in all cases, the Indian proprietors should receive a satisfactory compensation for whatever lands the patroons and other colonists should proceed to occupy.

Reading Lesson XXVII.

Colonies of Zwanendal, Rensselaerswyck, and Pavonia.*—Several of the leading members of the Amsterdam chamber of commerce, anticipating the benefits likely to accrue from the special privileges offered, as a bounty on colonization, by the West-India company, secured by their agents the purchase of extensive tracts of land in New Netherland. Among the purchases thus made, was the region comprehended under the colony of Rensselaerswyck, extending over the present counties of Albany, Rensselaer, and Columbia. This vast tract was purchased for Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, pearl-merchant of Amsterdam, one of the directors of the company, and the ancestor of the present Van Rensselaer family.

The agents of Samuel Godyn and Samuel Bloemmart, purchased, for them, an extensive tract on the South river, (the Delaware,) adjoining cape Hindlopen. This colony, originally named Zwanendal, or the valley of swans,—from the vast numbers of wild geese and swans, which annually resorted to the creeks in that vicinity,—was the colonial germ of the state of Delaware.

Michel Paauw,† also a director, secured, by his agents, extensive tracts, including among others, the lands around Hoboken and Jersey City; and from this colony, named in honor of its founder, Pavonia, grew up, ultimately, the state of New Jersey.

Disagreements between the patroons and the company.—The patroons soon found it to their advantage to unite their endeavors for the promotion of their schemes of colonization; and they thus brought their principal establishments to a state of great prosperity. They were not content, however, with agricultural improvement, but manifested, ere long, an eager desire to partake in the company's lucrative fur trade.

The company appealed, for the defence of their rights,

* Pronounced, *Tswânendâl.* † *Pâvo.*

to the States General; and that body immediately proceeded to take vigorous measures for the adjustment of the matters in dispute. One of the first steps taken towards this result, was the recall of director-general Minuit, who embarked for Holland, in the spring of 1632.

Detention of governor Minuit by the English.—The ship in which Minuit sailed, being compelled, by stress of weather, to put into the harbor of Plymouth, in England, was there seized, at the instance of the New-England company, for having obtained her cargo in countries pertaining to the English crown. Captain Mason, the company's most active director, and the instigator of these proceedings, addressed a vehement letter of grievances to the secretary of state, complaining of the proceedings of the Dutch in America, and charging them with the grossest acts of injustice and aggression; renewing, at the same time, the assertion of the English claims to the whole region in possession of the Dutch.

Director Minuit, justly indignant at these measures, repaired immediately to London, and submitted his case to the Dutch ambassadors there. These functionaries applied, at once, to the king. His majesty, however, gave them an evasive though respectful answer, and deferred any decision till the affair should have been carefully investigated. The ambassadors immediately wrote home, urging the full presentation of the national claims to the territory in dispute.

Reading Lesson XXVIII.

Rights of the Dutch to their possessions in America.—The Dutch West-India company were, in the meantime, busily occupied in pressing their cause upon the attention of the States General. They maintained that, even according to the showing of the English themselves, the Dutch territory ought to be considered as extending from latitude thirty-nine, inclusive, to forty-one.

This representation was transmitted, in due form, to the ambassadors, and by them laid before the British government. The reply of the latter was peremptory, as to the English claim founded on discovery, and the crown grant for the colonization of Virginia. But, satisfied with the renewed assertion of their right to the territory claim-

ed, the British cabinet advised the release of the vessel which had been seized under plea of infringement of rights, but under protest, as to the validity of his majesty's claims.

Continued dissensions between the patroons and the company.—The misunderstanding which still existed between the patroons and the company, as to the right of trade, had now become a source of great injury to the infant colonies. The company enforced, in the most vigorous manner, their monopoly of not only the fur trade and the dealing in wampum, but even the disposal of maize, the great staple of the plantations.

Destruction of the colony at Zwanendal.—The year 1632 was rendered memorable, in the history of New Netherland, by the melancholy catastrophe which befell the colony at Zwanendal. This event is thus related in the valuable work of Mr. O'Callaghan, to whom the people of New York are so deeply indebted for the commencement of an exact and authentic history of the state.

"It happened that the Dutch, in keeping with the practice prevalent in those days, had erected, on taking possession of this new plantation, a pillar on a prominent part of their territory, to which they affixed, in token of sovereignty, a piece of tin, on which they traced the emblem, or arms, of the United Provinces. An Indian chief, in quest of a tobacco-pipe, took a fancy to this glittering sheet, for the purpose of supplying his want, and carried it off, ignorant that there was any impropriety in the act.

"Gillis Hoosett,* one of the company's men, whom De Vries† had left in charge of his fort, inconsiderately viewed the innocent act of the untutored savage as a national insult, and evinced so much dissatisfaction, that the Indians, to make amends for this unintentional offence, killed the chief who had taken the piece of tin away, and returned it with a token of the bloody deed. This naturally shocked the Dutch commander, who explained to the Indians that they had done wrong; that they ought to have brought the chief to him, and he would have told him not to repeat the act. But the spirit of wild revenge had been roused, meanwhile, in the breasts of the friends and kinsmen of the murdered chief; and they determined on wreaking dire and dreadful vengeance.

* Pronounced, *Hōset*. † *Day Vreece*.

"The colony of Zwanendal consisted, at this time, of hirty-four persons. Of these, thirty-two were, one day, t work in the fields, while commissary Hoosett remain- d in charge of the house, where another of the settlers y sick abed. A large bull-dog was chained out of doors. n pretence of selling some furs, three savages entered he house, and murdered Hoosett* and the sick man. hey found it not so easy to despatch the watch-dog. It as not till they had pierced him with at least twenty-five rrows, that he was destroyed. The men in the fields ere then set on, in an equally treacherous manner, nder the guise of friendship, and every man of them ain. Thus terminated the colony of the Valley of wans, to the great loss of the projectors, as well as to the reat injury of their characters as cautious and prudent ien.

"It was after the occurrence of this melancholy and nforeseen catastrophe, that De Vries reached the mouth f the South River, at the close of the year, 'promising imself great things, plenty of whales, and good land for ıltivation.' He found his house destroyed, the palisades, y which it was surrounded, burned, and the heads and ones of his murdered men bestrewing the earth. No um of industry enlivened the gloomy solitude. Not a uman being appeared to respond to the signal gun, which)e Vries ordered to be fired, to give notice of his arrival."

De Vries, however, wisely avoided hostilities with the atives, and even ratified a treaty of peace and amity with iem, without allusion to the past. This course, in a case here there was but one party surviving to tell the story f the fatal affair, seemed the only one which prudence ould sanction, in circumstances in which traffic, and not onquest, was the aim of the Europeans.

EC. II.—ADMINISTRATION OF DIRECTOR VAN TWILLER.—1633-1637.

Reading Lesson XXIX.

Wouter Van Twiller, second director-general.—On Minuit's return to Holland, Wouter Van Twiller, a clerk n the employ of the West-India company, was appointed irector-general. The new governor arrived at fort

* This Hoosett was an active agent in purchasing the lands around ort Orange, for Van Rensselaer.

Amsterdam, in the spring of 1633, accompanied by a small body of troops, for the defence of the colony, together with the first schoolmaster, and, it is thought, the first clergyman, of the colony at fort Amsterdam.

Visit of the English ship William.—Soon after the arrival of the new director, the struggle between the Dutch and the English colonists, commenced. An English ship, the William, commanded by captain Trevor, in pursuance of orders from home, after landing her passengers and cargo at New Plymouth, and establishing a fishing station at Scituate, not far distant from the English colony, proceeded to Hudson's river, for the purpose of trading with the natives.

The supercargo of the ship was the same Jacob Eelkins, who was formerly mentioned as the successful conductor of the business of the New-Netherland company on Castle island, but who had now transferred his services to the English. He seems to have had entire control over the movements of the vessel, and to have acted with the most zealous devotion to the interests of his new employers; and, on being refused permission to ascend the river, boldly persisted in passing up to within a mile of fort Orange, where he commenced trading with the natives. His former residence in the country, and his perfect knowledge of the Indian language, gave him great advantages in this respect.

The Dutch commissary at fort Orange, used every exertion to thwart the proceedings of Eelkins, but without effect; as the Indians were much attached to him, in consequence of their long experience of his amiable and just conduct in his official transactions with them, in former years. He pursued his enterprise, therefore, with great success, till about a fortnight after his anchoring below fort Orange, when an armament, despatched by director Van Twiller from below, and consisting of a pinnace, a caravel, and a hoy, fully equipped with a naval and military force, aided by the garrison of fort Orange, broke up his establishment, reëmbarked his goods, took possession of his vessel, and carried her down to fort Amsterdam. The remonstrances of Eelkins, who claimed his right to trade, as in the employment of British subjects, within the British dominions, were all in vain; and he was, ere long, compelled to leave the river, under convoy of an

rmed vessel, not, however, without having refused to omply with the demand of governor Van Twiller, to urrender the peltry which he had acquired in his traffic. he English company, in due season, presented to their overnment a complaint against the alleged wrongs which ey had suffered, including the loss of the valuable furs hich they had expected to receive, if their vessel had een allowed to prolong her stay in the river. This affair as not without its weight in the subsequent proceedings England towards the Dutch colonies.

Dutch establishment on the Connecticut river.—Director an Twiller appears, by the accounts of his contempora-es, to have been a person little suited to fill, with dignity, e office which he held. Himself and his council seem have been addicted to intemperance, and to have been xtremely deficient in energy and decision of character. hey were not, however, without zeal for the interests of e company, and the rising prosperity of New Amster-am. They perceived distinctly the advantages that must sult from the possession of a station which should secure e trade of the region intervening between the North iver and New Plymouth, and accordingly took measures obtain such a position.

Sequen, an Indian chief, had possession of a beautiful d fertile tract, around the present town of Saybrook, on e western side of the Connecticut river, or, as it was en called, the Fresh river of New Netherland. But s right to this tract had been disputed by the Pequod ief on the eastern shore. A fierce war between the aimants ensued; and the result was the entire subjuga-on of Sequen. The latter, however, obtained the con-nt of his conqueror to put himself, and the remnant of s tribe, under the protection of the Dutch, who had reviously secured a footing at the mouth of the Connec-cut.

Jacob Van Curler,* a clerk in the service of the com-any, was employed to conduct a treaty for the purchase the tract before mentioned, which was done, to the ntire satisfaction of the Indians, on the receipt of "one iece of duffels, twenty-seven ells long, six axes, six ket-es, eighteen knives, one sword-blade, one shears, and me toys," in return for a tract of country represented

* Pronounced, *Coorler*.

as nearly sixty miles in extent. On a portion of the land thus obtained, Van Curler erected a fortified trading-house, which he named "Good Hope,"—in the usual style of the Dutch, with whom that was a favorite designation of similar establishments, as one deemed auspicious of future success. The people of Holland, it may be recollected, were conspicuous, at that day, for their belief in omens.

Reading Lesson XXX.

An English trading-house established on the Connecticut.—The governor and council of New Amsterdam, were, in the autumn of the same year, surprised by the receipt of letters from the English governor at Boston in Massachusetts, announcing that the whole country extending from the Narragansetts to the Manhattans, had been granted by the English sovereign to certain of his subjects; and warning the director to attempt no settlement within these limits.

To this communication a peaceable and friendly answer was returned, but due mention made of the procedure of the Dutch company's servants on the Connecticut, and a delay solicited of any proceeding, on the part of the English, till matters should have been arranged by the respective authorities in Europe.

In the meantime, however, the colony at New Plymouth had made preparations for establishing a trading-house on the Connecticut, for the express purpose of counteracting the proceedings of the Dutch in that quarter, and though dissuaded by the colony of Massachusetts, fitted out a vessel containing the frame-work of a block-house, and, disregarding the protest of the Dutch officer at fort Good Hope, passed up the river, as far as Windsor, and there erected their house and fortification, subsequently to which unjustifiable acts, they despatched their vessel home, as an intimation of their design to keep permanent possession of the spot which they had occupied.

Against these proceedings Van Twiller sent an earnest protest to the English officer at Windsor, who, however, avowed his intention to remain there, as an English subject on English ground. An account of this encroachment was forthwith despatched to Holland, and, in the meantime, an armed force sent to compel the English to

remove. The intruders, however, immediately set themselves on the defensive, and the Dutch force was withdrawn; the instructions of the commander not authorizing him, in the absence of express directions from the company, to proceed to extremes.

Growth of New Amsterdam.—Measures were, this year, adopted for enlarging and strengthening the growing settlement at New Amsterdam. A guard-house and barrack and a church, (the first erected in New Amsterdam,) a mansion for the director-general, and other edifices, all indicating the extension of the settlement, were ordered to be built.

The affairs of the Dutch West-India company, wore, at this time, an aspect of the highest prosperity; and director Van Twiller seems to have acted up to his own impressions on this subject, by his liberal expenditures and effective undertakings for the farther extension of the commerce of the colony.

In pursuance of these views, an extensive tract of land on the Schuylkill, was purchased of the natives, and a trading-post established there. But reverses, ere long, began to be experienced at the hand of the Indians, who, from unknown causes of dissatisfaction, committed various acts of hostility against several of the Dutch establishments. The most serious of these were the warlike proceedings of the Pequods, who not only murdered the natives who resorted to the trading-house at fort Hope, but invited the English to establish themselves near.

Proceedings connected with the expulsion of the ship William.—On the return of the ship William to England, her owners applied, for damages, to the Dutch ambassadors, who, in turn, submitted the affair to the States General. That body appointed a committee of investigation; and the latter referred the whole matter to be presented by a statement from the agents of the company. On the application thus made, the States General refused to interfere, and recommended a conference between the officers of the company and the English ambassador. The fatal delay thus incurred was ultimately unfavorable to the rights and claims of the Dutch, as subsequent events will show.

Reading Lesson XXXI.

Origin of Bergen, New Jersey.—Jan* Evertsen Bout,† in the employment of the Dutch West-India company, was, this year, sent out by Mr. Paauw, as superintendent of his colony of Pavonia. This individual obtained, in 1638, the grant of a farm within the limits of the present town of Bergen, which was the first actual settlement in that quarter.

Continued encroachments of the English.—The reports heard by the English colonists of Massachusetts, of the fertile valley of the Connecticut, induced more and more of their people, yearly, to migrate to that region; and extensive settlements were soon effected by them, along the most desirable portions of the river. To these encroachments the inefficient government of Van Twiller opposed no effectual resistance; and a body of Englishmen, who had actually attempted the capture of fort Nassau on the Delaware, were, on the failure of their attempt, and their transmission to fort Amsterdam, as prisoners, peaceably allowed to establish themselves, as colonists, in the vicinity.

Character of Van Twiller.—The convivial habits of the director, seem to have disqualified him for the decent discharge of his official duties, so far as to call down the unmeasured and sometimes insulting rebukes of Mr. Bogardus, the chaplain, or clergyman, of the colony. The disputes of these dignitaries seem to have been nearly alike disgraceful to the station of each. But the positive malversations of Van Twiller extended to the appropriation of large portions of the company's domain to his personal uses; and his connivance at similar proceedings on the part of others, led to extensive peculation, as a general practice among the company's servants.

Origin of Flatlands, Long Island.—It was in such ways that the first settlements were effected at Flatlands, Long Island; Van Twiller, Curler and others, having purchased of the Indians, extensive tracts in that vicinity, without the knowledge of the directors at home, and commenced plantations, for their personal benefit.

Dinclage's‡ opposition to the irregularities of Van Twiller.—The fiscal Dinclage was the only member of the

* Pronounced, *Yán.* † *Boot.* ‡ *Dinclágay's.*

administration at fort Amsterdam who opposed the unrighteous proceedings of the director; and his honest opposition drew down upon him the resentment of Van Twiller, who condemned him to lose his salary, now long in arrear, and to return to Holland there to justify his conduct before the company.

Dinclage, on his return, made application to the directors and to the States General, and at last succeeded in attracting attention to the shameful state of things at New Amsterdam. The result was the appointment of a new director-general, Willem Kieft, before whose arrival, however, Van Twiller had pursued his system of private dealings with the natives, and become possessed of what are now called, Governor's and Blackwell's islands, besides other valuable tracts.

Measures adopted by the States General, for promoting colonization.—The investigation into the affairs of New Netherland, which led to the appointment of Kieft as director-general, disclosed such a scene of inefficiency, mismanagement, and loss, that the States General became desirous of adopting vigorous measures for rescuing the sinking colony, and securing its future prosperity. The extensive introduction into the country of substantial colonists, who would devote their attention to agriculture, seemed the only adequate measure for this end; as the irregular life of the traders and soldiers, and the grasping ambition of the patroons, seemed to operate as a fatal hinderance to the vital prosperity of the colony.

SEC. III.—ADMINISTRATION OF DIRECTOR KIEFT.—1638-1646.

Reading Lesson XXXII.

Willem Kieft, third director-general.—The new director-general, Kieft, arrived in the spring of 1638, and proceeded to organize his government, and regulate public affairs. A vigorous system of prohibitions and penalties, was adopted, as a check on the dissolute and intemperate habits which had disgraced the colony; and effective measures were taken for securing the prosperity of future immigrants.

In the former of these attempts, little success seems to have followed the well-meant endeavors of the new director. But, in the latter, he was greatly aided by the arri-

val and settlement of many excellent colonists, some of whose names continued to be favorably known, as borne by their descendants. Among those who, about this time, established themselves in New Netherland, we find the names of La Montagne, Verplanck, De Foreest, and others.

First arrangements for the inspection of tobacco.—The high value of the tobacco of New Netherland, in foreign markets, now required some protective measure for securing its character, and guarding against fraud and deterioration. Inspectors were accordingly appointed, and other steps taken, to effect the desired object.

Swedish establishments on the Delaware.—Usselinx,* the original projector of the Dutch West-India company, disappointed in his attempts in his native country, submitted his plans for trade and colonization to the government of Sweden. The death of king Gustavus, however, caused the failure of the project. But the scheme was revived by Peter Minuit, on his dismission from the service of the Dutch West-India company, and was adopted with great spirit, by queen Christina.

Minuit was accordingly furnished with a man-of-war and tender, fully equipped for his purpose. He set sail for the Delaware, and arrived in that river, in the month of April, after a visit to the English colony at Jamestown in Virginia. Notwithstanding the objections and protests of the Dutch commander at fort Nassau, and of director-general Kieft, he proceeded to trade with the natives in the vicinity of the present city of Philadelphia, bought a tract of land of them, and erected a fort, which, on his subsequent departure for Holland, he left well garrisoned,—so much so, that governor Kieft was unable, for the time, to attempt the reduction of it.

Abrogation of the charter of the West-India company.—The States General, now resolved to promote the colonization of the national domain in America, urged upon the attention of the company the necessity of modifying the charter under which they held their possessions, so as to throw open the benefits of colonization and commerce to private individuals. To such a change the company and the patroons manifested an unfeigned reluctance; and each of these bodies proposed such a

* Pronounced, *Oosselinx*.

remodelling of the charter as was not only inadequate to the views of the States General, but utterly incompatible with any course which had any other object than the immediate and exclusive benefit of the parties interested in upholding the principles of monopoly and exclusion.

The committee appointed by the States General to confer with the Amsterdam chamber, acting for the company, perceiving the impossibility of accomplishing any thing for the benefit of the colony, by half-way measures, reported in such terms as induced the States General to abolish the monopoly of trade and colonization, and to throw open, to all who were willing to comply with certain regulations, the advantages of free communication with the native race, and untrammelled occupation of the soil.

Reading Lesson XXXIII.

Good effects of the abolition of the company's monopoly.—No sooner was the new order of things, consequent on the abrogation of the exclusive privileges of the West-India company, fairly established, than the whole region of New Netherland, but, particularly, the colony at New Amsterdam, began to make rapid advances in prosperity. The directors in Holland had the good sense to perceive the advantages which would result to themselves from the establishment of permanent settlements, and held out the most advantageous offers of land, stock, and even provisions and clothing on the most accommodating terms, as inducements to hardy and enterprising emigrants to resort to the colonies.

The settlements were, accordingly, soon reinforced with large numbers of able and industrious people, disposed to take up their residence, for life, in New Netherland. In addition to emigrants of this description, there were also not a few whose wealth, and even rank, at home, tended to raise the enterprise of colonization, in the estimation formed of it both in Europe and America.

At the same time, the persecution suffered in New England, by all who did not conform to the Puritan faith, drove many families, for refuge, to the Dutch colonies; and numbers of persons who had completed their period of service on plantations in Virginia, came to New Amsterdam, to employ themselves, on advanta-

geous terms, with the Dutch planters. The most valuable accessions of labor and skill were thus secured to the growing interests of New Amsterdam.

Continued encroachments of the English.—Disregarding all the remonstrances and resistance of the Dutch, the English colonists in New England still pressed onward; extending their offshoots into the region of Connecticut, and even assailing the Dutch colonists in the very vicinity of their forts. Hartford and New Haven had, in this way, already become flourishing villages; and it was plainly the intention of the English to extend their settlements even to the Hudson. The rights of actual discovery and exploration, and of actual settlement and positive possession, which the Dutch justly asserted, and which the nations of Europe then held sacred, were thus utterly disregarded by the English, under the flimsy plea of a prior claim, founded on the bare circumstance that the Cabots, as before mentioned, had sailed past,—without being aware of it,—the coast of this portion of the American continent.

Vigorous prosecution of the colonization of Long Island.—The encroachments of the English now began to extend themselves even to Long Island; the eastern portion of which had been arbitrarily granted by the Plymouth company, in 1635, to the earl of Stirling, and disposed of by the agents of that nobleman.

Director Kieft proceeded, therefore, to extend, on behalf of the Dutch West-India company, his purchases of the native proprietors, so as to secure the western portion of the island, and made grants of land, to a considerable extent, in Brooklyn and the vicinity.

Reading Lesson XXXIV.

Violent proceedings of the English at Hartford.—The following graphic scene, sketched in Mr. O'Callaghan's interesting work on the history of New Netherland, gives the reader a vivid impression of the spirit of the times, at this period of conflict between the colonists of the two nations which laid claim to the fertile valley of the Connecticut.

"The spring of 1640 opened with a renewal of the differences between the English and the Dutch on the

Connecticut river, touching the title to the soil around fort Hope. Commissary Op Dyck,* being about to make preparations for sowing the ground in the rear of that post, advised Mr. Hopkins, governor of Hartford, of his intention, and warned him, at the same time, against permitting any of his people to interrupt him.

"Hopkins, however, pertinaciously denied the validity of the Dutch title to the land, and maintained that the English had acquired their title from the right owners,—that he was prepared to prove, by a chief of the Morahtkans, residing near the Pequods, that the latter never owned the soil, and that the right owners had left for the purpose of obtaining assistance from their friends.

"Op Dyck, on the contrary, insisted on the superior right of the company,—referred to their long possession, which dated many years before the English knew of the existence of the river, and to their purchase, which had been made with the approbation of the natives. Whereupon the English governor called on the Dutch commissary to exhibit his title. 'Show your right,' said he, 'we are prepared to exhibit ours;' adding, at the same time, that he was desirous to live in peace with the Dutch.

"To all this Op Dyck responded in suitable terms. He wished only to use the company's lands. But to this neither the governor, nor the English people, would, in any wise, consent. On the contrary, the constable was sent with a posse of some ten or eleven men, who attacked the Dutch, on the following day, while ploughing the field in dispute, beat the horses, and frightened them so that they broke loose. They then returned, next morning, and sowed the ground which the Dutch had ploughed.

"Commissary Op Dyck protested forthwith; but governor Hopkins refused to make any reply to this protest, 'as it was written in Low Dutch.' He called again on the commissary to produce his title. 'The king,' he said, 'would support the English in their right, as firmly as the prince of Orange would the Dutch.' The commissary maintained that he was not bound to produce his title; and as for the king of England, he well knew that his majesty did not desire to do anything that should injure another.

* Pronounced, *Op Dyke.*

"Hereupon, he took his departure, and sent a party to plant barley in the field. These were also driven off. Op Dyck then went himself to do the work; but the English remained on the watch, and would not suffer him to proceed.

"Evert Duyckingh,* another of the company's servants, having, in the meantime, succeeded in getting into the field, with a hat full of barley, commenced sowing the grain; but had not proceeded far, when he was knocked down with an adze, from which he received a severe wound on the head. Op Dyck was, thereupon, obliged to withdraw his men, having previously warned the English of the injury and wrong which his masters had sustained at their hands.

"These criminations and recriminations did not terminate here. The English were evidently determined to hunt the Dutch from the river. They therefore continued their aggressions in every possible shape, during the remainder of the year. They seized the horses and cows belonging to fort Good Hope and impounded them for trespass. The clergyman of Hartford seized a load of hay, which a Dutch driver was conveying to the fort, and applied it to his own use, without giving anything in return; and when the crop became ready for the sickle, the English drove off the man sent by the Dutch commissary to cut it down, and harvested it themselves.

"It was in vain that Op Dyck protested, or the director-general remonstrated. They lacked either the will, or the means to vindicate their rights; and the people of Hartford treated them accordingly."

This extract presents, in a striking light, the aggressive temper of the English, and the humane and patient yet persevering spirit of the Dutch. The peaceable submission of the latter to many of the wrongs inflicted on them, is to be accounted for, in part, however, by the inadequacy of the Dutch force, to maintain the rights of their people, and, in part, also, by the extreme reluctance of the director-general to commit any overt act of hostility, which might embroil the two nations at home, and disturb the peaceful and prosperous traffic which was so highly prized by the people of Holland. The director-general seems, all along, to have understood that the company would sanction no

* Pronounced, *Dyking*.

act of hostility committed without their special authority. Hence the frequent parade and show of resistance, without any actual violence.

The extent of the commission entrusted to the local authorities, seems, uniformly, to have been, to intimidate, but, on no account, to shed blood, or offer personal violence. The colonists of the rival nation, taking advantage of this forbearance, seem to have regarded their opponents as incapable of anything beyond bluster and protest, and to have acted under this impression, not less than that of the factitious claims of England.

Reading Lesson XXXV.

Farther attempts of the English to encroach on Long Island.—Director Kieft continued to extend, still farther, his purchases of land from the natives of Long Island, and to resist all attempts made by the English, to settle on the western part of the island. The extent of jurisdiction claimed by the Dutch, was bounded, on the west, by the East River, and, on the east, by the present county of Suffolk. No resistance, therefore, was offered to the proceedings of the English, when they commenced their settlements at Southampton and Southold.

Additional immunities offered to colonists.—The States General, desirous of still farther promoting the interests of New Netherland, by quieting the dissensions still existing between the company and the patroons, proceeded to grant a new charter of privileges, still more liberal than the former, and to establish a more efficient administration than had hitherto existed. The colonies were to be under the immediate control of a governor, a body of counsellors, and other officers, who were to act as efficient guardians of virtue and morality. One item in the new charter, appears, however, to have been at variance with the usually mild and tolerant spirit of Dutch legislation. This was, that no other religion should be publicly tolerated or allowed, save that of the "reformed church" in the Dutch United Provinces. This virtual prohibition, seems, however, to have remained, in point of fact, a dead letter; for we hear nothing of its ever having been enforced.

Origin of Indian hostilities.—The enlargement of the

original charter of the company, while it promoted the growth and prosperity of the colony, tended to produce serious injury, in regard to communication with the Indians. The new charter induced many adventurers, of doubtful character, to go among the natives, for the purpose of securing the advantages of the profitable traffic in furs, and to introduce among the simple sons of the forest their final bane, the use of intoxicating liquors. The English traders, also, furnished their Indian customers with fire-arms and powder, which the company had strictly forbidden their servants to do; and the colonies were thus left exposed to all the evils of warfare, under the most disadvantageous circumstances.

Unfortunately, also, at this juncture, the director-general undertook the unwise measure of taxing the natives in corn and furs, or in wampum, for the alleged protection afforded them against their enemies, by the garrisons and forts of the colonies. This proceeding roused, as might have been expected, the wrath of the Indian tribes; and they were by no means sparing either in their taunts or threatenings.

The director-general, observing this state of affairs, deemed it necessary to issue an order, that every colonist should provide himself with arms, and hold himself in readiness for immediate muster, at a given signal.

Hostilities commenced on the Raritan.—The outbreak of the long and harassing war that followed, was occasioned by the following circumstances. A watering party, belonging to a vessel trading southward, carried off from a plantation on Staten island, some hogs, the property of the company and of the planter. The Indians on the Raritan were blamed for the theft; and an armed party was despatched, under the command of the secretary of the colony at New Amsterdam, to levy damages. The party, on arriving at their destination, became disorderly, and, in spite of the remonstrances of the secretary, proceeded to murder the unoffending Indians, and to burn their crops. Thus commenced, in wanton and cruel aggression, the hostilities which first disturbed the peaceable communication hitherto maintained between the Dutch and the native tribes. But, while the occurrence of such an event reflects disgrace on the European aggressors, it is, so far, satisfactory to know that the act

was not authorized by the administration of the colony, but perpetrated, by a lawless and mutinous body of individuals, in open violation of express command.

Reading Lesson XXXVI.

Continued aggressions of the English.—A detachment from the colony at New Haven, in Connecticut, established themselves, in the spring of this year, on the Delaware and the Schuylkill rivers, notwithstanding the protest of the Dutch director-general. At Hartford, the violence of the English colonists was carried to extremes, which would have drawn down upon them an attack from a strong military force despatched from fort Amsterdam, had not the apprehension of Indian hostilities caused the detention of the troops.

Patroon of Staten island.—Cornelis Melyn,* a Dutch merchant, who possessed great influence with the directors in Holland, had, after visiting New Netherland, obtained, as patroon, a grant of Staten island,—with the exception of the land owned by captain De Vries,—and arrived, in August, 1641, prepared to take possession. A flourishing farm, (or "bouwerie,") and an extensive orchard, were, this year, planted at Hoboken.

Commencement of hostilities, on the part of the Indians.—The Raritan tribe of Indians, determined to avenge the injuries they had suffered, in the attack committed on them, as formerly mentioned, retaliated by an attack on the plantation of De Vries, on Staten island, in which they killed four of his people, and burned his dwelling-house and other buildings.

Governor Kieft, enraged at what he deemed the treachery of this proceeding,—as the Indians were, at the time, proposing terms of peace,—proceeded to excite the adjoining tribes against the Raritans, by offering stipulated rewards, not only for the heads of the offenders, but of any members of the Raritan tribe. This measure was so far successful as to issue in the bringing in of the head of the sachem who had conducted the attack on De Vries's plantation; soon after which event, a permanent peace was concluded with the Raritans; and so faithfully was it kept by the latter, that, afterwards, when all others of the

* Pronounced, *Mayline*.

surrounding tribes had united in hostilities against the Europeans, the Raritans alone remained friendly.

Indian retaliation.—The colony of New Amsterdam was, not long after, thrown into the greatest alarm by the murder of a peaceful and aged man, perpetrated by an Indian. The savage, in the present case, was nephew to an Indian, wantonly murdered by some of director Minuit's people, many years before. The Indian custom of retribution or compensation, in such cases, had been overlooked by the authorities of the colony; and the Indian law of justice and honor demanded a retributive act of vengeance, at whatever distance of time. On this established custom the savage had acted; and when Kieft made a requisition on the chief of the tribe, for the surrender of the murderer, the answer was a decisive refusal, on the ground of national custom and equitable retribution.

First "town-meeting" at New Amsterdam.—Kieft, whose personal dislike and hatred to the natives were deeply seated, was determined on vengeance. But, aware of the extensive evils which might result to the colony, and desirous of screening himself from blame, he submitted the whole affair to the decision of a meeting of masters and heads of families, residing in New Amsterdam and the vicinity.

The answer returned, was, that it would be imprudent to attempt anything, at that season of the year, while the harvest was not yet secured, and the colonists and their cattle were scattered abroad. It was suggested, however, that, in the meantime, all due preparation, in the way of arming and equipment, should be made, and every precaution taken to lull the Indians into security; but to prevent, if possible, the evils of war, that the message demanding the surrender of the assassin, should be repeated. Twelve men were appointed as delegates, to aid in carrying into effect the requisite measures.

On the approach of winter, Kieft did not fail to remind the colonists of their engagements; as no concession had been made by the natives. But the prudent spirit of the people would not yet sanction any active measures; and delay was still deemed advisable.

Reading Lesson XXXVII.

Preparations for attacking the Indians.—The winter of 1641–42 having at length set in, Kieft again urged the subject of the murder, on the attention of the people; and they, at last, assented to his wishes, after having stipulated for the personal presence of the governor, in the expedition, and the arrangement of a proper commissariat, which, in those primitive times of simple habits, extended only to a due provision of "bread and butter." The just, prudent, and humane spirit, so characteristic of "Fatherland," appears conspicuous in the language of the following stipulation, as translated in the pages of Mr. O'Callaghan's instructive history. The passage is an extract from one of the documents obtained by Mr. J. Romeyn Brodhead, during his visit to Holland, while prosecuting the interesting researches which he conducted for the Historical Society of New York.

"If it happened that God Almighty were pleased to permit one or more of the freemen to be wounded in the expedition, or in the attack on the savages, the noble director and council were to remain obliged to support such wounded persons, and their families, in a decent manner, and to have them cured at the expense of the provident company."

Representations of the "Twelve."—Human history is, in no point, more uniform than in the fact that councils summoned by leaders, in emergencies, have usually taken occasion to volunteer their services as representatives, for the time, of the rights of the body of the people, whence they were selected. The arbitrary temper of director Kieft was, in this way, severely tried by some of the suggestions offered by his special council of Twelve, whom he proceeded, with all haste, to dismiss, not without due commendation of their zeal and readiness in relation to the interests of the colony, but, at the same time, with a very explicit assurance that any farther meeting or proceedings, on their part, would subject them to Solomon's established remedy for the wonted aberrations of fools.

The reformations suggested by the Twelve, seem, in many instances, to have been loudly called for. Kieft was accustomed, at all times, to act as autocrat of the colony. He had but one official aid and acting counsel-

lor, La Montagne; and, to avoid the glaring impropriety of such a mode of conducting public affairs, he had called in occasionally, and at random, such of the commonalty as he thought proper, to make up the show of a colonial council. In his answer to the representations of the Twelve, while he petulantly challenged them to show proof of any injustice done by such aids to his deliberations, he admitted the importance of being supported by a suitable body of persons of consideration, and expressed his pleasure in the prospect of the arrival of such, duly appointed in Holland.

Failure of the Dutch expedition against the Indians.—Kieft's first step towards inflicting chastisement on the Indians, was to despatch Van Dyck, ensign at fort Amsterdam, with a band of eighty men, to ravage the possessions of the Wickquaeskeek Indians, the tribe to which the offender belonged.

Fortunately for the Indians, Van Dyck, a true martinet, in the proprieties of warfare, made a regular halt, contrary to the wishes of his party, at a small stream on the borders of the territory of the offending tribe, instead of pushing on, at once, and taking the enemy by surprise. His guide, too, here missed the way, and Van Dyck, in a rage, returned to fort Amsterdam, without striking a blow. The natives, however, on tracing the foot-prints of the troops, perceived the peril they had escaped, and lost no time in suing for peace. The surrender of the murderer, however, was never obtained; as he had, in all probability, fled for protection to a distant tribe.

Reading Lesson XXXVIII.

Proceedings against the English intruders.—Irritated by the continued encroachments of the English, director Kieft formally prohibited all intercourse with the settlements in Connecticut. He despatched a force, likewise, to break up the recent attempt of the colonists from New Haven to establish themselves on the Schuylkill. The latter of these measures was rigorously executed; and the settlers and their goods transferred to New Amsterdam and New Haven. In the latter place, the utmost indignation was expressed against the proceedings of the Dutch.

An unsuccessful attempt, on the part of the English, was made, in the summer of this year, to come to terms of agreement and purchase, with the Dutch, for the lands around Hartford. But both the American and the European parties interested, were still as far as ever from coming to satisfactory terms.

Continued immigrations from the English into the Dutch colonies.—The persecution which was encountered by some European emigrants, in the New-England settlements, continued to drive them, for refuge, to those of New Netherland. Additional companies of skilful and industrious agriculturists, were thus secured by the latter, especially on Long Island. Among those planted, this year, were the original settlements at Mespath or Newtown, and at Gravesend, formerly Gravenzande,—so called after a village of that name, near the mouth of the river Maas, in Holland. The frequency of communication with English people, in these and other ways, now rendered necessary the appointment of an English secretary at New Amsterdam.

First stone church erected at New Amsterdam.—The decayed condition of the church erected under Van Twiller's administration, being now felt as a public disgrace, director Kieft prosecuted, with great zeal, the requisite measures for the erection of one more creditable to the colony. But his good intentions were, for a time, thwarted by factious opposition, and by the general alarm prevailing in regard to the danger of an attack on the colonies by the Indians.

Hostilities with the Indians.—The apprehensions referred to, were founded on the efforts of the Narragansett chief, Miantonimo, to rouse the Indian tribes to form a general confederacy against all the Europeans now established on their borders. The utmost terror was excited throughout the colonies by the diffusion of this rumor.

Local incidents, however, precipitated the outbreak of hostilities between the natives and the Dutch. An Indian who had been robbed of a dress of beaver skins, while in a state of intoxication, took vengeance by the murder of two white men.

On applying for the surrender of the murderer, Kieft was informed that the offender had fled to the Tanki-

tekes. This tribe was therefore cautioned by a formal message threatening hostilities.

Massacre of the 26th February.—In the meantime, a powerful party of the Mohawks had invaded the river Indians, who fled, for protection, to Manhattan island, and the adjacent settlements. The destitute and suffering condition of these unfortunate beings, excited the compassion of most of the colonists. But a number were bent on retaliation for the unatoned murders before mentioned, and succeeded in inducing the director to sanction a scene of midnight massacre, unparalleled for atrocity, in the colonial records of America. Upwards of a hundred Indians fell victims, in one night, to this horrid scheme. The murders thus perpetrated were, by the unsuspecting natives attributed, at first, to the Mohawks; as the deed was perpetrated at the dead of night.

On the following day, the Indians having discovered their mistake, retaliated on a party of marauding colonists, and killed a Dutchman and his wife. A rescue of the remainder of the whites was effected, and several Indians slain, and a number taken prisoners.

Reading Lesson XXXIX.

Indian league formed for the extermination of the whites.—Some of the colonists on Long Island commenced, not long after, a series of outrages on the natives in their vicinity; and the consequence was an extensive alliance formed among the Indian tribes adjoining the Dutch settlements, for the purpose of exterminating them.

The usual scenes of Indian atrocity followed: men, women, and children were murdered or captured; the dwellings and barns of the settlers were burned; their cattle were killed; and their crops destroyed.

Director Kieft's perplexities.—Kieft, and all who could escape the tomahawk of the natives, fled to the shelter of the fort, where a miserable company of widows and orphans daily rang their reproaches in the ears of the infatuated director. All his attempts to appease them were unavailing. His consent to the massacre of the unoffending Indians, was universally regarded as the cause of the general sufferings; and so high did the feeling of public

indignation run, that it was even proposed, at one time, to seize him, and send him home to Holland, for trial. A personal assault was made upon him by Maryn Adriaensen, one of the leading instigators of the massacre, on whom Kieft wished to lay the blame. Adriaensen was foiled in his attempt, by the seasonable interference of the bystanders, and was disarmed and committed to prison.

The partisans of Adriaensen rallied for his rescue, and headed by his son, made an attack on the director, in which the youth Marynsen fired at Kieft, and was immediately shot down by a sentinel. A parley ensued, in which the terms demanded by the insurgents were refused, and Adriaensen was sent to Holland, for trial.

After an interval of some years, we find, to our surprise, this same Adriaensen returning to New Amsterdam, and receiving from the hand of director Kieft, a grant of a tract of land, including what was then called Awishaken, (Weehawken.)

Treaty of peace.—The return of spring reminding the Indians of the necessity of resuming their wonted occupations, they made proposals for peace, which issued in the ratification of a treaty, on the basis of mutual forgiveness and amnesty. De Vries, in whose veracity the Indians reposed entire confidence, conducted this treaty, on the part of the Dutch, and thus secured, for a brief season, a respite to his countrymen from the horrors of Indian warfare.

Unsettled condition of Dutch and English claims.—Mutual remonstrances continued to be made by the colonists of both nations, in regard to the disputed territory on the Connecticut river, but without any nearer approach to an amicable termination. The aspect of affairs, indeed, seemed less favorable than ever, to the interests of the Dutch. The English colonies had now formed a union, in which they bound themselves to support one another in all emergencies; and they plainly intimated to the government at New Amsterdam, their intention of adhering to their claims on the settlements in Connecticut.

Hostilities resumed, on the part of the Indians.—The slight compensation made to the natives, for the injuries which they had sustained at the hand of the whites, was, even at the conclusion of the treaty, a subject of murmuring and displeasure among the former. But the dis-

satisfaction, ere long, broke out in open complaints, on the part of the Indians; and one of their chiefs, Pacham, the leader of the Tankitekes, inhabiting around Haverstraw, proposed to the adjoining tribes a simultaneous rising for the massacre of all the Dutch.

The Wappinecks, a tribe inhabiting the river region, midway between the Manhattans and fort Orange, commenced the outbreak, with the murder of one of the crew of a trading boat, soon after its departure from the fort. Two other boats shared the same fate. Several secret and inhuman murders were, about this time, perpetrated by the savages; and several women and children carried off captives.

Reading Lesson XL.

Appointment of the council of "Eight."—Conscious that he could effect nothing without the coöperation of the people, Kieft called a general meeting at the fort, and submitted, for consideration, the state of the colony, in relation to the hostilities resumed by the natives. A council of eight individuals was selected; and this body proceeded to enact several wholesome regulations, which, however, were not carried into effect; and the result of their deliberations seems to have been, rather, a soothing effect on the popular mind, than anything active or effectual. For the present, however, the council agreed to meet, once a week, to report on the state of affairs.

Indian ravages.—The ferocious spirit of the Indians, now took full scope, in deeds of destruction and bloodshed. Planters, on the outskirts of the settlements, fell victims, in large numbers, to marauding parties of the savages. So bold, indeed, had the Indians become in their assaults, that no place was safe which could not be protected by large numbers of the whites; and, in some instances, military outposts themselves were overpowered.

Miseries of the colonists at fort Amsterdam.—The savage invaders now met with no impediment to their assaults. The few hundred settlers numbered in the colony, crowded around the fort, which, with its dilapidated walls, and its paltry force of some fifty poorly-armed troops, unprovided with proper supplies of ammunition, afforded them but a nominal protection for their families, housed around in miserable huts of straw.

The council of Eight proposed several measures for relief, which, however, were thwarted by the headstrong director. An application for aid from New Haven, met with a refusal, on the ground of the obligations of the New-England colonies not to act independently of each other.

Two memorials were, in the meantime, prepared and despatched to Holland. Of these, one was submitted to the "Nineteen" directors of the West-India company; the other, to the States General. The language of these representations sets before us, in the most impressive light, the extremities to which the colonists at New Netherland were reduced.

The two petitions now referred to, form a part of the historical documents furnished in the valuable work of Mr. O'Callaghan. The following brief extracts will serve to give an idea of their tenor.

"We, poor inhabitants of New Netherland, have now to complain, that having enjoyed, for a long time, an indifferent peace with the heathen, Almighty God hath finally, through his righteous judgment, kindled the fire of war around us, during the current year, with the Indians, in which not only numbers of innocent people, men, women, and children, have been murdered in their houses, and at their work, and swept captives away, whereby this place, with all its inhabitants, is come to the greatest ruin;) but all the boweries and plantations at Pavonia, with twenty-five lasts (2700 bushels) of corn and other produce, have been burned, and the cattle destroyed.

"Long Island is destitute, also, of inhabitants and stock, except a few insignificant places over against the main, which are about to be abandoned. The English who have settled among us, have not escaped. They, too, except one place, are all murdered and burned."

"No resistance is offered the enemy, for want of men, arms, and ammunition, with which this place is very tenderly supplied. The fort is defenceless, and entirely out of order, and resembles, (with submission,) rather a molehill than a fort against the enemy. On the other hand, the enemy is strong and mighty. They have formed an alliance, one with another, with more than seven different tribes, well supplied with muskets, powder, and

ball, which they have procured and daily receive from private traders, in exchange for beaver; and with which they murder our people. The woods and the thickets are now also useful to them; for they have removed all their women, children, and old men, into the interior. The rest of the warriors daily menace our lives with fire and sword, and threaten to attack the fort, with all their strength,—now consisting of fifteen hundred men. We have to guard this post at all hours; for all the outside places are mostly in their hands."

"While the people are ruined, the corn and all other produce burned, and little or nothing saved, not a plough can be put, this fall, into the ground; so that not a hundred schepels will be sown hereabouts, and much less in the spring. If any provisions should be obtained at the east, from the English, we know not wherewith we poor men will pay for them; while private traders have, for the last three or four years, drained us by their extortions, and made this country wretchedly poor; for this must follow, so long as the industry of the land is at a standstill.

"The cattle being destroyed, the dwellings burned, the mouths of the women and children must remain shut. We speak not now of other necessaries, such as clothes, shirts, shoes, and stockings. Matters, in fine, are in such a fix, that it will be with us according to the words of the prophet:—'Who draws the sword, shall die of hunger and cold.'"

Reading Lesson XLI.

Success of Dutch expeditions against the Indians.—The hardy spirit of the colonists, however, was not to be utterly depressed, even by the extreme sufferings which their own representations so glowingly depict. During the severity of winter, in 1644, they despatched several parties to ravage the Indian possessions nearest to the fort. One detachment, sent to Staten island, succeeded in making capture of a large supply of corn. Another, despatched to Stamford, surprised and ravaged a village of twenty Indians. A third destroyed the forts of the Wickquaeskeeks, and brought in several captives, to be liberated in exchange.

Dutch attack on Mespath.—The colonists having learned

hat Pennawitz, a powerful chief of Long Island, was, in iolation of treaty, secretly aiding the hostile Indians, n murdering the whites, and ravaging their farms; a trong body of men, composed partly of Dutch colonists nd troops, and of English settlers, proceeded to Heemtede,* (Hempstead,) and Mespath or Matsepe, (now Newtown,) and, in a successful attack on these places, lew upwards of a hundred of the natives. This victory, owever, was, to the disgrace of the whites, followed by he perpetration of the most atrocious cruelties on the ersons of two of the unfortunate Indian captives, who vere put to death in the fiendish style practised by their wn race. But, as these acts are said to have been perormed in presence of director Kieft and counsellor La Montagne, it was, perhaps, a measure adopted, under he false impression that it would strike terror into the ndian enemy, by addressing their fears in a language vhich seemed the only one which they could understand, s expressing the determination of the whites to prosecute hostilities to the utmost. Otherwise, the sanction iven to such deeds, by officers of the government, would rgue a degree of deliberate brutality to which history ffords few parallels. The report of this inhuman deed xcited extreme indignation in Holland.

Destruction of the Indian force near Stamford.—The English captain, Underhill,† who had conducted the ttack on Heemstede, was sent out in company with nsign Van Dyck of the fort, at the head of a party of pwards of one hundred men, towards Stamford, where ne enemy were ascertained to be encamped in great orce. The rigors of a night in February, increased by heavy snow-storm, detained the force at Greenwich; nd it was not till ten o'clock, on the night of the follow-ng day, that the camp of the enemy was descried.

The Indians seem either to have been taken by surrise, or to have confided too much in their superiority n numbers. Their first attempt was to break the Dutch ne by attack. But in this they utterly failed; and within ne hour, nearly two hundred of the native warriors lay tretched before their wigwams, in the village streets; ne bright moonlight affording a deadly advantage to the

* Pronounced, *Haimèstaiday.*

† See the life of Underhill, in a subsequent part of this volume.

fire-arms of the Europeans. Underhill, whether acting under the apprehension of his party exhausting their ammunition, and being thus left at the mercy of their foe, by prolonging the attack, or with the recklessness too generally characteristic of the English, in regard to the savage race, ordered his men to set fire to the wigwams. The unfortunate natives soon fell victims, either to the weapons of their enemies, or to the flames which were consuming their own dwellings, into which they were either driven or voluntarily rushed back; preferring such a death to farther encounter with the whites, who offered no quarter.

Five or six hundred of the Indians were cut off in this inhuman manner, and perished, in their heroic style, without yielding their enemies the satisfaction of hearing a single groan from the sufferers.

Peace solicited by the Indians.—Terrified at the losses which they had sustained, several of the surrounding tribes now sent in delegates to sue for peace, which was granted on strict conditions for the future safety of the colonies. But as many of the natives yet remained out, in avowed hostility, and no aid could be had from Holland,—the States General devolving the whole affair on the company, and the latter having sunk into a condition of bankruptcy,—peace could not be considered as secure.

Reading Lesson XLII.

Renewed murmurs and representations against director Kieft.—Perceiving the necessity of levying a tax, in some form, to retrieve the desperate state of the public finances, Kieft summoned, once more, a meeting of the "Eight;" and these, notwithstanding their reluctance, were compelled to impose a temporary excise on the principal articles of traffic and consumption in the colony. The necessity of levying this impost had become more urgent, in consequence of the opportune arrival of a body of troops from Curaçao, whither they had resorted, when driven from the former Dutch colony at Maranham. These troops, it was hoped, would prove an efficient protection against the Indians. But the embarrassed state, alike of the colony of New Netherland, and of the West-India company in Holland, rendered it a matter of

reat difficulty to equip and pay this force, so as to ren-
er it available. Arrears were also due to the English
oldiers who had served in the late expeditions under the
ommand of Underhill.

The levying of the beer-tax seems to have been a
rominent grievance in the estimation of the colonists;
nd loud and angry remonstrances were made against it.
'he collection of it, however, was rigorously enforced by
ie director, in opposition to the will of the "Eight;"
nd the dissensions hence arising, at length divided the
olonists into two parties; the minority siding with the
irector, but the majority with the "Eight."

The issue was, that the latter body, indignant at the
arious official usurpations and mismanagements of Kieft,
-forwarded a memorial of grievances to the company in
Iolland. But the unfortunate condition of the company's
'airs at home, seems long to have prevented any atten-
on being paid to the sufferings and injuries of their
olonies.

Intervention of the States General, to regulate the affairs f the colony.—The obvious mismanagement of the local overnment at New Amsterdam, now called loudly for the tervention of the authority of the States General, the upreme power at home. The West-India company was cordingly directed to investigate thoroughly the condi-on of the colony, with a view to an effectual reformation the state of affairs. Among other beneficial measures dopted, was a resolution for the recall of director Kieft; hich, however, did not actually take place for some me, owing to the want of unanimity among the different anches of the company. These, it will be recollected, ere scattered over various ports and commercial entre-ts of the United Provinces, and were naturally jealous the preponderance acquired by the controlling action the chamber of commerce at Amsterdam; nor did ey, on all occasions, readily coincide with the measures that body, which, indeed, in some instances, seem to ve been both arbitrary and arrogant.

The miserable condition of the colony, which the pre-ding narrative has depicted, was fully brought to light the investigation which took place; and the States eneral, as mentioned, enjoined on the company various easures adapted to retrieve the sinking condition of the

colony. Among these, were an enlargement of the director's council, with a view to avoid the evils of arbitrary rule, on his part; a speedy adjustment of the points in dispute between the Dutch colony and those of New England; an amicable arrangement with the Indians; a change in the mode of establishing colonists, so as to bring them into villages and communities, for mutual protection; the repair of fort Amsterdam, to such extent as to render it available in case of hostilities; and the arming of the colonists, so as to render their aid to the limited military force, effectual, in case of attack from any quarter. Permission was granted to the deputies of every colony, to meet the director, once in six months, for the purpose of reporting the condition of their respective settlements, and to concert measures for the general good. Emigration was to be countenanced, as one important means of strengthening the colony. But, unhappily, the emigration of hired laborers was to be discouraged as less profitable than the purchase and importation of slaves,—a measure which was again enjoined as conducive to the welfare of the colonies.

Reading Lesson XLIII.

Subjugation of the Indians of Long Island.—Several of the Indian tribes continuing their hostile acts, it was resolved, in spring, 1645, to hire the services of a powerful chief of the Mockgonecocks of Long Island,—a tribe on friendly terms with the whites,—and thus reduce to subjection, or to peace, the hostile parties. The task imposed on the friendly sachem, was promptly performed; and while some of the native tribes voluntarily submitted, others were brought to terms by force. The Matinnecock Indians, then occupying the regions now known as Flushing, Glen Cove, Cold Spring, Huntington, and Cow Harbor, were among those comprehended in the measures of pacification and amity.

Compact with the Mohawks.—Governor Kieft, now anxious to extend his influence over the formidable Mohawks around fort Orange, repaired to that post, with a view to securing a firm and lasting treaty with that tribe. This desirable result was obtained through the aid and coöperation of the local authorities of the chief settlement

in the colony of Rensselaerswyck,—the now flourishing city of Albany,—the legislative capital of the State,—but, then, struggling with the usual impediments of an infant establishment in the wilderness.

A large number of the sachems of the river tribes and of those of Long Island, met the director and the colonists, in solemn conclave, on the 30th day of August, and, with all the usual Indian formalities of smoking the calumet, and attesting the sun and ocean, ratified, on their part, a secure and lasting peace, which the Dutch, in turn, pledged themselves honorably to maintain. Not long after, a day of public thanksgiving was appointed, in acknowledgment of the favor of Divine Providence, by which the blessing of peace had been vouchsafed.

Acquisition of additional territory.—Purchases were, about this time, made from the natives, of valuable tracts of land, with a view to extend the settlements of the colony. By these were secured, for possession by the whites, Conynen, or Rabbit's Island; Gowanus,* Mespath, or Newtown, which was at first called Vlissingen, (Flushing,) after the town of that name in Holland; and Gravenzande, now Gravesend, but originally bearing the former designation, in honor of the ancient seat of the court of the counts of Holland.

Appointment of Peter Stuyvesant as director.—The controllers of the West-India company, had, it will be remembered, resolved on the recall of director Kieft, whose maleadministration had subjected the colony to so much suffering. They had even conferred, in advance, the appointment of director on Van Dinclage, who had been, for years, prosecuting, without success, his claims against the company; but whose intimate knowledge of colonial affairs had probably secured him the appointment.

Previous to any decisive or final arrangement, on behalf of Van Dinclage, a more suitable candidate for the office about to be vacated, was found, in the person of Petrus or Peter Stuyvesant, afterwards so prominent a character in our early colonial history. This individual, while discharging the office of director, or governor, of Curaçao, attempted to reduce the Portuguese colony on the island of St. Martin; and, having received a severe

* Pronounced, *Gowawnus.*

wound, during the siege, was obliged to return to Holland, for surgical aid. After a tempestuous voyage, in which he had to put into an Irish harbor, he reached home, and, in the following summer, succeeded in obtaining medical relief, so far as to be able for active duty. The company, impressed with his well-known character for energy and activity, conferred on him, instead of Van Dinclage, the appointment of director of the colony of New Netherland.

The newly-appointed director submitted to the company various measures calculated to promote the interests of the colony. These were approved and sanctioned by a special committee. A leading feature in the proposed changes, was an obvious design to render New Netherland the head-quarters of Dutch colonial power in the western world. Dissensions again arose among the "chambers" which composed the branches of the company; and the chamber of Amsterdam seems to have usurped to itself the sole direction of affairs, in regard to the colony. The departure of the new director was deferred, in the indefinite expectation of a future period of greater harmony and more decisive action.

Extinction of the quarrel between Mr. Bogardus and director Kieft.—The rancorous disputes and bickerings, and the open public abuse, which, to the disgrace of the colony, had so long passed between the chaplain and the director of the colony at fort Amsterdam, came to such a height, in the early part of the year 1646, that the director not only absented himself from public worship, as the only way to avoid personal vituperation from the pulpit, but, at last, determined to put an end to the scandal, by a public prosecution of the chaplain. The interference of friends, however, and the prudent counsels, it is surmised, of Mr. Megapolensis,* the officiating clergyman of Rensselaerswyck, then on a visit to fort Amsterdam, composed these unhappy differences of the two officials, whose feuds had so long embroiled the community.

* The notes of this worthy divine and accomplished scholar, are among the valuable sources of information regarding the early condition of New Netherland.

Reading Lesson XLIV.

Encroachments of the Swedes.—The disquiet and irritation of director Kieft, seemed destined to know no end, between the encroachments of the New Englanders, on the one hand, and of the Swedes, on the other. The latter, by successive negotiations, had obtained, of the natives, a nominal claim to a tract of country on the Delaware,—then called the Great South River, as the Hudson was the North River, in reference to the boundaries of New Netherland. This tract extended thirty German miles, in length; and, in width, its extent was indefinite. This region the claimants had named, in honor of their native land, New Sweden; and queen Christina, then the sovereign of the parent country of the colonists, showed special favor to the enterprise of her subjects who had, in her name, and with her authority, made this accession to her dominions.

Printz, the Swedish governor, at this period, had received from his queen, on his appointment in 1642, full powers to use the military force at his command, in case of violence being offered by the Dutch. He had established his principal fort at Tinnicum, or New Gottenburg, about twelve miles below the site of Philadelphia, and had erected another at the mouth of Hog creek on the eastern bank of the Delaware, which was called Elsinburg or Elsborg. These forts gave him entire command of the mouth of the Delaware. A third means of annoyance to any hostile force, yet existed in fort Christina, which Peter Minuit, when in the service of Sweden, had erected on the Minquaas creek. Finally, the fort of Beversrede, at the mouth of the Schuylkill, originally erected by the Dutch, but afterwards seized by the Swedes, rendered the Swedish governor perfectly master of the Delaware and the adjacent country; so that the insignificant fort, (Nassau,) on the east bank of the Delaware, was all the foothold now retained by the Dutch, in that quarter.

Unavailing resistance of Andreas Hudde to the Swedish governor.*—The struggles of the Dutch West-India company at home, and of the now feeble colony at New Amsterdam, were alike unavailing, to resist the high-handed measures of the Swedish governor. In 1646, however, a

* Pronounced, *Hoodday.*

stubborn resistance to the exclusive claims of the Swedes, to the possession of the Delaware, was offered by the new Dutch commandant at fort Nassau, Andreas Hudde. This individual had been sent to supersede the former governor, Ilpendam, a man whose quiet disposition was deemed to have disqualified him from holding a post so beset by bold and vigilant enemies.

The earnest remonstrances of the new commandant, however, did not avail anything against the determined spirit of the Swedish governor, Printz, who persisted in ordering off a vessel despatched from New Amsterdam, for the purpose of trading with the natives on the Schuylkill; and the efficient force at the control of the Swedish commander, rendered any attempt at resistance nugatory.

A like discomfiture followed the attempt to secure possession of a tract of land opposite to Egg island, which had been purchased by Abraham Verplanck and others of New Amsterdam, with a view to establish a plantation there. The company's insignia, which had been erected on the spot, were despitefully torn down by the Swedes; and an angry correspondence, in the spirit of mutual defiance, ensued between the rival parties. On one occasion, Hudde's messenger was received with threats, and even personal violence; and, not unfrequently, the traders, on calling at the fort, were beaten and driven off. The Dutch commissary, however, from the want of a sufficient force, was compelled to submit to these indignities, with no other relief than bitter complaints forwarded to New Amsterdam.

Reading Lesson XLV.

Continued encroachments of the New Englanders.—A company of Connecticut adventurers established a trading post, this year, at Magdalen island, on the east side of the Hudson, below Redhook, in Dutchess county. Against this encroachment on the territorial rights of the company, Kieft made a firm protest, accompanied by a plain intimation of a resort to force, if rendered necessary, for the recovery of what had, in this and other instances, been usurped. The Connecticut governor Eaton, while he disclaimed all personal knowledge of

the infringement complained of, admitted the fact of a settlement having been established on the Paugusset, or Naugatuck, river, on the site of the present town of Derby, but maintained the rightfulness of this proceeding, as founded on purchase from the natives, within the proper limits of the English colonies.

The commissioners of the New-England colonies, meeting, not long after, at New Haven, the subject was fully submitted to them. A harsh and angry correspondence ensued, in which director Kieft displayed not a little ill temper, and a style of language more remarkable for low humor, and broad, graphic effect, than gubernatorial dignity. The low state of the company's treasury, however, would not permit any resort to measures involving expenditure for the maintenance of disputed rights; and Kieft, in answer to his grievous complaints, was enjoined to exert continued vigilance, but not to let his resistance amount to open violence.

Grants of Katskill and Yonkers.—Patents were, this year, granted by Kieft and his council, to two individuals, for eminent public services in connection with the pacification of the Indians; to Cornelis Van Slyck* of Breukelen,† the lands adjacent to the Katskill, notwithstanding the legal claims of the patroon of Rensselaerswyck; and to Adriaen Van der Donck a tract then called Nepperhaem,—now, Yonkers.

Incorporation of Breukelen.—The inhabitants of the village of Breukelen, (now Brooklyn,) were authorized, this year, to elect two or more magistrates, for the proper regulation of their affairs; and a local "schout," (sheriff,) dependent, however, on the company's officer at New Amsterdam, was commissioned to aid them in the discharge of their duties.

General condition of the colony of New Netherland, at the close of Kieft's administration.—The greater part of the Dutch population had, up to this period, been absorbed in the business of the fur trade; agriculture had been neglected; and to these evils had been added the misrule of director Kieft, and the devastating calamity of the war with the Indians. The settlement of the country had been thus retarded, and the growth and prosperity of the colony kept down. Mr. O'Callaghan, the faithful

* Pronounced, *Slyke*. † Sometimes spelled, *Breuckelen*.

and intelligent historian of this period, considers it doubtful whether the colony, at the close of Kieft's administration, contained more than a thousand souls. The mass of the inhabitants, he says, were far from wealthy; the immigrant population principally so poor as to require pecuniary aid, at the outset of their settlement. The dwellings of the inhabitants around the forts, were mostly small, low, wooden buildings, with thatched roofs and wooden chimneys.

Agricultural settlements, comparatively prosperous, had been established by the English, at the eastern extremity of Long Island. Among these were conspicuous the towns of South Hampton and South Old.* The plantations established by the Dutch, at the western extremity of the island, were also in a flourishing condition, as contrasted with many in other quarters: these now comprised Breukelen, (Brooklyn;) Amersfort, (Flatlands;) Gravenzande, (Gravesend;) Vlissingen, (Flushing;) Heemstede, (Hempstead;) Mespath, (Newtown;) and Gowanus. Bergen, and other settlements on the Jersey side of the river, had been principally devastated by the Indians. Albany, (then Beverswyck,) contained, as yet, but ten houses. The country between Rensselaerswyck and the Manhattans, was yet an unbroken wilderness. The labors of the plantation were generally performed by African slaves, who, though kindly treated, were regarded as strictly the property and chattels of their owners, and, as such, were bought and sold.

The sturdy resistance sometimes offered to the overbearing rule of director Kieft, and the free exercise of speech, by which he was habitually annoyed, served to show that the Dutch settlers retained a sense of their original rights, as members of the free communities from which they were sprung. Holland was, at this period, the model republic of the world; and the colonists of New Amsterdam, although subjected to the narrow scope of colonial privileges, were not forgetful of the venerated customs of their fatherland.

Unfortunately, the headstrong and arbitrary spirit of director Kieft, received little check from his limited council, and little effectual opposition from a community too generally addicted to the licence of colonial life.

* Written, in modern style, *Southampton* and *Southold*.

But, in the colony at large, we find satisfactory traces of the spirit of freemen,

"Who know their rights, and, knowing, dare maintain."

The prevalent influence of free institutions, was, in fact, silently preparing the way for that union of interests and relations, which subsequently took place between the Dutch colonies and those of republican New England. The main evils under which the colony of New Netherland was now suffering, were plainly attributable to the personal character and habits of director Kieft; and the arrival of their new ruler, Stuyvesant, was therefore anxiously looked for, by all.

SEC. IV.—EARLY HISTORY OF ALBANY.

Reading Lesson XLVI.

Colonization of the Manor of Rensselaerswyck—Among the invaluable services rendered by Mr. O'Callaghan to historical investigation connected with the early colonial history of New York, is the exact and instructive sketch which he has given us, in his History of New Netherland, of the establishment and progress of the colony of Rensselaerswyck, in which was unfolded the germ of the present city of Albany, the scene of so many events, and associated circumstances, of the highest interest to the people of this state. Mention was made, in a preceding page of the present volume, of the efforts made, by individuals in Holland,—in consequence of the immunities offered by the charter of 1629,—to secure the privileges attached to the nominal dignity of patroon, in the colony of New Netherland.

The most eminent and the most successful of those who embarked in such undertakings, was, it may be recollected, Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, pearl-merchant of Amsterdam, ancestor of the distinguished American family of that name.

Arrival of the colonists.—"Early in the spring of 1630," says Mr. O'Callaghan, in the account before mentioned, "a number of colonists, with their families, and provided with farming implements, stock, and all other necessaries, sailed from the Texel, in the company's ship the Eend-

racht,* captain Jan Brouwer,† commander, and arrived, in safety, at the Manhattes, after a passage of sixty-four days. In a short time afterwards, they landed at fort Orange, in the vicinity of which they were furnished with comfortable farmhouses and other dwellings, at the expense of the patroon and his associates. Other settlers followed, with additional stock, each succeeding season; and thus were laid the foundations of those moral, wealthy, and prosperous settlements which we now behold in and around the present city of Albany."

Administration of justice.—The organization of the colony, for purposes of civil jurisdiction, is interesting to the reader of our early history, as furnishing an instructive specimen of colonial administration under a patroon. On this dignitary and proprietor were conferred rights and privileges resembling those assumed by the feudal nobility of Europe. He was authorized to preside personally, or by deputy, at the administration of justice, whether civil or criminal. The laws recognized in the colony were the Roman civil code, by which the continental countries of Europe were then, and are still, governed; the ordinances of the company and of the director-general, and his council, together with those of the patroon and local directors.

Principal officers of the colony.—Among the prominent officers of the new colony, were Jacob Albertsen Planck, first sheriff, and Arendt Van Curler,‡ commissary-general, or superintendent. The latter was distinguished for his personal qualities, as a man of great dignity of character, cultivated mind, and humane disposition. These traits gave him a vast ascendency over the natives, whose reverence for him was unbounded. He was held in high esteem, also, by the English governor, Nicolls; and, on the surrender of the colony of New Netherland to Great Britain, was consulted in the reärrangement of public affairs. The French governor of Canada, count De Tracy, also manifested the highest regard for him, and invited him to an interview at Quebec. The Indian tribes around Albany manifested their profound respect for him, by using his name as their appellation for all subsequent governors of New York.

* Pronounced, *Aindraht.* † *Brooer.*

‡ Pronounced, *Coorler*, and sometimes spelled *Corlaer*, or corruptly, *Corlear.*

While prosecuting his journey to lower Canada, he was drowned in a storm on lake Champlain, in the year 1667. His death was mourned, as a public loss. He resided principally on his farm above Albany, but owned valuable property in Beverswyck, as it was then called, and took an active part in the settlement of Schenectady.

Character and condition of the colonists.—The emigrants who left Holland, to establish themselves in this portion of the new world, were, partly, planters who came at their own expense, and, partly, farmers and farm servants, sent out at the charge of the patroon, and aided by him, in their endeavors to establish themselves. The assistance afforded, in these cases, was liberal and effectual. It extended to providing suitable houses and barns, and even to an advance of stock and implements of husbandry. In consideration of such aid, a rent was received in the form of grain, beaver-skins, and wampum, or a certain portion of the produce of the farm. Some of the stipulations, in detail, however, savored strongly of the feudal spirit, not then extinct in Europe,—such as the tribute, annually, of a few pounds of butter, as an acknowledgment of the patroon's rights; the obligation to have all corn ground at the patroon's mill only; the prohibition against hunting or fishing without his license; and the assertion of his right to succeed to the estates of persons who died intestate.

Prosperity of the colony.—The generous spirit, however, of the patroon, and the integrity of the colonial officers, rendered Beverswyck* comparatively prosperous, as a trading and agricultural settlement.

Reading Lesson XLVII.

Van der Donck appointed sheriff.—This individual, so prominent in the early history of the colony, succeeded Planck, in the year 1641. He was a man of some consideration, in his native country, but seems to have been

* The names successively given to this settlement, as it waxed from a hamlet to a village and a town, were the Fuyck, (pronounced, *Fyke*, and signifying *crescent*,—so called from the curving bank of the river,) Beversfuyck,—Beverswyck; from the original abundance of beaver, there. In 1664, on the surrender of the country to England, it acquired, in compliment to the duke of York and Albany, the name which it now bears as a city.

bent on prosecuting his own interests, rather than those of the patroon, in his proceedings in the colony.

*The Rev. Johannes Megapolensis.**—The patroon, anxious to promote the prosperity of his infant colony, induced Johannes Megapolensis, an eminent divine and pastor, to emigrate to Rensselaerswyck, and take charge of the spiritual interests of the colonists, and, likewise, of the heathen inhabitants of the adjoining region. A provision, highly liberal for that day, was made for his creditable and comfortable support.

First church built in Albany.—To preserve his colony from the disasters which had befallen the scattered population on Manhattan island, and to facilitate attendance at church, as well as to keep the settlement compact, the patroon ordered the establishment of a ferry, near the foot of the Beaver's Kill, for the convenience of the settlers established on the opposite bank of the river, at Tuscameatick, now Greenbush. Thus originated the existing ferry. It was farther ordered, that no new settlements should be made, remote from the site of the church; and the burying-ground, to preserve it, in case of an attack from the Indians, had its location as a "church-yard." The whole settlement was still farther secured by the guns of the adjoining fort Orange.

Infringement of the patroon's monopoly.—The chief object of attention, as yet, with the great proprietors of New Netherland, was, everywhere, the fur trade carried on with the natives. The monopoly of this traffic was, in all instances, specially reserved for the patroons, or to such of the settlers as should purchase permission. But the temptation to embark in it, unauthorized, was too strong for the honor of many of the colonists; and a system of smuggling soon became very general.

Van der Donck, whose duty it was to suppress such illicit traffic, seems, for private ends, to have connived at its continuance rather than made any effectual attempt to check it. His culpable negligence excited much dissatisfaction in the mind of the upright Van Curler, who consequently incurred the resentment of the sheriff; and so far did the latter carry his rancor, as to attempt, by unjust influence on the colonists, to obtain the commissary's removal from office. His machinations, however, recoiled

* Pronounced, *Yohánnās Meggăpolen'sis.*

on himself; and he was ultimately divested of his appointment, as well as foiled in his attempt to establish himself as a patroon at Katskill, by secretly anticipating Van Rensselaer's arrangement for purchasing the lands there, of the natives.

Fort erected at Bear's island.—The patroon, determined to secure his rights, in regard to the fur trade, now fortified a post and trading-house at Beeren or Bear's island, —the southern extremity of his possessions, and placed it under command of Nicolaus Coorn,* with authority to demand toll of all passing vessels, and the lowering of their colors, in token of their recognition of the rights of the patroon.

A hardy skipper of fort Amsterdam, however, daring to pass the fort, in spite of the warning of Coorn, the latter fired upon his vessel, and actually pierced the company's flag. The authorities at fort Amsterdam, deeming this a gross insult to the company, summoned Coorn to appear before them. He, however, seems to have successfully defied their endeavors to intimidate or restrain him, and persisted in enforcing what he deemed the rights of the patroon, till the death of the latter, in the year 1646.

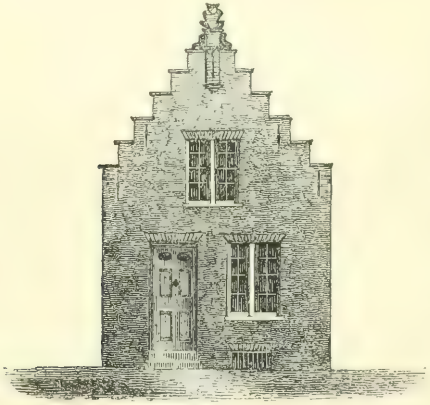
Retirement of Van der Donck.—On the death of the patroon, Van der Donck was superseded by Coorn, as sheriff of the colony. The former, not long after, losing his dwelling-house by fire, was invited by the humane Van Curler to take up his residence with him. But a quarrel ensuing, in regard to the charging of the loss, whether to Van der Donck or the patroon, Van der Donck was ordered to leave the house. He repaired to fort Orange, and, afterwards, to the Manhattans, and forwarded his claims for reparation, to the company in Holland.

Seizure of the patroon's ship, at fort Amsterdam.—The patroon, desirous to put a stop to the illicit traffic in furs, carried on by private individuals, despatched in 1644, a ship amply supplied with all articles in demand with the natives. This vessel happening to arrive when the privations attending the war with the Indian race were at their worst, and the soldiers of fort Amsterdam in a state of destitution; a requisition, in the style of martial law, was made and enforced on the supercargo, Pieter Wyncoop,† for a supply of shoes for the garrison. The affair did not

* Pronounced, *Cōrn.* † *Winecope.*

stop here. The authorities at the fort seized the arms and ammunition found on board, as contraband. The remonstrances of Van Curler were utterly unavailing; and he was compelled to submit to a compromise, by which the confiscated articles were to remain in possession of the authorities. The vessel, not long after, sailed for Holland; and Van Curler returned to present the matter to the patroon.

The cut annexed will serve to give a tolerably correct idea of the style of architecture prevalent in the dwellings of the early Dutch inhabitants of Albany, subsequent to the primitive era of log cabins.



SEC. V.—ADMINISTRATION OF DIRECTOR STUYVESANT.—1647–1664.

Reading Lesson XLVIII.

Administration of Peter Stuyvesant.—An end was, at length, put to the misgovernment of Kieft, by the arrival of his successor, Peter* Stuyvesant, who commenced his administration, about the end of May, 1647. The characteristic energy of the new director, was fully put to the proof, and his mind kept in perpetual anxiety, by the incessant inroads of the old intruders on the territory of New Netherland,—the New Englanders, at the north, and

* The Latin and Dutch form of this name, (Petrus,) is that which occurs in the early colonial records.

the Swedes, at the south. To these sources of disquiet were now added the encroachments of the English from the colony of Maryland; lord Baltimore claiming, on the South River, the whole region between latitudes 38° and 40°, from sea to sea. To embroil, still farther, the state of colonial affairs, an agent of the heirs of the earl of Stirling, was now asserting their right to Long Island, in virtue of an English grant.

Seizure of fort Casimir by the Swedes.—The Swedish governor, Printz, had, during his administration, protested against the right of the Dutch to erect fort Casimir, built on the site of Newcastle; and governor Risingh, the successor of Printz, succeeded by stratagem,—pretending a friendly visit,—in introducing a body of troops, and obtaining possession of the fort and its appurtenances.

Successful expedition of Stuyvesant against the Swedes on the Delaware.—Determined to retrieve the rights of the company, and the honor of New Netherland, Stuyvesant, in the month of September, 1655, arrived in the Delaware, with a competent force, retook fort Casimir, and compelled Risingh himself to surrender fort Christina, and to return, with the majority of his countrymen, to their native land. An end was thus put, so far as Sweden was concerned, to all interference with the rights of the Dutch to the possession of the region now constituting the state of Delaware.

Government of the colony of South River.—The country thus rescued from usurpation, was put under the control of a vice-director, whose residence was fixed at fort Casimir, now called Niewen Amstel; and, in 1658, William Beekman, the vice-director, was empowered to purchase and fortify cape Hinlopen.

Assertion of lord Baltimore's claim to the possession of the lands on the South River.—In September, 1659, arrived at Niewen Amstel, a commissioner despatched by governor Fendal of Maryland, to claim the whole region, for lord Baltimore, and to warn off the Dutch, as intruders. The claim was firmly resisted by Beekman; and colonel Utie, the English commissioner, withdrew, with the intention, as was thought, of returning with an invading force, to compel a compliance with his orders.

Lord Baltimore, however, hoping to succeed by peace-

able means, applied, within the following year, to the West-India company in Holland, for the purpose of obtaining their order, directing the colonists on the Delaware to submit to his authority. This application, as might have been expected, was peremptorily refused.

Reading Lesson XLIX.

Grant of New Netherland by Charles II.—Measures were now in preparation, abroad, which were destined to cause the downfall of Dutch authority in the colony of New Netherland. Charles II, of England, whose dissolute and reckless habits made the transfer of a distant colony an easy affair, on any terms, conferred, in March, 1664, on his brother, the duke of York and Albany, and on Sir George Carteret of the isle of Jersey, the whole domain of New Netherland; complimenting the patentees with assigning the names of New York and New Jersey to their respective grants.

Preparations in old and New England for taking possession of New Netherland.—An armament of four vessels, under the direction of Richard Nicolls and Sir George Carteret, as commissioners, was accordingly despatched for the purpose of taking possession of New Netherland. Intelligence of this expedition had reached both Boston and New Amsterdam; and supplies for the refreshment of the fleet had been voted at the former place, and such preparation made as circumstances would permit, for resistance, at the latter.

The ships having parted company, Nicolls and Carteret landed in Massachusetts bay, and after writing to governor Winthrop of Connecticut, requesting his aid, proceeded to Boston, to make similar demands on governor Endicott. These requisitions were, though reluctantly, complied with, to a certain extent.

Negotiations regarding the surrender of the colony.—Director Stuyvesant, when the English squadron made its appearance in the lower bay, anticipated the movements of the commissioners, by a formal letter of inquiry, regarding the purposes of the expedition. Commissioner Nicolls, in answer, announced his design of taking possession of the colony, whether by peaceable or forcible measures.

Stuyvesant's brave and fiery disposition could not brook the proposals for submission; and he remonstrated and resisted to the last, notwithstanding the dissuasions of his council. The conclusion of his long and vehement protest, is as remarkable for its strong natural eloquence, as for its manly firmness. The following is his language, in the passage to which we refer.

"And in case that you will act by force of arms, we protest and declare, in the name of our said lords, the States General, before God and men, that you will act an unjust violence, and a breach of the articles of peace, so solemnly sworn, agreed upon, and ratified by his majestie of England, and my lords, the States General; and the rather, for that, to prevent the shedding of blood, in the month of February last, we treated with captain John Scott, (who reported he had a commission from his said majestie,) touching the limits of Long Island, and concluded for the space of a year, that, in the meantime, the business might be treated on, between the king of Great Britain and my lords, the high and mighty States General: and again, at present, for the hinderance and prevention of all differences and the spilling of innocent blood, not only in these parts, but also in Europe, we offer unto you a treaty, by our deputyes, Mr. Cornelius Van Ruyven, secretary and receiver of New Holland; Cornelius Steenwick, burgomaster; Mr. Samuel Megapolensis, doctor of physic; and Mr. James Cousseau, heretofore sheriff. As touching the threats in your conclusion, we have nothing to answer, only that we fear nothing but what God, (who is as just as merciful,) shall lay upon us; all things being in his gracious disposall; and we may as well be preserved by him with small forces as by a great army; which makes us to wish you all happiness and prosperity, and recommend you to his protection. My lords, your thrice humble and affectionate servant and friend," (signed,) "P. Stuyvesant. At the fort at Amsterdam, the second of September, new stile, 1664."

Still hoping to avert the surrender of the colony, Stuyvesant wrote, once more, proposing an accommodation. But Nicolls cut the matter short by a decisive answer; and the director, at last, acceded to a surrender, on the sole condition that the limits of the Dutch and English

possessions should be ultimately settled by the European authorities on both sides.

On the morning of the 27th August, old style, the capitulation was signed by the commissioners of both parties at the director's "bowery." The terms of surrender were honorable and liberal. But the sturdy spirit of the director was manifested, to the last, in his refusing to ratify the act, till two days had elapsed. His Roman heart seems to have merited a happier issue than it was his lot to experience, in being compelled to surrender one of the noblest colonies of his native country.

Origin of the name of "New York."—New Amsterdam, on its surrender to England, took its present name, in compliment to the duke of York. As yet it consisted of but several narrow and short streets, skirted by a few straggling plantations. Such was then the condition of what is now the chief city of the union, and one of the greatest commercial emporia of the world.

Retirement of the ex-director.—The site of the farm of director Stuyvesant, was then remote from the town; and to it he withdrew,—with what feelings we may judge,—preferring a life of retirement, on this side the Atlantic, to a return home, where the mortification attending his condition would be more exposed to remark. His remains



GOVERNOR STUYVESANT'S HOUSE, ON THE BOWERY.

were interred in a chapel which he had caused to be erected on his farm.

Peaceable submission of the Dutch.—The transfer of the colony to the English, seems to have had but little effect on the limited population of the town. Most of the inhabitants remained, and became contented subjects of the new government.

Reduction of the remoter settlements.—Sir Robert Carr took command of the detachment of the English force to which was assigned the reduction of the colony on the Delaware; and Sir George Carteret that of the force designed for the reduction of fort Orange. These commanders were successful in their respective undertakings; and, on the surrender of fort Orange, the settlement there, now waxing to a town, received, as formerly mentioned, the name of Albany, in compliment to the duke of York and Albany.

CHAP. IV.—NEW YORK, UNDER THE SUPREMACY OF ENGLAND.

SEC. I.—ADMINISTRATIONS OF GOVERNORS NICOLLS, LOVELACE, COLVE, AND ANDROS.—1664-1682.

Reading Lesson L.

Character of the first English governor.—The colony of New Netherland, being now entirely under the control of the English, the government was assumed by commissioner Nicolls, who, during his short period of office, seems to have acquitted himself with honor and discretion, in the performance of his duties.

New York incorporated as a city.—In June, 1665, the inhabitants of New York were incorporated,—though without the formality of a charter, till 1686,—under a mayor,* aldermen, and sheriff, after the manner of En-

* The first mayor of New York was captain Willet, ancestor of colonel Marinus Willet, mayor of the city in 1807. See the life of captain Willet, on a subsequent page.

glish towns. But so judicious were the proceedings of governor Nicolls, and so easily did the Dutch and English civil arrangements coalesce, that everything went on harmoniously, notwithstanding the war, of two years' continuance, between England and Holland. The war, however, was terminated by the treaty of Breda, in July, 1667.

Nicolls returned, this year, to England; leaving a reputation highly creditable to him, as an individual, not less than as a governor.

Administration of colonel Lovelace.—In May, 1667, Nicolls was succeeded by colonel Lovelace, a man of humane and affable qualities, who, like his predecessor, was highly esteemed by the people of the colony.

Recapture of the colony by the Dutch.—Charles II, of England, having dishonorably deserted his alliance with the Dutch, and united, in 1672, with Louis XIV, of France, then at war with that people, a Dutch squadron, at the close of July 1673, made its appearance off Staten island; and,—by secret communication with John Manning, the commandant of the garrison at New York,—succeeded in capturing the fort, without resistance. The Dutch power was soon reëstablished and recognized, throughout the colony; and governor Lovelace obtained leave to return to England.

Resumption of the colony by the English.—The new Dutch governor, Colvé,* however, remained but a short time in office; Holland and England having concluded a peace in February, 1674, the terms of which were, that all captured possessions, on both sides, should revert to their previous occupants; and, on the 31st of October of the same year, Sir Edmund Andros, the English governor, received the peaceable surrender of the colony which was thus placed under his power.

Punishment of Manning for his treasonous surrender.—One of the first public acts of governor Andros, was to bring to trial, before a court martial, commandant Manning, who had so basely surrendered the fort at New York, to the Dutch squadron. The culprit seems to have found means, on an intermediate visit to England, to make his peace, in part, with the king and the duke of York; for he suffered no farther penalty than degradation and

* Pronounced, *Colvay.*

disgrace. He was led to the city hall, in front of which his sword was publicly broken over his head; and he was there proclaimed incapable, thenceforward, of wearing a sword, or sustaining any public office.

Character of Andros's administration.—The circumstances in which Andros was placed, in his government of New York, gave little occasion for the manifestation of that arbitrary and tyrannical spirit which he manifested in New England. New York was the special province of the duke of York, heir apparent to the English crown; and Andros was one whose servile spirit was an effectual barrier to any latitude of conduct, which might have displeased his superior, in the management of affairs, in a colony which it was his interest, as far as possible, to conciliate.

Removal of Andros.—The government of East Jersey had, in 1675, been entrusted, by Sir George Carteret, to his relative Philip Carteret, who was now, (1680,) exercising jurisdiction there. Andros disputed the right of the latter, and, in the quarrel which ensued, went so far as to imprison him in New York. This unauthorized and arbitrary act is thought, by some, to have been the chief cause of the removal of Andros from his office; as his proceedings, in this affair, were disapproved in England. But there could have been no very great dissatisfaction actually felt; for Andros was merely transferred to the honorable post of governor at Boston.

SEC. II.—ADMINISTRATION OF GOVERNOR DONGAN.—1683-1688.

Reading Lesson LI.

Character of governor Dongan.—Colonel Thomas Dongan, though appointed governor in September, 1682, did not arrive till the end of August, in the following year. He was a gentleman of polished and conciliatory deportment and sound principles; and although, as a professed catholic, he could not be so acceptable, as he might otherwise have been, to a community consisting chiefly of presbyterians, he was regarded with much respect and good will, for his personal qualities and official conduct.

It was under his enlightened administration that the people were first permitted to elect representatives, and enjoy their due place in the management of public affairs

Dongan's proceedings in this matter, however, seem to have been expressly authorized by his superior, the duke of York, to whom earnest petitions for the recognition of popular rights, had been previously made, and to whom a formal letter of grateful acknowledgments, was duly forwarded by the sheriffs of New York, in the name of the community at large.

Hostilities between the French and the Five Nations.—The victorious career of the Indians of the Five Nations, in their attempts to subjugate the surrounding tribes, had all along excited the greatest apprehension, in the minds of the French colonists of Canada, for the safety of their possessions. Hostilities, in fact, had existed between the French and the natives, from a very early date. This warfare, in the infant condition of the French colonies, had well nigh proved fatal to them; as the tribes with whom they were at war, were formidable both for numbers and valor.

Governor Courcelles* had, in autumn, 1665, despatched a force to ravage the territory of the Mohawks. But this body of troops, from ignorance of the country, imperfect equipment, and deficient supplies, reached Schenectady in a state of utter exhaustion; and, but for the humane interference of Van Curler, the Dutch commissary at Albany, so distinguished for his peaceful mediation between the European settlers and the natives,—they would have been cut off, to a man, by the Mohawks.

A more formidable force was, in the spring of the following year, sent into the country of the Mohawks, but with no effectual results; as the red men retired to their inaccessible fastnesses, leaving only their aged and helpless to the mercy of the enemy.

Feeling the utter uselessness of their attempts to reduce or punish their enemies, the French concluded a peace with them, in 1667; and, for successive years, pursued an advantageous traffic with the Indians; but, at the same time, took care to protect their settlements against invasion, by a line of effective fortifications.

Courcelles had, on the eve of his return to France, in 1672, obtained permission of the natives to erect a fort on lake Ontario. This his successor, count Frontenac, completed; and the fort continued long to bear his name.

* Pronounced, *Coorsell.*

t was, at length, in 1678, rebuilt with stone, by M. De
a Salle, who first launched vessels of European con-
truction, on lakes Ontario and Erie, and commenced a
ort at Niagara.

Governor Dongan's communications with the Indians.—
. leading feature in the policy of colonel Dongan's ad-
inistration, was the judicious care which he bestowed
n the relations of the colony with the natives. He
eems, moreover, to have pursued an independent course,
egarding the instructions of his government at home.
he Romish partialities of the English monarch, induced
im to enjoin it on the governor that he should aid the
rench, in their hostilities with the natives. This he de-
ined doing; being aware of the unfriendly disposition
the French towards the English, which, about this
me, was manifested in their stirring up the Indians to
tack the western settlements of Maryland and Virginia.
his aggression gave occasion for the great convention
eld at Albany, in 1684.

At this convention, a treaty of amity was formed be-
een the English and the Five Nations; and governor
ongan,—true to its stipulations, disregarded the injunc-
on of his government, to facilitate the hostile measures
the French, then intending to invade the Indian coun-
y,—sent information of this intention, to the Indians,
d gave them assurances of his readiness to assist them
any emergency.

Reading Lesson LII.

*Failure of De la Barré's expedition against the Five
ations.*—De la Barré, then governor of Canada, pro-
eeded, with a force of seventeen hundred men, to lake
ntario; but, being long detained by the sickness of his
oops, at fort Frontenac, and poorly supplied with pro-
vion, he found it necessary, in the exhausted state of
s army, to conclude a treaty, at which the Indians
ade no scruple of freely expressing their contempt for
e French, by the mouth of Garrangula, chief of the
onondagas. But circumstances admitted of no redress.

The galling eloquence of the Indian orator, on this
ccasion, is preserved in the following passage from
dge Smith's History of New York,—one of the valu-

able sources of authentic information regarding the colonial period with which we are now occupied.

At the convention for forming the treaty, governor De la Barré had closed his address in threatening language.

"Garrangula heard these threats with contempt, because he had learned the distressed state of the French army, and knew that they were incapable of executing the designs with which they set out; and, therefore, after walking five or six times round the circle, he answered the French governor, in the following strain:

'Yonnondio,* I honor you; and the warriors that are with me likewise honor you. Your interpreter has finished your speech: I now begin mine. My words make haste to reach your ears: hearken to them.

'Yonnondio, you must have believed, when you left Quebec, that the sun had burned up all the forests, which render our country inaccessible to the French, or that the lakes had so far overflowed the banks, that they had surrounded our castles, and that it was impossible for us to get out of them. Yes, Yonnondio, surely you must have dreamed so; and the curiosity of seeing so great a wonder has brought you so far. Now you are undeceived; since I, and the warriors here present, are come to assure you, that the Senecas, Cayugas, Onondagas, Oneidas, and Mohawks, are yet alive.

'I thank you, in their name, for bringing back into their country the calumet, which your predecessor received from their hands. It was happy for you, that you left under ground that murdering hatchet which has been so often dyed in the blood of the French.

'Hear, Yonnondio, I do not sleep, I have my eyes open; and the sun which enlightens me, discovers to me a great captain at the head of a company of soldiers, who speaks as if he were dreaming. He says that he only came to the lake to smoke the great calumet with the Onondagas. But Garrangula says that he sees the contrary; that it was to knock them on the head, if sickness had not weakened the arms of the French.

'I see Yonnondio raving in a camp of sick men, whose lives the Great Spirit has saved by inflicting this sickness on them. Hear, Yonnondio, our women had taken their clubs, our children and old men had carried their bows

* The Indian appellation of governor De la Barré.

and arrows into the heart of your camp, if our warriors had not disarmed them, and kept them back, when your messenger came to our castles.—It is done; and I have said it.

'Hear, Yonnondio, we plundered none of the French, but those that carried guns, powder, and ball to the Twightwies and Chictaghicks, because those arms might have cost us our lives. Herein we follow the example of the Jesuits, who stave all the kegs of rum brought to our castles, lest drunken Indians should knock them on the head. Our warriors have not beaver enough to pay for all these arms that they have taken; and our old men are not afraid of the war.—This wampum belt preserves my words.*

'We carried the English into our lakes, to trade there with the Utawawas and Quatoghies, as the Adirondacks brought the French to our castles, to carry on the trade which the English say is theirs. We are born free; we neither depend on Yonnondio nor Corlear.†

'We may go where we please, and carry with us whom we please, and buy and sell what we please: if your allies be slaves, use them as such, command them to receive no other but your people.—This belt preserves my words.

'We knocked the Twightwies and Chictaghicks on the head, because they had cut down the trees of peace, which were the limits of our country. They have hunted beavers on our lands: they have acted contrary to the customs of all Indians; for they left none of the beavers alive, they killed both male and female. They brought the Satanas‡ into the country, to take part with them, after they had concerted ill designs against us. We have done less than either the English or French, that have usurped the lands of so many Indian nations, and chased them from their own country.—This belt preserves my words.

'Hear, Yonnondio:—what I say is the voice of all the

* Every topic introduced in the public speech of an Indian orator, was indicated, as formerly mentioned, by the delivery of a wampum belt, by reference to which every subject was recalled to memory.

† The Indian appellation of the governor of New York,—given, as formerly mentioned, in honor of Van Curler, or Corlear, the commissary at Albany, and the great friend of the Indians.

‡ By the French called Sauounons.

Five Nations. Hear what they answer,—open your ears to what they speak. The Senecas, Cayugas, Onondagas, Oneidas, and Mohawks say, that when they buried the hatchet at Cadaracqui, in the presence of your predecessor, in the middle of the fort, they planted the tree of peace in the same place, to be there carefully preserved, that, instead of a retreat for soldiers, that fort might be a rendezvous for merchants; that instead of arms and ammunition of war, beavers and merchandise should only enter there.

'Hear, Yonnondio, take care, for the future, that so great a number of soldiers as appear there do not choke the tree of peace planted in so small a fort. It will be a great loss, if after it had so easily taken root, you should stop its growth and prevent its covering your country and ours with its branches. I assure you, in the name of the Five Nations, that our warriors shall dance to the calumet of peace, under its leaves, and shall remain quiet on their mats, and shall never dig up the hatchet till their brother Yonnondio or Corlear shall either jointly or separately endeavor to attack the country which the Great Spirit has given to our ancestors.'"

Reading Lesson LIII.

Proceedings of the French governor, De Nonville.—The marquis De Nonville, De la Barré's successor in the government of Canada, brought with him a fresh supply of troops from France, and, with high expectations of success, commenced operations against the Indians. To secure the French establishments against both the natives and the English, he proposed the erection of a strong stone fortification at Niagara. Governor Dongan, observing his intentions, protested against these proceedings, as obstructing the English right of trade, and encroaching on the English territory. He intimated farther his readiness to support the confederated tribes of the Five Nations, as allies of England, against any attack made upon them by the French.

De Nonville's expedition against the Senecas.—The Indian confederates were meditating retaliation on the Twightwies, or Miamis, for certain acts of hostility, instigated by the French. De Nonville determined at once

to protect his allies, and anticipate the hostilities of the confederates, by invading the territory of the Senecas, one of the most formidable members of the Indian league. Resolved to strike an effectual blow, he concentrated at Montreal, in 1687, a force of two thousand troops and six hundred Indians.

Emboldened by these extensive preparations, the French officers stationed on the lakes, seized and imprisoned two parties of English traders; notwithstanding the stipulations of the existing treaty between France and England, for open traffic with the natives.

The first victims to the French invading force, were two villages of the confederates, the inhabitants of which had yielded to the invitations of the French, and established themselves near to lake Ontario. Of these unfortunate beings part were abandoned to the savage cruelties of their enemies,—the natives in alliance with the French, and part were transported to the galleys in Europe.

Stratagem and successful resistance on the part of the Senecas.—De Nonville's army, setting out from the fort at Cadaracqui, marched without obstruction to the principal village of the Senecas, in anticipation of making an easy conquest of their retreating enemy. But the retreat was only a feint; and when the French had just passed the village, the Seneca warriors, to the number of five hundred, sprang from their ambush, and, attacking their unsuspecting enemy in front and rear, made dreadful havoc among them, till checked by the reserved force of Indians in alliance with the French.

This disastrous repulse so discouraged the French commander, that, after burning the villages and corn of the adjacent region, he threw up a fort on the southeast side of the straits at Niagara, and, having posted there a garrison of a hundred men, withdrew the body of his army, and desisted from farther hostilities. The force which he left, was strictly blockaded by the Indians, and, with the exception of a small remnant, ultimately perished, through famine.

Governor Dongan's interview with the chiefs of the confederates at Albany.—Not long after the unsuccessful expedition of the French, colonel Dongan met the chiefs of the Five Nations at Albany, cautioned them, once more, against the approaches of the French, and gave them as-

surance of his protection and support, if they would abstain from any negotiation with the French, unless after having duly consulted with him.

The confederates retaliate on the French.—Soon after the interview mentioned, the Mohawks and Mahicanders, or River Indians, made an assault on fort Chambly, burned several houses, and carried off many captives. A party of Onondagas surprised some French soldiers near fort Frontenac, and seized them, as hostages for the safety of the Indians sent to the French galleys.

In reply to the messenger sent to open negotiations with the Onondagas, in 1688, colonel Dongan declared, in their name, that no peace could be made with any of the Five Nations till the captured Indians were returned, the French forts razed, and satisfaction made to the injured Senecas.

Reading Lesson LIV.

Negotiation with the confederates at Montreal.—King James II, who now occupied the English throne, being friendly to France, would not support governor Dongan, in his endeavors to secure the dependence of the Five Nations on the crown of England, but commanded him to use exertions to induce the confederates to make peace with the French.

A cessation of hostilities, and an exchange of prisoners, were accordingly brought about, and a great council held at Montreal, at which it was stipulated that the French might supply fort Frontenac with provisions, and have their allies among the Indians secured from hostility. The Mohawks and Senecas, who had absented themselves from the council, were, it was stipulated, to send in their concurrence.

Renewal of hostilities between the French and the Indians.—An unexpected cause prevented the long continuance of peace between the contending parties. Adario, the chief of the Dinondadies,—a tribe which had lately fallen off from the French interest to the English,—apprehensive that the occasion of peace might be used to punish the defection, resolved to embroil the French and Indians anew, and to ingratiate himself with the former. To accomplish his treacherous scheme, he attacked a body of ambassadors belonging to the Five Nations, on their way

to hold communications with the French. Some of these he killed, and informed those of them whom he took prisoners, that he had received his information of their passing, from the French governor. Indignant at the apparent treachery of that officer, the confederates determined on a bloody revenge.

Invasion of Montreal by the confederates.—On the 26th of July, 1688, they landed with a large force, on the south side of the island of Montreal, surprised and massacred the French, burned their houses, and devastated their farms. A few of the whites were reserved to suffer the horrors of torture at the stake. A second attack was made, in the month of October, and the devastation of the lower part of the island completed. Many hundreds of the French perished miserably, in these merciless attacks.

Such was the terror inspired by these savage atrocities, that the garrison on lake Ontario hastily abandoned their fort to the enemy, and, with difficulty saved themselves by a precipitate retreat to firmer strongholds. Nothing but the inability of the Indians, to conduct a systematic blockade or siege, preserved, at this time, the French settlements from utter destruction.

SEC. III.—ADMINISTRATION OF LEISLER.—1688-1690

Discontents at New York.—The great majority of the inhabitants of New York being either of Dutch or English origin, were much dissatisfied with the apparent ascendency of the Roman-catholic religion, among the officers of the government. The partiality of king James for the Romish faith and worship, had led him to confer office principally on individuals of that persuasion; and the colonists began to fear for the infringement of their religious rights. As yet, however, no active movement took place, on the part of the colonists; although it was now understood that the people of England were,—from apprehensions similar to their own,—already engaged in negotiations for inviting over William, the protestant prince of Orange, to take possession of the throne.

Leisler's Insurrection.—News, at length, arrived that the people of Boston, aware like themselves of the movement in England, and impatient of the misgovernment of

Andros, had risen and seized his person, and sent him home to England. This intelligence stirred up some of the more active spirits in the colony of New York, to attempt a rising in favor of the prince of Orange.

The leader, in this movement, was Jacob Leisler, an individual not personally competent for the conduct of so important a step as a colonial revolution, but guided by the advice of his son-in-law, Milborne, an Englishman, a man of greater intelligence, although not of so active and energetic a temper.

Leisler seizes the garrison.—As a captain of militia, Leisler, taking advantage of the customary practice of having the militia mount guard at night, entered with a body of forty-nine men, resolved to hold possession till the whole militia of the province should declare in favor of his movement. This step was a bold one; for Leisler, although popular with the majority, was, by no means, a leader whom the officers and magistrates of the colony would choose to follow. The result, therefore, remained, for some days, doubtful; and the more so that governor Dongan, who had shortly before resigned his office to the charge of his lieutenant Nicholson, was yet lingering in the bay, previous to his departure for England.

Success of Leisler's movement.—At this crisis, a false report of the arrival of a squadron from England, with orders from the new sovereign, operated powerfully in favor of Leisler; and, on the 3d of June, 1689, brought to his support the mass of the people. Dongan, seeing farther delay fruitless, set sail for England; and Nicholson, fearing for his personal safety, withdrew from the place.

Reading Lesson LV.

Leisler's communication to England.—Authentic information of the accession of William and Mary, having, at length, reached America, Leisler assumed the direction of affairs, and sent over an address recounting the measures which, in conjunction with the people of the colony, he had taken. But Nicholson, who had speedily embarked for England, having anticipated the arrival of the bearer of the colonial despatches, had so artfully colored his representations of them, that little regard was paid to Leisler and his coadjutors, and no reward conferred for

their zealous and effective services; while Nicholson found means to secure for himself the government of Virginia. Dongan, soon after his return to England, retired to his estate in Ireland.

Resistance to Leisler's authority.—The former officers and magistrates of the colony, resenting the authority assumed by an individual so humble as Leisler, withdrew to Albany, and there endeavored to excite opposition to his measures. To counteract the effect of such proceedings, Leisler enlarged his council, and, to a certain extent, abstained from the exercise of personal authority. In this state of affairs in the colony, a despatch arrived from England, with instructions addressed to Nicholson, or his representative, for the administration of the local government. This document Leisler received, as virtually addressed to himself, and proceeded to act according to its directions.

Overtures of the New-Englanders on Long Island.—The inhabitants of the eastern part of Long Island, desirous of profiting by the change of administration, made overtures, at first, to be received under the protection of the colony of Connecticut, from which many of them had emigrated. These overtures, however, were declined; and matters were quietly suffered to take their natural course, by which the whole island continued under the control of the government of New York.

Reduction of Albany.—The people of Albany, influenced by the malecontents from New York, held out firmly against the attempts of Leisler to gain possession of the fort, and even solicited armed assistance from Connecticut, to enable them to retain it. Milborne was empowered to reduce the place, and though, at first, deterred from the attempt, succeeded, at last, in securing possession.

French scheme for the invasion of New York.—War having broken out between England and France, the moment was deemed favorable for the invasion of the English colonies; and a force was accordingly despatched for this purpose, under count Frontenac. On the arrival of the force, however, the disastrous accounts from Montreal discouraged the general from attempting any active measures for that season; and, on the withdrawal of De Nonville, he succeeded to the charge of the duties of

governor. Among other measures of security, he deemed it prudent to contract a treaty of peace and alliance with the Five Nations, in January, 1690.

Attack on Schenectady.—Strengthened by the pacification of the confederates, count Frontenac ventured to send out invading parties against the English settlements in New York. One of these detachments, composed of a mingled body of French and Indians, succeeded in surprising and ravaging the village of Schenectady.

Colonel Schuyler, at that time mayor of Albany, gave the following account of this tragic scene.

"After two and twenty days' march, the enemy fell in with Schenectady, on the 8th of February; and were reduced to such straits, that they had thoughts of surrendering themselves prisoners of war. But their scouts, who were a day or two in the village, entirely unsuspected, returned with such encouraging accounts of the absolute security of the people, that the enemy determined on the attack. They entered, on Saturday night, about eleven o'clock, at the gates, which were found unshut; and, that every house might be invested at the same time, divided into small parties of six or seven men. The inhabitants were in a profound sleep, and unalarmed, till their doors were broken open. Never were people in a more wretched consternation. Before they were risen from their beds, the enemy entered their houses, and began the perpetration of the most inhuman barbarities.

"No tongue," says colonel Schuyler, "can express the cruelties that were committed. The whole village was instantly in a blaze. Women were barbarously murdered, and their infants cast into the flames, or dashed against the posts of the doors. Sixty persons perished in the massacre; and twenty-seven were carried into captivity. The rest fled, naked, towards Albany, through a deep snow, which fell, that very night, in a terrible storm; and twenty-five of these fugitives lost their limbs in the flight, through the severity of the frost.

"The news of this dreadful tragedy reached Albany about the break of day, and universal dread seized the inhabitants of that city; the enemy being reported to be one thousand four hundred strong. A party of horse was immediately despatched to Schenectady; and a few

Mohawks then in town, fearful of being intercepted, were with difficulty, sent to apprise their own castles.

"The Mohawks were unacquainted with this bloody scene, till two days after it happened; our messengers being scarce able to travel through the great depth of the snow. The enemy, in the meantime, pillaged the town of Schenectady till noon of the next day; and then went off with their plunder, and about forty of the best horses. The rest, with all the cattle they could find, lay slaughtered in the streets."

Retaliation by the confederates on the French settlements.—The French, in their assault on Schenectady, had abstained from offering any violence to the Mohawks in the vicinity; as they hoped, in this way, to secure their friendship and to detach them from the English. But regardless of this exception, they rose in common with the other members of the confederacy, to avenge the sufferings of their ancient allies, and carried war and devastation into the border settlements of the French.

SEC. IV.—ADMINISTRATIONS OF GOVERNORS SLOUGHTER, FLETCHER, AND BELLAMONT.—1691-1702.

Reading Lesson LVI.

Governor Sloughter.—As early as January, 1689, colonel Henry Sloughter had been commissioned as governor of New York. But, from various causes, he did not assume his new office till his arrival in March, 1691. Unfortunately for the colony, he proved unfit for the discharge of duties so arduous as those of governor of a disturbed colony, at a momentous crisis; and his incapacity for any office involving high responsibility, was soon evinced.

Condemnation of Leisler.—Governor Sloughter, on his arrival, met with an unexpected resistance to his authority, on the part of Leisler. This individual, although he knew of Sloughter's appointment, foolishly refused to surrender the garrison, or to give up Bayard and Nichols, whom he had arbitrarily imprisoned, for their opposition to his proceedings.

On a second demand of surrender, he deputed Milborne and another, to confer with the new governor. These two individuals were immediately seized as rebels; and Leisler intimidated, withdrew from the fort, and was soon

after apprehended and brought to trial for treason. He and Milborne were both found guilty, and condemned to death.

Execution of Leisler and Milborne.—The enemies of Leisler, fearing that his partisans might rally for his rescue, as the governor was about to leave for Albany, succeeded in inducing both the assembly and the council to advise the immediate execution of the criminals. Sloughter, however, fearing the issue of so serious a step, in the case of men who had so zealously and effectually promoted the revolution, deferred giving his sanction to the sentence. But his consent was, at last, obtained when he was in a condition of inebriety; and Leisler and Milborne were accordingly executed. Their estates, however, were afterwards exempted from the confiscation usual in cases of treason, and restored to their families, on the representations of Leisler's son, at the English court. The bodies of the deceased, moreover, were taken up, and honorably interred.

Temporary government of captain Ingoldsby.—Governor Sloughter having died suddenly, the government devolved, by legislative provision, on the president of the council. Joseph Dudley was entitled thus to administer the government of the colony, but yielded his right to captain Ingoldsby, whose chief public act seems to have been the holding of a council with the confederate Indians, to encourage them to continue their hostilities with the French.

Major Schuyler's expeditions against the French settlements.—The war between England and France continued to be vigorously prosecuted in the colonies. Major Schuyler led a force consisting in part of friendly Mohawks against the French settlements on lake Champlain, and inflicted a signal defeat on a superior force of the enemy at La Prairie.

Beaucour's encounter with a body of the confederates.—A distinguished young officer of the French, led, in the following winter, a force of a few hundred men, through incredible hardships, to attack a body of the confederates, at Niagara. The Indians, amounting to but eighty, fought bravely, but were cut off, nearly to a man. Their tribes, in revenge, continued their incursions on the French settlements. These they harassed to such an

extent, that count Frontenac, exasperated by their cruelties, so far forgot the principles of humanity as to permit, in retaliation, the death of a captive, by extreme tortures, at the hands of the Indian allies.

Reading Lesson LVII.

Character of governor Fletcher.—On the 29th of August, 1692, colonel Benjamin Fletcher arrived with a commission, as governor of the colony. Like some of his predecessors, however, he does not seem to have been a fit person to undertake the duties of such an office. He possessed the active habits of a soldier; but he was passionate and avaricious. It was more through his good sense in submitting to the guidance, and adopting the suggestions of major Schuyler, than any abilities of his own, that he succeeded in controlling the Indian tribes, whose action had now become so important, for weal or woe, to the colony.

Descent of the French on the Mohawks.—In January, 1693, the French governor of Canada, despairing of effecting a lasting peace with the Indians, determined to strike an effectual blow at the Mohawks. He equipped, accordingly, an army of nearly seven hundred French and Indians, for this purpose. This force, passing Schenectady, on the 6th of February, surprised the forts of the Mohawks, and returned with no fewer than three hundred captives.

The people of Schenectady seem to have been culpably negligent about apprizing the Indians of their danger. But colonel Schuyler instantly set out with a volunteer force, from Albany, and overtaking the rear of the enemy, succeeded in retaking a large number of captives. The French, in their retreat, fortunately found a portion of the north branch of the Hudson frozen over, by which they escaped to their own territory. Both armies endured incredible hardships from famine; as the provisions of the French had been exhausted by the length of their campaign, and the English, in the zeal of pursuit, had started with but a scanty supply.

Governor Fletcher, hearing of the French invasion, hastened to the scene of action, and, in a very few days, was at Schenectady with a competent force of volunteers.

But the rapid retreat of the French rendered the movement unavailing, any farther than to confirm the faith of the Indians in their allies. In admiration of Fletcher's despatch, on this occasion, the natives conferred on him the appellation of the "great swift arrow."

Disposition of the confederates toward peace with the French.—The influence of the French priests among the Indian tribes, was now so decidedly in the ascendant, that all but the Mohawks were brought over to a desire for peace; and the Oneidas, in particular, made express and earnest application for it. The English governor, Fletcher, aware of the evil consequences of such a measure, to the interests of the colony, did all in his power to prevent it, but without ultimate success.

Renewal of hostilities.—For two years, the French continued their endeavors to induce the Indians to make peace. But the latter gave a decided refusal to two of the stipulations proposed;—one being that of liberty to rebuild fort Frontenac; the other, to include, in the treaty, the Indians in alliance with the French.

Enraged at the opposition to his purposes, which was so steadily manifested by the Mohawks, count Frontenac broke off negotiation, and proceeded to invade their territory. Apprized of his intentions, however, the Indians eluded his attempt; and all he effected was the capture or death of a few straggling hunters near Niagara. The indelible stigma of atrocious cruelty, still attaches to the conduct of the French governor, in permitting his Indian allies to perpetrate their accustomed tortures on the captives.

Reading Lesson LVIII.

Preparations for a united effort against the French.—Count Frontenac having succeeded in rebuilding the fort at Cadaracqui, it was felt to be necessary that a united and concentrated effort of all the English colonies should be made against the French. The coöperation of the confederated Indians, was also secured by governor Fletcher, on a special visit to Albany.

Peace between the Dinondadies and the Five Nations.—The French finding it difficult to supply and protect the Dinondadies, this tribe sued to the confederates for peace, and, to conceal their proceeding from the French, used,

for negotiators, the captives then in their power. One of these was seized by the French, and,—to the disgrace of the national name,—put to death by the hands of Europeans, with worse than the fiendish atrocities of savage cruelty displayed by the Indians themselves.

Frontenac's grand invasion of the country of the Five Nations.—The aged governor of Canada was not to be repressed by weight of years, in his attempts to subjugate the hostile Indians. In 1696, he convened, at Montreal, his whole force of regulars, militia, and Indian allies, and, after dividing his army into the most serviceable and effective portions, for every species of operation, marched for the enemy's country, maintaining vigorously, throughout the expedition, the most systematic forms of European military science and display. Frontenac's first aim was the country of the Onondagas.

But the natives had adopted the usual precaution of burning their village, and retiring into the impenetrable depth of the forests; and all that this magnificent expedition accomplished, was but the destruction of a small store of Indian corn, and the inhuman sacrifice of a brave old chief, who had survived to the age of a hundred years, and who chose to remain, to show the enemies of his tribe how an Indian could die, under the most excruciating torments. The French commander, wishing to give an air of triumph to his return, basely took prisoners a few of the pacificated Oneidas, who had waited at their forts, to pay him due honor, as he passed. Unable otherwise to wreak his vengeance on the English, the old count continued to harass Albany and its vicinity by scalping parties, for which the confederates retaliated on Montreal, till the conclusion of peace by the treaty of Ryswick, in September, 1697.

Governor Bellamont.—As early as 1695, lord Bellamont was appointed to succeed Fletcher, as governor of the colony of New York. But his commission was not conferred till June, 1697; and, having encountered a severe equinoctial gale, by which he was driven to Barbadoes, where he wintered, he did not arrive till April of the following year.

Lord Bellamont's commission was extended, with something like vice-regal power, over Massachusetts bay and New Hampshire, as well as New York; and, to enable

him to fulfil more easily the duties of his offices, he brought with him his relative John Nanfran, commissioned to act as lieutenant-governor of New York.

Measures for the suppression of piracy.—To the disgrace of the English name, many of the privateers authorized to act against the French, had, of late years, become pirates; infesting the whole American coast, and the lower latitudes of the Atlantic ocean. Lord Bellamont had special orders to exterminate these freebooters, and consulted, for this purpose, Mr. Robert Livingston, then prosecuting his claims before the English court, and who was known to be well informed on all colonial affairs.

Kid's cruise and its issue.—Kid, afterwards so notorious as a pirate, was, as yet, known only as a mariner eminent for his integrity and courage; and him Livingston recommended as an individual peculiarly competent for the task of extirpating the piratical cruisers. So entirely did Mr. Livingston confide in Kid's character, that he advanced a fifth of the cost of an expedition, and became security for Kid's faithful discharge of the office assigned him. The king himself, and several of the nobility, took shares in the enterprise.

Kid sailed, on his cruise, in April, 1696. But the opportunity which his new station offered, to enable him to become possessed of immense wealth, was too strong a temptation for his firmness of principle. He became, himself, one of the most daring and noted pirates of the day, and was, at length, arrested in the town of Boston, which he had the audacity to visit, after having burned his ship.

Judging the trial of so conspicuous a villain to belong properly to English jurisdiction, lord Bellamont wrote to the home government, desiring that Kid might be sent for. A national ship was accordingly despatched to bring him over; but having been driven back by adverse weather, the popular surmise arose that the whole affair was a matter of collusion among all concerned; and so strong was this impression, that it was even used, though most unjustly, as a theme of party invective, in parliament.

Reading Lesson LIX.

Investigation of the conduct of ex-governor Fletcher.—One of the first steps of the new governor, was to submit to the council the allegations of the East-India company against Fletcher, of his having participated in the protection of the pirates. But nothing farther could be ascertained, than that one of the council had extended protection to recognized privateers, as such. Fletcher's position in society,—for he remained in America, as governor under the proprietors of Pennsylvania,—rendered such allegations absurd; yet the servility of some members of the council would have authorized the new governor to send him home for trial. The only communications with known pirates, were those kept up by some of the inhabitants of Long Island, who occasionally supplied them with provisions, in a clandestine manner. Hence, in subsequent years, the infatuated perseverance of some of the people of the island, in digging for the treasures supposed to have been buried along the shore, by piratical cruisers, on their stolen visits to the coast.

Lord Bellamont's partialities in his administration.—Fletcher had, during his whole term of office, been influenced by the enemies of Leisler; and governor Bellamont commenced his career with a similar prejudice against his immediate predecessor and his partizans, which was a copious source of trouble, in the conduct of public affairs, and an injury to the peace and prosperity of the colony.

Difficulties attending the mutual surrender of prisoners, between the French and the English.—The French governor was notified, in due form and season, of the peace of Ryswick; and arrangements were made for the restoration of all captives, on both sides. The count, however, being unwilling to recognize the supremacy of the English over the Five Nations, insisted on the French prisoners among them being brought direct to Montreal. But the English governor persisted on their being brought, in the first instance, to Albany. The indefatigable old count died during this dispute; and his successor, De Callières,* conducted the exchange of prisoners without reference to the English governor.

* Pronounced, *Călyáre.*

Death of governor Bellamont.—The affairs of the colony were but beginning to assume a regulated form under lord Bellamont, whose integrity and activity had excited great hopes of benefit to the colony, when, in March, 1701, he was called away, by death, from the discharge of earthly duties.

Lieutenant-governor Nanfran.—Unfortunately for the peace of the colony, the lieutenant-governor was absent, in Barbadoes, at the time of governor Bellamont's decease; and a dispute arose among the council, whether the government should be administered by a majority of that body, or by the president. This question continued to agitate the community till Nanfran's return; and the more so, because it was mixed up with the party feelings originally excited between the friends and enemies of Leisler. To the former, Nanfran showed manifest favor, which tended to keep up, for several years, the spirit of party animosity in the colony.

Reversal of Leisler's attainder of treason.—Jacob Leisler, prosecuting, with determination, the exculpation of his father's memory, succeeded, at length, in obtaining, from the English parliament, a reversal of the attainder under which the elder Leisler had suffered. He received, in addition, an order on the colonial authorities, for pecuniary indemnification of his father's losses, in consequence of his disbursements for promoting the revolutionary movement in the colony. The majority of the legislature being of the Leislerian party, a vote was easily obtained for the appropriation of a thousand pounds for this purpose.

Colonial party troubles.—Information of the appointment of a new governor having now reached New York, the anti-Leislerian party, at the instigation of Nicholas Bayard, forwarded petitions and memorials to the English court, and to the expected governor, lord Cornbury, condemning the proceedings of the local government and legislature, in terms of great bitterness.

Nanfran's indignation was excited to the highest pitch, by these proceedings; and he imprisoned Bayard, and Hutchins, an alderman, at whose house the memorialists had assembled. Resolving to anticipate the arrival of the new governor, he hurried on the trial of the accused, and, aided by the unrighteous decisions of Atwood, the

chief-justice, succeeded in having Bayard convicted of high treason, and condemned to death. A reprieve was, with difficulty, obtained, till communication could be had with England; and, in the meantime, lord Cornbury arrived, empowered and directed to reverse the proceedings; the queen having had opportunity to give a personal hearing to the parties or their proxies, and to become satisfied of the illegality of the whole procedure.

SEC. V.—ADMINISTRATIONS OF LORD CORNBURY, LORD LOVELACE, AND LIEUTENANT-GOVERNORS INGOLDSBY AND BEEKMAN.—1702-1711.

Reading Lesson LX.

Lord Cornbury.—The new governor was the son of the famous earl of Clarendon, the English historian, and a steadfast partizan of the Stuarts, the former occupants of the English throne. But the son was one of the first to desert that interest, and attach himself to the new sovereigns. His commission, as governor of New York and New Jersey, was the reward of his services. Unfortunately for the colony, he was needy and avaricious; and his main study was to secure his personal and pecuniary interests. He began his administration, on the 3d of May, 1702; and, as he adopted the anti-Leislerian faction, the leaders of the opposite party were obliged to succumb, or withdraw from the province.

Ecclesiastical troubles at Jamaica, Long Island.—The great mortality of the summer of 1703, in the city of New York, having driven away many of the inhabitants, lord Cornbury held his residence and court at Jamaica, on Long Island. Here, his lordship, whose zeal for episcopacy knew no bounds, had, unfortunately, an early opportunity of displaying it, at the expense of his character as an upright governor.

The presbyterian inhabitants of the village, had, at an early period, erected a church, and obtained a parsonage for their minister. But, towards the close of the preceding century, several families, of the episcopal communion, having established themselves in the place, and, ultimately, having increased in numbers and influence, became jealous of the privileges held by their neighbor community, and formed the determination to take posses-

sion of the church; as there was, unfortunately for the presbyterians, no clause, in the town vote, appropriating the edifice exclusively to their use. The plan was carried into execution, one Sunday, between forenoon and afternoon service, and an ejectment effectually accomplished.

Possession was resumed by the presbyterians, but, ere long, forcibly wrested from them by their opponents; the governor abetting the latter in their proceedings, and inflicting fines and imprisonment on the former. His lordship even debased himself so far as to act a conspicuous part in these iniquitous doings. At the time when he retired from the city, in consequence of the pestilence, the largest and best house in Jamaica was the parsonage, then occupied by the presbyterian minister. His lordship condescended to solicit the loan of it; and the clergyman complied, to his own great inconvenience. The return which the governor made, was, to deliver the parsonage and the glebe to the episcopal party.

The just indignation expressed at these acts, excited his lordship's anger against the whole presbyterian body; and he proceeded so far as to prohibit their clergy from preaching, and their schoolmasters from teaching, without his special license. In this proceeding, however, it should be borne in mind, that he was formally upheld by the letter of the royal instructions to the governors of all the English colonies.

Meeting of the colonial legislature, at Jamaica, 1703.—Among the subjects to which the governor directed the attention of the legislative assembly which met him at Jamaica, were the proper fortifying of the port of New York and the frontiers of the colony, the erection of public schools, and the due examination of the accounts of the province. Of the importance of proper provision for the last of these items, no deeper impression could be made than by his lordship's own act of deliberately appropriating to his private use the sum voted for erecting a fortification at the Narrows.

Misunderstanding between the governor and the legislative assembly.—The successive assemblies of 1704 and 1705 seem to have respectfully but firmly protested against the governor's unauthorized disposal of the public money. But, to all their remonstrances, he returned indignant and

arrogant answers. Measures, however, seem to have been taken, at the English court, to secure, in this respect, the rights of the subject. For, when a panic was caused in 1705, by the appearance of a French privateer in the bay, and the assembly voted supplies on the condition of having them expended under the eye of a special treasurer, the governor, at length, announced that he had her majesty's permission to sanction such an arrangement, which, however, was not carried into effect, till the following year.

Persecuting spirit of the governor.—One of the most arbitrary and tyrannical acts of Cornbury, was his imprisoning and prosecuting two presbyterian preachers, who arrived, about this time, in the colony, and became guilty of the heinous offence of preaching without his lordship's license. They were arrested at Newtown, and publicly led through Jamaica to New York, as criminals, and, by a precept to the sheriff there, committed to prison, where they were detained upwards of six weeks, owing to the absence of the chief-justice, who was then in New Jersey. An indictment against one of them was found; and, although, on trial, he was unanimously acquitted, the court was servile enough to his lordship, the governor, to devolve on the innocent man the entire costs of the prosecution, amounting to a large sum for the times.

General discontent with governor Cornbury.—The illegal and oppressive conduct of the governor, both in New York and New Jersey, and his habitual misapplications of the public funds, together with his inveterate spirit of enmity, on religious grounds, towards the Dutch and New-England population, at last reached such a height as to attract the royal notice, through a petition presented by the legislature of New Jersey; and he was dismissed from office, with expressions of indignation, on the part of the queen. When divested of his office, he was thrown into prison at New York, by his creditors, and there remained till his father's death, which put him in possession of the earldom of Clarendon, and, with it, the means of his release.

Reading Lesson LXI.

Governor Lovelace.—Lord Lovelace, the new governor, arrived in December, 1708, and, owing to the character

of his predecessor, was gratefully welcomed, in the hope of better times for the colony. He did not live, however, to fulfil such expectations; for he died within a year, on the 5th of May, in consequence of exposure in crossing the ferry, at his arrival.

Lieutenant-governor Ingoldsby.—This individual who had before administered the government, on the death of governor Sloughter, was again called to the temporary charge of the colony. During this period, however, nothing of moment occurred, except the memorable failure of the projected invasion of Canada.

Proposed invasion of Canada.—The scheme for this measure, was submitted to the colonies by colonel Vetch, and readily adopted by them all, especially by New York, which even incurred a public debt, to sustain its share in the enterprise. The most extensive preparations were made, in every form, for this undertaking. A large force was raised and despatched to Albany, where forts and block-houses were constructed, and provisions forwarded and accumulated, with great despatch. But the expected fleet from England never made its appearance; the exigences of the war in Europe, having suddenly demanded all the disposable English force, and diverted that intended for America, from its original destination. Loud but unavailing complaints and representations were made, in all directions, but particularly by New York, which had made so large sacrifices in the cause.

Colonel Schuyler's visit to England.—No one in the colony was more deeply disappointed by the failure, in this instance, than colonel Schuyler, who labored so indefatigably for the interests of England, with the native confederates. So deep was his impression of the necessity of striking a decisive blow against Canada, the perpetual source of so much danger to the colony of New York, that he resolved to visit England, and make a personal representation on the subject, at court; and, to secure a favorable impression on the minds of the Indian allies, he proposed to take with him five of their chiefs, to hold an interview with the queen.

The assembly, hearing of his intentions, gave him a warm recommendation to the sovereign. On Schuyler's arrival in England, a great sensation was excited by the presence of the Indian chiefs, who were not only the pop-

ular wonder of the day, but were admitted and welcomed in the circles of rank and fashion. They had a formal audience of the queen on the 19th of April, 1710, and made a brief but highly characteristic speech, on the occasion, urging the necessity of decisive measures against the French.

Temporary administration of Gerardus Beekman.—During Schuyler's visit to England, lieutenant-governor Ingoldsby was superseded by Gerardus Beekman, who acted as governor, *pro tem.*, till the arrival of general Hunter, which took place on the 14th of June, 1711.

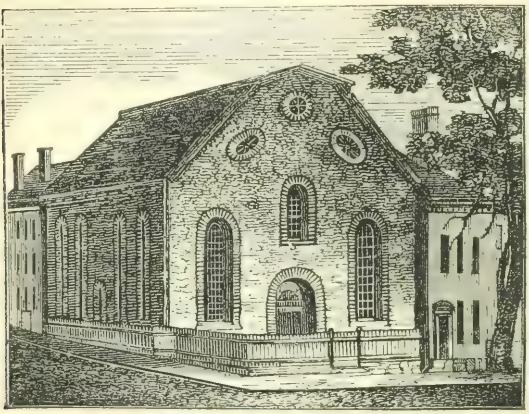
SEC. VI.—ADMINISTRATION OF GOVERNOR HUNTER.—1711-1720.

Previous life of governor Hunter.—The new governor had commenced life as a soldier of fortune, and had risen, by virtue of his personal qualities, to rank and station. He had been appointed governor of Virginia in 1707, but was taken by the French, while on his voyage. On his return to England, he received the appointment of successor to lord Lovelace, both in New York and New Jersey.

German immigrants.—One of the many judicious steps which governor Hunter took for the improvement of the colony, was his liberal encouragement of immigration. He induced several thousand Germans, of the Palatinate, who had taken refuge from persecution in their native country, by fleeing to England, to emigrate to the colony. A memorial now existing, of a portion of these emigrants, is the ancient Lutheran church in Frankfort street, in the city of New York. But the larger number settled on a tract of Livingston manor. These proved a valuable accession to the colony, as regarded its agricultural prosperity, and not less so, in respect of the higher consideration of an intelligent, peaceable, and moral community, blended with the population of the province. The liberality of the English queen towards these immigrants, in facilitating their removal and settlement, was well repaid by the acquisition of a body of loyal and grateful subjects.

Peaceful policy of governor Hunter.—Another salutary measure of governor Hunter, soon after his accession, was his renewal of the league of friendship with the Indians,

without involving them in hostilities with the French. They were thus converted into a shield of protection to the colony, against the inroads of the latter.



FRANKFORT STREET CHURCH.

READING LESSON LXII.

Leading men in the assembly.—The improving condition of the colony of New York, was, at this time, in nothing more conspicuous than in its increasing number of able and active men, competent to see to the right management of public affairs. Among these were Mr. Nicoll, the speaker, an individual distinguished for firmness and energy of character, and vigilant discharge of official duties;—Mr. Livingston, distinguished, both at home and abroad, for sagacity and comprehensive views, not less than for practical ability;—Mr. Delancey, a protestant refugee from Normandy, connected by marriage with the Courtlandt family, the most opulent of the province,—himself an eminent and successful merchant.

But the most influential person of that day, was colonel Morris. This individual was equally distinguished for native force and refined culture of mind; nor was he less

remarkable for individuality and strength of character. An orphan in early life, he fell under the stern rule as well as the patronage of his uncle, an ex-officer of Cromwell, who had saved himself, at the restoration, by assuming the profession of quakerism, and retiring to the beautiful estate of Morrisania.

The impassioned temperament of young Morris, brought him into frequent collisions with his well-meaning but austere, and, perhaps, harsh protector. On one such occasion, he absconded to Virginia, and thence to Jamaica, in the West Indies, where, young as he was, he commenced business, as a scrivener. After several years' trial of a roving life, he returned to his uncle, who received him with pleasure, and established him in life, to the best advantage. Previous to governor Hunter's arrival, he had been, for years, an active and useful public servant, in the colony of New Jersey. He was both the writer and the bearer of the complaint against lord Cornbury, and, on all occasions, proved his ability and efficiency in political business.

Another unsuccessful attempt to invade Canada.—Colonel Nicholson, at the head of an effective English force, vigorously supported by a large body of troops furnished by the New-England colonies, succeeded on the 2d October, 1710, in taking Port Royal, afterwards named Annapolis, in honor of the English sovereign. Encouraged by this success, Nicholson urged, once more, the project for the invasion of Canada. Measures were duly concerted to this effect, both in England and the colonies; and a large force, accordingly, arrived at Boston, on the 4th of June, 1711, under the command of general Hill.

Unfortunately, the supplies expected to be furnished at Boston, were not in readiness; and the troops had, therefore, to be landed, for a time. Nicholson, who was to command the whole land force of the expedition, immediately set out for New York, to expedite preparations in this quarter. The colonial assembly responded cheerfully and readily to the requisitions made upon them, and raised a large supply of men and money.

Disasters experienced by the maritime portion of the expedition.—The fleet, in the meantime, having been furnished with supplies, to a certain extent, sailed from Boston, on the 30th of July; and, at its departure, displayed one of

the most magnificent spectacles, of a warlike description, ever exhibited in America. The armament consisted of twelve ships of war, forty transports, and six store-ships; and the force included a detachment of cavalry and a train of artillery.

Sir Hoveden Walker, admiral of the fleet, found his duties extremely arduous. On arriving at the mouth of the St. Lawrence, on the 14th of August, he was compelled to delay till the 20th, in the bay of Gaspé, to avoid parting company with the transports. Two days afterwards, the fleet was in extreme peril, from a high easterly wind and a heavy fog, without the possibility of obtaining either observation or soundings. The pilots were at fault; and their first notice of their error, was the finding themselves drifting among the rocks and islands of the north shore. The men of war all escaped; not, however, without much difficulty. But eight of the transports, with all on board, perished. The fleet then put into Spanish-River bay; and here it was judged necessary, from the limited supply of provisions, to desist from the prosecution of the expedition, and to return to England,—which was accordingly done.

Failure of the invasion by land.—Colonel Nicholson had, in the meantime, mustered, at Albany, a colonial force of four thousand men, drafted from New York, New Jersey, and Connecticut, under the command of colonels Schuyler, Ingoldsby, and Whiting.

Governor Vaudreuil,* on his part, used all possible despatch, in putting Canada in a state of defence against this formidable invasion, and collected a large body of friendly Indians, in addition to his regular levies, at Montreal. As soon as he was satisfied of the failure of the English maritime expedition, he proceeded to Chambly,† and there encamped, with a force of three thousand men, to meet the advance of Nicholson. But the latter having been apprized of the withdrawal of the fleet, and being aware of the difficulty of a campaign at that season of the year, had prudently retired; and thus ended another threatened invasion of Canada, with an enormous amount of expense and suffering incurred, and nothing accomplished.

* Pronounced, *Vōdrul'*,—*u*, sounding as in *up*, nearly, and *l* as *lli* in *William*.

† *Shamblee*.

Reading Lesson LXIII.

Disagreements between the house of assembly and the council.—It is interesting to trace, at this stage of our colonial history, the incipient spirit of steady resistance to encroachments on popular rights. The house had had, for many years, much reason to complain of the unjust modes of disposing of the money which they had, from time to time, voted for public uses; and some of the council being, not unfrequently, inclined to support or connive at the doings of the governor, the house firmly opposed all attempts of the council to amend or modify the votes of supply.

A disagreement had arisen between the two branches of the legislature, on the occasion of attempting to devise ways and means for retrieving the condition of the treasury, now exhausted by the expenditures attending the unfortunate expedition to Canada. On this occasion, the house used the following characteristic language, in reply to the council.

"The inherent right the assembly have to dispose of the money of the freemen of this colony, does not proceed from any commission, letters patent, or other grant from the crown; but from the free choice and election of the people, who ought not to be divested of their property, (nor justly can,) without their consent."

The spirit of this response was manifested in all the action of the house, for successive years. Governor Hunter in vain endeavored to secure a revenue which might be wasted at his option; and so firmly did the assembly adhere to their determination, as even to avoid acting on the requisitions made from the English government.

Effects of the peace of Utrecht.—On the 31st of March, 1713, peace was concluded at Utrecht, between England and France. Among other topics in dispute which were now adjusted between the belligerents, was that of the supremacy over the Indian confederates of the Five Nations. This point was decided in favor of England,—a circumstance justly deemed auspicious to the peace and welfare of the colony of New York.

A treasurer for the province created.—The assembly, by their firm adherence to their determination of not leaving the supplies voted by them to be directed to private pur-

poses, succeeded, in wringing from the governor his consent to the appointment of a colonial treasurer, accountable to the assembly.

Governor Hunter's successful endeavors to bend the assembly to his will.—Governor Hunter, finding his measures often thwarted by the vigilance and steadiness of the assembly, dissolved that body, a second time, within the year 1715, and, in the following year, succeeded, to a certain extent, in accomplishing his purpose, as we perceive by the apparent acquiescence of the house, in the wishes of the council, in 1716 and 1717; and by the resignation of Mr. Speaker Nicoll, in May 1718, who seems to have retired in disgust at the prevailing subserviency to the governor.

Governor Hunter's return to England.—On the 24th of June, 1719, governor Hunter announced to the assembly his intention of visiting England, and, on the occasion received, from that body, a highly flattering address; of the perfect unanimity and sincerity of which it is rather difficult to be convinced. Policy, however, may have dictated its terms; as the governor left a partial expectation of his return.

SEC. VII.—ADMINISTRATION OF GOVERNOR BURNET.—1720-1728.

Accession of governor Burnet.—On the withdrawal of governor Hunter, the temporary discharge of his duties devolved on colonel Schuyler, the senior member of the council, who continued in office till the arrival of governor Burnet, in September, 1720. This individual was the son of the celebrated bishop Burnet, so distinguished for the excellence of his official and private character, for his extensive erudition, his valuable contribution to the history of his times, and his zealous activity for the revolution which secured the protestant succession, on the throne of England.

Mr. Burnet was, in all respects, a worthy son of so eminent a man. Though devoted, by habit, to science and letters, he was by no means a recluse, but mingled freely and affably in society. He possessed, also, the happy talent of ingratiating himself with the people, and of dispensing, on proper occasions, with the formal dignity of official station. Previous to leaving England, he was on terms of intimacy with the former governor, Hunter,

to whom he relinquished the office of controller of the customs, and through whose mediation he obtained his own appointment, as governor of the colonies of New York and New Jersey.

Reading Lesson LXIV.

Leading men in the council of governor Burnet.—Actuated by the suggestions of ex-governor Hunter, Mr. Burnet addicted himself to the councils and support of the tried friends of the former administration. Mr. Morris, the chief-justice, was his principal adviser, and, next to these, Dr. Colden and Mr. Alexander,—men eminent for learning and ability, as well as personal worth. Dr. Colden's knowledge of the actual state of Indian affairs, was exact and extensive; although his interesting work on the history of the Five Nations, is, as formerly mentioned, chargeable with some inaccuracies, inseparable from all attempts to compile history, derived, in part, from oral tradition. This disadvantage must ever attend whatever regards the early accounts of the Indian tribes. Mr. Livingston was the principal adviser of the new governor, in relation to matters connected with the influence of the French upon the Indians of the colonial borders; and the vigilance of governor Burnet, on this vital point, was early and uniformly manifested.

Resentment of certain merchants excited against governor Burnet.—The new governor being anxiously desirous to cut off, as far as practicable, the habit of communication between the Indians and the French as unfavorable to British interests and the safety of the colony, secured the passage of a law forbidding the sale of goods designed for the Indian trade, to French dealers.

The importers who, in the first instance, suffered by this regulation, expressed the greatest dissatisfaction with it, and carried their resentment so far as to transmit to England the most disparaging representations touching the governor, besides endeavoring to excite popular odium against him at home. The exporting merchants of London were also incited to petition for the interference of royal authority, to annul the governor's restriction of trade.

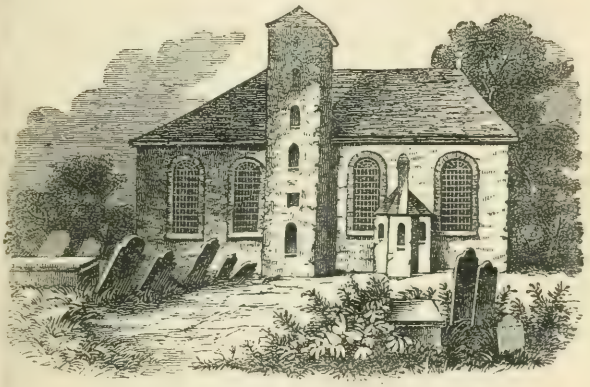
To this petition Dr. Colden and Mr. Alexander furnished an elaborate and able reply, showing that the new

regulation would tend to keep the trade in the hands of the colonists, and to preserve the fidelity of the Indians.

Governor Burnet's measures to secure the friendly disposition of the confederates.—To thwart the intentions of the French, who were desirous of enclosing the English settlements within a chain of forts, extending from Canada to Louisiana, and to facilitate the communications with the Indian allies of the colony, governor Burnet, in 1722, commenced the erection of a fortified trading-house at Oswego, in the Seneca country, and urged on the assembly the appointment of a resident agent among the Onondagas. He renewed, also, at Albany, the league with the confederate chiefs, now become additionally powerful, by the accession of a portion of the Nicariagas, in addition to the Tuscaroras, who, being driven from their original homes by the advancement of the white settlements in Virginia, had removed and settled near lake Oneida. The governor, on this visit, rendered a valuable service to the New-England colonies, by inducing the confederates to send a message to the Indians on the east, threatening them with war, in case they invaded the white settlements.

Dissensions in the French protestant church in New York.—The persecution of the protestants in France, under Louis XIV, had driven many of them to America. Those who settled in New York were, in general, persons estimable for their character and cultivation, and highly respectable in condition. According to the custom of the times, the French protestant church in New York,—which was somewhat numerous,—had two pastors. Of these M. Rou, a man of excellent abilities but arrogant disposition, was inclined to treat with disrespect his humbler colleague M. Moulinaars. The latter, at length, succeeded in exciting a reäction in his favor, and, ultimately, in procuring the dismissal of the former. Rou's learning and ability had made him a favorite with governor Burnet; and his party found it easy to secure a reversal of the proceedings, on which occasion the party of M. Moulinaars withdrew from the church. Among the latter was Mr. Delancey, one of the most eminent men of the colony, and unfortunately for the governor, one of the most decided enemies of the restrictions laid on the commerce with the Canadians.

The governor's treatment of Mr. Delancey.—The subsequent conduct of the governor towards Mr. Delancey, seems to have been a departure from Mr. Burnet's usual courtesy and strict regard to justice, and savors more of arbitrary and oppressive rule, than of respect for equity and the rights of the subject. Nor was his harshness, in this instance, without its reactive effect on popular feeling, and on his own continuance in office.



ORIGINAL FRENCH PROTESTANT CHURCH,
Erected in 1704, on Pine Street, near Nassau.

READING LESSON LXV.

Fort Niagara rebuilt by the French.—The French, fearing that the new trading-house, built by governor Burnet on the Onondaga river, would cause them the loss of their Indian trade at the west, launched two vessels on lake Ontario, in 1726, and proceeded to rebuild the fort formerly erected by them at Niagara. Baron De Longueuil, then governor of Canada, was so jealous in this business, that he went, in person, to solicit permission of the Onondagas, for the purpose, and succeeded in obtaining it. The other confederates, however, protested against the grant as null,—the work lying within the limits of the Senecas,—and commanded the

French to desist. The latter, however, persevered, and, in spite of all the opposition and protests of governor Burnet, both at home and abroad, pursued their design to its completion. All that the English governor could now do, was, in the following year, to erect a fort for the protection of the trading-post at Oswego.

Cession of the territory of the confederates.—The virulent opposition to governor Burnet, now fermenting in the colony, weakened his power so effectually that he was unable to counteract the proceedings of the French. But he succeeded, by an eloquent address to the chiefs of the Six Nations, (now so called in consequence of the accession of the Tuscaroras,) in obtaining from them a deed, surrendering their whole territory to the king of England.

The humane and philanthropic character of Burnet, would make this transaction appear wholly unaccountable; were it not for the fact that the confederates had already acknowledged the supremacy of the English sovereign, and that the defence of the colony of New York, against the encroachments of the French, seemed to require such a measure as one of self-preservation. For governor De Callières had, long before, spoken of the conquest of New York as "a thing rendered lawful by necessity."

Increasing discontents with the administration of governor Burnet.—One of the odious measures adopted by Burnet's predecessor, and continued by himself, was the establishment of a court of chancery, in which the governor presided. This court was necessarily more exposed to the influence of personal authority and arbitrary decision, than any other. Its fees, in all cases, were exorbitant, and its decisions often ruinous to the parties concerned. It had therefore been, all along, a source of universal dissatisfaction and bitter complaint. Nor can we wonder that it should have been so, when we remember that neither Hunter nor Burnet had any special degree of legal knowledge; that the former had more the peremptory spirit of a soldier, than the dispassionate calmness of a judge, and that the latter freely expressed his incompetency for such an office, in the remark which he sometimes was frank enough to make,—that he occasionally "decided first and judged afterwards." So in-

tolerably oppressive, in fact, had this court become, that the legislative assembly of 1727, passed several stern resolutions, condemning it as illegal. This protest, at the time, only drew down on the assembly the penalty of dissolution; but it had the effect of procuring measures for a partial reformation of abuses, in the following spring.—In this, and many similar instances, we see the evils inseparable from a colonial condition, which exposes the people to all the contingencies of caprice and tyranny, on the part of a governor; and we can easily understand from what a train of evils the country was delivered, when it attained a state of independence.

SEC. VIII.—ADMINISTRATIONS OF GOVERNORS MONTGOMERIE AND COSBY.—1728-1736.

Reading Lesson LXVI.

Governor Montgomerie.—The dissatisfaction with governor Burnet's administration, had now become so general that it was deemed best, at home, that he should relinquish his station, and be transferred to the government of the colony of Massachusetts. The new governor, colonel John Montgomerie, succeeded to office, on the 15th of April, 1728, and soon proved himself a very different person from his predecessor. His early years he had spent in the army; but the greater part of his life had been occupied in a station within the precincts of the court, and in attendance on his duties as a member of parliament. He was a quiet, modest, easy man, who assumed little authority, and gave very little trouble. Fully conscious of his inability to preside in a court of chancery, he had as little to do with its affairs as possible, and thus exempted himself from the popular odium which attached itself to his predecessor in office.

Measures of security against the French.—One of the first public acts of governor Montgomerie, was to renew, at Albany, the league with the Six Nations, and to strengthen, by an additional force, the trading establishment and fort at Oswego, against which the French were meditating an attack.

Reöpening of the trade with Canada.—About the close of the year 1729, the royal mandate arrived, annulling all governor Burnet's restrictions on the trade with Canada.

The English ascendency over the Indians was thus greatly impaired; as the Canadian traders were always patriotic enough in their feelings, to desire the advantage of their own countrymen, and to do all in their power, to prejudice the minds of the natives against the English.

Settlement of the question of the boundary line between New York and Connecticut.—The imperfect knowledge of Nicolls and the other commissioners who attempted to decide this matter, in the year 1664, laid them open to a serious error. They were, in fact, outwitted by the more knowing commissioners of Connecticut, at whose suggestion the line was so drawn as actually to strike the Hudson river, instead of keeping at the stipulated distance of twenty miles from it. In the years 1683 and 1684, successive attempts were made, and with apparent satisfaction on both sides, to adjust this affair. But a dispute having arisen, regarding the jurisdiction over the towns of Rye and Bedford, an appeal was made to king William, who, in the year 1700, confirmed the decision of 1683.

In 1702, the governor was empowered to resurvey the line; and, notwithstanding the opposition of the Connecticut agent, the authority was confirmed in 1723. The commissioners of both colonies, at length, commenced the work of resurveying, in 1725; but the settlement was not completed till 1731.

By this arrangement a tract of land, called the Oblong, on the Connecticut side, was ceded to New York, as an equivalent for lands on the Sound, ceded to Connecticut. The conflicting claims of the English and American patentees of the Oblong, neither of whom were at first aware of the rights of the other, were afterwards a fruitful source of trouble to the colony of New York.

Temporary administration of Rip Van Dam.—Governor Montgomerie died on the 1st of July, 1731; and the administration devolved, *pro tem.*, on Mr. Rip Van Dam, senior counsellor,—an upright and honorable man, but not well qualified for the discharge of duties so onerous as those which it now fell to him to perform. The French, taking advantage of his quiescent disposition and the inactivity of the colony, secured themselves in possession of the formidable position of Crown Point, which was, in a manner, the key to the whole frontier region of the

English colonies of New York, Massachusetts, and New Hampshire. Governor Belcher of Massachusetts apprized Mr. Van Dam of the peril incurred by this movement of the French, and urged the importance of a speedy check to their farther proceedings. But the dilatory and indecisive measures of Van Dam and the council, allowed the opportunity to slip, till interference was too late.

Governor Cosby.—On the 1st of August, 1732, Mr. Van Dam was relieved of his responsibility, by the arrival of colonel Cosby, commissioned as governor of New York and New Jersey. He brought with him, from Minorca, of which he had been governor, no very advantageous repute for courtesy or even integrity; and his petulant expressions on hearing what he deemed the inadequate amount of the first appropriation for himself, seemed to give note of warning as to what might be expected of his subsequent official career.

Establishment of a free grammar-school.—The year 1732 stands distinguished, in our colonial annals, as that in which a generous public provision was first made for classical education. This measure was found indispensable; as all attempts to support private seminaries for liberal education, had wholly failed.

Governor Cosby's injustice to Mr. Van Dam.—The English government had made the equitable arrangement that the new governor should share with Mr. Van Dam the emoluments of office, during the former's detention in England. The mean, avaricious, and oppressive conduct of Cosby, in this affair, excited general indignation. This feeling was still farther increased by his arbitrary act in appointing Mr. Delancey, junior, to supersede chief-justice Morris, who had had the independence to pronounce an unfavorable judgment on his case, in the prosecution of Mr. Van Dam.

Reading Lesson LXVII.

Popular excitement against the courts of law.—The abuses and extortions connected with law proceedings, had long been a subject of complaint in the colony; and the odium connected with the proceedings against Mr. Van Dam, had taken the direction of a strong hostility to the court of exchequer. Even the legislative assembly

carried matters so far as to listen to a long and elaborate argument on its legality and constitutional authority.

Newspaper warfare between the governor's party and that of the people.—In the angry discussions which arose from the feelings of the day, the two prominent newspapers of the colony, were, naturally enough, enlisted. Zenger's Weekly Journal was the organ of the popular party, and Bradford's Gazette, that of the government. The former had admitted several scurrilous articles, which the council had indignantly ordered to be publicly burned by the hands of "the common whipper." The city authorities, however, being of the opposite faction, protested against the injunction, as illegal; and the order had, at length, to be carried into execution, by the hands of a negro slave of the sheriff.

Trial of Zenger.—Zenger, not long after, was seized and imprisoned, and even denied pen, ink, and paper; but his friends procured his liberation; and he resumed his editorial labors, till the spring term of court, in the following year. On the occasion of his trial, chief-justice Delancey, irritated by the objections to his jurisdiction, offered by the lawyers, Messrs. Smith and Alexander, whom Zenger had employed, arbitrarily refused to hear them, and struck their names from the roll of attorneys of the court.

Measures such as this, inflamed, to the highest pitch, the general feeling of resentment against injustice so flagrant; and the delight of the people knew no bounds, when Mr. Hamilton of the Philadelphia bar, who had been engaged on Zenger's behalf, succeeded, by an irresistible strain of eloquence, wit, argument, and humor, in obtaining the acquittal of his client. Shouts of applause at the result, were repeated within the court-house; and no threats could suppress them. Mr. Hamilton was escorted to a public entertainment by the people, and afterwards presented with the freedom of the city, and saluted, at his departure, by the firing of cannon.

Governor Cosby's partiality to the English patentees of the "Oblong."—A patent for the tract called the Oblong, had been secured by a company in New York. But one Harison, whose dishonorable conduct ultimately caused him to flee the country, had, in the meantime, from resentment against certain members of the colonial company,

excited persons in England to apply for and obtain a patent,—unknown to the authorities of the colony. A long and exciting litigation ensued between the parties; and governor Cosby, adopting the interests of the English patentees, used every means to defeat the success of the colonial proprietors, and, as chancellor, gave judgment accordingly. The counsel of the American patentees protested against the governor's procedure, as illegal; and the assembly passed a formal vote, condemning the constitution of the court under the presidency of a governor, as not only illegal, but subversive of the rights of the people.

Other causes of hostility to governor Cosby, were his unrighteous destruction of certain deeds originally granted to the city of Albany, and his avowed intention of resurveying some of the ancient patents of Long Island. In the latter project, he was arrested by the hand of death, on the 10th of March, 1736.

Disputed succession to the administration.—The death of governor Cosby was heard, with undisguised joy, on the part of the people; and high expectations were formed of the benefit to the colony from the temporary reïnstatement of Mr. Van Dam, who ought to have succeeded to office. Mr. Clarke, however, was installed. The struggles of these leaders for the possession of power, and the hostilities of their partizans, occupied several months, and were about to come to an open rupture, when despatches arrived from England, addressed to Mr. Clarke, as acting governor.

SEC. IX.—ADMINISTRATION OF LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR CLARKE.—1736-1743.

Reading Lesson LXVIII.

Policy of lieutenant-governor Clarke.—This individual who had, from his early years, filled the post of secretary, was a native of England,—a man of limited education, but of practical talent and business habits. He had the art and tact of a consummate politician, and contrived, for successive years, to avoid collision either with the popular or the aristocratic faction, and, at the same time, to keep on a good footing with the authorities in England.

Eloquence of Mr. Smith.—The comparative quiet of the colony, at this period, leaves us at leisure to dwell,

once more, on the eminent men of the time. A disputed election for a member of assembly, in the year 1738, called forth the eloquence of Mr. Smith, in a style memorable, in the annals of our colonial history, and clearly indicative, also, of the extent and force of popular prejudice, at that day.

Mr. Smith, in his zeal for the cause of his client, called in question, when pleading before the assembly, the legality of certain votes, given by individuals of the Jewish community, in favor of his client's opponent. In support of his position, he declaimed against the admission of such votes, as derogatory to the christian religion, and subversive of the constitution of the state; he enlarged on the degradation of the Jewish race, as a judicial punishment from heaven, in answer to their imprecation of the guilt of the Saviour's blood upon their heads, and dwelt on the scene of the crucifixion, in terms so impassioned and pathetic, as to call forth tears and exclamations from his hearers. The interference of persons of influence with the populace, was even necessary to restrain them from violence on the unoffending Hebrews, and to prevent the streets of New York from becoming a scene of ruthless and lawless violence, such as used to disgrace the cities of Europe, in former times. The result of the pleading was the rejection of the Jewish votes. Judge Smith, in his history, gives the following impressive sketch of this powerful speaker. The passage is no ordinary specimen of manly eloquence, in a son delineating the mental portrait of a noble father.

"Mr. Smith, was a native of England, and was now at the age of forty. He left London, with his father's family, and arrived at New York, in 1715. He had the natural advantages of figure, voice, vivacity, memory, imagination, promptness, strong passions, volubility, invention, and a taste for ornament. These talents were improved by the assiduous industry of a robust constitution, with uninterrupted health and temperance,—in the pursuit of various branches of science, and, particularly, in the law and in theology. His progress in the latter was the more extensive, from an early turn to a life of piety and devotion. He studied the Scriptures in their originals, when young; and, in advanced life, they were so familiar to him, that he often read them to his family

in English, from the Hebrew or Greek, without the least hesitation. He was bred a dissenter, in Buckinghamshire, and attached to the doctrines of Calvin; and a great part of his time was spent in perusing the works, French, English, and Latin, of the most celebrated divines of that stamp. He was, for some time, in suspense about entering into the service of the church. He prepared no notes for his memorable speech: it was delivered within a few hours after the thought of an implicative exception in the election act was first conceived; and the astonishment of the audience rose the higher, by the rare instance of so much pulpit eloquence from a law character at the bar of the house."

Mr. Smith, and his colleague, Mr. Alexander,—the lawyers who had been employed by Zenger, when prosecuted for libel, and who had been silenced by chief-justice Delancey,—were, at the term following the memorable speech referred to, restored to their places at the bar; as it was judged inexpedient to continue the effect of a sentence so unpopular.

Reading Lesson LXIX.

Political craft of lieutenant-governor Clarke.—Governor Clarke had contrived, thus far, to keep on tolerable terms with the party attached to ex-governor Cosby; but being now desirous of acting without the restraint which their influence imposed on him, he artfully induced them to accept his offers of advantageous offices; having first, however, taken pains to secure the veto of his council to the consummation of the arrangement. The policy of governor Clarke, in this proceeding, resembles more the intrigues of European cabinets, in the middle ages, than appropriate measures for the political management of a young American colony. The stratagem, however, fully succeeded; and the party who thus committed themselves, were completely undermined, and found themselves odious in the eyes of the people. The governor failed not to take all possible advantage of the false position of the only party whose influence he dreaded, and used little reserve in urging on the legislature the measures he deemed most important for the support of his government.

Firmness of the Legislature of 1738.—The body, how-

ever, to whom these demands were addressed, manifested the characteristic firmness of their Dutch and English ancestry, and refused to grant a revenue but on such conditions as seemed, to them, just to their constituents. The governor, irritated at their opposition to his views and purposes, exercised his right of proroguing the assembly, at short intervals; thinking, by this means, to harass them into compliance. But the legislature remained firm; and the governor, at last, resorted to his higher prerogative of dissolving that body, and issued writs for a new election.

Sessions of 1739.—The new legislature met in July, 1739, at a time when the small-pox was raging in the city; and, from the earnest desire of the country members to return to their homes, a temporary supply was voted. On reassembling in August, the same spirit of opposition, as before, was manifested, in regard to the wishes of the governor for a permanent revenue. The governor resorted, once more, to a prorogation, which, however, took no great effect; as but few of his suggestions were attended to, and a revenue for one year only, was all that he obtained.

Sessions of 1740 *and* 1741.—The same reluctance to grant a long revenue, and to entrust the public funds to the control of the governor, continued to actuate the legislature; although they granted supplies for occasional purposes. Governor Clarke exerted himself, in vain, to induce that body to concede his favorite objects. His eloquence and his threats were alike unavailing; although, when, in one of his speeches, he charged them with giving countenance, by their action, to the rumor that the colonies were conspiring for independence, the charge was indignantly repelled. Here, we trace the first dim intimation of the existence of that idea which was fully developed in all minds, within the space of thirty years, and consummated in the American revolution; but which was now disavowed, as treasonous and absurd. The spirit of loyalty to Great Britain was still predominant in the colonies, and continued so till the odious and oppressive measures of parliament drove America to resistance.

The "hard winter" of 1740–41.—The following passage gives a vivid picture of the condition of New York, at this period.

"The winter," says judge Smith, "which ushered in this year, (ever since called the hard winter,) was distinguished by the sharpest frost, and the greatest quantity of snow, within the memory of the oldest inhabitant. The weather was intensely severe, from the middle of November to the latter end of March. The snow, by repeated falls, was at length six feet above the surface of the earth; and the Hudson river passable upon the ice, as low as the capital, within thirty miles from the open sea; cattle of all sorts perished from the want of fodder; and the deer of the forests were either starved or taken, being unable to browse or escape, through the depth of the snow. The poor, both in town and country, were distressed for food and fuel; and, by the scarcity of these articles, the price of almost everything else was raised, and though since reduced, yet never so low as in the preceding year.

"When the frost relaxed, there was a continuation of the flight of wild pigeons from the southward, in greater flocks than were ever before known; and, what was still more singular, in the month of March, five or six weeks earlier than in more temperate seasons. These birds nest in the northerly woods of the continent, and retire, towards autumn, to the southerly provinces. Their flesh is admired here, and, being taken in nets, in such plenty, greatly contributes to the relief of the poor. While nesting, the males and females resort alternately to the salt meadows for food, and, by turns, brood over the eggs. The two sexes, at this season, are never taken together; though the flocks are innumerable, and sometimes miles in length. It is often asserted, and generally believed, that undigested rice has been found in their crops; and, because the pigeon is a bird of very swift wing, it is conjectured that they bring this food from the Carolinas; and yet there certainly, in the spring, is no standing ripe rice in the fields."

Reading Lesson LXX.

The "Negro plot" of 1741.—On the 18th of March, 1741, occurred the conflagration of the chapel and the buildings within the fort. The fire was unquestionably, in this instance, the result of inadvertency on the part of a work-

man employed on the roof of the governor's house. But successive fires, in various parts of the city, having broken out within a few days, a report was circulated, by some timid and injudicious individuals, that a plot had been laid to fire the city, and massacre the inhabitants.

The panic spread, and threw the whole city into commotion. In the course of the legal investigations which were held, with a view to quiet the people, or ascertain the danger, the servant girl of a tavern-keeper, of the lowest class, testified that a plot had been laid, at her master's house, by some slaves who made their resort there, to set fire to the city. In subsequent examinations, she varied her testimony, so as to involve a large number of citizens, and nearly two hundred slaves.

The whole summer was consumed in the prosecution of alleged criminals. Circumstances were magnified, statements exaggerated, and the excitement of the people daily increased; till the contradictions and falsehoods of the informer became so glaring as to be altogether incredible and ridiculous. But we read, with horror, that the popular mania was not allayed till after thirteen Africans had been *burned at the stake*, eighteen hanged, and seventy transported. The tavern-keeper and his family were executed, and, with them, one Ury, a catholic priest, who seems to have been most unrighteously condemned.

A calmer state of public feeling, at last, made it apparent, that, at the worst, the plot which had so terrified the community, was but an undigested attempt to set fire to some dwellings, with a view to take advantage of the confusion, for the purpose of committing theft, with greater security.

Legislative sessions of 1742 *and* 1743.—The same struggle, as before, between the governor and the legislature, continued to keep the colony in the excited mood of opposition to arbitrary authority, and was silently laying the foundations of that alienation of feeling, which was, at a later day, manifested in the spirit of the Revolution. This state of things continued till the arrival of the new governor.

Retirement of lieutenant-governor Clarke.—This politic and successful individual, having made good use of his peculiar opportunities of amassing wealth, during his administration of the affairs of the colony, retired to enjoy

his acquisitions in England. His life and character furnish a striking instance of the general spirit of colonial officers at that period. The main object in view, with most officials of the day, seems to have been personal emolument; a second,—as necessary to the first,—was the maintaining of a good understanding with the government at home; a third was a due care to maintain the dignity and authority of the crown; a fourth, to preserve the honor of the British name and nation; a fifth, to profess a great regard for the rights and liberties of the subject; and, the last, and least, to promote the welfare of the colony. Had the last link in this descending chain of objects, been always, as it ought to have been, regarded by our colonial governors, as the true means of securing all the rest, our fathers might have been disposed to perpetuate the condition of colonial dependence, and might have left to another generation the task of achieving American freedom.

SEC. X.—ADMINISTRATIONS OF GOVERNORS CLINTON AND SIR DANVERS OSBORN.—1743-1753.

Accession of governor Clinton.—In September, 1743, the new governor, Mr. Clinton, son of the earl of Lincoln, and a naval officer in early life,—arrived, to assume the charge of the colonial administration. Governor Clinton was a man of rather indolent disposition,—prone to indulge in the pleasures of a sailor's easy life on shore, and to enjoy the comforts which his station offered him.

Action of the legislature, in 1743.—The governor was met by the legislature, in the spirit of generous courtesy; and his easy disposition took no offence at the limitation of his revenue to a single year; nor did he object to the bill for septennial assemblies, or to such a modification of legal proceedings as extended the jurisdiction of the common-law courts, and limited the business of chancery,—a favorite wish of the people.

Reading Lesson LXXI.

Preparations for hostilities with France.—The aid rendered by the French government to the Stuart family, in their attempt to recover possession of the British crown, was regarded as the signal for warlike preparation in the

colonies. New York had ever been zealous for the protestant ascendency, and had taken a decided step in recognizing the movements which terminated in the British revolution of 1688. Large supplies were now eagerly voted, and readily accepted and applied, on the receipt of news of the declaration of war. The governor recommended various measures for strengthening the colony, and protecting it against invasion, and, among others, the building of a fort at Crown Point, and one, also, at Irondequot.

Proceedings in 1745.—The New-England colonies having formed the daring plan of attacking Louisburg, governor Clinton despatched aid in arms and ammunition, and urged on the legislature various measures, in addition to those adopted in the preceding year. The formation of a general union of the colonies, was one of the subjects then suggested; and the long-deferred appointment of a colonial agent, was another. The last of these topics was one on which the assembly felt sore, as conscious that the neglect of it had caused the proposal of a bill in parliament to prevent colonial paper money being accepted, as a legal tender. The legislature, accordingly, took offence at the governor's urgency in this case, and manifested their displeasure by voting very meagre supplies for public objects. The governor, in return, expressed the greatest displeasure at what he deemed personal incivilities, and, convening both houses, at once dissolved the assembly.

Indian hostilities.—The new legislature, although consisting of nearly the same members as before, evinced a disposition to comply with several of the governor's requirements, and voted an immediate supply to enable him to secure the good will of the Indian confederates, at his interview with them in autumn.

The French Indians, in the month of November, commenced the invasion of the New-England settlements, and ere the whites or the confederates could prevent, accomplished the destruction of Saratoga. The attack was made on the night of the 16th. The fort and other buildings were burned, some of the inhabitants killed, and others carried into captivity. The frontier inhabitants fell back on Albany; and a general alarm was spread throughout the adjoining region.

The governor took occasion to rebuke the legislature for non-compliance with his repeated suggestions regarding the better fortification of the frontier; and the assembly bestirred themselves in earnest, about supplies. Among the revolting features of the times, we recognize, with horror, the practice of offering rewards for Indian scalps, and, (with grief and shame must it be acknowledged,) for the scalps of *females*.

The atrocities practised by the Indians, seem to have seared the feelings of our ancestors to every prompting of humanity, on their behalf.

Measures for defence.—Colonel Philip Schuyler of Albany, whose brother was slain at Saratoga, importuned the governor for a body of troops, and for the rebuilding of the fort; and the people of Massachusetts renewed their solicitations for the formation of a general league of the colonies, for their common defence against their savage enemy. These, and other subjects connected with them, the governor urged on the attention of the assembly. But, impatient of so frequent meetings, that body requested an adjournment till the month of January following. In the meantime, however, a sum was voted to cover the expense of repairing the fort at Oswego.

On the reassembling of the legislature, several important resolves were passed, for the better fortifying of the colony. But want of unanimity among the members, and the alarming prevalence of the small-pox, which induced the assembly often to shift their place of meeting, hindered the accomplishment of anything effectual. Fixing, at length, on Brooklyn, as their place of meeting, they proceeded to the work of devising ways and means for meeting the emergencies of the time.

Preparations for invading Canada.—The government at home having despatched orders for the invasion of Canada, governor Clinton communicated the royal orders to the assembly. An invasion of Canada seems always to have been a favorite measure with the colonies; and no sooner was the communication made, than the assembly eagerly responded to it, and proceeded to vote, without delay, the requisite supplies.

Endeavors to secure the aid of the Six Nations.—The governor hastened to Albany, to enlist anew the feelings of the Six Nations, who had, of late, seemed cold and

wavering, and had even, in one instance, refused their coöperation. The influence of the governor over the confederate Indians, had been seriously impaired, in consequence of a quarrel between himself and Mr. Delancey. To the latter, colonel Philip Schuyler, (who exerted the same influence that his father had, in his life-time, over the majority of the confederates,) was greatly attached. This circumstance naturally made him slack in any effort to promote the views of governor Clinton. The governor, however, enjoyed a powerful coadjutor in colonel Johnson, whose authority was unbounded with the Mohawks. This individual is the same afterwards so distinguished by his victory over baron Dieskau and the French troops at lake George, in 1755.

At the meeting now held, Mr. Colden—acting for the governor, who was, on that occasion, severely indisposed, —harangued the Indians in their own style of figurative eloquence, with immense effect; and, on the following day, a leading Onondaga chief answered, in presence of the governor, for the confederates in general. He gave the firmest assurances of their cordial support, expressed their inveterate hatred of the French, and their readiness to commence the war without delay. In confirmation of his speech, the representatives of the Six Nations, suspended the war-kettle, and danced the war-dance, till late at night. The Indians are said, however, not to have been perfectly satisfied with the presents made to them, on this occasion; and, indeed, the governor's allusion to parsimony, in his next speech to the assembly, seems to imply that there was foundation for the surmise.

Reading Lesson LXXII.

Disagreements between the governor and the assembly.— On the next occasion of meeting the assembly, the governor did not fail to complain of the difficulty of exerting any influence on the Indians, owing to the inadequate provision made for such purposes. He enlarged, in the spirit of reproof, on many other points in which the legislature seemed insensible to the credit of the national name, and exhorted to unanimity and liberality in future measures.

The governor's address received a deliberate and

formal answer, in which nothing of the spirit of concession was evinced; but, on the contrary, remonstrance and innuendo were freely used. The house contended that the governor's officers had transcended their powers, in authorizing and enforcing the furnishing of provisions for the troops, to an extent greatly beyond the grant or the necessity of the case. The prosecution of the delinquents was even recommended.

The governor, in his next message, furnished an elaborate reply, in which he concluded with grave admonition and reproof, regarding the liberties in which the assembly had indulged towards himself and Mr. Colden. The assembly made a rejoinder, in very explicit terms, refusing farther aid, without assurances of its proper application. With this announcement, the governor had to remain content.

Appropriation for the founding of a college.—One of the unquestionable benefits conferred by the legislature, at this session, was the appropriation of two thousand two hundred and fifty pounds,—to be raised, however, by lottery,—for the establishment of a college. This grant was the germ of Columbia college, which has since effected so much for the state, by diffusing the benefits of classical education.

The following is judge Smith's language, commenting on this fact.

"To the disgrace of our first planters, who, beyond comparison, surpassed their eastern neighbors, in opulence, Mr. Delancey, a graduate of the university of Cambridge, and Mr. Smith, were, for many years, the only academics in this province, except such as were in holy orders; and so late as the period we are now examining, the author did not recollect above thirteen more, the youngest of whom had his bachelor's degree at the age of seventeen, but two months before the passing of the above law, the first towards erecting a college in this colony, though at the distance of above one hundred and twenty years after its discovery and the settlement of the capital, by Dutch progenitors from Amsterdam."

Continued disagreements between the governor and the assembly.—The Canadian and Indian troops were now, in 1747, cruelly devastating the frontier. But the disputes between the governor and the assembly, embarrassed

all public affairs, to such a degree, that no opposing force could be maintained. The governor complained bitterly of the reluctance of the assembly to provide the means of effectual defence, and hinted at the unwillingness of the ablest men in Albany to aid in any expedition against Canada, because of the advantage they derived from the traffic with Canada.

The disputes between the governor and the assembly continued, for years, to embroil the colony, and hinder the defence of its territory. The house seemed bent on driving Mr. Colden from his place as chief confidant and adviser of the governor. The only public measure of lasting consequence, passed within this period, was the appointing, in 1748, of a resident agent, to represent the colony at court. Mr. Robert Charles was the person appointed to this office, who, from his political relations, was of the party opposed to the governor, and became, therefore, the willing channel for complaints against his administration.

Governor Clinton perceiving, now, that the arbitrary tone of Mr. Colden, and the inveterate opposition of Mr. Delancey, might lead to his dismissal from office, began to cultivate a good understanding with Mr. Morris, formerly mentioned, and who was now about to visit England, for the purpose of soliciting the royal sanction to the design of the proprietors of New Jersey, for determining the boundary between that colony and New York. Against this measure Mr. Charles had received instructions to protest.

Mr. Morris gladly accepted, on terms of secrecy, the office of advocate at court for the governor; as he expected thus to secure, doubly, the prospect of being appointed lieutenant-governor. To such a result, Mr. Colden could not be expected to contribute; and he was accordingly dismissed from the governor's confidence, and his place supplied by Mr. Alexander.

The lords of trade, on whom devolved the control of colonial affairs, were easily won to favor governor Clinton, in his struggles with the house of assembly. But matters proceeded so slowly, that the governor was fain to dissolve the assembly, and abide the results of a new election.

Reading Lesson LXXIII.

Legislative proceedings in 1750.—The new assembly vas, with few exceptions, composed of the same members s the former. But, hearing through their agent, Mr. 'harles, of the intention at court, to have a thorough ıvestigation of the causes of dispute between the assem- ly and the governor, the tone of the legislative body, in nswering the governor's address, was comparatively alm and moderate; and the business of the session pro- eeded and terminated quietly and satisfactorily, on both des.

Dissolution of the assembly.—The legislature having esumed, in 1751, something of their former tone of op- osition to the governor, the latter convened both houses, nd instantly dissolved the lower. This measure took ıe house entirely by surprise. But the service bills aving been passed, there was nothing left but submission) the exercise of the governor's prerogative.

Influence of the governor's new counsellors.—The new ssembly met in October, 1752; and the brief, quiet style f the governor's address, sufficiently evinced the pru- ence of his new counsellors, Messrs. Alexander and mith.

The small-pox still continuing its ravages, the members f the house expressed, in an equally brief answer, their esire to be excused as speedily as practicable. To this ıe governor expressed his readiness to assent, imme- iately on proper provision being made for the public ervice. The house, accordingly, voted to provide, at ıeir next meeting, for various important objects, and, mong the rest, for the establishment of the projected ollege.

Remission of the opposition to governor Clinton.—Mr.)elancey, who was the prime leader of the party opposed) the governor, perceiving the turn which affairs were ıking at court, in favor of the latter, began to moderate is opposition to his measures; and this change of posi- on, on his part, influenced, of course, the action of his ssociates.

State of colonial affairs in 1753.—The assembly was ext convened at Jamaica, Long Island; as the preva- ence of the small-pox continued unintermitted in the city.

The business of this session proceeded with the utmost harmony; and the governor's health not permitting his personal attention to the annual duty of visiting the Indians, colonel Johnson was deputed to supply his place. Towards the close of the session, the governor announced his expectation of a successor, and his purpose of returning to England.

Disputed boundary between New York, and Massachusetts and New Hampshire.—The last mentioned of these colonies, had arbitrarily extended its jurisdiction to within twenty and thirty miles of the Hudson river; alleging, in justification, that New York had consented to such a line of separation from Connecticut.

Acting under these assumptions, governor Wentworth, of New Hampshire, had made large grants of land lying within the limits of New York. Against these proceedings governor Clinton protested; and it was, at length, agreed to submit the whole affair to the decision of the king. Mr. Wentworth, however, did not abide by this agreement, but secretly forwarded his claims to London, and resumed the practice of granting lands within the disputed territory. This clandestine procedure led, afterwards, to the most serious evils.

Governor Osborn.—On the 7th of October, 1753, Sir Danvers Osborn, the new governor, arrived in New York. Mr. Clinton, the ex-governor, was then residing at Flushing, but waited on his successor, on the following day. It was customary, on such occasions, for the governor to be sworn into office, before the council, after which, that body, with the new incumbent at their head, walked, in procession, to the town hall, where the commission was read.

On the present occasion, a mortifying humiliation was inflicted on the ex-governor, by the indecent demeanor and hooting of the crowd. To such extent were these indignities carried, that he quitted the procession, soon after its departure from the fort; and Sir Danvers was left to his reflections, amid the shouts of the throng.

The inference drawn from such premises, by the new governor, was, by no means, prepossessing. He was aware, moreover, that the instructions which he brought over, were such as would probably bring great odium on his administration; and laboring, at the time, under the depressing and melancholy effect of the death of his wife,

is disordered health and excited feelings, left him a prey
o insanity. Both in public and in private, he seemed
tterly dejected. His inauguration took place on Mon-
ay; and he held his first meeting with his council, for
usiness, on Thursday. The discouraging answers which
e received from the members, in regard to the spirit of
ne assembly, caused him much distress. He called a
hysician, in the evening, complained of increasing ill-
ess, retired to his chamber, and, in the morning, was
ound dead, suspended from the spikes of the garden
all belonging to the house in which he had taken up
is temporary residence. Thus suddenly and tragically
erminated the official and personal life of governor
sborn.

Reading Lesson LXXIV.

Character of Sir Danvers Osborn.—The excited state
f public feeling in the colony, was such at the time of
overnor Osborn's decease, that popular clamors of foul
lay were unthinkingly uttered on the occasion. But
iese were effectually put down by the plain narrative of
s secretary, Mr. Pownal, who accompanied him, as ad-
ser. Sir Danvers's friends who had procured him the
ppointment of governor, were well aware of his de-
ressed and partially deranged condition, and had ob-
ined the office for him, in the hope that change of
ene, and active exertion, might have a salutary effect
n his case. The deceased was universally esteemed,—
use the words of judge Smith, who had frequent per-
nal communications with him,—"a man of good sense,
eat modesty, and of a genteel and courteous behavior,"
nd "strictly conscientious" in the discharge of such du-
es as his limited term of office devolved on him.

Character of ex-governor Clinton.—"Mr. Clinton," con-
nues the historian, "had no sooner given up the reins,
an he retired to the east end of Long Island, whence
embarked; but not till he had suffered the keenest
ortification, under the late unexpected vicissitudes; for
not only heard himself execrated, and saw his enemy
vanced and applauded, but was a witness to the un-
ateful desertions of some of those he had raised and
bliged. He had, nevertheless, the spirit to reject some
isidious advancements made by Mr. Delancey, towards

a reconciliation; and thus parting foes, that artful politician, who could not win him by blandishment, resolved to parry his resentments, and enervate his testimony, by loading him with disgrace. Thus he cut him out work when he arrived in England, for the defence of himself. He sailed in the Arundel, about the beginning of November. Easy in his temper, but incapable of business, he was always obliged to rely on some favorite. In a province given to hospitality, he erred by immuring himself in the fort, or retiring to a grotto in the country, where his time was spent with his bottle and a little, trifling circle, who played at billiards with his lady, and lived on his bounty. His manner of living was the very reverse of that requisite to raise a party or to make friends. He was seldom abroad; many of the citizens never saw him; he did not even attend divine worship above three or four times during his whole administration. His capital error was gratifying Mr. Delancey with a commission, which rendered him independent and assuming, and then reposing equal confidence in Colden, who was interested in procuring his recall, or rendering the country his abhorrence. He saw that event; and to prepare for it, ventured upon measures that exposed him to censure.

"Mrs. Clinton prompted her husband, whose good nature gave place to her superior understanding, to every plausible device for enhancing the profits of his government. He sometimes took money for offices, and sold even the reversions of such that were merely ministerial. He set the precedent for the high fees since demanded for land patents, and boldly relied upon the interest of his patrons, to screen him from reprehension. He became afterwards governor of Greenwich hospital. Mr. Clinton's accounts for expenditures, in consequence of the duke of Newcastle's orders of 1746, amounted to eighty-four thousand pounds sterling; and it was supposed that the governor returned to England with a fortune very little short of that sum."

SEC. XI.—FIRST ADMINISTRATION OF LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR DELANCEY.—1753–1755.

Reading Lesson LXXV.

Accession of lieutenant-governor Delancey.—Governor Clinton's last official act was the delivery to Mr. Delan-

cey of his commission, as lieutenant-governor, immediately after the surrender of the seals of office to Sir Danvers Osborn. Mr. Delancey, accordingly, became governor, *pro tem.*, on the death of Sir Danvers.

Special instruction to governor Osborn.—The British ministry, aware of the distracted state of the colony, from political faction, had sent over, by governor Osborn, a strict injunction to urge the appropriation of a fixed and permanent revenue, and an adequate provision for all public disbursements, rendered necessary, in any form, for the interests of the crown or the colony. All expenditures were directed to be made by virtue of the governor's warrant, with the advice and consent of his council, and without the interference of the assembly. The governor's salary was fixed at a definite sum, not to be increased by any occasional grant, although susceptible of permanent enlargement, if the addition should be made within a year of the governor's inauguration.

Cordiality between the assembly and the lieutenant-governor.—The new articles of instruction seemed likely to embarrass the administration of the new incumbent. But by dexterously managing to rebuke, in public, and foster, in private, the well-known spirit of the house, the acting governor contrived to keep on good terms with that body, and to receive a high salary for himself, and reasonable appropriations for the emergencies of the public service. The assembly, however, continued firmly to refuse a permanent revenue, for which refusal a guarded reproof was administered in the governor's speech, at the close of the session.

The assembly's addresses to the king and the lords of trade.—An exculpatory address to the king was drawn up, at this session, and transmitted to England. In this paper, all imputations of disaffection or disloyalty, were indignantly repelled. An address, or rather, a complaint, was, at the same time, forwarded to the "lords of trade and plantation." The chief object of this communication, was to complain, in bitter terms, of the conduct of ex-governor Clinton. The most grievous accusations and reproaches were, in this paper, heaped on his whole administration, as unjust, dishonorable, incompetent, and every way disgraceful to the colony and the nation.

Free access given to the public library.—Amid the polit-

ical perplexities and social troubles of the times, it is pleasing to see traces of a generous interest in the welfare of the people, manifested by men of education and of influence. In 1754, a handsome sum was raised for the purpose of facilitating access to the public library, to non-subscribers; and measures were adopted for procuring, at a subsequent day, the addition of an appropriate building for a museum and an observatory; the books being as yet deposited in the town hall, though under the care of a librarian.

Legislative proceedings in 1754.—Governor Dinwiddie of Virginia, having, at this time, called on the other colonies for aid to suppress the attempts made by the French, to erect forts on the Ohio river, lieutenant-governor Delancey called on the house for means. The assembly, when voting the usual supplies of the year, made a limited appropriation for this purpose, but complained of the large draughts already made on the public treasury, for objects connected with the defence of the colony. The appropriations voted, however, were all to be made under the inspection of the house. To this arrangement, the council objected, of course; and, in remodelling their grants, the assembly, in displeasure, omitted the provision for aid to Virginia. When admonished on this subject, by the governor, they asked for a prorogation. This was granted and accompanied with a threat to report the undutiful behavior of the legislature to his majesty. This threat, however, was thought to be made more for form's sake than otherwise.

Reading Lesson LXXVI.

Meeting of colonial deputies at Albany.—The 14th of June, 1754, was distinguished by an event hitherto unprecedented in American history,—the assembling of a congress of deputies from all the British colonies, for the purpose of concerting measures for the common defence. Of this congress, Mr. Delancey was president. Extensive schemes were here proposed for a permanent union of the colonies, in one general government, while each colony should retain its own constitution. But the coldness of Mr. Delancey, and a want of unanimity on the part of the other members, defeated all attempts at regular action,

in this body; although a very systematic plan was presented by Mr. Smith,—a plan which that of Dr. Franklin afterwards so closely copied, and which was, in fact, an imperfect outline of the present federal constitution of the United States. Nothing, however, was effected, on this occasion, beyond a favorable impression on the minds of the confederated Indians who were present; and who expressed their readiness to coöperate with the English colonies against the French.

Farther action of the legislature, in 1754.—News of the repulse of colonel Washington, by the French force, having arrived at Albany, during the session of the temporary colonial congress, governor Delancey, on his return to New York, urged the assembly to make appropriations for the aid of Virginia and Pennsylvania. The answer returned was apparently grudging and unfavorable, although accompanied by a grant of five thousand pounds.

Discontents occasioned by the chartering of King's college.—The proceeds arising from the lotteries granted for the endowment of a college, had, in 1751, been committed to the care of a body of trustees, consisting of the eldest councillors, the speaker, the judges of the supreme court, the mayor of the metropolis, the province treasurer, and several eminent citizens. The trustees were empowered to add to the fund five hundred pounds, annually, drawn from the treasury, for seven years, at the end of which time, the course of instruction in the college was to commence. In the year 1752, the wardens and rector of Trinity church offered a part of their suburban estate, as a site for the erection of the college; and, in the following year, Dr. Johnson, the episcopal minister at Hartford, Connecticut, was invited to the presidency, and Mr. Whittlesey, a presbyterian minister of New Haven, to assist him in instruction.

The known partiality of the lieutenant-governor and most of the council, for the forms of the episcopal church, excited distrust and jealousy in the minds of the people of other denominations; and the press was loud in its denunciation of measures which seemed intended to convert funds contributed by all denominations, to the uses of one.

The intentions of the majority of the trustees, were, ere long, rendered apparent, by a resolution to elect no

individual to the presidency who was not of the episcopal body, and, farther, to introduce the book of common prayer, for the religious exercises of the college.

The governor referred the matter to the council; and the measure was authorized, notwithstanding the protest of Messrs. Alexander and Smith. Mr. Delancey, himself, who seems to have had scruples as to the legality or the propriety of this step, yielded, at length, his consent; and the great seal was affixed to the charter,—including the objectionable features. This act of the lieutenant-governor excited a general hostility; as the episcopalians were few in number, compared with other denominations in the metropolis.

To allay the general dissatisfaction, the assembly ordered the trustees to report their proceedings under the act by which they had been appointed. A petition was also very opportunely presented from the ministers, elders, and deacons, of the Dutch reformed church, to the effect that the college ought to be incorporated by act of legislature. The trustees and the house seemed equally divided in their views. The latter, however, decided to forbid any disposal of the funds of the college, but in accordance with legislative act. Leave was given to Mr. Robert Livingston, of Livingston manor, to bring in a bill for the incorporation of the college; and his draught was immediately presented.

Mr. Livingston's bill encountered serious impediments. It could not be approved by the governor and council, who had already authorized the establishment of the college, on the exclusive principle. The assembly although they did not dare to reject it, lest they should offend the people, could not pass it in consistency with their party prejudices. The bill, therefore, was, for the present, laid on the table, with a resolution to print it, for more mature consideration.

Reading Lesson LXXVII.

The city of New York in the year 1755.—At this period of comparative stagnancy in our colonial history, it may not be uninteresting to pause, for a moment, and contemplate the then humble aspect of the city of New York, in contrast with its present flourishing condition. Judge

Smith, in his History, gives the following graphic sketch of New York as it existed at the date mentioned above.

"The city of New York consists of about two thousand five hundred buildings. It is a mile in length, and not above half that in breadth. Such are its figure, its centre of business, and the situation of the houses, that the mean cartage, from one part to another, does not exceed above one quarter of a mile, than which nothing can be more advantageous to a trading city.

"It is thought to be as healthy a spot as any in the world. The east and south parts, in general, are low; but the rest is situated on a dry, elevated soil. The streets are irregular, but, being paved with round pebbles, are clean, and lined with well-built brick houses, many of which are covered with tiled roofs.

"No part of America is supplied with markets abounding with greater plenty and variety. We have beef, pork, mutton, poultry, butter, wild fowl, venison, fish, roots, and herbs, of all kinds, in their seasons. Our oysters are a considerable article in the support of the poor. Their beds are within view of the town; a fleet of two hundred small craft are often seen there, at a time, when the weather is mild in winter; and this single article is computed to be worth, annually, ten or twelve thousand pounds.

"This city is the metropolis and grand mart of the province, and, by its commodious situation, commands, also, all the trade of the western part of Connecticut, and that of east Jersey. No season prevents our ships from launching out into the ocean. During the greatest severity of winter, an equal, unrestrained activity runs through all ranks, orders, and employments.

"Upon the southwest point of the city, stands the fort, which is a square, with four bastions. Within the walls is the house in which our governor usually resides; and opposite to it, brick barracks, built formerly for the independent companies. The governor's house is, in height, three stories, and fronts to the west; having, from the second story, a fine prospect of the bay and the Jersey shore.

"Below the walls of the garrison, near the water, we have lately raised a line of fortifications, which commands the entrance into the eastern road and the mouth of Hud-

son's river. This battery is built of stone; and the merlons consist of cedar joists, filled in with earth. It mounts ninety-two cannon; and these are all the works we have to defend us.

"About six furlongs southeast of the fort, lies Notten island, containing about one hundred or one hundred and twenty acres, reserved, by an act of assembly, as a sort of demesne for the governors, upon which it is proposed to erect a strong castle, because an enemy might from thence easily bombard the city, without being annoyed either by our battery or the fort. During the late war, a line of palisadoes was run from Hudson's to the East river, at the other end of the city, with block-houses, at small distances. The greater part of these still remain, as a monument of our folly, which cost the province about eight thousand pounds.

"The inhabitants of New York are a mixed people, but mostly descended from the original Dutch planters. There are still two churches in which religious worship is performed in that language. The old building is of stone and ill built, ornamented within by a small organ loft and brass branches. The new church is a high, heavy edifice, has a very extensive area, and was completed in 1729. It has no galleries, and yet will perhaps contain a thousand or twelve hundred auditors. The steeple of this church affords a most beautiful prospect, both of the city beneath, and the surrounding country. The Dutch congregation is more numerous than any other; but as the language becomes disused, it is much diminished; and, unless they change their worship into the English tongue, must soon suffer a total dissipation."

Reading Lesson LXXVIII.

Description of the city of New York in 1755, *continued.*—"The city hall is a strong brick building, two stories in height, in the shape of an oblong, winged with one at each end, at right angles with the first. The floor below is an open walk, except two jails and the jailor's apartments. The cellar, underneath, is a dungeon; and the garret above, a common prison. This edifice is erected on a place where four streets meet, and fronts, to the southwest, one of the most spacious streets in town.

The eastern wing, in the second story, consists of the assembly chamber, a lobby, and a small room for the speaker of the house. The west wing, on the same floor, forms the council room and a library; and, in the space between the ends, the supreme court is ordinarily held."

"Besides the city hall, there belong to the corporation, a large alms-house, or place of correction, and the exchange,—in the latter of which there is a large room, raised upon brick arches, generally used for public entertainments, concerts of music, balls, and assemblies.

"Though the city was put under the government of a mayor, in 1665, it was not regularly incorporated till 1686. Since that time, several charters have been passed: the last was granted by governor Montgomerie, on the 15th of January, 1730.

"The city is divided into seven wards, and is under the government of a mayor, recorder, seven aldermen, and as many assistants, or common councilmen. The mayor, a sheriff, and coroner, are annually appointed by the governor. The recorder has a patent 'during pleasure.' The aldermen, assistants, assessors, and collectors, are annually elected by the freemen and freeholders of the respective wards. The mayor has the sole appointment of a deputy, and, together with four aldermen, may appoint a chamberlain. The mayor or recorder, four aldermen, and as many assistants, form 'the common council of the city of New York;' and this body, by a majority of voices, hath power to make by-laws for the government of the city, which are binding only for a year, unless confirmed by the governor and council.

"The annual revenue of the corporation is near two thousand pounds. The standing militia of the island, consists of about twenty-three hundred men;* and the city has, in reserve, a thousand stand of arms, for seamen, the poor, and others,—in case of an invasion."

The following is a picture of the city of Albany, at this period.—"The city of Albany, which is near a hundred and fifty miles from New York, is situated on the west

* "The whole number of the inhabitants, exclusive of females above sixty, according to a list returned to the governor, in spring, 1756, amounted to 10,468 whites, and 2,275 negroes; but that account is erroneous. It is most probable that there are in the city 15,000 souls."

side of the river. There our governors usually treat with the Indian dependents upon the British crown. The houses are built of brick in the Dutch taste, and are in number about three hundred and fifty. There are two churches in it. That of the episcopalians, the only one in this large county, is a stone building; the congregation is but small, almost all the inhabitants resorting to the Dutch church, which is a plain, square, stone edifice. Besides these, they have no other public buildings, except the city hall and the fort; the latter of which is a stone square, with four bastions, situated on an eminence which overlooks the town, but is itself commanded by higher ground. The greatest part of the city is fortified only by palisadoes; and, in some places, there are small cannon planted in block-houses. Albany was incorporated by colonel Dongan, in 1686, and is under the government of a mayor, recorder, six aldermen, and as many assistants. It has also a sheriff, town clerk, chamberlain, clerk of the markets, one high constable, three sub-constables, and a marshal. The corporation is empowered besides to hold a mayor's court, for the trial of civil causes, and a court of general quarter sessions."

"The banks of Hudson's river are, for the most part, rocky cliffs, especially on the western shore. The passage through the Highlands affords a wild romantic scene, for sixteen miles, through steep and lofty mountains: the tide flows a few miles above Albany; the navigation is safe, and performed in sloops of about forty or fifty tons burden, extremely well accommodated to the river: about sixty miles above the city of New York the water is fresh, and, in wet seasons, much lower; the river is stored with variety of fish, which renders a summer's passage to Albany exceedingly diverting to such as are fond of angling."

Reading Lesson LXXIX.

Character and condition of the people of the colony.—"English is the most prevailing language, amongst us, but not a little corrupted by the Dutch dialect, which is still so much used in some counties, that the sheriffs find it difficult to obtain persons, sufficiently acquainted with the English tongue, to serve as jurors in the courts of law.

"The manners of the people differ as well as their

language. In Suffolk and Queen's county, the first settlers of which were either natives of England, or the immediate descendants of such as began the plantations in the eastern colonies, their customs are similar to those prevailing in the English counties from whence they originally sprang.

"In the city of New York, through our intercourse with the Europeans, we follow the London fashions; though, by the time we adopt them, they become disused in England. Our affluence, during the late war, introduced a degree of luxury in tables, dress, and furniture, with which we were before unacquainted. But still we are not so gay a people as our neighbors in Boston, and several of the southern colonies. The Dutch counties, in some measure, follow the example of New York, but still retain many modes peculiar to the Hollanders.

"The city of New York consists principally of merchants, shopkeepers, and tradesmen, who sustain the reputation of honest, punctual, and fair dealers. With respect to riches, there is not so great an inequality amongst us as is common in Boston and some other places. Every man of industry and integrity, has it in his power to live well; and many are the instances of persons who came here distressed by their poverty, who now enjoy easy and plentiful fortunes.

"New York is one of the most social places on the continent. The men collect themselves into weekly evening clubs. The ladies, in winter, are frequently entertained either at concerts of music or assemblies, and make a very good appearance. They are comely and dress well, and scarce any of them have distorted shapes. Tinctured with a Dutch education, they manage their families with becoming parsimony, good providence, and singular neatness. The practice of extravagant gaming, common to the fashionable fair sex, in some places, is a vice with which my countrywomen cannot justly be charged. There is nothing they so generally neglect as reading, and, indeed, all the arts for the improvement of the mind;—in which, I confess, we have set them the example. They are modest, temperate, and charitable; naturally sprightly, sensible, and good-humored; and, by the helps of a more elevated education, would possess all the accomplishments desirable in the sex.

"Our schools are in the lowest order;—the instructors want instruction; and, through a long shameful neglect of all the arts and sciences, our common speech is extremely corrupt, and the evidences of a bad taste, both as to thought and language, are visible in all our proceedings, public and private.

"The people, both in town and country, are sober, industrious, and hospitable, though intent upon gain. The richer sort keep very plentiful tables, abounding with great varieties of flesh, fish, fowl, and all kinds of vegetables. The common drinks are beer, cider, weak punch, and Madeira wine. For dessert, we have fruits in vast plenty, of different kinds and various species.

"Gentlemen of estates rarely reside in the country; and hence few or no experiments have yet been made in agriculture. The farms being large, our husbandmen, for that reason, have little recourse to art for manuring and improving their lands; but it is said, that nature has furnished us with sufficient helps, whenever necessity calls us to use them. It is much owing to the disproportion between the number of our inhabitants, and the vast tracts remaining still to be settled, that we have not, as yet, entered upon scarce any other manufactures than such as are indispensably necessary for our home convenience. Felt-making, which is perhaps the most natural of any we could fall upon, was begun some years ago; and hats were exported to the West Indies, with great success, till lately prohibited by an act of parliament.

"The inhabitants of this colony are, in general, healthy and robust, taller, but shorter-lived, than Europeans, and, both with respect to their minds and bodies, arrive sooner to an age of maturity. Breathing a serene, dry air, they are more sprightly in their natural tempers, than the people of England, and hence instances of suicide are here very uncommon. The history of our diseases belongs to a profession with which I am very little acquainted. Few physicians amongst us are eminent for their skill. Quacks abound like locusts in Egypt; and too many have recommended themselves to a full practice and profitable subsistence."

"Our importation of dry goods from England, is so vastly great, that we are obliged to betake ourselves to all possible arts to make remittances to the British mer-

chants. It is for this purpose we import cotton from St. Thomas's and Surinam; lime-juice and Nicaragua wood from Curaçao; and logwood from the Bay, etc.: and yet it drains us of all the silver and gold we can collect. It is computed, that the annual amount of the goods purchased by this colony in Great Britain, is, in value, not less than £100,000 sterling; and the sum would be much greater, if a stop was put to all clandestine trade."

"Our people, both in town and country, are shamefully gone into the habit of tea-drinking; and, it is supposed, we consume of this commodity in value near £10,000 sterling per annum."

Reading Lesson LXXX.

Fresh preparations for hostilities with the French.—Great alarm was spread throughout the colony, by the extensive measures of the French, for securing possession of the whole of British North America. The acting governor summoned an extraordinary meeting of the legislature, on the 10th of January, 1755, to prepare for emergencies; and a large supply was unanimously voted.

Governor Shirley of Massachusetts, was, at this time, pressing on the attention of the colonies, as well as the British ministry, the necessity of striking a final blow at the French possessions in Canada. The ministry had, at length, acceded to his wishes; and a descent on Canada was to take place from the Kennebec, and from lakes Champlain and Ontario; while the regular and colonial force, under general Braddock, was to lay siege to the French forts on the Ohio.

Mr. Pownal was despatched to New York, as governor Shirley's messenger, on this occasion; and, although, at first, his reception, on the part of acting-governor Delancey and the council, was but indifferent, the spirit of the assembly was, as on all former occasions of a similar nature, immediately aroused, and supplies voted accordingly, but left, for final decision, to the judgment of general Braddock.

The extermination of the French, or the complete conquest of Canada, always seemed to the colonists the only reliable measure for the permanent safety, or even the existence, of the British colonies. Hence the readiness

with which extensive grants could be obtained of the legislature, in circumstances such as the present. The dilatory habits of action, however, to which the colonial officers had so long been accustomed, by the backwardness of the legislature and the executive, on previous occasions, exposed them to animadversion from governor Shirley, as he passed up the river, with his own quota of force, on his way to Niagara.

Anticipations of the arrival of a new governor.—The zeal of warlike preparation was now somewhat slackened by the rumor of the speedy arrival of a new governor, Sir Charles Hardy, and by the increasing disaffection of the people towards Mr. Delancey, in consequence of his course regarding the newly-chartered college; although he had done his best to retrieve that false step, by granting permission to the Dutch church, to choose and maintain a professor of their own communion.

Continued controversy with Massachusetts.—The encroachments of the Massachusetts colony on the territory of New York, continued still to harass the frontier; and the settlement of the boundary question seemed farther than ever from adjustment.

Effects of Braddock's defeat.—The utter failure of Braddock's expedition, increased the alarm for the safety of the British colonies. Governor Delancey although somewhat dilatory, now urged, on the attention of the legislature, the necessity of fresh aid to the expeditions against Niagara and Crown Point. But having, for private ends, communicated to the house the information that the relics of Braddock's force were expected at Albany, the vote of supply was limited to provision for the reception and refreshment of the regular force. On hearing, however, of the vigorous preparations made by Massachusetts and Connecticut, a hortatory message was sent down to the house, moving them to yet larger sacrifices in providing for the common defence, and for the destruction of the common enemy.

SEC. XII.—ADMINISTRATION OF GOVERNOR HARDY.—1755-1757.

Reading Lesson LXXXI.

Accession of governor Hardy.—On the 2d of September, of the same year, Sir Charles Hardy arrived, to enter

upon the duties of governor, and soon indicated the probable character of his administration, by surrendering himself to the counsels and guidance of Mr. Delancey. The usual courtesies passed between the new governor and the assembly; and the house appropriated eight thousand pounds, towards defraying the expenses of a levy of two thousand men, in the colony of Connecticut,—a force intended for operations on the frontier region of New York.

Defeat of the French at lake George.—On the 12th of September arrived intelligence of the repulse of the French force near lake George, and of the capture and death of baron Dieskau, the French commander. The battle was fought on the 8th; and, immediately after the arrival of the news, governor Hardy departed for Albany, to expedite the Connecticut reïnforcement.

This success of the colonial arms was, by some, magnified into a momentous victory. But its main value lay in the impression it produced on both sides; and, in this respect, it was of the greatest advantage, in raising the spirits of the British colonies.

The circumstances of the encounter were these.—General Johnson left Albany, with the artillery, on the 8th of August, and reached the south end of lake George, but a few days before the appearance of the French, and had not had time fully to fortify his camp.

Baron Dieskau had assembled about three thousand men at Crown Point, and detached a small body of regulars, supported by twelve hundred Canadians and Indians, to devastate the country, as far down as Albany.

When near fort Edward, however, he turned back, on hearing of the position of the force under general Johnson, and attempted to carry the imperfectly fortified camp. He drove in, without much difficulty, the advanced troops of the British colonists; but as he did not follow up his advantage by an assault, the camp, at first thrown into confusion, by the suddenness of the enemy's approach, had time to come to order, and bring their artillery into play.

The havoc which ensued among the mixed force of Dieskau, soon left him unsupported by any but his few regulars. He had, moreover, the misfortune to receive a severe wound; and nothing now remained for him, but

to expedite his retreat to his boats at South Bay. Before he could accomplish this, however, he was again wounded, and, at length, overtaken and captured, but did not long survive the mortification of defeat. His wounds proved mortal; and his country lost, in him, a faithful and able officer, although one unaccustomed to the emergencies of American border warfare.

Sir William Johnson received, in the early part of the battle, a wound which disabled him for action; and the subsequent part of the action was conducted by general Lyman of Connecticut. The Indian allies of the English took no part in this affair, and, soon after, returned to their forts on the Mohawk.

Advantage was taken of the impression produced by this victory, to construct fort William Henry, as an additional security for the frontier. But the French were not less active, meanwhile, in erecting one at Ticonderoga.

Results of the Niagara expedition.—Governor Shirley's expedition to Niagara, secured the fort at Oswego. But the time consumed in building vessels for the navigation of lake Ontario, and the impossibility of commanding supplies of provision, at so great a distance, rendered it impracticable to embark, till too late in the season. All, therefore, that could be done, was, to strengthen the post at Oswego, and return to Albany. There the general met colonel Dunbar, with the surviving troops of Braddock's command, who had arrived for the purpose of taking up their winter quarters in the town. From Albany, general Shirley went to New York, to meet with the other colonial governors and commanders, for the purpose of planning the next year's campaign.

Revival of the question of a permanent revenue for the government.—On his return to the metropolis, Sir Charles announced to the assembly his instructions to insist on regular provision being made for a permanent revenue, for the support of the colonial government. He urged, on the attention of the legislature, the exigences of the public service, arising out of the late expedition and other causes. The answer of the assembly was, that there was no convenient fund from which to derive a permanent revenue; that any measure for securing such a provision, was contrary to the feelings of the whole colony; and that it was hoped the house would be excused from the

consideration of this question. The governor, being wholly under the influence of Mr. Delancey, took no special umbrage at the neglect of the royal requirement, and gained greatly, therefore, on the general good-will, which was still farther enhanced by his known opposition to general Shirley. This officer, from his impatient expressions regarding the dilatory movements of the colony, and his avowed preferences for New England, had incurred much odium among the commonalty of New York; so that he met a cool reception, on his return; while general Johnson was welcomed with every public demonstration of joy.

Reading Lesson LXXXII.

Meeting of colonial governors and military officers, at New York.—The plan proposed by general Shirley, for military operations against the French, included, in the first place, a winter expedition against Ticonderoga, and next, an extended series of operations designed to drive the French from their strongholds at Frontenac and Toronto, and thus debar them from access to lake Ontario. Measures were to be taken, likewise, to cut off the communications between east and west Canada, and the Ohio and Mississippi.

Refusal of the assembly to aid general Shirley's projected expedition against Ticonderoga.—On the 10th of January, 1756, while general Shirley was yet staying in New York, to prosecute his scheme for the reduction of Ticonderoga, the assembly refused their aid, unless a larger number of regulars were assigned, to accompany the colonial troops on that service. In this precaution, the assembly acted wisely; as the colonial levies, though exceedingly useful in skirmishing expeditions, were not the most effective species of force for the reduction of fortified places. General Shirley replied that a larger draft on the regular troops would disorganize the plan of the year's campaign already settled. The assembly adhered to their first position; and the general went eastward, to stir up the New-England colonies to his aid.

Position of Mr. Delancey.—During a long period of official service, as acting governor, Mr. Delancey had held a distinguished place, and exerted a powerful control, in colonial affairs. His personal character had also contrib-

uted, by its authoritative weight, to make him formidable; and he had shown that he knew well how to gain a full ascendency over the popular feeling. On the accession of Sir Charles Hardy, he had suddenly become, if possible, still more formidable than ever, by assuming the position of the unseen and irresponsible "power behind the throne."

It became now a subject of earnest speculation whether he would issue, invested with the formal powers of lieutenant-governor, or resume his seat, as chief-justice, on the bench; as it was well understood that an aspiring mind, like his, would never be content to fill the unnoticed place of a mere adviser to the executive.

It was, therefore, with no ordinary pleasure, that the friends of liberty saw him resume his place upon the bench.

Indian ravages on Ulster and Orange counties.—The Indian tribes in the French interest, were, meanwhile, ravaging the frontier region of Ulster and Orange counties; and, to repel these attacks, the immediate levy of a sufficient force had become necessary. The governor accordingly applied to the legislature for the requisite supplies. But that body manifested a desire to involve this subject in the more general one of a united effort for the common defence, on the part of New York, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania; retaining, however, a portion of the troops, for the purpose of local defence, in the region exposed to attacks by the Indians.

The continued and increasing cruelties experienced by the sufferers, at length roused the assembly to action; and the management of Mr. Delancey, and the pliancy of the governor, having removed the reluctance of the assembly, the necessary vote was soon obtained. This fresh triumph of Mr. Delancey's influence secured his full ascendency over the governor. The impediment regarding the legislative grant, had been the unwillingness of the house to vote supplies, till a previous bill, involving a liberal compensation to Mr. Delancey, had been passed. A hint from that individual to the governor, explained the difficulty, and induced his assent to the bill in question, which he had withheld, in consequence of the earnest protest of some of Mr. Delancey's opponents.

Mr. Delancey was, in this affair, actuated by personal

motives; but the result was highly favorable to the interests of the colony. Its effect, even on the British ministry, was to induce the abandoning of all objections to the plan of an annual vote for the salaries of public officers. It probably had its effect, also, in ultimately inducing the relinquishing of all opposition to the favorite colonial scheme of furnishing only an annual revenue,—the great means of holding the government in strict dependence, for all grants of money, on the consent and approbation of the colony. This, it will be seen, was the true germ of the American revolution. That event originated in the determination of the colonists not to be taxed without their own consent; and the long struggle which the people of New York maintained, with so much vigor and independence, against so many successive governors, proved the school of training in which the people were prepared for the sterner resistance demanded at the time of the revolution.

Decline of governor Hardy's popularity.—Several circumstances conspired, about this time, to diminish the governor's favor with the community. He had seized several vessels engaged in an illicit traffic with Hamburg and Holland, which had previously been connived at; and his position had sunk in comparison with that of general Johnson, the great idol of the day, at home, as well as the favorite abroad. Another circumstance which deducted from the governor's importance, was the arrival of several regiments of British troops, the splendid style of whose officers dazzled the eyes of the people.

Reading Lesson LXXXIII.

Arrival of lord Loudon.—On the 23d of July, in this year, the earl of Loudon, who had been appointed commander-in-chief of the British forces in America, arrived at New York, and superseded general Shirley, who, shortly after, returned to Boston, and thence to England.

The new generalissimo excited the disgust of governor Hardy, by rejecting his counsel, in military affairs, and refusing his request of two independent companies, for his guards of honor. Between an old sailor, like the governor, and a young soldier, like lord Loudon, there could be but little harmony of feeling.

Panic at the loss of the fort at Oswego.—The high expectations formed, in consequence of the large accession of regular troops, for the defence of the colony, were destined to disappointment, when, to the consternation of all, the fort at Oswego was besieged and taken. So much was general Webb alarmed at the intelligence, that he had trees felled to obstruct Wood creek; and the commander-in-chief despatched Sir William Johnson, with the militia, for the security of the British force at the Oneida portage. The following extract from a letter of the speaker of the house of assembly to the colonial agent in London, will serve to show the impression produced by the fall of Oswego.

"I acquainted you that we were in great expectation of a successful campaign. But our disappointment is rather greater than that of the last year; for, instead of our taking Crown Point, the enemy have made themselves masters of the important fortress of Oswego, taken the whole garrison prisoners of war, demolished all the fortifications, carried away all the armed vessels, two hundred whale-boats, cannon, provisions, and warlike stores; and this, it is said, they did in a few days' time,—a dishonor to the British name. Oh! shameful behavior of our forces! We have now no footing on lake Ontario: all is left to the uninterrupted possession of the enemy, who will doubtless dispossess us of all that we have remaining, if not suddenly stopped.

"As for our forces on the northern frontier, both regulars and provincials, I expect to hear of no action by them, unless the enemy force them to it. If some more vigorous measures are not made in England, and seasonably executed, we must inevitably fall a prey to the prevailing power of France. We live in hopes that a vigorous push will be made for the reduction of Canada, which seems to be the only measure that can secure us."

Abandonment of the claim for a perpetual revenue.—Governor Hardy, at length, divulged the fact, that the British government had authorized him to desist from urging the demand for a permanent revenue; and the colony thus derived the benefit of the long-tried firmness of the legislature, in regard to this vexatious demand. The effect of this concession was at once evinced in the readiness with which the assembly voted extensive sup-

olies, even by direct taxation, on articles of daily use, nd, still more, by the valuable gratuities conferred on he governor himself, though in such a way as to evade he injunction against conferring presents on the governor.

Action of the legislature on the grants to the college.—It s with regret that we read, in the history of this year, ne course pursued in regard to the funds originally ranted for the establishment of the college. The harter was at length conferred; but half the fund was iverted to the erection of a jail and an hospital. For nis result the trustees, by their exclusive conduct, were nemselves, in part, to blame; and here, again, we perceive the machinations of Mr. Delancey, the great politician of the time, who proposed the measure, with a iew to retrieve his popularity, which he had jeoparded y his former favor shown to the institution and its trusees. The friends of the college, however, secured the enefit, at least, of the immediate use of funds long witheld, and proceeded to erect the college edifice, with the noiety permitted to them.

Oppressive and arbitrary conduct of lord Loudon.—The ommander-in-chief, desiring to retrieve the disgrace ttending the loss of Oswego, made an attempt to collect roops for an attack on Crown Point. Sir William ohnson was required to muster the Indians for this purose. But the Indians seem never to have relished the lea of attacking fortified places; as they were conscious f their want of qualification for such modes of warfare. 'he main purpose, indeed, which they ever served, on ither the French or the English side, seems to have been iat of striking terror into the opposite army, by the dread f their well-known barbarity towards captives and deenceless people. The employment of such aids, and the iising of them to the dignity of allies, are equally disraceful to nations calling themselves christian. But the nhuman practice of war, brings, in its train, every evil iat can afflict or degrade mankind.

Disappointed at the reluctance of the Indians to enter n the proposed expedition, lord Loudon retired to Alany for the winter, and billeted his troops, in excessive umbers, for free quarters, on the inhabitants of that city nd of the metropolis. This unprecedented annoyance iused loud and universal complaints, in answer to which,

lord Loudon, with characteristic haughtiness, threatened to billet his whole army on the capital. To avoid such an evil, the magistrates headed a subscription for defraying the charges of billeting; and matters were thus set at rest, but not without a fresh lesson received on the evils of colonial dependence, which entailed the liability to such oppression.

Reading Lesson LXXXIV.

Appropriations for the prosecution of hostilities against the French.—In February, 1757, the governor urged the legislature to fresh grants for the prosecution of the war; informing them, at the same time, of his expectation of reïnforcements from Europe and from the sister colonies. The assembly voted the means of a levy of a thousand men, as the just quota of the colony, and, having been compelled to sit at Flatbush, in consequence of the prevalence of small-pox in the city, declined attending to other business.

SEC. XIII.—SECOND ADMINISTRATION OF LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR DELANCEY.—1757–1760.

Reïnstallment of Mr. Delancey as lieutenant-governor.—Sir Charles Hardy, having received the appointment of rear-admiral, and the command of a squadron in the expedition against Louisburg, transferred the administration of affairs to Mr. Delancey, and embarked on the 2d of July.

Fall of fort William.—Lord Loudon had left general Webb in command of a force of nearly six thousand men, scattered, however, over the frontier in detachments, and thus exposed to any concentrated operation of the enemy. M. Montcalm, who succeeded baron Dieskau, had collected a body of several thousand men and three hundred batteaux, at St. John's. On the 3d of August, arrived an express, with intelligence that the enemy were, on the 30th of July, within twelve miles of fort William, where colonel Monroe was stationed with his regiment. Mr. Delancey immediately set out for Albany, to expedite the militia from below. But several days were unavoidably consumed in these preparatory movements; and, in the meantime, the garrison capitulated.

Lord Howe, who was in command of a considerable body of troops, made an effort to relieve the garrison, and reached fort Edward, two days before the surrender. But, as the enemy were eleven thousand strong, and the whole force collected at fort Edward did not amount to much more than half that number, nothing could be done for the aid of fort William.

Governor Fitch of Connecticut, who heard of the exigency of the case, but a few days before the surrender, hastened to call out every fourth man of that colony, to the rescue. New Jersey, also, immediately detached four thousand men, as a reinforcement. But all proved too late.

General Webb had, in the meantime, communicated with colonel Munroe, apprizing him of the delay of the militia, and advising him to make the best terms he could.

Colonel Munroe held out as long as was practicable. This surrender, however, had been unnecessarily delayed, in consequence of the enemy having intercepted general Webb's letter, and kept it back, for several days. The terms of surrender were honorable. The garrison were permitted to march out, with the honors of war; they were to be protected from the fury of the French Indians, by an escort to a given distance. But, fearing, or pretending, that the savages might prove uncontrollable, general Montcalm advised the surrender of the baggage to them. Amid the excitement of the scene of plunder which ensued, the blacks attached to the British force, were inhumanly massacred, and some of the soldiers attacked and wounded. The French, on this occasion, manifested either a shameful want of courage to check these atrocities, or a base connivance at the perpetration of them.

The victors, having demolished the surrendered fort, returned to Ticonderoga; and general Webb wisely abstained from running the risk of any demonstration with troops so raw as the majority of his force, which, although it had a basis of regular soldiery, was composed, for the most part, of hasty levies.

The blame of this disastrous affair was freely laid by some, on the dilatoriness of acting-governor Delancey,—by others, on the want of promptitude, manifested by general Webb. From this imputation Mr. Delancey en-

deavored to clear himself, in his message to the legislature, on his return to the metropolis; but admitted the disorderly conduct of the militia, and pledged himself to an investigation.

Definitive settlement of the boundary question between New York and Massachusetts.—For many years, a harassing dispute had existed, regarding the proper boundary lines between the colony of New York and those of New Jersey, Massachusetts, and New Hampshire. The New-York agent, residing in London, had used his best endeavors to defend the interests of his employers. But a more powerful influence at court, seemed continually to thwart his exertions. To his own disappointment, and that of his constituents, the question was now finally settled, as regarded the colony of Massachusetts, on terms less favorable to New York than had been expected, and by which several ancient patents, granted by the latter, were annulled. The decision was in these words:

"That a straight line, to be drawn northerly, from a point on the south boundary line of the Massachusetts bay, twenty miles distant, due east, from Hudson's river, on that line which divides the provinces of New Hampshire and Massachusetts bay, will be a just and equitable line of division between the said provinces of New York and Massachusetts bay."

Effects of the surrender of fort William.—The impression produced by the surrender of fort William, was deep and general. It affected not only the colonies, but dispirited the British officers. Lord Loudon intimated his intention of encamping on Long Island, as a last stand for the defence of the continent; Mr. Pownal, recently appointed governor of Massachusetts, ordered the driving in of all the cattle on the west side of the Connecticut; general Webb sent his baggage down to Albany, and announced his intention of taking post at the Highlands. The correspondence of the colonial assembly with their agent in London, intimated their apprehension of "the entire loss of English America."

The general depression caused by so many failures in attempts against the French, reäcted at length, in favor of general Shirley, whose schemes, though unsuccessful, were yet highly in favor, both in England and America.

Reading Lesson LXXXV.

French invasion of the "German Flats."—Lord Loudon, on his return, in October, from the unsuccessful attempt against Louisburg, ordered his troops to Albany; and, under the influence of the present panic, being unwilling to expose much of his force at outposts, left but one hundred and fifty men at fort Herkimer. Montcalm took advantage of this oversight, to withdraw five hundred of the Oneidas, Onondagas, Cayugas, and Senecas from their allegiance to England. These he united to a party of French troops, who fell upon the settlements at "German Flats," on the 15th of November, and perpetrated, on the inhabitants, the wonted cruelties of sav age warfare.

General Abercrombie's appointment, as commander-in-chief.—The ministry, at home, not less than the people of the colony, seem now to have become thoroughly convinced of lord Loudon's incapacity for his station; and the appointment of general Abercrombie, who was then stationed at Albany, to the chief command of the British forces in North America, with a view to the invasion and conquest of Canada, diffused great joy throughout the colonies.

Preparations for the invasion of Canada, in 1758.—The lieutenant-governor submitted to the assembly on the 10th of March, 1758, the grand project of the British minister, for a levy of twenty thousand provincial troops for the invasion of Canada. To this announcement the assembly eagerly responded, in their wonted spirit, and voted a levy of twenty-six hundred men, and a supply of a hundred thousand pounds.

The outline of the plan of campaign for this year, was as follows: general Amherst was to reduce cape Breton, the island of St. John's, and their dependencies; general Forbes, the French forts on the Ohio; and general Abercrombie, with the main army, was to penetrate Canada, through the northern lakes.

The place of rendezvous, for the invading army, was fort Edward. The New-York troops were all there, by the beginning of June; the stores from England arrived about a fortnight after; and such were the zeal and despatch of all concerned, that before the end of the month,

lord Howe led the first division of four thousand men to lake George. General Abercrombie followed with the main body; and the whole army had reached the north shore by the 6th of July.

Repulse of the expedition.—No difficulty was experienced in repelling the enemy, and occupying the country, till the army reached Ticonderoga. But there the expedition met with a check which so discouraged the commander, that he withdrew his troops, and made a speedy retreat home. Neither he nor his officers seem to have been well informed, as to the ground on which their movement was to be made. They approached the fort in a wrong direction. A fire of musketry was absurdly attempted against a perfect fortification, duly furnished with cannon, and rendered inaccessible by an abatis of felled trees.

The quick eye of the French general caught the mistake; and, stripping off his uniform, he darted among his men, and, sword in hand, forbid a shot to be fired, under pain of death. Then, watching his opportunity, when the English became entangled in the abatis, he gave the word for a murderous fire, which swept down the whole front of his enemy, like grass falling under the scythe. Two thousand brave men successively fell victims to the fatal error of the British commander; and such was the consternation spread by the havoc of the enemy's artillery, that the troops made a precipitate retreat, and never stopped till they had reached, once more, the farther side of the lake.

Reading Lesson LXXXVI.

Capture of fort Frontenac.—A memorable contrast to the failure of the invading army, was presented in the bold and rapid movement of colonel Bradstreet, in his successful attempt on fort Frontenac.—Burning with impatience at the shameful repulse from Ticonderoga, this officer solicited permission to be detached for an assault on the French post at Frontenac. The expedition is thus vividly described by judge Smith.

"Abercrombie gave him a detachment of three thousand men: he rather flew than marched with them through that long route from lake George to Albany, and thence again up the stream of the Mohawk river, then across the

portage, down Wood creek, to the lake of the Oneidas and the rapids of the Onondaga, to Oswego. Thence he pushed his open boats into the sea of Ontario, traversing the southeastern coast from point to point, till he crossed the St. Lawrence, and surprised the garrison of Frontenac. He invested it, took it, burned an immense magazine for the supply of the interior dependencies, and, in twenty-four days, after having destroyed the vessels on the lake, returned to assist in securing the important pass in the country of the Oneidas, which Mr. Webb had, the year before, abandoned, to the intimidation of all the six Indian tribes. But, either by the fatigue of these vigorous exertions, or the bad quality of the waters of Wood creek, we lost five hundred men of this detachment,—a great part of whom were levies of this colony."

Erection of fort Stanwix.—An additional protection for the frontier, was, this year, secured, by the erection of fort Stanwix in the country of the Oneidas. The new fort was named after the general commanding in that quarter.

Effects of the reduction of fort Frontenac.—The impression produced on the Canadians, by the loss of fort Frontenac, on one border, and of Louisburg, on the other, was, to that susceptible people, wholly overwhelming. A strong body of troops and artificers, had been despatched, to repair the demolished fort. But, on the bare hearing of a false report of a second approach of Bradstreet, the whole French force made a precipitate retreat homeward, to Montreal.

The effect of the British successes, was still more advantageous, with reference to the Indian nations. The confederates and many other tribes, particularly those of the Delaware, the Susquehannah and the Ohio, immediately entered into a treaty of peace and amity. General Forbes was consequently enabled to march, without obstruction, to fort Du Quesne,*—afterwards called fort Pitt, now Pittsburg,—which the enemy abandoned at his approach.

Legislative assembly of 1759.—The septennial period, the limit of the legislative power of the assembly, having expired, a new election was held. In the local politics of that day, the turning point for the success of candi-

* Pronounced, *Dukane.*

dates, was their acquiescence in the strong popular feeling of hostility to the exclusive character of the charter granted to the college. Lieutenant-governor Delancey, although, by no means, warmly interested in favor of that institution, was, from his early sanction of the charter, considered as the head of the college party; and the numerous and influential individuals of the Livingston family, were, from their hostility to the charter, regarded as the leaders of the popular party,—or opposition, as they might have been termed.

The popular excitement caused the introduction of a considerable number of members opposed to Mr. Delancey and his measures. But that individual was still too powerful to be easily thwarted; his control over the council being nearly absolute.

Measures adopted for the campaign of 1759.—Mr. Pitt, afterwards lord Chatham, being then prime minister of England, the accustomed vigor and energy of his character continued to be felt, in the spirit with which the war was carried on against France. As early as the end of February, his requisitions were made on the colonies, for large supplies of men and money, with a view to renewed operations against the French possessions.

The new assembly, like its predecessors, entered, at once, into the minister's views, expressed through the governor, and voted the full contingent of New York, in aid of lord Amherst, the new commander-in-chief; and, on account of the exigences of the government, an additional vote was obtained, at the solicitation and on the personal credit of lord Amherst, for a loan, to the crown, of a hundred and fifty thousand pounds.

The spirit manifested in these and similar grants, sufficiently evinces the warm attachment of the colony to England, and leaves us to infer how galling must have been the sense of injustice which led to the final rupture with the parent country.

Reading Lesson LXXXVII.

Successful operations of the campaign of 1759.—Our New-York historian of that period, gives the following sketch of the military operations against Canada, during the year.

"General Prideaux took the command of the western army destined to Niagara. They advanced on the 1st of July, twenty-two hundred strong, exclusive of several hundred Indians, led by Sir William Johnson. They landed, invested the French fort, and opened their trenches. The general fell by the unfortunate explosion of a cohorn on the 20th. The American baronet took his place, and sent for Mr. Haldimand, who, with twelve hundred men, had just before repelled sixteen hundred of the enemy, in the defence of that post,—with a considerable loss to them and none to us.

"Before Mr. Haldimand arrived, a strong party of thirteen hundred came from Venango, to the relief of the besieged, with five hundred savages. Lieutenant-colonel Massey advanced with a detachment of five hundred men, to meet them. Observing that our Indians sought an opportunity to speak with them, and fearing the effect of it, the French set up, and began the charge. In less than an hour they gave way, with the loss of one hundred and fifty prisoners; the first and second in command; Morang, the Indian leader; and seventeen officers, seven of whom were captains. Except the Mohawks, all our own Indians stood aloof, till after the rout. This victory of the 23d of July, gave us the fort.

"Through the unskilfulness of our engineers, the works were unhurt; and, having ammunition for only forty-eight hours more, Sir William was on the point of raising the siege. The garrison capitulated, at the instance of the commandants. There were made prisoners of war to the number of six hundred and seven: their women and children were to be sent to Montreal.

"General Amherst led the main body. They passed lake George without opposition, and proceeded to the lines so fatal to us, the year before. While our trenches were opening, the enemy kept in their fort; but in the night of the 26th of July, blew it up, and repaired to Crown Point, leaving twenty men behind, who could not find room in their boats.

"Five days after, M. Bourlemaque abandoned fort St. Frederick, and demolished the works; retiring with all the stores to the Isle aux Noix,* at the north end of lake Champlain, where his whole force collected, amount-

* Pronounced, *Eelōnwá.*

ed to two thousand men, who were in a starving condition.

"Colonel Gage was ordered, on the news of the surrender of Niagara, to proceed from Oswego, with the western forces, down the St. Lawrence to La Galette, while general Wolfe was besieging Quebec; that the French force drawn to the two extremes of Canada, might favor general Amherst's descent upon the centre of the colony, with an army of twelve thousand men, through lake Champlain.

"On the flight from Crown Point, few doubted the reduction of Montreal, where they imagined the inhabitants shut out from the rest of the world, and so harassed as to be unable to collect in their harvest; upon the point of perishing by a famine, and, by despair, ready to resign themselves the moment of general Amherst's landing at St. John's: they relied on the intelligence that the savages in the French alliance were intimidated, and conceived that the immense plunder of Niagara would be sufficient to draw all our Indians to a firm junction with the troops who were to act under Mr. Gage. But of these designs not one was executed save that trusted to general Wolfe, and this not till the 13th of September.—General Amherst, who had advanced within thirty miles of St. John's, and burned all the French vessels but one, on the news of the Quebec victory, returned to Crown Point.

"The multitude, however, were contented with a change of fortune so very different from what they had hitherto experienced, and, contented with their successes, a veil was willingly drawn over that inactivity which had disappointed our hopes of the total subjugation of the power of France on this continent.

"The fort of Niagara, though of earth, was respectable, and capable of containing two thousand men. On the sides it was difficult of access. It had a river, on the west; the lake, on the north; and on the east, a morass. The ditch was large, and, a great part of it, wet. The soil near it, like the Seneca country, fertile, rich, and level. About two thousand Indians visited it, the ensuing autumn, abject and servile, because aware of their dependence on us, in future, for many articles necessary for their subsistence: but not a single man of the Mississa-

ges, who inhabited the old country of the Hurons, on the north bank of lake Erie, came there, till the close of the campaign; for the French still maintained their post at Toronto, at the northwest corner of lake Ontario; and therefore six hundred men were left, the ensuing year, as a garrison at Niagara.

"At Oswego, we built a new pentagon fort, and opened a ditch of five and thirty feet. The magazine was made capable of containing a thousand barrels. Casemates and bomb-proofs were constructed, and nine companies left there, for its defence, with several small vessels, and a brigantine, of seventy odd feet keel, mounting twenty guns. One hundred men more were posted in a small fort, at the Little Falls of the Onondaga, and, as many more, at the western extremity of the Oneida lake; fifteen at the eastern end, and four hundred at fort Stanwix. A road was cut from that fortress, eighteen miles across the portage, to the mouth of Wood creek, to shorten the passage by that stream, which is more than double that distance. It was then asserted that the plain of the waters of the Wood creek and the Mohawk river, at each end of that carrying place, differed but two feet, which, if true, may one day, give a supply of salmon and many other kinds of fish to the inhabitants upon the borders of the latter of these streams.

"On the north, general Amherst began a fort at William Henry, completed another at Ticonderoga, formed and began to execute the design of such a fortress at Crown Point as would comprehend a circuit of nine hundred yards. The winter garrisons of these three posts, amounted to fifteen hundred men."

Reading Lesson LXXXVIII.

Renewal of legislative aid.—The supplies voted in spring, extended only to November; and the house had therefore to be convened for the purpose of obtaining additional ways and means. Delighted with the success of the British and colonial arms, the assembly readily granted the necessary supplies, and adjourned till December, when they met to close the year with patriotic congratulations on the triumphs of the national arms, in the different quarters of the globe, and, especially, on the down-

fall of Quebec, and the certainty thus obtained of the final acquisition of Canada.

Events of 1760.—The assembly, when convened in the spring of this year, voted, once more, a liberal supply, in answer to the minister's demand through the governor.

Among colonial matters of interest, at this time, we read, with pleasure, of a grant of twenty-five hundred pounds for the relief of the poor of Boston, who had suffered from the conflagration of a large part of the town.

An object of attention more strictly local, was the passing of an act for the stricter regulation of the practice of the medical profession. The terms of this act disclose two important facts, not very creditable to the condition of this branch of the general interests of the colony. One of these, is, the admission that the community was then infested, by quacks, to a grievous extent; and the other, that the only protection against their operations, was the examining and licensing of regular candidates, by "a counsellor, a judge of the supreme court, the mayor and the attorney-general, assisted by such persons as they should think proper to call upon!"

Death and character of lieutenant-governor Delancey.—On the 30th of July of this year, the lieutenant-governor died, very suddenly, by an attack of asthma. This energetic and resolute man, had, doubtless, during his administration, been somewhat overbearing and oppressive. But the strength of his character, and the weight of his personal influence, had stamped a unity, a vigor, and an efficiency, upon the public measures of the colony, which, till his day, were unknown. His personal traits were by no means amiable or attractive. His manner, even to equals, was haughty; to inferiors, it was arrogant and repulsive; and his temper, naturally irascible, was certainly not meliorated by the habits of free living, which prevailed in official life, at his day. His character, as drawn by the pen of judge Smith, one of his political opponents, presents a man deeply stained by the vice of selfishness, in his public actions, and addicted to tyranny in his government. The coloring of this portrait, however, is probably not without a tinge of party feeling and animosity; and, even in the hands of an enemy, the picture presents

a man of powerful and aspiring genius, who, on the wider field of a European court, would probably have achieved a distinguished name. During the greater part of his life, he was felt and feared and obeyed, as a kind of local sovereign.

His intellectual traits are thus described by Mr. Smith. "Mr. Delancey's genius exceeded his erudition. His knowledge of the law, history, and husbandry excepted, the rest of his learning consisted only of that small share of classical scholarship which he had acquired at Cambridge, and, by a good memory, retained. He was too indolent for profound researches in the law; but what he had read, he could produce in an instant; for, with a tenacious memory, he had an uncommon vivacity: his first thought was always the best; he seemed to draw no advantages from meditation; and it was to this promptness he owed his reputation. He delivered his sentiments with brevity, and yet with perspicuity. He rarely delivered his opinions in writing, because his compositions did not merit even his own approbation. It was a labor to him to write; and he only supplied the matter of his speeches to the assembly, which others put into form."

Reading Lesson LXXXIX.

Surrender of Canada.—The great event, so anxiously and so long desired by all the British colonies, at length took place. The whole territory of Canada was, this year, surrendered to Great Britain; and New York, in particular, was forever freed from the annoyance of invasion from that quarter.

"The siege of Quebec by the Canadians, and the dread of its returning to its old masters," says our local historian, Smith, "quickened our levies; and, when collected, the news of their retiring from that city in May, stimulated them in their progress. General Amherst left Schenectady in June, to join an army of four thousand regular troops and about six thousand provincials, who were to make their descent into the heart of the French colony, down the stream of the St. Lawrence; while general Murray was to come against it with two thousand regulars from Quebec, and five thousand provincials were to penetrate, under colonel Haviland, through lake Cham-

plain. Sir William Johnson gave assurances, at the same time, of the effectual aid of all the warriors of the Six Nations; of which, nevertheless, only six or seven hundred accompanied the western army from Oswego to La Galette, or Oswegatchie, when all except a few individuals thought proper to return to their own castles.

"The three divisions advancing and arriving nearly at the same time, in the neighborhood of Montreal, the whole force of Canada was driven into the island; and M. Vaudreuil,* the French governor, being surrounded and unable to make any resistance, surrendered all Canada, on the 8th of September. General Amherst returned to New York in the latter part of September, and received the congratulations of a people exulting in the accomplishment, which we were taught by our ancestors to pray for, as an event essential to the felicity and safety of all the British colonies in America.

"Mr. William Livingston penned the address offered in these triumphant moments of joy; and, alluding to the reduction of Canada, the house, to preëngage the retention of it at the peace, speaks of that event as replete with innumerable advantages to the nation in general, and exults in our deliverance 'from the devastation of a cruel and barbarous enemy, rather bent on the destruction of mankind, than waging war, either for their own defence, or even from motives of ambition or conquest.' Again, 'no consideration,' (say they,) 'shall induce us to regret the blood and treasure expended in facilitating this inestimable acquisition, save only, (to which we are confident the wisdom and honor of the nation will ever disdain to submit,) the surrender of this most important conquest, which, in possession of the crown, must prove to Britain the source of immense riches, and, if retained by so perfidious a people, would expose us to the keen revenge of a defeated enemy, who, unreclaimed by our example, and by our clemency unsoftened, would doubtless relapse into their native barbarity, and retaliate our lenity with more signal acts of inhumanity and bloodshed.'"

* Pronounced, *Vodrul*,—*u*, sounding nearly as in "*up*," and *l* as the *lli* in "*William*."

SEC. XIV.—ADMINISTRATIONS OF LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR COLDEN, AND GOVERNORS MONCKTON AND MOORE.—1760-1769.

READING LESSON XC.

Accession of acting-governor Colden.—On the death of Mr. Delancey, the administration of colonial affairs, devolved on Dr. Colden, the senior member of the council. This individual, whose name stands so favorably connected with the early progress of science in New York, and who, after the active life of a surveyor, had retired to the enjoyment of scientific research and literary leisure, returned, at the age of seventy, to resume the burden of public duties.

The administration of Dr. Colden, proceeded quietly in its course; as the virulence of party feeling had now subsided, and the uncertainty of affairs, till the appointment of a new governor, left little occasion for excitement.

The intelligence of the death of George II, having reached the colonies, the acting-governor issued writs for a new election of representatives to the assembly, for March, 1761.

Dr. Colden soon incurred the dislike of the people of the colony, by his endeavors to thwart the general wish that the judges should hold their offices independently of the crown, and, not less, by his attempts to supersede Mr. Charles, the colonial agent in London, by one of the Pownal family, whose influence with the lords of trade he wished to secure. The reward of the acting-governor's subserviency, in these cases, was his appointment, as lieutenant-governor, by regular commission from the crown. But the new chief-justice, Mr. Pratt from Boston, who was appointed through favor of Mr. Pownal, and whose appointment had taken place through the reluctance of Dr. Colden to confer the office on a native of New York, found his reception so cold, and the assembly so averse to provide his salary, that, after some time, he returned, in disappointment, to Boston.

Governor Monckton.—The British cabinet having decided on a secret expedition to the West-India islands, had chosen Staten island as the rendezvous of the forces; and here general Monckton held his camp, awaiting the double honor of his appointment, as governor of New York, and

his orders to set out, in the meantime, in command of the expedition.

On the 19th of October, the general's commission as governor, arrived. The commission, however, in this instance, was not accompanied by the usual book of instructions from the colonial office, to direct his official proceedings; and Dr. Colden carried his scruples on this point, so far as to express doubts as to the legality of the appointment. That he should thus incur the dislike of the new governor, could not be a matter of surprise.

The manner in which governor Monckton overcame the trivial impediment of the informality in question, was somewhat regal in effect. When the lieutenant-governor asked for the customary instructions by which the council might proceed to business, the governor frankly replied that "he had none, and hoped never to have any, that he might be the more at liberty to copy the example of his royal master." No objection was urged by any member of the council, in regard to the omission; and all the usual ceremonies of the procession, and the public proclamation at the town hall, were duly gone through.

Governor Monckton, as commander of the West-India expedition, embarked on the 15th of November, after having, not without much previous difficulty, adjusted, with Dr. Colden, the terms of a compact, by which the latter was to receive a moiety of the official salary, during the governor's absence at Martinique.

Disagreements between the lieutenant-governor and the assembly.—Before the end of November, Dr. Colden was involved in disputes with the assembly, which were occasioned by the same causes as before, and continued, with little abatement, till the assembly was prorogued, in the early part of January, 1762.

Grants for 1762.—At the reöpening of the legislature, in spring, large grants were willingly passed for the support of the government measures; although the conquest of Canada would seem to have rendered these unnecessary for any purpose of defence or protection to the colony.

Public proclamation of war against Spain.—The following paragraph gives us a graphic representation of "the pomp and circumstance," with which a declaration of war was formerly attended, even in a colonial city.

"The war against Spain was proclaimed here on the 3d of April. The council met at the fort; and the militia were arrayed. The proclamation was read by Mr. Banyer, at the door, and followed by three cheers. The grenadiers, led by lord Stirling, then advanced to the town hall. The constables followed after them; the under sheriffs, high sheriff, and town clerk, the common council, aldermen, recorder, and mayor, then the council, the lieutenant-governor, and, last of all, the gentlemen of the town. When the proclamation had been again read at the hall, they returned to the fort; and, after some time, the company retired."

Return of general Monckton.—Complete success attended the expedition to Martinique; and the general returned to New York, on the 12th of June, to resume the peaceful functions of his colonial government. These he discharged in a sumptuous style of splendor, more expressive of his own sense of personal and official dignity, than appropriate or judicious, for the administration of the duties of a civil station, in a colony little addicted to ostentatious display.

Reading Lesson XCI.

King's (Columbia) college, in 1763.—Among the interesting particulars of local history, at this date, are the following. A donation of twelve hundred volumes, for the library of the college, was, this year, received from Dr. Bristow of England, as mentioned more fully in an account of the college, in a subsequent part of this volume.

At the annual commencement, May 23d, the following distinguished names occur in the list of graduates of the college, Depeyster, Cuyler, Verplanck, Livingston, Watts, Bayard, Wilkins, Hoffman, and Marston. It is pleasing to trace such evidences of the actual usefulness of that institution to the best interests of society, notwithstanding the discordant feelings and strong prejudices excited by the course adopted at the establishment of the college.

The "*alma mater*" of such an intellectual progeny as the above, may well claim the honor due to a mental nursing-mother of the community. Did every year produce such clusters of ripening mind, the growth of the state would be ample, indeed; and the college might just-

ly feel that she had nobly contributed her annual part toward the general progress of humanity.

Attempts of the British parliament to levy taxes in America.—In March, 1764, was presented the act imposing duties on articles imported by the colonists from the British possessions in the West Indies. This arbitrary mode of levying a revenue, without the consent of the subject, caused, of course, great dissatisfaction in all the colonies, and, especially, in New York, which, from its peculiarly advantageous maritime position, had its prosperity identified with an unimpeded commerce.

Still, as it was easily in the power of the colonists to dispense with West-India luxuries, and, as while parliament might lay duties on goods imported, it could not compel the importation of them; the measure excited nothing more than the murmurs natural in such circumstances. But when, in the following year, parliament proceeded to pass the stamp act, in virtue of which no important instrument in writing could be held valid, if not executed on stamped paper, purchased, at high rates, of government agents, the colonies seemed roused, to a man, against this arrogant encroachment on the rights of the people. The colonists, as freemen, had hitherto enjoyed, undisputed, the common immunities of Englishmen and subjects of the British crown. Among all their political privileges, none had been more uniformly asserted and maintained, than their right of self-taxation, through representatives. But, by the stamp act, the British government seemed to have devised an engine which was to be worked, not at the will of the people, but of parliament,—a body in which the colonies enjoyed no representation, and which already was assuming the power of acting on their property, without even consulting them. A revenue was thus to be wrung from the colonists at the pleasure of an irresponsible, a distant, and an uninformed power.

It was easy to dispense with the luxuries of East or West India produce, and so to avoid duties and imposts. But the stamp act rendered it necessary to pay an onerous tax to the British government, on every occasion requiring a legal receipt, in the common transactions of business. To submit to this condition, was to pay a compulsory permanent revenue to the crown,—a vassalage against

which New York, as a colony, had, all along, strenuously and successfully struggled.

The nature of the question allowed of no intermediate course of action: it was a plain case of submission or resistance; and the obvious injustice of the demand, kindled, at once, throughout the colonies, the spirit of opposition, on the part of the people. The stamp act was received, in the city of New York, with marked expressions of popular feeling, and was reprinted and sold about the streets, under the title of "The folly of England and the ruin of America."

Meeting of colonial deputies in New York, in 1765.—A congress of deputies from nine of the colonies, met in New York, in the month of October, with a view to consultation on the crisis which the injustice of parliament had brought upon America. Dr. Colden, then acting governor, being a conscientious upholder of the supremacy of Great Britain, refused to countenance the proceedings of the congressional assembly. But, among the representatives of the colony of New York, on that occasion, we find the names of Robert R. Livingston and Samuel W. Johnson, who were employed to draw up an address to the king, expressive of the sentiments of the congress, and of the people of the colonies.

Reading Lesson XCII.

Popular demonstration against the stamp act.—The first of November,—the day assigned as the date from which the stamp act was to take effect,—is a memorable one, in our colonial annals. The stamped paper designed for use in New York, had arrived in a ship from London, and been deposited, for safety, in the fort, which had been repaired and duly armed, for the purpose of overawing the people; as plain intimations of the spirit of resistance had been given in threatening handbills, street processions, and even a public meeting of the merchants, at which a unanimous resolution was passed, not to import goods from England.

Two parties of the populace paraded the streets with effigies of the governor, one of which was hanged, in derision, at the Park, and the other burned at the Bowling Green; the governor's carriage, and portions of the fence

of the fort, forming part of the pile. A mob, the same day, sacked the house of major James, who had incurred this act of resentment, by his violent language and menaces to the people, in case of resistance to the stamp act.

Disposal of the stamped paper.—Governor Colden, intimidated by the signs of public indignation, published, on the following day, a bulletin, in which he disavowed any intention of using the stamps, and left the matter to the disposal of the new governor, Sir Henry Moore, now daily expected. The people intimated that if the stamps were not removed from the fort, they would take them away by force. It was then proposed that the stamps should be placed on board one of the national ships lying in the harbor. But, as the captain was unwilling to receive them, they were, at last, given up to the city corporation, and deposited in the city hall, in Wall street.

Arrival of governor Moore.—In December of this year, Sir Henry Moore, who had long been expected, as governor, at length arrived. Fortunately he was a man of prudence and self-control; and, although entrusted with special powers, in anticipation of acts of popular violence, he provoked no collisions with the people. But the tranquillity of the colony was fortunately restored by the repeal of the stamp act,—a result to which the eloquence of Chatham contributed not a little. The news reached New York in May; and, on the 4th of June following, which was the birthday of George III, who had lately succeeded to the throne of England, great rejoicings were held in the fields,—now the Park, and a liberty-pole erected, in honor of the triumph of freedom.

Statue of lord Chatham.—The statue of lord Chatham, which was erected in 1770, and for some time, occupied a conspicuous place in Wall street, was an expression of gratitude, from the people of New York, for his eminent services to America, on this occasion, in particular. But when, in the progress of the revolutionary struggle, the views of that statesman came to be explicitly avowed, in favor of the supremacy of parliament, the public mind was entirely cooled towards him,—so much so, that the dilapidation of his statue, which the loyalty of some of the British soldiery,—when occupying New York, during the revolutionary war,—had prompted them to begin, was afterwards completed by the American

troops, on their return to the city, when the British had finally withdrawn.

Statue of George III.—Another expression of the public feeling of gratitude for the repeal of the stamp act, was that of erecting an equestrian statue of his majesty, George III, in the centre of the Bowling Green, in front of "fort George," as the garrison was now called. This statue, like that of Chatham, was voted soon after the repeal, although not erected till 1770; and, in 1776, it shared the same fate of demolition with that of the great statesman. Being made of lead, however, it served the purpose of being run into balls, for the use of American soldiers.

Suspension of legislative power in New York.—The reluctance which the legislature of New York manifested, to provide for the maintenance of a large military force, and the limited supply which was voted for the purpose, drew down the displeasure of the ministry and parliament; and an act was passed in the early part of 1767, suspending the legislative functions of the colony. This act was, in the circumstances of the case, equal, nearly, to the proclamation of martial law, and excited the utmost indignation among the people.

Character and death of Sir Henry Moore.—During all the convulsions of his period of administration, Sir Henry Moore had managed, with great prudence and forbearance, to prevent any overt act of opposition to the government. He continued steadily to pursue the same judicious course, till the close of his official term and his life. He died, much regretted by the friends of peace and order, and by every well-wisher to the prosperity of the colony, on the 11th of September, 1769.

SEC. XV.—ADMINISTRATION OF GOVERNORS DUNMORE AND TRYON.—1770–1774.

Reading Lesson XCIII.

Accession of governor Dunmore.—The individual on whom the duties of governor next devolved, was of very different character from his predecessor; and, under his administration, the assembly learned, for the first time, the startling fact, that the governor was to be, thenceforward, independent of their vote of supply; a salary having been assigned him from the royal treasury. The design

of this arrangement obviously was, to render the governor more subservient to the crown, and more indifferent to the interests of the colony.

Accession of governor Tryon.—Lord Dunmore's continuance in office, was, however, of brief duration; and if we may judge from the rancorous hostility, and even gross inhumanity, displayed in his subsequent cruelties, on the coast of Virginia, the circumstance was fortunate for the colony of New York. On the 8th of July, 1771, governor Tryon arrived from North Carolina, accompanied by his wife and daughter, whose character had endeared them, universally, to the people of that colony.

The new governor was received with the customary ceremonies and festivities of such occasions; and lord Dunmore repaired to Virginia, to assume the office of governor in that quarter, where his name continued long to be execrated, for his subsequent predatory attacks on the settlements along the coast, and for his inhuman attempts to stir up the blacks to the massacre of the white inhabitants.

Disputes between New York and New Hampshire.—Governor Wentworth of New Hampshire had, notwithstanding the royal decision to the contrary, in favor of New York, granted patents for the occupancy of lands lying within the limits of the latter colony; and the rightful holders under New York, had been harassed and chased off by intruders from New Hampshire. But there was, on the other hand, a similar injustice complained of by peaceable inhabitants occupying lands which they had purchased in good faith, of governor Wentworth, under the impression that his right to sell was valid. All the endeavors of governor Tryon to put an end to these disputes, proved unavailing; and for years, in succession, the border scene was one of dissension and violence, on both sides; each of the parties practising, in turn, summary ejectment of the others, or offering violent resistance to such attempts.

Founding of New-York hospital.—Among the beneficent works of peace, which it fell to governor Tryon's lot to promote, was the founding of the city hospital of New York. The foundation stone was laid by the governor's own hand, on the 2d of September, 1773. But an accidental fire destroyed a part of the building, and

retarded, for a time, the progress of the work. A portion of the original building is incorporated in the present edifice. The location, still airy and agreeable, was, originally, much more so, being then quite rural; so limited, as yet, was the extent of the city.

The spacious and pleasant edifice, which, in the heart of our crowded city, now meets the eye, with the air of a suburban retreat for retired opulence,—in its ample space, its noble shades, and well-kept grounds,—and which soothes the humane heart, by the benevolent associations connected with its uses,—is one of the pleasing memorials of past times, in connection with the parent country. The event of laying its original foundation stone, is a redeeming trait which tends to relieve the hostile aspect of oppression and resistance, with which the times were already beginning to darken. A colonial governor was thus found, for once, in the attitude of humane and kindly relations to the people of the country, instead of that of an incessant exactor of "men and money for the wars" of Great Britain, or of funds for his personal use and emolument.

The New-York hospital is doubly venerable, from its purposes, and from the fact that it was one of the earliest erections for such uses, in our country. Long may it continue to open its hospitable apartments, and offer, as now, its healing ministries to the destitute sick and the sufferers from the casualties of active and exposed modes of life! Long may it continue to receive the blessing of the stranger and friendless foreigner, who find health and comfort, or relief and solace, within its walls!

Reading Lesson XCIV.

Movement in New York, regarding the Tea-duty.—The British cabinet had resolved on the imposition of a duty on tea imported into America, as a silent means of exacting a revenue, and "binding the colonies." The colonial merchants were prohibited from importing tea direct from China; as the ministry wished to secure the profits of such trade to the East-India company, with a view to swell their annual receipts to the stipulated amount on which they were bound to pay into the treasury a yearly sum of four hundred thousand pounds sterling.

That the payment of the duty on tea might be secured in England, it was levied there, which consequently raised the price of tea to the Americans, in the ratio of the impost. This measure was clearly seen through by the colonists, as a concerted scheme for extorting a revenue by sending them an article already taxed. American captains, accordingly, were unwilling to incur the displeasure of their countrymen, by importing the tea in their vessels; and the British government, to ensure the accomplishment of their purpose, allowed the East-India company to transmit it in their own ships, as the only means of exporting it to America.

The colonists were justly indignant at this manœuvre, by which an attempt was made to wring a tax out of them, against their will; and resolute measures were everywhere adopted to defeat the intentions of the ministry. The people of Boston expressed their resentment at the attempt to introduce the taxed tea, by throwing it into the harbor. Those of Philadelphia resisted in a form not so violent, but decided and effectual.

On the 17th of December, 1773, a public meeting, summoned by "the association of the sons of liberty," was held at the city hall, to deliberate on letters received from Boston and Philadelphia, calling on the colonies to unite in resisting the unjust designs of the British ministry. A unanimous resolution was passed, at this meeting, to regard whatever persons should aid in introducing the taxed tea as enemies to the country. But before the meeting was dismissed, the mayor came with a message from the governor, pledging the word of the latter, that, on the arrival of the tea, it should be taken into the fort, in open day, and there remain subject to the order of the council or other authority. But, as the duty must be levied if the article were landed, this proposal was decidedly refused; and the meeting adjourned "till the arrival of the tea-ship."

Disaster, by fire, to the governor's house.—The family of governor Tryon had a narrow escape from destruction, on the night of the 29th of December. The parents, with difficulty, found their way through an unfrequented passage; and their daughter saved herself by leaping from a window of the second story; while an unfortunate servant girl perished in the flames. The house and furniture

were completely destroyed; notwithstanding the strenuous exertions of the citizens. The adjoining buildings, within the walls of the fort, were saved principally by the circumstance of their being then covered with snow.

Governor Tryon's annual communication with the legislature.—On the 12th of January, 1774, the governor, in his opening speech to the assembly, after alluding to the recent calamity, and to the liberal grant previously made for the repairs of the province-house, informed them that the boundary line between New York and Massachusetts had been settled by the commissioners appointed to that duty, but that with Canada it still remained undetermined. He proceeded to inform them, farther, that he had been called home, in consequence of the border outrages committed by some of the people of New Hampshire; an investigation into which had been instituted by the royal government.

The legislature replied, in terms of condolence and regret, both as to his personal losses and the necessity of his return. A grant of five thousand pounds was, at the same time, made, in consideration of his loss by the burning of the province-house.

Reading Lesson XCV.

Departure of governor Tryon.—On the 8th of April, governor Tryon departed for England; leaving the administration, once more, in the hands of doctor Colden, now far advanced in years, and little able to put forth the energy demanded for the effectual discharge of official duties, at a season of turbulence and commotion. The circumstance, however, was not unfavorable to the peace of the community, and the progress of the cause of liberty. A younger and more energetic man might, by attempting resistance, have involved the colony in peril and bloodshed; while the lieutenant-governor's years, and his predilection for seclusion and study, inclined him, rather, to keep aloof from the scene of action, and submit to the current of events, and of popular feeling, which was fast becoming too strong for him or any other individual to control.

The departure of governor Tryon called forth many demonstrations of respect, to which his personal character

and that of his family gave just occasion; and the official dignitaries, and that portion of the community which was attached to British rule, were loud in their expressions of attachment. The counter current of popular feeling, however, was, meanwhile, gathering fresh force; and the withdrawal of the governor was, no doubt, regarded by the majority of the people as slight cause of regret.

Reception of the taxed tea, in New York.—On the 21st of April arrived the long-expected tea-ship, the Nancy, captain Lockyier. The pilots, who had received directions from the committee of the "sons of liberty," would bring the vessel no farther up than Sandyhook. The captain came up to the city, and was immediately met by a deputation, who informed him that he must return, forthwith, with his ship, to London, as he would not be suffered to land his cargo. He was permitted to call on his consignee; but that individual knew too well the state of popular feeling, to encounter the risk of attempting to act in the business. The ship was detained and narrowly watched at the Hook, till the captain was ready to depart, and return, with his tale of discomfiture, to his employers.

A more summary process was adopted with a quantity of the tea, secretly brought over by an American captain. A deputation having thoroughly sifted the case, and detected the attempt, notwithstanding the pretences of the captain, ordered the hatches to be opened, and the tea to be hoisted out, and emptied into the bay, which was immediately done.

Captain Lockyier of the English ship being now ready to set sail, was waited on, at the coffee-house, by a committee, and received the full honors of a mock farewell. He was led to the balcony, where he was cheered by the assembled multitude in the street; a band of music, meanwhile, playing, either in earnest or in jest, the national air of "God save the king!" He was, at last, escorted, with due ceremony, to the pilot-boat awaiting him at the wharf, and with wishes for "a good voyage home," was permitted to depart. One committee, however, still watched his ship till her anchor was weighed; and another gave safe conduct, on board the same vessel, to the recreant American captain whose tea had been destroyed.

Public meeting of sympathy, in response to the people of

Boston.—The British parliament, resenting the conduct of the inhabitants of Boston, in regard to the destruction of the taxed tea, had declared their port shut to all purposes of commerce. This tyrannical procedure excited the most vehement indignation throughout the American colonies, while it created the warmest sympathy for the sufferers by a measure so destructive to the interests of a maritime city, and so evidently designed to reduce a large class of the population to a state of utter destitution.

In May and July of this year, public meetings were held to express the feelings of the people of New York, in relation to this proceeding, on the part of the British government. Resolutions were passed, on the latter of these occasions, approving the action of the people of Boston, and expressing the deepest interest in their condition, as well as the utmost readiness to make common cause with them, in resistance to the aggressive measures of parliament.

At the last-mentioned of these meetings, the coming revolution was plainly shadowed, in a preparatory resolution for the election of delegates to the colonial congress, to be held at Philadelphia, for the purpose of considering such measures as the state of the country seemed to demand.

Reading Lesson XCVI.

Election of delegates to the colonial congress, at Philadelphia.—On the 25th of July, 1774, occurred the first deliberate public movement in New York, towards that concerted action to which the American colonies were now compelled by the measures of the British government. The polls were, on this day, opened, for the election of delegates to the proposed congress at Philadelphia; and the individuals chosen were Philip Livingston, John Alsop, Isaac Low, James Duane, and John Jay.

The general feeling of the people, in relation to the purposes of the intended congress, the universal confidence of the community in the newly elected deputies, and the personal respect with which they were regarded, were strikingly displayed, by the animated crowd which accompanied them to their place of embarkation, with the warmest demonstrations of sympathy and approbation.

The esteem in which these delegates were held, at the assembled congress, is shown in the fact, so creditable to the state, that, of the committee of three, appointed to draught the declaration of rights, two,—John Jay and Philip Livingston,—were members of the New-York deputation. Their associate was the distinguished Richard Henry Lee, of Virginia. The declaration of rights, the worthy predecessor of the declaration of independence, was penned by Mr. Jay. Its language breathes, throughout, the spirit of freedom, blended with firm though respectful remonstrance. Speaking the sentiment of the congress, as representing the spirit of the American colonies, universally, it manfully asserts, "We consider ourselves, and do insist that we are, and ought to be, as free as our fellow-subjects in Great Britain; and that no power on earth has a right to take our property from us without our consent."

The New-York legislative assembly of 1775.—While we trace, with pleasure, the page to which we have just referred, in our country's history, as indissolubly associated with our own local characters and local feelings, it would be unjust to claim, for the body of our New-York legislature of that day, the purely patriotic spirit which actuated the men whose names we have mentioned, and those who were united with them in political sentiment. We read, not without regret, that, when colonel Woodhull* moved "that the thanks of the house be given to the representatives of the province, for their services in the continental congress, the previous September," the vote was unfavorable;—fifteen to nine being against the motion.

This result is sufficiently explained, in part, by the fact that there were still many men, of weight of character and property, zealously attached to colonial dependence on the British crown, and disposed to a quiet, if not silent, submission to what they deemed temporary and partial evils, as preferable to any attempt approaching to the character of a revolution. To these men of principle and prudence were added, for the time, those who could not, perhaps, be justly ranked otherwise than as the cautious or the timid, who regarded with alarm the idea of the hazards to property and life, which must inevitably attend political commotions.

* See his life, on a subsequent page.

After much warm debate, addresses to the king and to the houses of lords and commons, were passed, on the 25th of March, 1775, stating the grievances generally complained of, and asserting the rights vindicated in the declaration by the Philadelphia congress, but in terms measured and reserved.

Soon afterwards, this last colonial assembly adjourned, never to meet again. The next page of our local history, presents the brighter aspect of the new legislature which existed under the designation of "the provincial congress,"—a body consisting of men disposed to do and suffer for right and freedom, and, in the person of Nathaniel Woodhull, headed by one worthy to lead in such a cause. The new body which represented the interests of the constituency of New York, discharged the offices of local legislation, during the first stages of the revolutionary era, for the space of nearly two years;—from the latter part of May, 1775, till the organization of the "state" government, in April, 1777.

CHAP. V.—PERIOD OF THE REVOLUTION.

SEC. I.—EVENTS OF 1775.

Reading Lesson XCVII.

Action of the "provincial congress."—The legislative assembly having adjourned indefinitely, in the month of April, the New-York local committee of vigilance, which had been, from time to time, acting as emergencies seemed to require, recommended the formation of a provincial congress, by deputations from the several counties of the colony. The body thus constituted, assembled, accordingly, in the city, on the 22d of May, 1775, and by its procedure, asserted its right to entire sovereignty, suspending, in effect, from the time of its organization, and ultimately superseding and annulling, the royal authority.

Organization of the colonial militia.—One of the acts of sovereignty assumed by the provincial congress, and plainly indicative of their anticipation of an approaching

struggle, was their order of the 22d of August, for the reörganization of the militia of the colony. Of this force, Nathaniel Woodhull, then a member of the New-York delegation to the Philadelphia congress, was appointed a colonel, and, subsequently, a general of brigade.

Appointment of a president of the provincial congress.—On the 28th of August, general Woodhull was chosen president of the provincial congress of New York, and continued in office, after the following annual election, in 1776.

Nominal existence of the royal government.—A shadow of the royal administration still existed, during the protracted absence of governor Tryon, in the person of the aged lieutenant-governor Colden, who alternately uttered, from his rural retirement on Long Island, feeble complaints of the tumultuous condition of the city of New York, and gracious assurances of the benignant intentions of his royal master, in case of peaceful submission and loyal demeanor, together with occasional threats of royal vengeance in store for the refractory. But the time for blandishments and intimidation, alike, had passed. The words of the venerable representative of by-gone days of loyalty, fell unheeded on the ears of a new generation, inspired by the sentiment of liberty, incited by an indignant sense of wrong, and impelled by manhood's stern resolves to assert, at all hazards, their violated rights, and vindicate their claim to the character of freemen.

The members of the royal council, also, yet remained in the city, though overawed and paralyzed by the presence of the popular party. The mayor and the common council were, likewise, in the royal interest. But their action was, of course, circumscribed by the same influence which embarrassed the council; and, although the tory party were now exulting in the prospect of the speedy return of governor Tryon, and a consequent change in the aspect of the times; the new power, deposited in the colonial congress, and in local committees of vigilance, embodying the will and sentiment of the people, controlled the current of events, and guided the helm of the state.

Reading Lesson XCVIII.

Preparations for armed resistance to the British power.—The news of the memorable affair of Lexington and Con-

cord, Massachusetts, in which the yeomanry of that colony had risen upon the royal force, and so effectually repelled its act of aggression, kindled the popular spirit of New York to a flame. The local committee called on the inhabitants to arm and organize themselves, for military discipline. An address of warning was, at the same time, presented to the lieutenant-governor, apprizing him of the general determination to resist, to the utmost, the measures adopted by the British parliament.

The continental congress, in session at Philadelphia, actuated by the spirit of forbearance, and the hope of ultimate reconciliation, advised the inhabitants of New York to offer no violence to the British troops, which were now expected, unless they should attempt to construct new fortifications. It was recommended, however, that all warlike stores should be promptly removed from the city, and places of safety found for the protection of women and children.

Return of governor Tryon, and arrival of general Washington.—On the 15th of June, the general congress had unanimously appointed George Washington commander-in-chief of the American forces; and he proceeded, forthwith, to Cambridge, Massachusetts, where the revolutionary army was then concentrated for the siege of Boston; the colonists having succeeded in hemming in the royal troops within the narrow limits of the peninsula which forms the site of that city.

General Washington, on his way to Cambridge, was expected to pass through New York, on the 25th of June; and, by a singular coincidence, governor Tryon was expected to arrive and land on the same day, to resume his functions as governor of the colony, and representative of British authority.

The confusion created in the city, by this double anticipation, we can easily imagine. Governor Tryon was to land on the eastern side, escorted, as a matter of ceremony, by a body of the royal troops: Washington, on the western, attended by generals Lee and Schuyler, with a deputation of four members of the provincial congress.

Perplexing predicament of the congress.—The provincial congress, though decidedly in favor of the American cause, had not yet, by any overt act or declaration, cast off allegiance to the crown of England, in their capacity as colo-

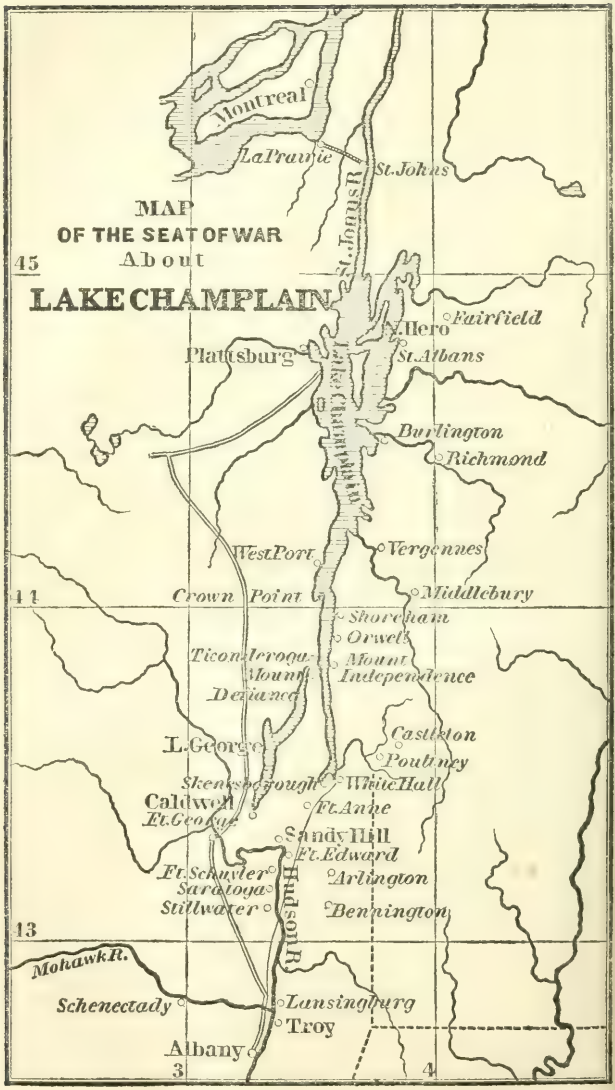
nists. The general impression prevailing in the provinces, was, in fact, that the rupture between the colonies and the parent country would be but temporary; and that a front of determined resistance was but the surest way to secure lasting peace and tranquillity, with the enjoyment of the appropriate immunities of British subjects. We need not wonder, therefore, that the congress should have felt puzzled how to act, in circumstances so equivocal as the friendly reception of the two representatives of the contending parties in the great struggle. The exclusive recognition, or the abandonment of either, must have been a dereliction of honor or of prudence.

Fortunately for the congress, general Washington arrived a few hours before governor Tryon; and the direction to the commanding officer of the militia, to hold himself in readiness to escort whichever party should arrive first, was obeyed without difficulty.

General Washington's reception at New York.—The urgency of affairs did not permit general Washington to spend more than a single night in New York. But his reception was cordial, on the part of the well-wishers to American liberty. The provincial congress, in their address to him, however, manifested a degree of caution in their expressions, and still speak of the regret with which "the most loyal of his majesty's subjects were compelled to resort to arms." At the same time, the utmost confidence is expressed, in regard to the choice of a commander-in-chief, made by the national congress, and the earnest hope that the struggle may end in the security and enlargement of colonial freedom.

We cannot refrain from quoting, here, the noble and beautiful language of the conclusion of Washington's answer, as speaking the genuine sentiment of the whole American people, at that time, in regard to the sincere desire for peace, and for the continuance of friendly relations with England, as well as the extreme reluctance with which the colonists were driven to resistance, as a last resort.

"Be assured that every exertion of my worthy colleagues and myself will be equally extended to the reëstablishment of peace and harmony between the mother country and the colonies, as to the fatal but necessary operations of war. When we assumed the soldier, we did


MAP
OF THE SEAT OF WAR
About
LAKE CHAMPLAIN
Montreal
LaPrairie
St. Johns
St. John's R.
Fairfield
Hero
Plattsburg
St. Albans
Lake Champlain
Burlington
Richmond
WestPort
Vergennes
Crown Point
Middlebury
Shoreham
Orwell
Ticonderoga
Mount Independence
Mount Defiance
L. George
Castleton
Poultney
Skenesborough
White Hall
Caldwell
Ft. Anne
Ft. George
Sandy Hill
Ft. Edward
Ft. Schuyler
Saratoga
Stillwater
Arlington
Bennington
Hudson R.
Mohawk R.
Schenectady
Lansingburg
Troy
Albany
45
44
13
3
4

not lay aside the citizen; and we shall most sincerely rejoice with you in that happy hour when the establishment of American liberty, upon the most firm and solid foundations, shall enable us to return to our private stations, in the bosom of a free, peaceful, and happy country."

Reading Lesson XCIX.

Military operations commenced in the colony of New York.—The cloud of war was now threatening to approach the region of New York, which, from its central and commanding situation, seemed likely to be a prominent object of attack. The American army, under Washington, succeeded in expelling the British troops from the town of Boston; and, although this result had been achieved without violence, yet the previous carnage of Bunker-hill had fully attested the determination, on both sides, with which the struggle was, in all subsequent encounters, elsewhere, to be maintained.

The provincial congress, accordingly, foreseeing the course of events, applied to the state of Connecticut for aid, which was promptly accorded; and in July, general Wooster, with a body of men from that province took up a position in Harlem, with a view to action in whatever form the exigences of the time might require.

Taking of Ticonderoga and Crown Point.—The first actual operation, however, which opened the revolutionary campaign, within the territory of New York, dates from the month of May, in this year. It exhibits, also, the readiness with which the neighboring colony of Connecticut discharged its part, in aid of the sister colony of New York, and of the general interests of America, in the common cause of resistance to Great Britain.

No sooner had the intelligence of the blood shed at Lexington, Massachusetts, been diffused over the country, than the deadly character of the coming strife between the colonies and the parent country, was distinctly foreseen. The importance of seasonable anticipation and instant action, to forestall the movements of British power, became, at once, apparent. The friends of liberty in Connecticut, had, with the quickness of apprehension characteristic of the people of that colony, caught at the idea of anticipating the arrival of British reinforcements, and seizing

the imperfectly garrisoned fortresses of Ticonderoga and Crown Point. These, if once adequately garrisoned, would become formidable sources of injury to the adjacent regions; and, on the other hand, if secured, would be an effectual check on invasion from the Canadian frontier.

A body of but forty volunteers, with the activity and despatch habitual to their native state, started for Bennington, in "the New-Hampshire Grants," to meet, by agreement, the hardy adventurer, colonel Ethan Allen and his corps,—spirits of the right sort for such an enterprise. Allen joined the Connecticut band, at Castleton, with two hundred and thirty men, all eager for the expedition.

At Castleton, they were unexpectedly joined by colonel Arnold, at this time an ardent partisan in the patriot cause, who had formed a similar design of surprising the British forts. Arnold was admitted as second in command of the combined force, which arrived on the shore of lake Champlain, opposite to Ticonderoga, on the night of the ninth of May. At day-break, on the following morning, the leaders, with an advance of eighty-three men, entered the outworks of the fort. The garrison, utterly unaware of the attack, were yet asleep. The musket of the solitary sentinel missed fire, when he attempted to give the alarm; and the Americans rushed in along with him into the inner part of the fort. There they formed a hollow square, and, now sure of their object, gave the huzza of victory. The garrison, aroused by the unwelcome sound, rushed out, and for a few moments offered what resistance they could, in a close struggle with sword and bayonet. But their scanty numbers and unprepared condition soon compelled them to surrender.

A detachment was immediately despatched, under colonel Seth Warner, to seize Crown Point, which being provided, at the time, with no greater force than a serjeant's command, was easily taken.

The daring Arnold, burning for distinction, completed his share in the successful enterprise, by the capture of a British sloop-of-war, lying off St. John's, at the northern end of lake Champlain. Had this unhappy individual continued in the path on which he set out with so high promise of a brilliant career, his name, instead of coming down to after times loaded with infamy, might have shone among the highest on the records of patriotic valor.

The great quantity of artillery and ammunition secured by the seizure of the forts, was a prize of immense value, at such a crisis; and the acquisition was a source of great joy to the friends of liberty in New York.

Reading Lesson C.

The Asia man-of-war.—The British ship of this name, had been ordered from Boston to the harbor of New York, where she lay anchored off the Battery, with a view to overawe the city, and repress the turbulent spirit of the "sons of liberty." Several popular outbreaks,—of minor consequence, however,—had seemed to the British authorities to require such a measure.

But the presence of this guardian of order, had the effect of irritating rather than overawing the populace; as was evinced, on one occasion, by the destruction of the ship's barge and of one built to replace it. More serious evils, ere long, arose, in connection with the spirit of mutual hostility existing between the ship and the shore.

The provincial congress had ordered the cannon to be removed from the Battery, as a measure of precaution and security. This order was executed, on the night of the 23d of August, by captain Lamb and his company, aided by a large number of the inhabitants, who divided themselves into two parties; one remaining under arms, while the other prosecuted the work of removing the guns.

Governor Tryon's emissaries had communicated information of this proceeding to the commander of the royal ship, who despatched an armed barge to watch the movement of the people on shore. A musket was discharged from the barge, whether for the purpose of intimidating the party on shore, or as a signal to the officer on board of the Asia. It was taken as the commencement of an attack, and answered by a volley of musketry, which killed one of the crew. The barge immediately returned to the ship; and a cannonade was commenced, by which the houses on the Battery were injured, but no other serious damage done.

The alarm, however, rallied the male inhabitants, and caused the women and children to be removed in large numbers, from the city. A threatening communication

was received, on the following day, from the British commander; but the message closed with assurances that the cannonade was designed only to prevent the removal of the guns of the Battery, and that no farther violence should be offered unless rendered necessary by disorderly and turbulent conduct, on the part of the citizens.

The provincial congress interfered to quiet the people, by breaking up all direct communication between the inhabitants and the crew of the British vessel, and pledging them such redress as, on due inquiry, might be obtained. But cautious and guarded measures were all that circumstances would, at this juncture, permit the congress to employ. The city was effectually commanded by the guns of the Asia; and the militia of the colony was fully occupied in the north, with the apprehended movements of the Indian tribes, who were disposed, on the slightest suggestion, to break out into open violence. Their attachment to Sir John Johnson, the son of the distinguished Sir William, and an active leader in the tory interest, would, it was well known, induce them to go all lengths in injury to the friends of liberty.

Withdrawal of governor Tryon.—On the 13th of October, a letter was received by the mayor, in which governor Tryon stated that the continental congress had suggested to the colonial congress the seizure of his person; and that it had become necessary for him to place himself under the protection of the mayor and the corporation of the city. He stated, farther, that, if he should be deprived of his liberty, captain Vandeput, of the Asia, would rescue him, if necessary, by force; but that, to avoid such consequences, he would, if the citizens wished it, embark, and remove his property, which he requested permission to do, undisturbed.

The surmise regarding the disposition to treat him as a prisoner, was undoubtedly ill-founded. But the proposal of the governor plainly shows how inveterate the opposition to British authority had now become, and how inevitable the final rupture between the colonies and the parent state.

The answer returned to the governor's communication was, of course, expressed in terms of loyalty and attachment from the city government, which was of the tory party. But the extreme reluctance, on the part of the

colony, to break with the rule of English authority, is strikingly evinced in the fact, that the "city committee" joined in the request that the governor would relinquish his purpose of withdrawal. They even implored him to remain for the purpose of mediating and restoring harmony.

But the governor either had not sufficient confidence in the sincerity of these expressions, or had committed himself too far, in the design of abandoning the colony; for he soon withdrew privately, and embarked in the Halifax packet. From this vessel he passed to the royal ship, Duchess of Gordon, where he wrote a farewell communication, to the mayor, professing his readiness to aid the inhabitants in any way practicable, but regretting their defalcation from loyalty, and deploring the consequences which must ensue. Soon after, he issued an order, formally dissolving the general assembly, "with the advice of his majesty's council,"—some of whom had, like himself, adopted the resource of retreating from the scene of confusion and peril, and seeking safety on board the British ships of war.—So wound up the formal drama of royalty, which had so long been played in the colony of New York. For the subsequent period, during which the British troops held possession of the city, was necessarily one rather of military occupancy and martial law, than of regular government in any form; and though governor Tryon landed again, and returned with the British troops, when they arrived from Boston, yet his rule over the colony of New York was actually at an end. The subsequent authority of England, was not felt beyond the limits of the city, and there only in virtue of the presence of the British forces. On the withdrawal of these, at the "evacuation," the last vestige of regal power disappeared; the city was left to the undisturbed occupancy of those who had successfully asserted their claims to liberty and independence, and whose manly resolution and endurance had shown them worthy of the boon conferred on them by Him to whose righteous sway they had appealed, at the outset of the great struggle between power and right.

Reading Lesson CI.

Movement for the invasion of Canada.—The continental congress had formed considerable expectations of the good

will, and even coöperation, of the people of Canada, in the resistance offered to the British crown. It was thought that a speedy descent on the fortified places of that province, would ensure their capture, previous to the arrival of the formidable force which, it was understood, would, ere long, be despatched, to strengthen the garrisons of Canada, and invade the exposed points of the revolting colonies.

The design of the present work forbids our dwelling on events not immediately connected with the localities of the colony of New York. But, as the scene of all operations designed for the reduction of Canada, was laid on our borders, it becomes necessary here, to enter, somewhat in detail, on the movements of the continental army ordered on the expedition to Canada. Another link of our local connection with the Canadian campaign, is the circumstance that it was maintained principally by troops levied in New York, and that it was conducted, in one direction, by the favorite adopted son of New York, general Richard Montgomery. The whole expedition, moreover, was under the chief command of general Philip Schuyler,—one of the noblest and truest friends of American freedom, and, in talent, character, and influence, one of the most distinguished men of his native state. This genuine patriot, soon after he had taken his place in the continental congress of Philadelphia, in the month of May, as delegate from New York, was appointed the third major-general of the American army; and, on the 25th of June, was charged by general Washington with the command of the province of New York. A few days afterwards, congress directed him to repair to Ticonderoga and Crown Point, to secure the command of lake Champlain, and, if practicable and expedient, to take possession of St. John's, Montreal, and Quebec.

General Montgomery, the second in command, had ever been an ardent lover of freedom. Originally an officer in the British service, he had established himself in the colony of New York, and, on the rupture with England, had resumed his early profession of arms, and tendered his services to his adopted country. He was appointed, by the continental congress, a general of brigade; and, in this capacity, his command was attached to that of major-general Schuyler, for whom he entertained the profound-

est respect, mingled with the warmest feelings of friendship. It was with peculiar pleasure, therefore, that he entered on the duties of his recent appointment.

General Schuyler's illness.—Unfortunately for himself and his country, general Schuyler had become so reduced in health, as to be unable to proceed farther than the Isle aux Noix. Here he was compelled to lie, for some time, in a state of utter prostration, and was, at last, under the necessity of relinquishing the lead of the expedition to general Montgomery, and returning to Ticonderoga.

Though unable to conduct the expedition in person, he continued to struggle with the impediments of broken health and reduced strength, and exerted himself, beyond his ability, in superintending the furnishing of the invading force with supplies of food, clothing, arms, and money. Conscious of his inability to continue the discharge of duties so arduous, he applied to congress for leave to resign. But so deep was the conviction of that body of the value of his services, that a unanimous and warm vote of thanks was passed, in acknowledgment of his indefatigable exertions; and the most earnest entreaties were added, that he would endeavor to continue at a post of such moment to the success of the colonial cause.

Appealed to by such motives, general Schuyler determined to persevere, at every hazard, in his endeavors to sustain the struggling and sinking army in Canada. The exertions which he continued to make for this purpose, throughout the winter season, were incredible, in extent and difficulty. But he shrunk from no sacrifice of comfort, health, or property, to fulfill the duties of the post which he had determined to maintain.

Reading Lesson CII.

General Schuyler's negotiations with the Indian tribes.—It was mentioned, on a former page, that the state of the Indians within the colony, demanded the utmost vigilance, in consequence of the tory predilections of Sir John Johnson, who inherited, with his father's title of nobility, no small share of his powerful influence over the Indian nations in his vicinity.

The Indians of the Six Nations, though gratefully attached to the successive members of the Schuyler family,

had, for many years, been accustomed to receive the government gratuities of blankets, guns, knives, ammunition, and their national bane of rum, through the Johnson family. The favor of the native race had, accordingly, been transferred to those whose hand conferred the annual gifts of their "great father over the sea." The influence of general Schuyler, however, had still proved strong enough to obtain, of the Indians, a pledge that they would, at least, remain neutral, in the strife between the colonies and Great Britain. This pledge, it now seemed, was likely to be forfeited through the ascendency of Sir John Johnson, who, being a devoted loyalist, was vigorously engaged in arming and enlisting his immigrant tenantry from the Scottish highlands, and the Mohawks of his neighborhood, in the royal cause.

General Schuyler's advance into the country of the Mohawks.—The consequences of an invasion from such a quarter, must have been frightful. The horrid scenes of massacre, perpetrated, as we have seen, in previous parts of our history, by these same Mohawks, on the French settlements in Canada, would have been revived in the colony of New York, and, probably, extended over the whole of the American frontier. To the energy of general Schuyler was his native region, and, indeed, the entire country, indebted for an escape from such a catastrophe. Seven hundred of the militia were hastily summoned to prevent the apprehended rising; and, ere the general had proceeded far on his march, his force had been swelled, by the accession of volunteers, to the number of three thousand.

Interview with the Indian deputation.—At Schenectady, the general was met by a delegation from the Mohawks, speaking in the name of their own and the other associated tribes. Their orator on the occasion, admitted the engagement entered into, during the previous year, by his countrymen. He suggested to the general the dismission of his army, and the sending of messengers to ascertain the truth of the reports which had been circulated. He warned the colonial commander against rash proceedings, particularly with reference to Sir John, whom they were bound to protect, but of whom, he said, they had obtained a promise that he would not be the aggressor. He denied that Sir John was meditating any injury

to the colony. He hinted at the difficulty of restraining some of his countrymen, who, he admitted, were disposed for hostilities, and intimated that the Indians would be present at the meeting between the opposite parties of the whites; but that those among them who were friendly in their disposition, might not be able to prevent the worst consequences, should any injury be offered to Sir John or his people.

General Schuyler plainly perceiving the influence of Sir John himself, in this harangue, firmly maintained his knowledge of hostile purposes and proceedings at Johnstown,—repeated the assurance that the colonial force was levied, not against the Indians, but the instigators of violence and injury; that his intention was merely to exact a sufficient pledge of Sir John and his dependents that their neighbor colonists should remain unmolested; that he only required of the Indians to abstain from interfering in the "family quarrel" of the white men. He informed them, farther, that he was perfectly willing that they should be present at the coming interview with Sir John, whose personal safety had been guaranteed; but that if force had to be used, in consequence of the refusal of the offers of pacification, and the Indians should take part with his opponents, the consequences must be upon their own heads.

Meeting between general Schuyler and Sir John Johnson.—A letter had, in the meantime, been despatched, arranging an interview between the general and Sir John, at which, on the following day, the latter was required to relinquish all military stores, and to remain, on parole, in Tryon county; the Highlanders to surrender their arms, and give hostages for the peaceable demeanor of the Scottish settlements; and all English presents for the Indians, to be delivered to a commissary appointed to receive them.

To these terms Sir John was, at first, unwilling to submit; and he intimated the readiness of the Indians to defend and support him. In reply, he was plainly told that force would be met by force; but, at his request, and, subsequently, at that of the Indians, more time was allowed him for consideration. After much parrying and delay, the terms proposed were, at last, acceded to; and, on the following day, the Highlanders were disarmed, and the military stores surrendered. General Schuyler

and his force then returned; having fully secured the object of their expedition.

Reading Lesson CIII.

Progress of the expedition against Canada.—General Montgomery, in the meantime, prosecuted with vigor the expedition of which he was now, in consequence of the illness of general Schuyler, left sole commander. The following account of this unsuccessful attempt to secure possession of Canada, we derive, principally, from the narrative of Dr. Williams, which, for clearness and simplicity, as well as accuracy, seems preferable to any other, in a work designed for young readers.

Defeat of general Carleton.—"Montgomery's first step, in the execution of his purposes, was to gain over the Indians whom the British general, Carleton, had employed; and this, he, in a great measure, accomplished; after which, on receiving the full number of troops appointed for his expedition, he determined to lay siege to St. John's. In this he was facilitated by the reduction of Chambly, a small fort in the neighborhood, where he found a large supply of powder. An attempt was made by general Carleton to relieve the place; for which purpose he had, with great pains, collected about a thousand Canadians, while colonel M'Lean proposed to raise a regiment of Highlanders, who had emigrated from Scotland to America.

"But while general Carleton was on his march, with these new levies, he was attacked by a provincial force of four hundred men, from Vermont, under colonel Warner, and utterly defeated; which being made known to another body of Canadians, who had joined colonel M'Lean, they abandoned him without striking a blow; and he was obliged to retreat to Quebec.

"The defeat of general Carleton was a sufficient recompense to the Americans for that of colonel Ethan Allen, which happened some time before. The success which attended this gentleman against Crown Point and Ticonderoga, had emboldened him to make a similar attempt on Montreal; but being attacked by the militia of the place, supported by a detachment of regulars, he was entirely defeated, and taken prisoner.

Surrender of the garrison at St. John's.—"As the defeat of general Carleton, and the desertion of M'Lean's forces, left no room for the garrison of St. John's to hope for relief, they now consented to surrender themselves prisoners of war, but were, in other respects, treated with great humanity. They were, in number, five hundred regulars and two hundred Canadians, among whom were many of the French nobility, who had been very active in promoting the cause of Britain among their countrymen.

Capture of the British shipping at Montreal.—"General Montgomery next took measures to prevent the British vessels from passing down the river from Montreal to Quebec. This he accomplished so effectually, that the whole were taken. The town itself was obliged to surrender at discretion; and it was with the utmost difficulty that general Carleton escaped, in an open boat, by the favor of a dark night.

"No farther obstacle now remained in the way of the Americans to the capital, except what arose from the nature of the country; and these indeed were very considerable. Nothing, however, could damp the ardor of the Americans.

Approach of colonel Arnold.—"Notwithstanding it was now the middle of November, and the depth of winter was at hand, colonel Arnold, who had been despatched by Washington, with an additional force, formed a design of penetrating through woods, morasses, and the most frightful solitudes, from New England to Canada, by a nearer way than that which general Montgomery had chosen; and this he accomplished, in spite of every difficulty, to the astonishment of all who saw or heard of the attempt.

"A third part of his men, under another colonel, had been obliged to leave him by the way, for want of provisions. The total want of artillery rendered his presence insignificant, before a place so strongly fortified; and the smallness of his army rendered it even doubtful whether he could have taken the town by surprise.

"The Canadians, indeed, were amazed at the exploit, and their inclination to revolt was somewhat augmented; but none of them, as yet, took up arms in behalf of America.

"The consternation into which the town of Quebec was thrown, proved detrimental, rather than otherwise, to the expedition; as it doubled the vigilance and activity of the inhabitants to prevent any surprise; and the appearance of common danger united all parties, who, before the arrival of Arnold, were contending most violently with one another.

"He was therefore obliged to content himself with blocking up the avenues to the town, in order to distress the garrison for want of provisions; and even this he was unable to do effectually, by reason of the small number of his men.

Arrival of general Montgomery.—"The matter was not much mended by the arrival of general Montgomery. The force he had with him, even when united to that of Arnold, was too insignificant to attempt the reduction of a place so strongly fortified, especially with the assistance of only a few mortars and field-pieces."

Reading Lesson CIV.

Attack on Quebec.—"After the siege had continued through the month of December, general Montgomery, conscious that he could accomplish his end in no other way than by surprise, resolved to make an attempt, on the last day of the year 1775. The method he took at this time, was, perhaps, the best that human wisdom could devise. He advanced by break of day, in the midst of a heavy fall of snow, which covered his men from the sight of the enemy.

"Two real attacks were made by himself and colonel Arnold, at the same time that two feigned attacks were made on two other places, thus to distract the garrison, and make them divide their forces. One of the real attacks was made by the people of New York, and the other by those of New England, under colonel Arnold.

"Their hopes of surprising the place, however, were defeated, by the signal for the attack being, by some mistake, given too soon. General Montgomery himself had the most dangerous place, being obliged to pass between the river and some high rocks, on which the upper town stands; so that he was forced to make what haste he could to close with the enemy.

"His fate, however, was now decided. Having forced the first barrier, an unexpected discharge of grape-shot from the second, killed him, and the principal officers of his staff; on which, those who remained immediately retreated.

"Colonel Arnold, in the meantime, made a desperate attack on the lower town, and carried one of the barriers, after an obstinate resistance for an hour; but in the action he himself received a wound, which obliged him to withdraw. The attack, however, was continued by the officers whom he had left, and another barrier forced; but the garrison now perceiving that nothing was to be feared except from that quarter, collected their whole force against it, and, after a desperate engagement of three hours, overpowered the provincials, and obliged them to surrender.

"In this action, it must be confessed, that the valor of the provincial troops could not be exceeded. They had fought under as great disadvantages as those which had attended the British at Bunkerhill, and had behaved equally well.

"The death of general Montgomery, says major Meigs, in his journal of the expedition, though honorable, was lamented, not only as the death of an amiable, worthy man, but of an experienced, brave officer: the whole country suffered greatly by such a loss at this time. The native goodness and rectitude of his heart, might easily be seen in his actions: his sentiments, which appeared on every occasion, were fraught with that unaffected goodness, which plainly discovered the virtues of the heart from whence they flowed. In person, he was tall and slender, well limbed, of a genteel, easy, graceful, manly address, and possessed the love, esteem, and confidence of the whole army. He was shot through both thighs, and through his head. His body was taken up the next day; an elegant coffin was prepared; and he was decently interred, on the Thursday after.

Withdrawal of the troops, by Arnold.—"Such a terrible disaster left no hope remaining of the accomplishment of the purpose of the expedition; as colonel Arnold could now scarce number eight hundred effective men under his command. He did not, however, abandon the province, or even remove to a greater distance than three

miles from Quebec; and here he still found means to annoy the garrison very considerably, by intercepting their provisions.

"The Canadians, notwithstanding the bad success of the American arms, still continued friendly; and thus he was enabled to sustain the hardships of a winter encampment in that most severe climate. The congress, far from passing any censure on him for his misfortune, created him a brigadier-general."

SEC. II.—EVENTS OF 1776.

Reading Lesson CV.

Arnold continues to harass Quebec.—"Reïnforcements had been promised to colonel Arnold, who still continued the blockade of Quebec; but they did not arrive in time to second his operations.

"Being sensible, however, that he must either desist from the enterprise, or finish it successfully, he recommenced in form; attempting to burn the shipping, and even to storm the town itself. The Americans were unsuccessful, however, by reason of the smallness of their number; though they succeeded so far as to burn a number of houses in the suburbs; and the garrison were obliged to pull down the remainder, in order to prevent the fire from spreading.

"As these attacks kept the garrison in continual alarm, and in a very disagreeable situation, some of the nobility collected themselves into a body, under the command of one M. Beaujeu,* in order to relieve their capital; but they were met on their march by the Americans, and so entirely defeated, that they were never afterwards able to attempt anything.

Discouraging condition of the colonial troops.—"The Americans, however, derived but little advantage from this success. The want of artillery at last convinced them, that it was impracticable, in their situation, to reduce a place so strongly fortified. The small-pox, at the same time, made its appearance in their camp, and carried off great numbers—intimidating the rest to such a degree, that they deserted in crowds.

Arrival of the British force, and repulse of the Ameri-

* Pronounced, *Bozhŭ.*

cans.—"To add to the misfortunes of the provincials, the British reïnforcements unexpectedly appeared; and the ships made their way through the ice with such celerity, that one part of their army was separated from the other; and general Carleton sallying out, as soon as the reïnforcement was landed, obliged them to flee with the utmost precipitation, leaving behind them all their cannon and military stores; at the same time that their shipping was entirely captured by vessels sent up the river, for that purpose. On this occasion, the provincials made so rapid a retreat, that they could not be overtaken; so that none fell into the hands of the British, except the sick and wounded.

Humane conduct of the British commander.—"General Carleton now gave a signal and pleasing instance of his humanity. Being well apprized that many of the provincials had not been able to accompany the rest in their retreat, and that they were concealed in woods, in a very deplorable situation, he generously issued a proclamation, ordering proper persons to seek them out, and give them relief at the public expense. At the same time, lest, through fear of being made prisoners, they should refuse these offers of humanity, he promised, that as soon as their situation enabled them, they should be at liberty to depart to their respective homes.

*Carleton's advance to Trois Rivières.**—"The British general, now freed from any danger of an attack, was soon enabled to act offensively against the Americans, by the arrival of the forces destined for that purpose from Britain. By these he was put at the head of twelve thousand regular troops, among whom were those of Brunswick.

"With this force, he instantly set out for Trois Rivières, where he expected that Arnold would make a stand; but he had retired to Sorel, one hundred and fifty miles distant from Quebec, where he was, at last, met by the reinforcements ordered by congress.

Defeat of general Thompson.—"Here, though the preceding events were by no means calculated to inspire much military ardor, a very daring enterprise was undertaken; and this was, to surprise the British troops posted here under generals Fraser and Nesbit; of whom the former commanded those on land, and the latter such as

* Pronounced, *Trwaw Reevyare.*

were on board of transports, and were but a little way distant.

"The enterprise was undoubtedly very hazardous, both on account of the strength of the parties against whom they were to act, and as the main body of the British forces was advanced within fifty miles of the place; besides that, a number of armed vessels and transports, with troops, lay between them and Trois Rivières.

"Two thousand chosen men, however, under general Thompson, engaged in this enterprise. Their success was by no means answerable to their spirit and valor. Though they passed the shipping without being observed, general Fraser had notice of their landing; and thus being prepared to receive them, they were soon thrown into disorder, at the same time that general Nesbit, having landed his forces, prepared to attack them in the rear.

"On this occasion, some field-pieces did prodigious execution; and a retreat was found to be unavoidable. General Nesbit, however, had got between them and their boats; so that they were obliged to take a circuit through a deep swamp, while they were hotly pursued by both parties, at the same time, who marched for some miles on each side of the swamp, till, at last, the unfortunate Americans were sheltered from further danger, by a wood at the end of the swamp. The general, however, was taken, with two hundred of his men.

Retreat of the American army.—"By this disaster, the Americans lost all hopes of accomplishing anything in Canada. They demolished their works, and carried off their artillery, with the utmost expedition. They were pursued, however, by general Burgoyne, against whom it was expected they would have collected all their forces, and made a resolute stand. But they were now too much dispirited by misfortune, to make any further exertions of valor.

"On the 18th of June, the British general arrived at fort St. John's, which he found abandoned and burnt. Chambly had shared the same fate, as well as all the vessels that were not capable of being dragged up against the current of the river. It was thought they would have made some resistance at Isle aux Noix, the entrance to lake Champlain; but this, also, they had abandoned, and retreated

across the lake to Crown Point, whither they could not be immediately followed.

"Thus was the province of Canada entirely evacuated by the Americans; whose loss, in their retreat from Quebec, was not calculated at less than one thousand men, of whom four hundred fell at once into the hands of the enemy, at a place called the Cedars, about fifty miles above Montreal. General Sullivan, however, who conducted this retreat, after the affair of general Thompson, had great merit in what he did, and received the thanks of congress, accordingly."

Reading Lesson CVI.

Proceedings of the provincial congress, 1776.—The continental congress had recommended, as a measure indispensable to the general safety of the country, at the existing crisis, that every colony should erect a new form of government, adapted to the circumstances of the time, and to the particular condition of the colonies, individually. To this recommendation the provincial congress of New York had not deemed itself competent to respond; as its own earlier proceedings had been conducted under the impression that a rupture with England might still be avoided. The members, generally, felt themselves bound, in their official capacity, to abstain from any action of a revolutionary character; as they had, at the outset, expressed themselves averse to such a procedure. The measures of the British ministry had now, however, cut off all hopes of reconciliation; and the provincial congress, on the 31st of May, recommended to the electors of the several counties to vest the requisite authority in their present delegates, or in others to be chosen in their stead.

On the 30th of June, the British force having appeared off the harbor of New York, the provincial congress, previous to its adjournment on that day, directed that the local congress entrusted with these new powers, should assemble immediately, at White Plains. The new congress, or "convention," assembled on the 9th of July, and chose general Woodhull as president.

Adoption of the declaration of independence, by the convention.—On this body devolved the duty of adopting, on

behalf of their representatives, the ever-memorable declaration of independence, issued by the continental congress, on the 4th of July, 1776. The New-York delegation, from conscientious scruples, similar to those which actuated the members of the provincial congress, had not, though personally in favor of the revolutionary movement, felt themselves at liberty to commit their constituents to such a measure, while the instructions which they had received, to promote conciliation, were as yet binding.

The first measure passed by the new provincial congress, was the unanimous adoption of the national declaration; and, on the 10th of July, that body formally assumed the title of the "convention of the representatives of the state of New York." These proceedings diffused universal satisfaction among the majority of the people; and this date closes the record of our own local history as a colony, and commences that of New York as a sovereign and independent state. Under the auspices of that freedom which the declaration of independence proclaimed, New York has, in common with her sister states of the national Union, continued to advance in a career of prosperity and happiness, hitherto unexampled in the history of the world. The sure hand of time has set its irrevocable seal to the wisdom of the men by whom the great movement for independence was begun, and, in face of the most formidable opposition, so vigorously and triumphantly sustained.

Transfer of the scene of hostilities to New York.—General Howe, when he was forced to evacuate Boston, had repaired, with his troops, to Halifax, where, for a time, he awaited the arrival of his brother, admiral lord Howe, under whose command an extensive armament was expected to arrive from England. After a delay of several weeks, the general departed for New York, leaving a letter of information to be delivered to his brother, on his arrival.

General Washington had foreseen that the principal aim of the British would be naturally directed against New York, and early in April, had arrived there, with the army which had effected the expulsion of Howe from Boston.

General Lee, however, had, in the meantime, arrived,

before the main body with a levy of militia from Connecticut. The British general, Clinton, had shown himself, with an armament, off New York. But, either distrusting his ability to carry the place, which had been, in part, strengthened by additional fortifications of a temporary nature, or deeming it preferable to expedite his intended movements at the south, he withdrew for the time, and joining Sir Peter Parker and his squadron, at Cape-Fear river, proceeded to Charleston. Thither he was rapidly followed, overland, by Lee, who had received the command of the American forces in the southern states.

Arrival of general Howe.—On the 25th of June, general Howe arrived at Sandyhook, and, on the 2d of July, landed his force on Staten island. He was here joined, during the following month, by the forces under his brother, and by those under lord Cornwallis and general Clinton, which had been repulsed, with considerable loss, from Charleston, by the determined bravery of the colonial troops.

The assembled British force numbered upwards of twenty-four thousand men; and to these a reinforcement of more than ten thousand was expected. The plan of operations was to seize New York, as a key to the Hudson river, to open and maintain communications with general Carleton's army in Canada, and, if practicable, to meet it, on the banks of the Hudson, and thus cut off the possibility of any aid being rendered to the middle states, by New England. The whole American army would thus, it was thought, be enclosed, and left at the mercy of the English.

To this ample force, general Washington could oppose but about twenty thousand undisciplined militia, poorly armed, and many suffering from sickness.

Communications between the British and American commanders.—Lord Howe had received full power to negociate with the Americans, on the footing of pardon for the past, on condition of their willingness to return to loyalty and subjection. Offers of this nature were made by the British admiral, and were firmly declined by Washington, as unsuitable for those who were not conscious of any crime in their resistance to aggression.

Reading Lesson CVII.

Erroneous impressions regarding the approach of the British army.—No pains had been spared, to strengthen the island of New York, by the erection of such defences as time and circumstances would permit. The general expectation of the Americans, was, that the British would attempt a landing, in full force, on Manhattan island. All due precaution had been used, however, to occupy with a strong force, the opposite heights of Brooklyn, which, by their elevation, commanded the whole city of New York; and a large body of the American force was securely planted in front of the fortified camp at Brooklyn, as well as at all points which commanded the approaches to it. Still, it seems not to have been expected that the main attack would have been made in that direction; general Sullivan being the only individual in the military council of Washington, who entertained such an idea.

Illness of general Greene.—General Greene, who had been appointed commander of the American force on Long Island, was unfortunately taken ill, shortly before the attack; and Washington had been, at length, though reluctantly, induced to transfer the command to general Putnam, who had not had opportunity of becoming well informed regarding the locality of his post, or of the arrangements designed for its defence, in case of attack. Washington, himself, expecting that the main attack of the enemy would be made on the city of New York, was, of course, with the main body of the American army, which was encamped in the city and adjacent parts of Manhattan island.

Local features of the battle-ground.—The peculiar surface of the adjoining country afforded special advantages for repelling the approaches of a hostile force, in the direction taken by the invading army. The whole ground, —intersected by creeks, morasses, ravines, and narrow defiles, and conveniently covered, at intervals, by woods, —seemed to render it a task of the utmost peril to attempt the well-intrenched line of the heights; while,— under the direction of general Greene,—the most skilful advantage had been taken of every point at which a redoubt or fosse could add to the natural strength


High Lands
Phillipstown
West Point
Milltown
Southeast
Carmel
Ridgebury
Ft. Montgomery
Yorktown
North Salem
Peekskill
Cortland
Somers
Ridgefield
Verplancks Pt.
Stoney Pt.
Haverstraw
Croton R.
Salem
Poundridge
Warren
Croton Ferry
Bedford
Sing Sing
NEW YORK
New Canaan
Mount Pleasant
Nyack
Tarrytown
Stanwich
Norwalk
North Castle
Byram R.
Green wich
Stamford
White Plains
Glosier
Dobbs Ferry
Rye
Mamaroneck
N. Rochelle
Hackensack
Ft. Independence
Eastchester
Ft. Lee
Kings Bridge
Oyster Bay
Cold Spring
Ft. Washington
Westchester
Musqueto Cove
Harlem
Cow Neck
North Hempstead
Great Neck
Hell Gate
Hoboken
Flushing
NEW YORK
Newtown
Bushwick
Brooklyn
LONG ISLAND
Jamaica
Bedford
Flatland
Flatbush
New Utrecht
Gravesend
Staten I.
MAP
of the
SEAT OF WAR
near
NEW YORK
IN 1776

of a position, or cover one that seemed comparatively weak.

Landing of the British at New Utrecht.—But the illness of Greene, and the consequent want of due concert and vigilance, in conducting operations, at the decisive moment, rendered all apparent advantages unavailing. The British troops, leaving Staten island, landed at New Utrecht, near the southwestern extremity of Long Island, on the 22d of August, and, after several days of inaction, —designed to throw the Americans off their guard,—proceeded, on the evening of the 26th, in profound silence, to the meditated attack.

Character of the British army.—The battle of Long Island, was, on the part of the British, conducted with great skill, as well as the utmost vigilance and bravery. The commanders regarded the day, not unjustly, as destined to form a decisive one, for the campaign; the army, with its vast force of cavalry and artillery, its distinguished officers and veteran troops, who had reaped well-earned laurels on more than one field in Europe, was one of the finest specimens of a complete military force, that had ever visited the shores of America; and the arrangements for the attack were executed with the precision of the movements on the chess-board.

Position of the American camp.—General Putnam's line extended from Wallabout bay, on the left, to Gowanus cove, on the right; while the East River, on his rear, enabled him to maintain communication with the main body of the American army, on Manhattan island. In front, extended the wooded heights which traverse the island from east to west. These could be penetrated at three points only: one, on the left, near to the Narrows; another, the road towards the centre, passing the village of Flatbush; the third, by a distant circuit, through the village of Flatlands, on the right. Along the summit was the road from Bedford to Jamaica, intersected by the road through Flatlands. These roads were all to have been under the surveillance of posts of observation, and scouting parties, charged with the duty of maintaining strict watch and constant communication with the lines in front of the camp,—a duty which, most unfortunately, was, in one instance, but negligently performed.

Advance of the British army.—The invading force advanced: its left, under major-general Grant, to the north and the Narrows,—its right, under generals Clinton, Percy, and Cornwallis, to the south, by Flatlands, and the Jamaica and Bedford road,—its centre, composed of the Hessians, under general Heister, on the village of Flatbush. Generals Grant and Heister were each to annoy and distract the enemy, while the right should press on, seize the Jamaica and Bedford road, and thence debouche on the American flank and rear.

Successful approach of Clinton.—All the intended movements were executed with promptness and entire success. The scouting parties had relaxed their vigilance; a decisive pass was left unoccupied; general Clinton, in the advance, occupied the road to Bedford, seized the defile, and halting till joined by lord Percy and his corps of artillery and cavalry, descended to the plain between the heights and the American camp at Brooklyn. These movements would have decided the day, independently of those of the other portions of the British army.

Movement of the British left wing.—General Grant, meanwhile, on the left, proceeded to divert the attention of the Americans from the movements of Clinton, by an attack on the militia of New York and Pennsylvania, who guarded a defile connected with the Flatlands road, and who, at first, gave ground; but, on being reinforced by general Parsons, and rallied on an adjoining eminence, they bravely maintained their position till the arrival of lord Stirling; after which, the battle was successfully maintained by them, for several hours.

Attack on the American centre.—General Heister and his Hessians had assailed the American centre, at daybreak; and, although general Sullivan, who was there in command, had been taken at utter disadvantage, in consequence of the failure of seasonable intelligence of the enemy's approach, resistance was bravely maintained.

Perplexing condition of the American right flank.—The English ships now succeeded in opening their fire on the right flank of the Americans who were engaged with general Grant, and who were thus kept in ignorance of the fate of the day, in their centre and on their left.

Desperate condition of the American centre.—General Clinton, meanwhile, descended into the plain, towards

the left of the centre; and having first detached a body of troops to intercept the rear of the Americans who were occupied in front with the Hessians, commenced a fresh assault. The Americans retreated, but in good order, before this disparity of force. They were now met by the enemy in their rear, and driven back upon the Hessians, who, in turn, repulsed them upon the English. Thus doubly exposed to destruction, the loss of the Americans was severe. Goaded, at length, to desperation, several regiments cut their way through the very centre of the enemy, and regained their own camp. Several others escaped through the woods.

Fate of the American right wing.—The American right wing, ignorant of what had occurred elsewhere, was still engaged with general Grant. But, on receiving information of the fate of their countrymen, commenced a retreat. Some succeeded in escaping through the woods; others perished in the attempt to pass through the marshes of Gowanus cove; few, comparatively, succeeded in reaching the camp.

Perplexities of general Putnam.—The brave Putnam, shut up in camp, ill informed as to the localities of the surrounding country, and the numbers and direction of the approaching forces of the enemy,—perplexed by the insuperable difficulties of his situation, and chafed, like the hunted animal at bay, could only send forth, at random, such reïnforcements as the pressure, at any point seemed to require, but wisely avoided the sally to which his impetuosity would have impelled him. Night, and the fatigue of the victors, at length came to his relief, and closed the disastrous day.

The close of this painful scene of discomfiture, was beheld, with unutterable anguish, by the American commander-in-chief, who had hurried over, from New York, but was unable to rescue his brave soldiers from the fate against which they had so manfully struggled. Resistance to the well-appointed army of Britain, would have been the sure destruction of his ill-provided and irregular force; and all that he could do, was to devise the speediest means of retreat for the remnant of the American troops.

The destruction of life, on this hard-fought field, was, on the American side, lamentably great. It was rated, by the latter, at upwards of one thousand;—by the Brit-

ish, at more than three thousand in killed, wounded, and prisoners. Among the first, was nearly the entire regiment of Maryland, numbering some of the foremost young men of that state: among the missing, were generals Sullivan and Stirling, who had been compelled to surrender, on the field, and general Woodhull,* who had been detached on a special duty, and compelled to surrender on the day following the battle.

Reading Lesson CVIII.

Withdrawal of the American troops from the camp at Brooklyn.—On the day following the battle, the British encamped in front of the American lines, and proceeded to throw up their works, but were checked by the well-directed fire of the riflemen in the camp. On the night of the 29th, general Washington, who had not permitted himself to sleep since the commencement of the fatal battle, superintended the conveyance of the troops to New York; and, by aid of a dense fog, and the perfect order and silence of the troops, the whole force was removed, without farther loss; although the enemy were so near, that the sound of their entrenching tools was plainly heard during the night, and as the last boat was pushed off, the dispersion of the fog, at that moment, left the British sentinels in sight.

A sad blow was thus struck at the hopes of America, in her struggle against aggression; and the state of New York, in particular, suffered, for a time, the deepest depression. But no disposition was felt to abandon the cause of freedom, or, as yet, to relinquish the city to the possession of the enemy.

Threatening position of the British fleet.—The movements of both armies, in the vicinity of the city of New York, at this critical period, can be rightly understood only by adverting to the fact that the British commander eagerly hoped, by a decisive movement, to succeed in capturing the whole American army; while the policy of Washington was, by strict vigilance, to avoid an unavailing exposure of his scanty force. The somewhat tardy movements of the former, and the extreme caution of the latter, are thus fully explained. The prudence to refrain

* See his life, on a subsequent page.

and to withold, which Washington, at this time, exercised over his own ardent temperament, secured the army of his country, and, with it, the only possibility of ultimate success to the cause of American liberty.

The next intended movement of the hostile force, after the sanguinary battle of Long Island, was indicated, within a few days, by the appearance of part of the British fleet in the Sound, while the remainder took up a position within cannon shot, nearly, of the city itself.

Withdrawal of the American troops from the city.—A council of war was held, on the 12th of September, at which it was decided that to save the inhabitants from the horrors of an attack, and to secure the safety of the army in its present depressed condition, the troops should be immediately withdrawn to a stronger position, in the middle and northern parts of the island. The commander-in-chief took up his head quarters, accordingly, on the heights of Harlem; and a strong force was stationed at Kingsbridge, on the mainland.

Landing of the British on Manhattan island.—A large body of the enemy, under the command of Clinton, landed on the 15th, about three miles above the city, at Kipp's bay, on the eastern side of the island, and took up their position in a line extending, across, to Bloomingdale, on the western side. So expeditiously was this movement effected, that there was barely time to withdraw the last of the American troops from the city. Part of their artillery and stores was unavoidably captured.

Encounter between the British and American outposts.—The approach of the enemy to the temporary works thrown up near to Kipp's bay, took the raw levies stationed there, by surprise. A rapid and disorderly retreat followed, which even the presence and personal exertions of Washington could not check.

On the following day, however, the commander-in-chief, selecting a favorable opportunity to accustom his troops to face and encounter their enemy, detached a party to cut off an advanced body of the British, on the intervening plain. The movement was headed by colonel Knowlton and major Leitch; and, although both these brave officers fell in the attack, the advantage was with the Americans. The troops engaged in this affair, being warmly commended by general Washington, the skirmish

was of great service, in reviving the sinking spirits of the army.

Great fire in the city.—On the 21st of September, a destructive fire, commencing at Whitehall slip, laid waste a large part of the city. Trinity church, of that day, was consumed; and the fire was not extinguished till it had reached the present Barclay street. St. Paul's church was saved, with much difficulty. This disastrous conflagration was, by some, attributed to the confusion attending the withdrawal of the American troops, and the arrival of the enemy. By the British, it was said to be the result of spiteful design, with a view to harass and disappoint the invaders, and was so reported by general Howe. A third account attributed the origin of the fire to disorderly conduct, on the part of the newly-arrived British soldiery, themselves.

General Howe's attempts to cut off the communications of the American army.—The strength of the position taken by Washington, rendering it unadvisable to attempt carrying it by assault, general Howe proceeded, on the 12th of October, with a large force, to turn the American rear, by a flanking movement, on each side. But Washington, apprized of the design, withdrew the main body of his troops to Kingsbridge. At a council of war, held at this juncture, it was deemed best to withdraw the American forces wholly from their present posts, except forts Washington and Lee, which were indispensable to keep the North River open to the Americans. To hold the former, a force of three thousand men was detached, under colonel Magaw.

Action at White Plains.—To secure his army from the intended movement of Howe, Washington extended his front along the western branch of Bronx river, towards White Plains. Here, on the 28th, a partial action was brought on, in which the American army suffered the loss of the brave colonel Smallwood, and several hundred men.

Subsequent movements of Washington.—Withdrawing from White Plains to a more advantageous position, Washington now prepared to make a decisive stand, and to encounter the enemy, on terms more equal than hitherto, in the depressed condition of his army. General Howe, distrusting his success, in case of an engagement with his actual force, awaited the arrival of lord Percy

and the rear, which did not take place till the 30th. A heavy rain, on that night and the following day, prevented the intended attack; and Washington, having secured, in the meantime, a strong position on the heights of North Castle, general Howe directed his movements towards the American posts on the Hudson, with a view to penetrate New Jersey. Washington, accordingly, left general Lee, with a body of seven thousand men, at North Castle, and proceeded, with the main body, to strengthen general Greene, at fort Lee.

Surrender of fort Washington.—On the 16th of November, general Howe proceeded to invest fort Washington. Having completed his arrangements for an assault, the British commander summoned the fort to surrender, under pain of being put to the sword. Colonel Magaw replied that he would defend his post to the last. The assault was vigorously repulsed, till the ammunition of the Americans became nearly exhausted, and resistance was no longer practicable. The garrison, accordingly, surrendered by capitulation; and the whole island of New York thus fell into the hands of the invaders. The fall of fort Lee, and the subsequent disastrous retreat of the American army through New Jersey, belong to the general history of the country.

Reading Lesson CIX.

Operations at the north.—Returning to the movements of the invading army which had been repulsed from Canada, it will be recollected that the Americans had taken up their quarters at Crown Point. "Here," says Dr. Williams, "they remained for some time in safety, as the British had no vessels on the lake, and consequently general Burgoyne could not pursue them.

"To remedy this deficiency, there was no possible method, but either to construct vessels on the spot, or take to pieces some vessels already constructed, and drag them up the river into the lake. This, however, was effected in no longer a period than three months; and the British general, after incredible toil and difficulty, saw himself in possession of a great number of vessels, by which means he was enabled to pursue his enemies, and invade them in his turn.

"The labor undergone at this time, by the sea and land forces, must indeed have been prodigious; since there were conveyed over land, and dragged up the rapids of the Sorel, no fewer than thirty large long-boats, four hundred batteaux, besides a vast number of flat-bottomed boats, and a gondola of thirty tons.

Design of the British commander.—"The intent of the expedition was to push forward, before winter, to Albany, where the army would take up its winter quarters, and, the next spring, effect a junction with that under general Howe, when it was not doubted that the united force and skill of these two commanders would speedily put a termination to the war.

"By reason of the difficulties with which the equipment of this fleet had been attended, it was the beginning of October before the expedition could be undertaken. It was, however, by every judge, allowed to be completely able to answer every purpose for which it was intended. It consisted of one large vessel with three masts, carrying eighteen twelve-pounders; two schooners, the one carrying fourteen, the other twelve six-pounders; a large flat-bottomed radeau, with six twenty-four, and six twelve-pounders; and a gondola with eight nine-pounders.

"Besides these, there were twenty vessels of a smaller size, called gun-boats, carrying each a piece of brass ordnance, from nine to twenty-four-pounders, or howitzers. Several long-boats were fitted out in the same manner; and besides all these, there was a vast number of boats and tenders of various sizes, to be used as transports for the troops and baggage. It was manned by a number of select seamen, and the guns were to be served by a detachment from the corps of artillery; the officers and soldiers appointed for this expedition were also chosen out of the whole army.

Brave conduct of Arnold.—"To oppose this formidable armament, the Americans had only a very inconsiderable force, commanded by general Arnold; who, after engaging a part of the British fleet for a whole day, took advantage of the darkness of the night, to set sail without being perceived, and, next morning, was out of sight. But he was so hotly pursued by the British, that, on the second day after, he was overtaken, and forced to a second engagement.

"In this, he behaved with great gallantry; but his force being very inferior to that of the enemy, he was obliged to run his ships on shore, and set them on fire. A few only escaped to lake George; and the garrison of Crown Point, having destroyed and carried off every thing of value, retired to Ticonderoga. Thither general Carleton intended to have pursued them; but the difficulties he had to encounter, appeared so many and so great, that it was thought proper to march back into Canada, and desist from any further operations, till the next spring."

The result of the campaign of 1776, was, of course, discouraging, in the extreme, to the Americans, and peculiarly so to the friends of independence in the state of New York. But this juncture proved only the ebb tide of the revolutionary movement, and was replaced, ere long, by the full current of triumphant success.

SEC. III.—EVENTS OF 1777.

Reading Lesson CX.

Predatory excursions of the British troops from the city of New York.—While the American army, under Washington, had rallied, and recovered the greater part of New Jersey, the British force stationed in the city of New York, was detached, occasionally, on predatory excursions, to seize supplies, and harass the people of the adjacent country.

Attempt on Peekskill.—A large quantity of military stores, belonging to the Americans, had been deposited at Peekskill, on the Hudson. General Howe, hoping to obtain possession of this prize, or, at least, to destroy it, detached a strong force up the river, for this purpose. The American force, in that quarter, was utterly incompetent to resist; and the stores were therefore set on fire, just in time to prevent their falling into the hands of the enemy; and the place was immediately abandoned.

All that the British troops effected by their movement, was but to finish the destruction which the Americans had begun. Having accomplished their object, they returned to the city.

Expedition against Danbury.—It is painful to see a high-minded man like general Tryon, former British governor of New York, descending to soil his name by

connecting it with such proceedings as we are now describing. But we find him, on the 25th of April, setting out from New York, at the head of a body of four thousand men, on an errand of this degrading character. On the 26th, he directed his force against Danbury in Connecticut, and, not contented with the destruction of the stores, there, proceeded to burn and sack the town. His troops committed the most disgraceful atrocities on the unarmed and unresisting inhabitants.

Having accomplished the purposes of the expedition, the British force was retiring from the place, when generals Arnold, Silliman, and the veteran Wooster, hastily rallied the militia of the adjoining region, and assailed the enemy with a galling and destructive fire, which they kept up till the invaders regained their shipping. Nearly three hundred men, of the enemy, killed, wounded, or prisoners, fell, or were taken, during the retreat. The American loss was slight in numbers, but unfortunately included the gallant general Wooster, whose patriotic spirit had called him out to the encounter, at the advanced age of seventy.

American expedition against Sag Harbor.—A temporary dépôt of military stores had been formed by the British at Sag Harbor, near the eastern extremity of Long Island, under the protection of an armed sloop and a body of infantry. On the night of the 22d of May, colonel Meigs, with a party of Connecticut militia, crossed the Sound, arrived before daylight, surprised the post, took ninety prisoners, burned a large number of small craft, and returned without loss. This exploit called forth the congratulations of the whole country; and congress rewarded its hero with the presentation of a sword.

Operations at the north.—The American army at the north, had, it will be recollected, after having abandoned Crown Point, withdrawn to Ticonderoga, then a place of great strength, and generally deemed impregnable. General Carleton had, accordingly, declined attempting the place, and withdrawn his troops, as formerly mentioned.

Reading Lesson CXI.

The army of Burgoyne.—Early in spring, general Burgoyne, who had served under Carleton, in the preceding

campaign, took the command of a powerful force of English, German, Canadian, and Indian troops, for the reduction of Ticonderoga.

"The officers," says Dr. Williams, "who commanded under general Burgoyne, were general Phillips of the artillery, generals Fraser, Powell, and Hamilton, with the German officers, generals Reidesel and Speecht.* The soldiers were all excellently disciplined, and had been kept in their winter quarters with all imaginable care, in order to prepare them for the expedition on which they were going.

Colonel St. Leger's command.—"To aid the principal expedition, another was projected on the Mohawk river, under colonel St. Leger, who was to be assisted by Sir John Johnson.

Preparations for the siege.—"On the 21st of June, 1777, the army encamped on the western side of lake Champlain; where, being joined by a considerable body of Indians, general Burgoyne made a speech, in which, it is said, he exhorted these new allies, but ineffectually, to lay aside their ferocious and barbarous manner of making war; to kill only such as opposed them in arms; and to spare prisoners, with such women and children as should fall into their hands. After issuing a proclamation, in which the force of Britain, and that which he commanded, were set forth in very ostentatious terms, the campaign opened with the siege of Ticonderoga.

"The place was very strong, and garrisoned by six thousand men, under general Sinclair; nevertheless, the works were so extensive, that even this number was scarcely sufficient to defend them properly. The Americans had omitted to fortify a rugged eminence called Mount Defiance, the top of which overlooked, and effectually commanded the whole works. It was thought, perhaps, that the difficulty of the ascent would be sufficient to prevent the enemy from taking possession of it.

The British press the siege.—"On the approach of the first division of the British, the Americans abandoned and set fire to their outworks; and so expeditious were the British troops, that by the 5th of July, every post was secured, which was judged necessary for investing it completely. A road was soon after made to the very

* Pronounced, *Ry'daisail : Spaiht,*—*h* sounded harsh.

summit of that eminence which the Americans had supposed could not be ascended; and so much were they now disheartened, that they instantly abandoned the fort entirely, taking the road to Skeenesborough, at the head of lake Champlain; while their baggage, with what artillery and military stores they could carry off, was sent to the same place by water.

Losses at Skeenesborough.—"But the British generals were determined not to let them pass so easily. Both were pursued, and both overtaken. Their armed vessels consisted only of five galleys; two of which were taken, and three blown up; on which, they set fire to their boats and fortifications at Skeenesborough. On this occasion, the Americans lost two hundred boats, one hundred and thirty pieces of cannon, together with all their provisions and baggage.

"The American land forces, under colonel Francis, made a brave defence against general Fraser; and, superior in number, had almost overpowered him, when general Reidesel, with a large body of Germans, came to his assistance. The Americans were now overpowered in their turn; and, their commander being killed, they fled on all sides with great precipitation. In this action, two hundred Americans were killed, and as many taken prisoners, and above six hundred wounded, many of whom perished in the woods for want of assistance.

Retreat of general Sinclair.—"During the engagement, general Sinclair was at Castleton, about ten miles from the place; but, instead of going forward to fort Ann, the next place of strength, he repaired to the woods which lie between that fortress and New England. General Burgoyne, however, detached colonel Hill, with the ninth regiment, in order to intercept such as should attempt to retreat towards fort Ann.

"On his way, he met with a numerous body of Americans; but after an engagement of three hours, they were obliged to retire, with great loss. After so many disasters, despairing of being able to make any stand at fort Ann, they set fire to it, and retired to fort Edward. In all these engagements, the killed and wounded in the British army did not exceed two hundred men.

Perseverance of general Burgoyne.—"General Burgoyne was now obliged to suspend his operations for some time, and wait at Skeenesborough for the arrival of his tents,

provisions, and stores, but employed this interval in making roads through the country about fort Ann, and in clearing a passage for his troops to proceed against the enemy. This was attended with incredible toil; but all obstacles were surmounted with equal patience and resolution by the army.

Arrival of the British force at fort Edward.—"In short, after undergoing the utmost difficulty that could be undergone, and making every exertion that man could make, he arrived with his army before fort Edward, about the end of July. Here general Schuyler had been, for some time, endeavoring to recruit the shattered American forces, and had been joined by general Sinclair, with the remains of his army; the garrison of fort George also, situated on the lake of that name, had evacuated the place, and retired to fort Edward.

Determination of the Americans.—"But on the approach of the royal army, the Americans retired from fort Edward also, and formed their head quarters at Saratoga. Notwithstanding the great successes of the British general, they showed not the least disposition to submit, but seemed only to consider how they might make the most effectual resistance.—For this purpose, the militia was everywhere raised, and draughted to join the army at Saratoga; and such numbers of volunteers were daily added, that they soon began to recover from the alarm into which they had been thrown.

Reading Lesson CXII.

Advance of colonel St. Leger.—"That they might have a commander whose abilities could be relied on, general Arnold was appointed, who repaired to Saratoga with a considerable train of artillery; but receiving intelligence that colonel St. Leger was proceeding with great rapidity in his expedition on the Mohawk river, he removed to Stillwater, about half way between Saratoga and the junction of the Mohawk and Hudson rivers.

Siege of fort Stanwix.—"The colonel, in the meantime, had advanced as far as fort Stanwix; the siege of which he pressed with great vigor. On the 6th of August, understanding that a supply of provisions, escorted by eight or nine hundred men, was on the way to the fort,

he despatched Sir John Johnson, with a strong detachment, to intercept it. This he did so effectually, that, besides intercepting the provisions, four hundred of its guard were slain, two hundred taken, and the rest escaped with great difficulty.

"The garrison, however, were not to be intimidated by this disaster, nor by the threats or representations of the colonel; on the contrary, they made several successful sallies under colonel Willet, the second in command; and this gentleman, in company with another, even ventured out of the fort, and, eluding the vigilance of the enemy, passed through them, in order to hasten the march of general Arnold, to their assistance.

Breaking up of colonel St. Leger's force.—"Thus the affairs of colonel St. Leger seemed to be in no very favorable situation, notwithstanding his late success; and they were soon totally ruined by the desertion of the Indians. They had been alarmed by the report of general Arnold's advancing with two thousand men to the relief of the fort; and, while the colonel was attempting to give them encouragement, another report was spread, that general Burgoyne had been defeated with great slaughter, and was now flying before the Americans. On this, he was obliged to do as they thought proper; and the retreat could not be effected without the loss of the tents, and some of the artillery and military stores.

Impediments encountered by general Burgoyne.—"General Burgoyne, in the meantime, notwithstanding the difficulties he had already sustained, found that he must still encounter more. The roads he had made, with so much labor and pains, were destroyed, either by the wetness of the season, or by the enemy, so that the provisions he had brought from fort George could not arrive at his camp without the most prodigious toil.

"On hearing of the siege of fort Stanwix, by colonel St. Leger, the general determined to move forward, in hopes of enclosing the Americans between his own army and that of St. Leger, or of obtaining the command of all the country between fort Stanwix and Albany, and forming a junction with colonel St. Leger, which could not but be attended with favorable consequences.

Colonel Baum's unsuccessful attempt on Bennington.—"The only difficulty in the way of this project appeared to

be the want of provisions; and, to remedy this, general Burgoyne proposed to reduce the American magazines at Bennington. For this purpose, colonel Baum,* a German officer of great bravery, was despatched with a body of five hundred men. The place was about twenty miles to the eastward of Hudson river; and, to support colonel Baum's party, the whole army marched up the river's bank, and encamped almost opposite to Saratoga, with the river between it and that place. An advanced party was posted at Batten Kill, between the camp and Bennington, in order to support colonel Baum. On their way, the British seized a large supply of cattle and provisions, which were immediately sent to the camp; but the badness of the roads retarded their march so much, that intelligence of their design reached Bennington, where the Americans were collected in considerable force under general Stark.

"Understanding, now, that the American force was greatly superior to his own, colonel Baum acquainted general Burgoyne, who immediately despatched colonel Breyman† with a party to his assistance; but, through the same causes that had retarded the march of colonel Baum, his assistance could not arrive in time.

General Stark's successful attack on the British force.—'General Stark, in the meantime, determined to attack the two parties separately; and for this purpose advanced against colonel Baum, whom he surrounded on all sides, and attacked with the utmost violence. The British defended themselves with great valor, but were, to a man, either killed or taken.

"Colonel Breyman, after a desperate engagement, had the good fortune to effect a retreat through the darkness of the night, which otherwise he could not have done; as his men had expended all their ammunition—being forty rounds to each.

Reading Lesson CXIII.

Burgoyne's movement on Saratoga.—"General Burgoyne, thus disappointed in his attempt on Bennington, applied himself, with indefatigable diligence, to procure provisions from fort George; and having at length amassed a sufficient quantity to last for a month, he threw a

* Pronounced, *Bowm*;—*ow* sounding as in *down*. † *Bryman*.

bridge of boats over the river Hudson, which he crossed about the middle of September, encamping on the hills and plains near Saratoga.

Encounter at Stillwater.—"As soon as he approached the American army, at this time encamped at Stillwater under general Gates, he determined to make an attack; for which purpose he put himself at the head of the central division of his army, having general Fraser and colonel Breyman on the right, with generals Reidesel and Phillips on the left.

"In this position, he advanced towards the Americans on the 19th of September. But the Americans did not wait to be attacked: on the contrary, they attacked the central division with the utmost violence; and it was not until general Phillips came up with the artillery, and at eleven o'clock at night, that they could be induced to retire to their camp.

"On this occasion, the British lost about five hundred in killed and wounded, and the Americans about three hundred and nineteen. The former were very much alarmed at the obstinate resolution shown by the Americans; yet this did not prevent them from advancing towards their enemy, and posting themselves, the next day, within cannon shot of their lines. But their allies, the Indians, began to desert in great numbers.

Condition of Burgoyne's army.—"At the same time, general Burgoyne was in the highest degree mortified at receiving no intelligence of any assistance from Sir Henry Clinton, as had been stipulated. He at length received a letter from him, by which he was informed, that Sir Henry intended to make a diversion on the North River in his favor. This afforded but little comfort; however, he returned an answer by several trusty persons, whom he dispatched different ways, stating his present distressed situation, and mentioning that the provisions and other necessaries he had, would only enable him to hold out till the 12th of October.

American attempt on Ticonderoga.—"In the meantime, the Americans, in order to cut off the retreat of the British army, in the most effectual manner, undertook an expedition against Ticonderoga; but were obliged to abandon the enterprise, after having surprised all the outposts, and taken a great number of boats, with some armed vessels, and a number of prisoners.

Increasing distress of Burgoyne's army.—"The army under general Burgoyne, however, continued to labor under the greatest distresses; so that, in the beginning of October, he had been obliged to diminish the soldiers' allowance. On the 7th of that month, he determined to move towards the enemy. For this purpose, he sent a body of fifteen hundred men, to reconnoitre their left wing; intending, if possible, to break through it, in order to effect a retreat.

Attack on the British camp.—"The detachment, however, had not proceeded far, when a dreadful attack was made upon the left wing of the British army, which was with great difficulty preserved from being entirely broken, by a reïnforcement brought up by general Fraser, who was killed in the attack. After the troops had, with the most desperate efforts, regained their camp, it was most furiously assaulted by general Arnold, who, notwithstanding all opposition, would have forced the entrenchments, had he not received a dangerous wound, which obliged him to retire. Thus the attack failed on the left; but, on the right, the camp of the German reserve was forced, colonel Breyman killed, and his countrymen defeated with great slaughter, and the loss of all their artillery and baggage.

"This was by far the heaviest loss the British army had sustained, since the action at Bunkerhill. The list of killed and wounded amounted to near twelve hundred, exclusive of the Germans; but the greatest misfortune was, that the Americans had now an opening on the right and rear of the British forces; so that the army was threatened with entire destruction.

Reading Lesson CXIV.

Burgoyne attempts to retreat on Saratoga.—"General Burgoyne was obliged once more to shift his position, that the Americans might also be obliged to alter theirs. This was accomplished on the night of the 7th, without any loss; and, all the next day, he continued to offer the Americans battle; but they were now too well assured of obtaining a complete victory, by cutting off all supplies from the British, to risk a pitched battle. Wherefore, they advanced on the right side, in order to enclose him entirely;

which obliged the general to direct a retreat towards Saratoga.

"But the Americans had now stationed a great force on the ford at Hudson's river, so that the only possible retreat was by securing a passage to lake George; and to effect this, a body of workmen were detached, with a strong guard, to repair the roads and bridges that led to fort Edward. As soon as they were gone, however, the Americans seemed to prepare for an attack; which rendered it necessary to recall the guard, and the workmen being of course left exposed, could not proceed.

"In the meantime, the boats which conveyed provisions down the river, were exposed to the continual fire of the American marksmen, who took many of them; so that it became necessary to convey the provisions over land. In this extreme danger, it was resolved to march by night to fort Edward, forcing the passages at the fords, either above or below the place.

"In order to effect this the more easily, it was resolved, that the soldiers should carry their provisions on their backs, leaving behind their baggage, and every other incumbrance. But, before this could be executed, intelligence was received that the Americans had raised strong entrenchments opposite to these fords, well provided with cannon, and that they had likewise taken possession of the rising ground between fort George and fort Edward, which, in like manner, was provided with cannon.

Increase of the American army.—"All this time, the American army was increasing, by the continual arrival of militia and volunteers, from all parts. Their parties extended all along the opposite bank of the river; and some had even passed it, in order to observe the least movement of the British army. The whole force under general Gates, who had been appointed by congress to the command of the army of the north, was computed to amount to sixteen thousand men, while the army under general Burgoyne scarce amounted to six thousand; and every part of the camp was reached by the grape and rifle shot of the Americans, besides a discharge from their artillery, which was almost incessant.

Surrender of Burgoyne.—"In this state of extreme distress and danger, the British army continued with the greatest constancy and perseverance, till the evening of

the 13th of October, when, an inventory of provisions being taken, it was found that no more remained than was sufficient to serve for three days; and a council of war being called, it was unanimously determined, that there was no method now remaining but to treat with the Americans. In consequence of this, a negotiation was opened, the next day, which speedily terminated in the capitulation of the whole British army; the principal article of which was, that the troops were to have a free passage to Britain, on condition of not serving against America during the war.

"On this occasion, general Gates, with a generous magnanimity, ordered his army to keep within their camp, while the British soldiers went to a place appointed for them to lay down their arms, that the latter might not have the additional mortification of being made a spectacle on so melancholy an event.

"The number of those who surrendered at Saratoga, amounted to five thousand seven hundred and fifty, according to the American accounts; the list of sick and wounded left in the camp, when the army retreated to Saratoga, to five hundred and twenty-eight; and the number of those lost by other accidents, since the taking of Ticonderoga, to near three thousand. Thirty-five brass field-pieces, seven thousand stand of arms, clothing for an equal number of soldiers, with the tents, military chest, and stores, constituted the booty on this occasion.

Operations of general Clinton.—"Sir Henry Clinton, in the meantime, had sailed up the North River, and destroyed the two forts called Montgomery and Clinton, with fort Constitution, and another place called Continental Village, where were barracks for two thousand men. Seventy large cannon were carried away, besides a number of smaller artillery, and a great quantity of stores and ammunition; a large boom and chain, reaching across the river from fort Montgomery to a point of land called Anthony's Nose, and which cost not less than seven thousand pounds sterling, were partly destroyed, and partly carried away, as was also another boom of little less value, at fort Constitution. The loss of the British army was but small in number, though some officers of great merit were killed in the different attacks.

"Another attack was made by Sir James Wallace, with

some frigates, and a body of land forces under general Vaughan. The place which now suffered was named Esopus. The fortifications were destroyed, and the town itself was wantonly reduced to ashes, as Continental Village had been before.

"But these successes, of whatever importance they might be, were now disregarded by both parties. They served only to irritate the Americans, flushed with their success; and they were utterly insufficient to raise the spirits of the British, who were now thrown into the utmost dismay."

Consequences of the surrender of Burgoyne.—Sir Henry Clinton, on hearing the news of Burgoyne's capitulation, immediately retreated to New York; and Ticonderoga, and all other northern posts, were abandoned to the Americans.

A new light of hope began now to beam on the cause of America; as it was sufficiently proved that no perfection of valor, discipline, or equipment, could prevail against the determined spirit of a people resolved to be free, and now fairly accustomed to encounter the veteran troops of Europe.

Reading Lesson CXV.

Adoption of a state constitution.—From the scenes of disquiet and destruction, which we are now called to contemplate, it is pleasing to turn to the peaceful operation of the principles of freedom, in the formation of the civil structure of the state.

A convention, for the adoption of a state constitution, was called, in April, 1777; and, at Kingston, on the 8th of May, a council of safety, consisting of fifteen, was chosen and invested with full powers for temporary government. Among the prominent names of this body, we find those of John Morin Scott, Robert R. Livingston, Gouverneur Morris, John Jay, and John Sloss Hobart.

First choice of a governor for the state of New York.—The convention chose, for governor, George Clinton,—whose patriotism and courage, as well as political sagacity, displayed during the eighteen years of his incumbency, amply sanctioned the wisdom of the choice. The office to which Mr. Clinton was appointed, demanded great

firmness and decision, as well as extensive popular favor. The critical period of transition, in which a state is remodelled, and adopts new institutions, and new forms of government, is necessarily one requiring a combination of the highest qualities of talent and character in him who presides at the change. But in no instance was this more emphatically true, than in the case of the great political revolution of New York, by which it became an independent republic. The confusion attending all great political changes, gives scope to disorder and discontent; and in New York, the elements of conflict were in full life, in the opposition of not a few men of wealth and influence, to the principles of the revolution. Through all these impediments, however, Mr. Clinton succeeded in conducting the newly formed state to a firm and settled condition.

Other state officers chosen for the first time.—The following individuals were chosen, by the convention, to fill the various offices in the judiciary department: Robert R. Livingston, chancellor; John Jay, chief-justice; Robert Yates and John Sloss Hobart, judges; and Egbert Benson, attorney-general.

First meeting of the legislature of the state of New York.—The first republican legislature of New York, met at Kingston, on the 1st of September, 1777; and, on the 10th, a quorum having been formed, governor Clinton delivered his first official address to that body. In his speech the representatives of the people were congratulated, on their behalf, on the success which, in various instances, had attended the operations of the American army.

Delegates chosen to the continental congress.—The legislature proceeded to the election of state delegates to the continental congress; and the following individuals were appointed,—Philip Livingston, James Duane, Francis Lewis, William Duer, and Gouverneur Morris. The state of New York was thus, at length, regularly represented, as a member of the national union, in its incipient form.

Adjournment of the legislature.—The new assembly was not permitted to remain long in session. The attack on the Highlands made it necessary that the legislature should adjourn on the 7th of October. Its next session was at Poughkeepsie, early in the following year.

SEC. IV.—EVENTS OF 1778 AND 1779.

Legislative proceedings in 1778.—The unsettled question of the boundary lines of the state, continued a source of vexatious agitation; and the principal action of the legislature, during this year, regarded the old controversy with Vermont. A resort to compulsory measures was plainly threatened; and the governor, in acquiescence with the will of the legislature, pressed the subject on the attention of congress. But, as yet, no decisive result was attained.

Washington's army encamped at White Plains.—General Clinton having succeeded to the command held by general Howe, had been, for some time, occupying Philadelphia. But, in obedience to orders from England, he hastily evacuated that city, to avoid a surprise by the troops of France, then on their passage, and expected speedily to arrive. He withdrew his troops through New Jersey, in the direction of New York, and, owing to the misconduct of general Lee, with but little annoyance, reached the city by way of Sandyhook. The policy of the American commander, was to hem in and confine the British forces, and watch for opportunities of attacking detachments sent out for purposes of forage or plunder.

Washington, accordingly, after the return of Clinton to New York, took up his position at White Plains, and there lay encamped till late in autumn.

Reading Lesson CXVI.

Massacre at Cherry Valley.—The only scene of warlike violence, within the borders of the state of New York, during the year 1778, was the inhuman massacre perpetrated, in the month of November, by the hostile Indians, on the inhabitants of Cherry Valley.

Colonel Alden of Massachusetts had been stationed with his regiment, at a post in that quarter, then frontier ground. Here he was surprised by the partisan leader, Butler, with his mixed force of tories and Canadians, aided by the Indian Brandt and his followers. The surprise was complete, owing to the perfect knowledge of the localities, possessed by the invaders. This mixed force seems

to have been of the lowest description, and to have adopted the brutal modes of war, practised by the savages. Colonel Alden and many of his men were barbarously murdered; and the men, women, and children, of the adjoining settlement, massacred in cold blood, with all the circumstances of atrocity which characterized the warfare of the Indian tribes.

Expedition against the hostile Indians.—The Indian outrages at Cherry Valley, and in addition to these, the horrid tragedy of Wyoming,—which we pass by, as belonging to the annals of Pennsylvania,—excited a deep and universal indignation against the perpetrators. It was deemed indispensable to the peace of the border region, that a memorable chastisement should be inflicted on those of the Indian race, who, instigated by Johnson and the English, had committed these atrocities on the settlements friendly to the cause of independence.

A force, under the command of general Sullivan, was despatched, in the summer of 1779, through New Jersey, to the territory of the Indians adjoining the region of Wyoming. The requisite stores and artillery were conveyed up the Susquehanna, in boats. Having reached the Indian country, Sullivan awaited the approach of another division of the army, under the American general, James Clinton, which was to meet him by ascending the Mohawk.

Devastation of the territory of the Onondagas.—Of all the Six Nations, the Onondagas had distinguished themselves by their hostility to the American party, and by the atrocities which they had perpetrated in the villages and remote settlements. Colonel Van Schaick, and others of the New-York officers, conducted their force into the country of this tribe, and, after an encounter with them, in which a number of their bravest warriors were slain, devastated their corn-fields and burned their villages.

Junction of the American forces.—The division under Clinton, opened, with incredible toil and perseverance, a road to Otsego lake; and, over this road, boats were carried, for the purpose of embarking the troops on the lake, and forming the junction with general Sullivan's command. This object was, at length, successfully accomplished.

Final overthrow of the hostile Indians.—The two divisions continued their advance into the hostile territory,

burning the villages and destroying the crops of the Indians, till met, on the 29th of August, by Butler and Brandt, with their whole force of tories, Canadians, and Indians. The battle was not long sustained. The enemy were totally discomfited, and their spirit so entirely crushed that they made no subsequent attempt, till long after, to rally, or, in any way, annoy the friends of American freedom.

Exemption of the Oneidas from invasion.—The Oneidas alone, of the confederate tribes, having maintained peace and neutrality, were exempted from the retributive devastation inflicted on the others; and, the object of the invasion having been fully accomplished, the American troops withdrew from the scene of hostilities.

Reading Lesson CXVII.

Clinton's expedition up the Hudson.—Winter and spring passed without any attempt on the part of the British force in New York; and the main body of the American army continued in cantonments in New Jersey. But, on the 1st of June, Sir Henry Clinton proceeded to execute the design which he had formed of seizing the posts on the Hudson, with a view to cut off the communications between the eastern and middle states, which were so important to the Americans. He was not without hopes that, if he should be successful in his first attempts, he might carry the fortified points and passes farther up the river, and thus secure the entire command of it.

"Being informed," says our eminent historian, Mr. Sparks, "of the preparation in New York, and penetrating the designs of the British commander, Washington was at hand in time to prevent the execution of the second part of the scheme. By rapid marches, he drew his troops from their cantonments in New Jersey, and placed them in such positions as to discourage Sir Henry Clinton from attempting anything farther, than the capture of the two posts above mentioned, which were in no condition to resist a formidable fleet, and an army of more than six thousand men. After this event, which happened on the 1st of June, Clinton withdrew his forces down the river, and, at length, to New York; leaving a strong garrison at each of the posts, with orders to extend and

complete the works begun by the Americans; and also directing such a number of armed vessels and boats to remain there, as would be necessary to furnish supplies, and contribute to their defence.

General Washington's head-quarters.—"General Washington removed his head-quarters to New Windsor, a few miles above West Point, distributing his army chiefly in and near the Highlands, but stationing a force on each side of the river below, sufficient to check any sudden incursion of the enemy.

Burning of New Haven, Fairfield, and Norwalk.—"The system of devastation and plunder was vigorously pursued by the British. About the beginning of July, a detachment of two thousand six hundred men, under governor Tryon, sailed from New York into Long-Island Sound. They first landed at New Haven, plundered the inhabitants indiscriminately, and burned the stores on the wharfs. This being done, they embarked, and landed at Fairfield and Norwalk, which towns were reduced to ashes. Dwelling-houses, shops, churches, schoolhouses, and the shipping in the harbors, were destroyed. The soldiers pillaged, without restraint, committing acts of violence, and exhibiting the horrors of war, in some of their most revolting forms. It does not appear that there were troops, magazines, or public property, in either of the towns. The waste and distress fell on individuals, who were pursuing the ordinary occupations of life. The people rallied in self-defence, and a few were killed; but the enemy retired to their vessels before the militia could assemble in large numbers."

Reading Lesson CXVIII.

Intended attack on Stony Point.—"The British commander hoped that this invasion of Connecticut would draw away the American army from the Highlands, to a position where he might bring on an engagement under favorable circumstances. Washington's habitual caution guarded him against allowing such an advantage. On the contrary, while the enemy's forces were thus divided, he resolved to attack the strong post at Stony Point. The necessity of doing something to satisfy the expectations of the people, and reconcile them to the defensive

plan, which he was obliged to pursue, the value of the acquisition in itself, with respect to the men, artillery, and stores, which composed the garrison, the effect it would have upon the successive operations of the campaign, and the check it would give to the depredations of the enemy,' were, as he said, the motives which prompted him to this undertaking. He reconnoitred the post himself, and instructed major Henry Lee, who was stationed near it with a party of cavalry, to gain all the information in his power, as to the condition of the works and the strength of the garrison.

Command assigned to general Wayne.—"The enterprise was intrusted to general Wayne, who commanded a body of light infantry in advance of the main army, where he was placed to watch the movements of the enemy, to prevent their landing, and to attack separate parties, whenever opportunities should offer. Having procured all the requisite information, and determined to make the assault, Washington communicated general instructions to Wayne, in writing and conversation; leaving the rest to the well-tried bravery and skill of that gallant officer.

The assault on Stony Point.—"The night of the 15th of July was fixed on for the attack. After a march of fourteen miles during the afternoon, the party arrived within a mile and a half of the enemy, at eight o'clock in the evening. The works were then reconnoitred by the commander and the principal officers; and, at half past eleven, the whole moved forward, in two columns, to the assault. The van of the right column consisted of one hundred and fifteen volunteers, with unloaded muskets and fixed bayonets, preceded by twenty picked men to remove the abatis and other obstructions. One hundred volunteers, preceded likewise by twenty men, composed the van of the left. Positive orders were given not to fire, but to rely wholly on the bayonet, which orders were faithfully obeyed. A deep morass in front of the enemy's works, and a double row of abatis, retarded their progress; but these obstacles were soon overcome by the ardor of the troops; and the assault began, about twenty minutes after twelve. From that time, they pushed forward in the face of a tremendous fire of musketry and cannon loaded with grapeshot; and both columns met in the centre of the enemy's works, each arriving nearly at the

same instant. General Wayne, who advanced with the right column, received a slight wound in the head, and was supported into the works, by his aids-de-camp.

Success of the attack.—"The assault was successful in all its parts. The number of prisoners was five hundred and forty-three; and the number killed, on the side of the enemy, was sixty-three. Of the assailing party fifteen were killed, and eighty-three wounded. Several cannons and mortars of various sizes, a large number of muskets, shells, shot, and tents, and a proportional quantity of stores, were taken. The action is allowed to have been one of the most brilliant of the revolution. Congress passed resolves complimentary to the officers and privates, granting specific rewards, and directing the value of all the military stores taken in the garrison to be divided among the troops, in proportion to the pay of the officers and men. Three different medals were ordered to be struck, emblematical of the action, and awarded respectively to general Wayne, colonel Fleury, and colonel Stewart. Congress also passed a vote of thanks to general Washington 'for the vigilance, wisdom, and magnanimity, with which he had conducted the military operations of the states,' and especially as manifested in his orders for the late attack."

Reading Lesson CXIX.

Proposed attack upon Verplanck's Point.—"It was Washington's first intention, if the storming of Stony Point should prove successful, to make an immediate attempt against Verplanck's Point, on the opposite side of the river. For this purpose he had requested general Wayne to forward the intelligence to head-quarters, through the hands of general McDougall, who commanded at West Point, and who would be in readiness to send down a detachment, by the way of Peekskill, to attack Verplanck's Point on the land side, while it was cannonaded from Stony Point across the river. By some misunderstanding, the messenger neglected to call at West Point; and thus several hours were lost before general McDougall received the intelligence. To this delay has been ascribed the failure of the undertaking against Verplanck's Point. From the letters of general McDougall and other officers, writ

ten at the time, however, it is evident that the want of horses and conveniences for the transportation of artillery, was such, as to render it impossible, in any event, to arrive at Verplanck's Point with the adequate means of assault, before the enemy had assembled a sufficient force to give entire security to the garrison.

Dismantling of Stony Point.—"When Washington examined Stony Point, after the capture, he resolved to evacuate the post, remove the cannon and stores, and destroy the works. Being accessible by the enemy's vessels of war, a larger number of men would be required for the defence than could properly be spared from the main army; and, at the same time, it might be necessary to hazard a general action, which was by no means to be desired on such terms as would be imposed, and for such an object. Everything was brought off, except one heavy cannon. The enemy afterwards reöccupied the post, and repaired the works.

Paulus Hook surprised by major Lee.—"About a month after the storming of Stony Point, another enterprise, similar in its character, and not less daring, was executed by major Henry Lee. At the head of three hundred men, and a troop of dismounted dragoons, he surprised the enemy's post at Paulus Hook, opposite to New York, and took one hundred and fifty-nine prisoners; having two only of his party killed, and three wounded. The plan originated with major Lee; and great praise was bestowed upon him, for the address and bravery with which it was executed. A medal of gold, commemorative of the event, was ordered by congress to be struck and presented to him.

Works at West Point constructed.—"No other events of much importance happened in the army under Washington's immediate command, during the campaign. The British troops remained inactive at New York; and the Americans held their ground in the Highlands. In the course of this year, the works at West Point and in its vicinity, were chiefly constructed. A part of the time, two thousand five hundred men were on fatigue duty, every day. Before the end of July, the head-quarters of the commander-in-chief were removed to West Point, where he continued for the rest of the season."

Reading Lesson CXX.

Severity of the winter of 1779–80.—Towards the end of December, 1779, Sir Henry Clinton, intending an attack on Charleston, South Carolina, set sail from New York, with a formidable force, on board a fleet of men of war and transports, under the command of vice-admiral, Arbuthnot. Dr. Williams, in his history, gives the following graphic sketch of the condition of the city at that time.

"While Sir Henry Clinton was employed in his voyage to Charleston, and in the siege of that place, the garrison at New York seem not to have been wholly free from apprehensions for their own safety. An intense frost, accompanied with great falls of snow, began about the middle of December, 1779, and shut up the navigation of the port of New York, from the sea, within a few days after the departure of the fleet under admiral Arbuthnot.

"The severity of the weather increased to so great a degree, that, towards the middle of January, all communications with New York, by water, were entirely cut off, and as many new ones opened by the ice. The inhabitants could scarcely be said to be in an insular state. Horses with heavy carriages could go over the ice into the Jerseys, from one island to another.

"The passage on the North River, even in the widest part, from New York to Powles Hook, was, about the 19th of January, practicable for the heaviest cannon: an event which had been unknown, in the memory of man. Provisions were soon after transported upon sledges, and a detachment of cavalry marched upon the ice from New York to Staten island, which was a distance of eleven miles.

Apprehended attack on New York.—"The city of New York, in these circumstances, was considered as much exposed to attacks from the American troops; and it was currently reported that general Washington was meditating a grand attack upon New York, with his whole force, in different divisions. Some time before this, major-general Pattison, commandant at New York, having received an address from many of the inhabitants, offering to put themselves in military array, he thought the present a favorable opportunity of trying the sincerity of their professions.

"Accordingly he issued a proclamation, calling upon all the male inhabitants from the age of sixteen to sixty, to take up arms. The requisition was so readily complied with, that, in a few days, forty companies, from the six wards of the city, were enrolled, officered, and under arms, to the number of two thousand six hundred; many substantial citizens serving in the ranks of each company. Other volunteer companies were formed; and the city was put into a very strong posture of defence.

Descent on Staten island.—"No attack, however, was made upon New York, whatever design might originally have been meditated; but an attempt was made upon Staten island, where there were about one thousand eight hundred men, under the command of brigadier-general Stirling,* who were well entrenched. General Washington, whose army was hutted at Morristown, sent a detachment of two thousand seven hundred men, with six pieces of cannon, two mortars, and some horses, commanded by lord Stirling,† who arrived at Staten island, early in the morning of the 15th of January.

"The advanced posts of the British troops retired upon the approach of the Americans, who formed the line, and made some movements in the course of the day; but they withdrew in the night, after having burned one house, pillaged some others, and carried off with them about two hundred head of cattle.

"Immediately on the arrival of the Americans on Staten island, lieutenant-general Knyphausen had embarked six hundred men, to attempt a passage, and to support general Stirling; but the floating ice compelled them to return. It is imagined, however, that the appearance of these transports, with the British troops on board, which the Americans could see towards the close of the day, induced the latter to make so precipitate a retreat."

Reading Lesson CXXI.

Inhuman treatment of American prisoners.—Among the most painful consequences of the war, were the cruelties practised by the British soldiery on such of the American

* The British officer of that name.

† The American general,—formerly Mr. Alexander,—who had become heir to the estate and title of earl of Stirling.

people as fell under their power. The revolted colonists, stigmatized as rebels, were, in the spirit peculiar to all the regular armies of that day, treated, not as open enemies or honorable prisoners of war, but as traitors to their king and country. The highest officers, not less than the lowest of their men, seem to have regarded no treatment as too harsh for such Americans as had adopted revolutionary sentiments. The disgraceful deeds of lord Dunmore in Virginia, and of ex-governor Tryon in Connecticut, and the yet more disgraceful sanction of their predatory expeditions by the English government, the deliberate murder, in repeated instances, of officers who had surrendered on the field, all leave little doubt regarding the course which a brutalized soldiery, hardened by the military life of that day, were accustomed to pursue, in relation to the rebel provincials who fell into their hands.

The Jersey prison-ship.—The American prisoners taken in battle, were, in large numbers, sent on board the Jersey prison-ship, where, by rigorous confinement, neglect, disease, and starvation, they were soon cut off. The horrors of this receptacle of the unfortunate, surpassed those of the black-hole of Calcutta itself. The following sketch of them is extracted from the account given by the Rev. Mr. Andros, who, in his youth, had sailed as a privateersman from New London.

"We were captured on the 27th August, by the Solebay frigate, and safely stowed away in the old Jersey prison-ship, at New York.

"This was an old sixty-four gun ship, which, through age, had become unfit for farther actual service. She was stripped of every spar and all her rigging. After a battle with the French fleet, her lion figure-head was taken away to repair another ship; no appearance of ornament was left; and nothing remained but an old, unsightly, rotten hulk. Her dark and filthy external appearance perfectly corresponded with the death and despair that reigned within; and nothing could be more foreign from truth than to paint her with colors flying, or any circumstance or appendage to please the eye.

"She was moored about three quarters of a mile to the eastward of Brooklyn ferry, near a tide-mill, on the Long-Island shore. The nearest distance to land was about twenty rods. And, doubtless, no other ship in the

British navy ever proved the means of the destruction of so many human beings. It is computed that not less than eleven thousand American seamen perished in her.

"On the commencement of the first evening, we were driven down to darkness between decks, secured by iron gratings and an armed soldiery. And now a scene of horror, which baffles all description, presented itself. On every side, wretched, desponding shapes of men, could be seen. Around the well-room an armed guard were forcing the prisoners to the winches, to clear the ship of water, and prevent her sinking; and little else could be heard but a roar of mutual execrations, reproaches, and insults.

"When I first became an inmate of this abode of suffering, despair, and death, there were about four hundred prisoners on board; but in a short time they amounted to twelve hundred. And in proportion to our numbers, the mortality increased.

"All the most deadly diseases were pressed into the service of the king of terrors; but his prime-ministers were dysentery, small-pox, and yellow fever. There were two hospital ships near to the old Jersey; but these were soon so crowded with the sick, that they could receive no more. The consequence was that the diseased and the healthy were mingled together in the main ship. In a short time, we had two hundred or more sick and dying, lodged in the fore part of the lower gun-deck, where all the prisoners were confined at night.

"Utter derangement was a common symptom of yellow fever; and to increase the horror of the darkness that shrouded us, (for we were allowed no light betwixt decks,) the voice of warning would be heard, 'Take heed to yourselves; there is a madman stalking through the ship with a knife in his hand.' I sometimes found the man a corpse in the morning by whose side I laid myself down at night.

"While so many were sick with raging fever, there was a loud cry for water; but none could be had, except on the upper deck, and but one allowed to ascend at a time. The suffering then from the rage of thirst, during the night, was very great. Nor was it at all times safe to attempt to go up. Provoked by the continual cry for leave to ascend, when there was already one on deck, the sentry would thrust them back with his bayonet. By one

of these thrusts, which was more spiteful and violent than common, I had a narrow escape of my life.

"In the morning, the hatchways were thrown open; and we were allowed to ascend, all at once, and remain on the upper deck during the day. But the first object that met our view, in the morning, was a most appalling spectacle,—a boat loaded with dead bodies, conveying them to the Long-Island shore, where they were very slightly covered with sand. I sometimes used to stand to count the number of times the shovel was filled with sand to cover a dead body. And certain I am that a few high tides or torrents of rain, must have disinterred them. And had they not been removed, I should suppose the shore, even now, would be covered with huge piles of the bones of American seamen.

"There is one palliating circumstance, as to the inhumanity of the British, which ought to be mentioned. The prisoners were furnished with buckets and brushes, to cleanse the ship, and with vinegar to sprinkle her, inside. But their indolence and despair were such that they would not use them, or but rarely. And, indeed, at this time, the encouragement to do it, was small. For the whole ship, from her keel to the tafferel, was equally infected, and contained pestilence sufficient to desolate a world; disease and death were wrought into her very timbers."

"If there was any principle among the prisoners that could not be shaken, it was the love of their country. I knew no one to be seduced into the British service. They attempted to force one of our prize brig's crew into the navy; but he chose rather to die than perform any duty, and he was again restored to the prison-ship."

SEC. V.—EVENTS OF 1780 AND 1781.

Reading Lesson CXXII.

Return of general Clinton to New York.—The success of Clinton's expedition to South Carolina, left him at liberty to depute lord Cornwallis to the command in that region, with instructions to finish the subjugation of the province. Clinton himself, with his troops, returned, early in June, to his former position in New York, where, as the main operations of the American army were, at that time, conducted farther to the south, he received little molestation.

Devastations committed by Johnson and the Indians.—About midsummer, a body of tories, aided by Brandt and his Indians, laid waste the district of Canajoharie. Sir John Johnson, with his Indian followers, attacked and burned Schoharie, and, on the 18th of October, destroyed Caughnawaga, devastated the whole valley of the Schoharie creek, and thence proceeded up the north side of the Mohawk; burning and destroying the property of the inhabitants, wherever he passed.

Defeat of colonel Brown.—General Van Rensselaer, who commanded in this district, gave orders to colonel Brown, to draw out the militia, and withstand the invading force. But Johnson's troops greatly exceeded in numbers; and colonel Brown, with a considerable body of his men, fell, in their unsuccessful attempt.

Johnson takes post among the Mohawks.—Johnson having strengthened the fortified village—or castle, as it was called—of the Mohawks, by a breastwork thrown across a neck of land, stationed there his regiment of regulars and tories: his Indians were posted on a height, in an adjacent wood. General Van Rensselaer attacked and drove out the Indians, who fled towards the Susquehanna. But Johnson's own command kept their opponents at bay till night, when they made a speedy retreat, and effected their escape.

Humanity appears to have formed no part of the creed of Sir John Johnson. It seems hardly credible that a human being could have been found capable of perpetrating the atrocities in which this so-called *nobleman* was, for successive years, engaged, hounding on the savages of the forest against the inoffensive people of his own native region. The British veterans, inured to the horrors of systematized war, might plead their accustomed habits, in justification of their deeds of destruction. But no such apology could be made for him who voluntarily relinquished the ease and comfort of a wealthy landholder for the life of the camp, and who, knowing well the ferocious habits of the Indian race, could deliberately lead them to their inhuman acts of havoc, against his former friends and neighbors.

Reading Lesson CXXIII.

Treason of Arnold.—The year 1780 was marked by one event which forms the only instance of treason recorded against an officer of the American army. Arnold, in the early part of the war, had, on many occasions, distinguished himself by his intrepidity and devotedness, in the cause of his country; but, during his stay in Philadelphia, when in command there, after the evacuation of that city by the British, he had given way to indulgence in extravagance and dissipation, and even to dishonorable expedients for obtaining money. He had, on the last-mentioned ground, been tried and found guilty; but, in consideration of his former services, was only subjected to a formal reprimand by the commander-in-chief. Stung by conscious guilt, degraded in public estimation, bankrupt in circumstances, and burning with the desire of vengeance, he formed, it would seem, the base determination of betraying the cause of his country.

In this state of feeling, he cast his eye upon the command of West Point, as a station which would enable him to make good terms with the enemy; and pleading the well-known fact of his severe wounds, as disabling him from more active service, he solicited, and, not without difficulty, arising from his tarnished character, obtained the post.

During Washington's absence, he had opened a correspondence with the British commander, through major Andre, acting adjutant-general. His overtures were, as might be expected, gladly received; and as such work required the aid of secret personal interviews to complete it, Andre was furnished with the requisite passports to enable him to come and go on the errand of treason. The design was approaching near to its execution, when it was frustrated, on the morning of the 23d of September, by the patriotism and fidelity of a patrolling party of Americans, who arrested Andre, on his return from an interview with Arnold.

Capture of major Andre.—The party had, at first, allowed Andre to pass. But a suspicion having arisen in their minds, that all was not right, Andre was recalled and examined. He allowed himself to be entrapped by an admission that he was on his way to the British camp.

His passport, under the feigned name of Andersen, seemed correct. But appearances being still unsatisfactory to his captors, he was searched; and in his boot was found the description of the fort, and other memorandums connected with the fatal agreement.

Andre now attempted to work on the fidelity of the Americans, by the offer of his gold watch, and of farther remuneration, as a bribe, to induce them to set him free. The offer was rejected with scorn. But he was unfortunately allowed to despatch a warning note to Arnold, announcing his capture; by which means the traitor was enabled to make a seasonable escape. The unfortunate Andre was then marched within the American lines, and given up to the proper officer. The honest men who performed this important service to their country, were John Paulding, David Williams, and Isaac Van Wert: They were afterwards rewarded, by congress, with pensions, and with medals commemorative of their integrity and patriotism.

Andre's trial.—The circumstances in which Andre had been arrested, subjected him to trial as a spy. General Washington who had arrived on the 25th, and received intelligence of the circumstances, anxious to preserve the strictest justice in the proceeding, allowed the prisoner the full benefit of his brevet rank, and assigned the case to a board of general officers, among whom were major-general Greene, lord Stirling, Lafayette, baron Steuben, and others.

"Major Andre was examined before them, and the particulars of his case inquired into; and they reported to the American commander-in-chief, that major Andre came on shore from the Vulture sloop-of-war, in the night, on an interview with general Arnold, in a private and secret manner; that he changed his dress within the American lines; and, under a feigned name, and in a disguised habit, passed the American works at Stony and Verplanck's Points, on the evening of the 22d of September; that he was taken on the morning of the 23d, at Tarrytown, he being then on his way to New York; and that, when taken, he had in his possession several papers which contained intelligence for the enemy.—They therefore determined, that he ought to be considered as a spy from the enemy; and that, agreeably to the law and usage of nations, he ought to suffer death.

Fate of Andre.—" Sir Henry Clinton, lieutenant-general Robertson, and the late American general, Arnold, all wrote pressing letters,—the latter threatening ones,—to general Washington on the occasion, in order to prevent the decision of the board of general officers from being put in force; but their applications were ineffectual. Major Andre was hanged at Tappan, on the 2d of October, 1780. He met his fate with great firmness, but appeared somewhat hurt that he was not allowed a military form of death, for which he had solicited.

Opinions respecting Andre's sentence.—" Major Andre was a gentleman of very amiable qualities, had a taste for literature and the fine arts, and possessed many accomplishments. His death, therefore, was regretted even by his enemies; and the seeming severity of the determination concerning him, was much exclaimed against in Great Britain. It was, however, generally acknowledged by impartial persons, that there was nothing in the execution of this unfortunate gentleman but what was perfectly consonant to the rules of war."

Reading Lesson CXXIV.

Arnold's justification of himself.—" Arnold was, in accordance with his bargain, made a brigadier-general in the king's service, and published an address to the inhabitants of America, dated at New York, October 7th, in which he endeavored to justify his desertion of their cause. He said, that when he first engaged in it, he conceived the rights of his country to be in danger, and that duty and honor called him to her defence. A redress of grievances was his only aim and object; and therefore he acquiesced unwillingly in the declaration of independence, because he thought it precipitate. But, what now induced him to desert their cause, was the disgust he had conceived at the French alliance, and at the refusal of congress to comply with the last terms offered by Great Britain, which he thought equal to all their expectations, and to all their wishes.

Facts respecting Arnold.—" The Americans, however, accounted for the conduct of Arnold, in a different and in a more probable and satisfactory manner. They alleged that he had so involved himself in debts and difficulties by

his extravagant manner of living, that he had rendered it very inconvenient for him to continue there; that after the evacuation of Philadelphia by the British troops, Arnold, being invested with the command in that city, had made the house of Mr. Penn, which was the best in the city, his head quarters. This he had furnished in an elegant and expensive manner, and lived in a style far beyond his income.

"It was manifest, they said, that he could, at first, have no great aversion to the French alliance, because that when M. Gerard, minister plenipotentiary from the court of France, arrived at Philadelphia, in July, 1778, general Arnold early and earnestly solicited that minister, with his whole suite, to take apartments at his house, until a proper one could be provided by order of congress. This offer M. Gerard accepted, and continued with him some weeks.

"The French minister resided upwards of fourteen months in Philadelphia; during which time general Arnold kept up a most friendly and intimate acquaintance with him, and there was a continual interchange of dinners, balls, routs, and concerts: so that M. Gerard must have believed, that in general Arnold he had found and left one of the warmest friends the court of France had in America. He was also one of the first in congratulating the chevalier De la Luzerne, the second French minister."

Such are the remarks of Dr. Williams, on the character and conduct of Arnold. The baffled traitor was afterwards employed by the British commander, on marauding expeditions against the inhabitants of the coast of Virginia, and against New London, which he conducted in the true spirit of a renegade bent on revenge, destruction, and plunder.

He died in England, disliked and shunned by the officers of the British army, and unsustained by any sympathy with the traitorous act which now covers his name with infamy.

Reading Lesson CXXV.

Continued hostilities in the interior.—In the early part of the year 1781, the hostile force of mingled tories, Canadians, and Indians, continued to harass the interior of

the state. Several of the garrison of fort Schuyler, were captured by them; and, for a time, it was feared that the place would fall into their hands. But major Fish, by great efforts, succeeded in relieving it.

This post, so important to the safety of the surrounding country, was held, in the month of July, by another brave citizen of New York, an early leader in the cause of liberty, colonel Marinus Willet. A party of tories and Indians were, at this time, ravaging the Mohawk valley, and had dared to burn a village, not far from Schenectady. Colonel Willet, with his accustomed vigilance, had ascertained their numbers and direction, and, taking advantage of a dark night, drew out a party of his men, and proceeded to the enemy's camp, situated in a swamp in Cherry Valley. When near to the spot, he was opportunely joined by a band of thirty men, under major McKean. The united force reached the swamp about daybreak.

Colonel Willet disposed his men in two parallel lines, concealed behind intervening trees. Two men were then despatched, as a decoy, to show themselves to the enemy, and immediately retreat between the lines, as if unexpectedly discovered. The ruse was successful. The Indians came on fiercely, in pursuit, and, falling into the ambuscade, were received with a destructive fire. The survivors, then attempting to screen themselves behind the surrounding trees, were driven out, at the point of the bayonet, and pursued through their own camp towards the Susquehanna.

Encounter at Johnson hall.—Colonel Willet again distinguished himself, in a successful battle, with the same species of force, in the vicinity of Johnson hall, the mansion of the distinguished family of that name. A British officer, major Ross, had encamped, with a body of six hundred British, Canadian, tory, and Indian troops, not far from the hall, and about a mile from the village of Johnstown.

Colonel Willet, on the 22d of August, marched from his post, with a party of three hundred men, for the purpose of attacking the enemy's camp. To facilitate his design, he detached colonel Harper, with a hundred men, to make a circuit, and fall on the enemy's rear.

The British commander, having learned that a body of

Americans was approaching, drew out his whole force, to meet them; and the overwhelming number thus brought to bear on the diminished party of colonel Willet, succeeded, notwithstanding his brave efforts to rally them, in driving them back upon the hall, and, subsequently, the village. Here, a reinforcement of militia, amounting to two hundred men, restored the fate of the day; and colonel Harper having now commenced his attack on the enemy's rear, they were soon broken and utterly routed.

The pursuit was briskly kept up, for miles, by the American troops. The savage Butler, who had, for years, spread devastation and terror among the peaceful inhabitants of that region, here met his merited fate. The Oneida Indians had, ere this, adopted a different policy from that of the other tribes of the Indian confederacy, and joined cause with the American people. A party of Oneidas had, on the present occasion, taken the lead in pursuit of the enemy's retreating force; and one of their warriors signalized himself by the death of the merciless foe of the American settlers.

Butler, well mounted, had swum his horse over West Canada creek, and, having reached the bank in safety, turned, and defied his pursuers. The Oneida Indian, mentioned above, had followed so closely, as to be on the bank, opposite to Butler, at that moment. Raising his rifle, he fired, and brought Butler to the ground. "Then," says Mr. Campbell,* in his account of the battle, "throwing down his rifle and blanket, the Indian plunged into the creek, and swam across," "raised his tomahawk, and, with a yell, sprang like a tiger, upon his fallen foe." Butler, though disabled, still retained strength enough to supplicate for mercy,—but in vain. The Oneida, reminding him of his own merciless massacre of others, screamed out the words "Cherry Valley!" as he drove the deadly tomahawk into his brain.

Perplexities of Sir Henry Clinton.—The embarrassed situation of the British army under Cornwallis in Virginia, rendered general Clinton extremely desirous of detaching what aid to him he could spare. But Washington continuing encamped at White Plains, and threaten-

* See his History of Tryon county,—a work rich in interest, and full of instruction regarding the scenes and times on which we are now dwelling.

ing a descent upon the city of New York, the moment that any troops should be withdrawn from it, the British commander was forced to confine himself to his position, so as to avoid hazarding the loss of a place so important, as a centre of operations for the armies and fleets of Great Britain.

Arnold's expedition against New London.—To induce Washington to weaken his force by detaching a part of it, Clinton sent out the traitor Arnold on one of those ravaging expeditions, so disgraceful to the British name and arms. The party was directed to attack and destroy New London, in Connecticut; and the errand was faithfully performed by the wanton burning of private as well as public property, to a vast amount, although the town was Arnold's own native place.

Withdrawal of the American army from White Plains.—Washington, however, was not induced to divert his attention from his plan of operation, which was now decided; and, still keeping Clinton on the alert for an attempt of the American army on New York, he did not withdraw from White Plains till the position of Cornwallis, at Yorktown, induced him to proceed thither, with the army, for the purpose of securing the capture of Cornwallis and his troops,—a result, which, to the unbounded joy of America, was effected on the 19th of October, and virtually ensured the termination of the war.

Movements of Sir Henry Clinton.—Aware, at last, of Washington's actual purpose, and of the extremities to which Cornwallis was reduced, general Clinton left New York with a powerful reïnforcement, and arrived at the mouth of the Chesapeake, five days too late for his purpose. Hearing of the surrender of Cornwallis, he returned immediately to New York, whither he was, ere long, followed by Washington, who resumed his head quarters on the Hudson.

SEC. VI.—EVENTS OF 1782 AND 1783.

Reading Lesson CXXVI.

Prospect of peace.—The year with which we commence our present section, opens a new era, equally in our national and local history. The American war had become exceedingly unpopular in England; and the parliament

had, in the month of March, of this year, passed a formal resolve, declaring the prosecution of the war injurious to the true interests of the nation.

Arrival of Sir Guy Carleton.—Early in the month of May, of this year, Sir Guy Carleton, who had been appointed successor to Sir Henry Clinton, and who had received instructions to favor an accommodation with the United States, arrived at New York, and proceeded to the duties of his appointment.

Inaction of the opposite armies.—There could, of course, be no formal cessation of hostilities, between the American and British armies, till peace should be regularly proclaimed. But the issue of affairs was now too plainly intelligible, to leave room for any serious purpose of a hostile nature, on either side. We find, accordingly, that, with the exception of a few insignificant skirmishes, the contending armies abstained from active movements, and restricted themselves to mere measures of precaution and vigilance.

Preliminary articles of peace.—On the 30th of November, 1782, the commissioners of Great Britain and the United States signed, at Paris, the preliminary articles of peace between the two countries.

Discontents in the army.—The embarrassed condition of the country, had compelled congress to defer the payment of large sums due to the army; and the apprehension was now general, among the troops, that their just claims, if left to be settled by a future congress, would be entirely neglected. The officers of the army shared this impression equally with the soldiery; and so irritated had the minds of all become, that irregular meetings of delegates from the various grades, were appointed, and anonymous addresses circulated, calling on the army to bestir themselves, on their own behalf, and to take such measures as should enforce attention to their rights.

The head-quarters at Newburg were the scene of these proceedings; and nothing but the prudence, mildness, and firmness of Washington could, at this crisis, have prevented the American army from proceeding to extremities. On the 15th of March, he addressed the assembled officers, in a most impressive and eloquent appeal, admitting their grievances, but imploring them not to stain their well-earned fame, by any indiscretion which should wrest from

them the merit of that triumph which was now so nearly attained. He assured them that congress would not fail honorably to redeem all its promises, and pledged himself to use every personal exertion which might facilitate the adjustment of all demands coming from an army endeared to him by their common experience of so many vicissitudes, amidst which they had constantly adhered to him.

The effect of this address was to quiet the minds of all, to call forth once more the better feelings of the army, towards their country's cause, to revive the confidence of the troops in the justice of congress, and to elicit the strongest expressions of regard and attachment towards the commander-in-chief.

Definitive treaty of peace.—On the 3d of September, 1783, the definitive treaties of peace were signed by the commissioners of England, and those of the United States, France, Spain, and Holland. By the treaty between England and the United States, the entire independence of the latter was recognized and acknowledged. Thus the struggle which the American colonies had commenced against an unjust assertion of power, on the part of England, issued in the birth of a new nation, which has not only assumed, but nobly maintained its position, as sovereign and independent. Nor has any country on the globe, within the same period of time, made equal advances in power and prosperity.

The cessation of hostilities proclaimed.—The cessation of hostilities was proclaimed in the American army, on the 19th of April,—the eighth anniversary of the battle of Lexington, the first encounter in the struggle between England and her colonies.

General Washington's tour in the state of New York.—By the month of July, "many of the troops," says Mr. Sparks, in his life of Washington, "went home on furlough; and general Washington having little to do in camp, till the arrival of the definitive treaty, resolved to employ the interval in making a tour to the northward, for the double purpose of gratifying his curiosity, in visiting the scenes of the late military operations in that quarter, and of ascertaining, from observation, the natural resources of the country. In company with governor Clinton, he ascended the Hudson to Albany, and proceeded

thence over the battle-fields of Saratoga, as far as Ticonderoga and Crown Point. Turning then to the Mohawk river, he extended his journey westward to fort Schuyler. —He was absent from Newburg nineteen days.

"Ever regarding the condition and affairs of his country on a comprehensive scale, and fixing his thoughts on its importance as a nation, he saw, while on his tour, the immense advantages that would result from a water communication between the Hudson and the great lakes, and believed in its practicability. His hopes and his anticipations have since been realized in the magnificent work, opening a passage for boats by a canal from the Hudson to lake Erie, and effected by the enterprise and wealth of the state of New York.

Disbanding of the army.—"A large part of the officers and soldiers, as mentioned before, had been permitted, during the summer, to retire from the army on furlough; and congress issued a proclamation, on the 18th of October, discharging them from farther service, and all others who had been engaged to serve during the war. The army was thus, in effect, disbanded. A small force only was retained, consisting of such troops as had been enlisted for a definite time, till the peace establishment should be organized.

"This proclamation was followed by general Washington's farewell address to the army, expressing his cordial and affectionate thanks for the devotedness of the officers and soldiers to him through the war, and for the manner in which they had discharged their duty; adding also seasonable advice as to their conduct in resuming the character of private citizens, and in contributing to the support of civil government."

Reading Lesson CXXVII.

Preparations for evacuating New York.—"At length Sir Guy Carleton received orders from the ministry to evacuate New York, and gave notice to general Washington that he should soon be ready for that event. Delay had been occasioned by the want of transports, in sufficient numbers, to send to Nova Scotia the refugees who had sought protection in New York, during the war, and the large amount of goods, stores, and military supplies, which

had accumulated in that city. Many of these persons would gladly have remained in the country, having property which they desired to recover, and relatives and friends whom they were reluctant to abandon; but they were exiled by the laws of the states, and could not be admitted to the privileges of a residence till these laws were repealed.

Washington takes possession of New York.—"Washington repaired to West Point, to which place general Knox had drawn the troops that still remained in the service. Arrangements were made, with governor Clinton, the chief-magistrate of the state of New York, by which the city was to be delivered into his charge. A detachment of troops marched from West Point to Harlem, and was joined there by general Washington and governor Clinton. In the morning of the 25th of November, they advanced to the upper part of the city, where they continued till one o'clock, when the British parties retired from the posts in that quarter, and were followed by the American infantry and artillery, preceded by a corps of dragoons. Meantime, the British troops embarked. Possession being thus taken of the city, the military officers, and the civil officers of the state, made a public entry. The general and governor rode at the head of the procession, on horseback. Then came, in regular succession, the lieutenant-governor and members of the council, general Knox, and the officers of the army, the speaker of the assembly, and citizens. They were escorted by a body of Westchester light-horse, as a compliment to the governor and civil authority; the continental military jurisdiction being supposed to have ceased, or, at least, to have been suspended, in deference to the civil power of the state. Governor Clinton gave a public entertainment, with which the transactions of the day were closed. Perfect order and quiet prevailed from the beginning to the end; and no untoward incident occurred to mar the interest of an occasion, which had been so long wished for, and was so joyfully welcomed.

General Washington's last meeting with the officers.—"A trial of feeling now awaited the commander-in-chief, which, for the moment, was more severe and painful, than any he had been called to bear. The time had arrived, when he was to bid a final adieu to his companions in

arms, to many of whom he was bound by the strongest ties of friendship, and for all of whom he felt a lively gratitude and sincere regard."

"This affecting interview," says chief-justice Marshall, in his life of Washington, "took place on the 4th of December. At noon, the principal officers of the army assembled at Frances's tavern, soon after which their beloved commander entered the room. His emotions were too strong to be concealed. Filling a glass, he turned to them and said, 'With a heart full of love and gratitude, I now take leave of you: I most devoutly wish that your latter days may be as prosperous and happy, as your former ones have been glorious and honorable.' Having drunk, he added, 'I cannot come to each of you to take my leave, but shall be obliged if each of you will come and take me by the hand.' General Knox being nearest, turned to him. Washington, incapable of utterance, grasped his hand, and embraced him. In the same affectionate manner, he took leave of each succeeding officer. The tear of manly sensibility was in every eye; and not a word was articulated to interrupt the dignified silence, and the tenderness of the scene.

"Leaving the room, he passed through the corps of light infantry, and walked to White Hall, where a barge waited to convey him to Paulus Hook. The whole company followed, in mute and solemn procession, with dejected countenances, testifying feelings of delicious melancholy, which no language can describe. Having entered the barge, he turned to the company, and, waving his hat, bid them a silent adieu. They paid him the same affectionate compliment; and after the barge had left them, returned, in the same solemn manner, to the place where they had assembled."

CHAP. VI.—OCCURRENCES BETWEEN THE PEACE OF 1783, AND THE WAR OF 1812.

SEC. I.—EVENTS FROM 1784 TO 1795.

Reading Lesson CXXVIII.

Defective operation of the original confederacy of the states.—No sooner had the benign influence of peace begun to be felt throughout the country, than the imperfect character of the articles of confederation by which the new states were held together, became apparent. Congress had no competent authority to assume or discharge the heavy debt incurred during the revolutionary war. The states, individually, though disposed to listen to the recommendations of congress, and make every exertion for the payment of the public creditors, were not in a condition to do so. A universal bankruptcy seemed threatening to overwhelm the nation. Nor was any relief to be expected from the revival of commerce; as there was no general system of operations practicable, without an efficient national government to regulate commercial affairs.

Preparatory steps for the formation of a national constitution.—For several years, the evils of the inadequate organization of the federal government, had been felt, and loudly complained of, in all quarters. A convention of delegates from all the states, except one, had been held at Philadelphia, in May, 1787, for the purpose of revising the articles of confederation. But, on investigation, they were found so deficient that the convention relinquished the idea of remodelling them, and proceeded to draught a new form of constitution.

Adoption of the present constitution of the United States.—The new constitution was submitted to congress, and in the course of the following year, to the people of the several states, and, within that time, adopted by nearly all, although rather in the spirit of a compromise, than with that of cordial approval.

Influence of the writings of Jay and Hamilton.—The

constitution proposed for adoption by the people of the United States, was by no means universally welcomed as a palladium of the national liberties. It embodied the sentiments of communities and parties differing widely in opinion and habit, and even, in some respects, in commercial interests and social institutions. The friends of order and concord, therefore, looked with no slight degree of anxiety, on the prospect of its being generally adopted by the states. To aid the desirable result, enlightened men, in all parts of the country, exerted themselves to the utmost, with a view to influence the general mind to a favorable decision. Foremost in this good work were those eminent sons of New York, Alexander Hamilton and John Jay, whose names were already identified with their country's welfare, in so many other relations. In conjunction with Mr. Madison, they issued a series of able papers, under the designation of the Federalist, which had no small share in removing popular prejudices, and enlightening public opinion, on the subjects involved in the new constitution. No parallel instance, perhaps, can be furnished from history, of a people so generally or effectually influenced by calm appeals to reason and judgment, in an affair affecting the vital prosperity of a nation, and demanding the largest concessions from party feeling.

First election of a president.—Provision had been made, in the new constitution, for the election of a president and vice-president of the United States. To the former office George Washington was unanimously elected, and to the latter, John Adams.

Washington's arrival in New York, previous to his inauguration, as president of the United States.—On the 4th of March, 1789, the city of New York became, once more, the scene of historical events, but of a character widely different from those of the preceding part of our narrative. We are not now called to contemplate the revolting scenes of war and suffering, but those of peace and order and national happiness.

"It being known," says Mr. Sparks, "that the choice of the people had fallen on general Washington, for president, he made preparations to begin the duties of the office as soon as his election should be notified to him by the proper authority. The 4th of March was assigned as the day for the meeting of congress; but a quorum did

not come together till a month later. The votes of the electors were then opened and counted; and a special messenger was despatched to Mount Vernon, with a letter, from the president of the senate, to general Washington, conveying official intelligence of his election. John Adams was, at that time, declared to be chosen vice-president of the United States. Two days after receiving the notification, Washington left home for New York, which was then the seat of congress.

Washington's public entry into New York.—"A committee of congress, consisting of three members of the senate and five of the house of representatives, was appointed to meet him in New Jersey, and attend him to the city of New York. To Elizabethtown Point came many other persons of distinction, and the heads of the several departments of government. He was there received in a barge, splendidly fitted up for the occasion, and rowed by thirteen pilots in white uniforms. This was followed by vessels and boats, fancifully decorated, and crowded with spectators. When the president's barge came near to the city, a salute of thirteen guns was fired from the vessels in the harbor, and from the Battery. At the landing he was again saluted by a discharge of artillery, and was joined by the governor and other officers of the state, and the corporation of the city. A procession was then formed, headed by a long military train, which was followed by the principal officers of the state and city, the clergy, foreign ministers, and a great concourse of citizens. The procession advanced to the house prepared for the reception of the president. The day was passed in festivity and joy; and, in the evening, the city was brilliantly illuminated.

Washington's inauguration.—"The first public act of the president, was that of taking the oath of office. It was decided by congress, that this should be done with some ceremony. On the morning of the day appointed, April 30th, at nine o'clock, religious services, suited to the occasion, were performed in all the churches of the city. At twelve, the troops paraded before the president's door, and soon afterwards came the committees of congress and the heads of departments, in carriages, to attend him to the Federal Hall,* where the two houses of congress were assembled.

* This building occupied the site of the present custom house, in Wall street.

The procession moved forward with the troops in front, next the committees and heads of departments, then the president in a coach, alone, followed by the foreign ministers, civil officers of the state, and citizens. Arrived at the hall, he ascended to the senate-chamber, and passed thence to a balcony in front of the house, where the oath was administered to him, in presence of the people, by chancellor Livingston. The president returned to the senate-chamber, in the midst of loud acclamations from the surrounding throng of spectators, and delivered to the two branches of congress his inaugural speech. He then went, on foot, to St. Paul's church, where prayers were read by the bishop, and the ceremonies were closed. Tokens of joy were everywhere exhibited, as on the day of his arrival; and, at night, there was a display of illuminations and fireworks."

Reading Lesson CXXIX.

Washington's mode of life, as president, in New York.—"The president had not been long in New York, before he found it necessary to establish rules for receiving visitors and entertaining company. There being no precedent to serve as a guide, this was an affair of considerable delicacy and difficulty. In the first place, it was essential to maintain the dignity of the office by such forms as would inspire deference and respect; and, at the same time, the nature of republican institutions and the habits of the people, required the chief magistrate to be accessible to every citizen, on proper occasions, and for reasonable purposes. A just line was therefore to be drawn between too much pomp and ceremony, on the one hand, and an extreme familiarity, on the other. Regard was also to be had to the president's time and convenience. After a short experiment of leaving the matter to the discretion of the public, it was proved, that, without some fixed rule, he would never have an hour at his disposal. From breakfast till dinner, his door was besieged with persons calling to pay their respects, or to consult him on affairs of little moment. His sense of duty to the claims of his office and to himself, convinced him that this practice could not be endured. The vice-president, Mr. Jay, Mr. Madison, Mr. Hamilton, and other gentlemen, con-

curred in this opinion; and, by their advice, a different mode was adopted.

"Every Tuesday, between the hours of three and four, he was prepared to receive such persons as chose to call. Foreign ministers, strangers of distinction, and citizens, came and went without ceremony. The hour was passed in free conversation on promiscuous topics, in which the president joined. Every Friday afternoon, the rooms were open, in like manner, for visits to Mrs. Washington, which were on a still more sociable footing, and at which general Washington was always present. These assemblages were in the nature of public levees; and they did not preclude such visits of civility and friendship, between the president's family and others, as are customary in society. On affairs of business by appointment, whether with public officers or private citizens, the president was always ready to bestow his time and attention. He accepted no invitations to dinner, but invited to his own table foreign ministers, officers of the government, and strangers, in such numbers at once as his domestic establishment would accommodate. On these occasions, there was neither ostentation nor restraint, but the same simplicity and ease with which his guests had been entertained at Mount Vernon.

"No visits were received on Sunday. In the morning, he uniformly attended church; and, in the afternoon, he retired to his private apartment. The evening was spent with his family; and then an intimate friend would sometimes call, but promiscuous company was not admitted.

"Having laid down these general rules, which soon became known to the public, he found relief from a heavy tax upon his time, and more leisure for a faithful discharge of his duties." The routine of Washington's daily life and habits, continued the same when the meetings of congress were transferred to Philadelphia, as a situation more central and convenient for the general business of the country.

SEC. II.—EVENTS FROM 1791 TO 1795.

Reading Lesson CXXX.

Termination of disputes with Vermont, regarding territorial limits.—The want of due information respecting the

remoter regions of their American colonies, had caused the British parliament to pass acts inconsistent with each other, and assigning the territory of Vermont both to New York and New Hampshire. The quarrels arising from this source, we have seen, in previous parts of our history, occasioning the most serious apprehensions of open violence, on both sides. The governor and the legislature of New York, were fully determined to assert what they deemed their rights, and had, as was formerly mentioned, expressed this determination in strong language, to congress.

The eloquent appeals of Alexander Hamilton, however, had the effect of changing the current of public feeling, and bringing about a compromise. With the consent of New York, Vermont, as a state, was incorporated into the national union, in the year 1791.

Progress of the state of New York.—The happy effects of a state of peace were now universally felt, throughout the state of New York. Its vast and fertile interior was rapidly filled up with a hardy, intelligent, and active immigrant population, which was attracted chiefly from the New-England states, but interspersed with agriculturists and adventurers from all countries which have hitherto poured their surplus of life and enterprise into the United States.

Our pages being chiefly designed for young readers, we decline dwelling on that portion of our local history which consists of events merely political; and, as our aim is to furnish an instructive reading-book, selected from all sources of interesting information regarding the condition and character of our state, rather than to furnish its history in detail, we shall dwell on such topics only as are prominent and important.

Many interesting particulars we have reserved to be interwoven with the biographical sketches of eminent persons, which occur in subsequent pages; and some will be found interspersed with our accounts of public institutions.

The peaceful times in which a community is most prosperous, are those with regard to which the allusion was so justly made, "Happy is that people whose annals are written in sand!" Monumental sculptures and inscriptions, and the classic records of history, are too exclu-

sively occupied with the dire events of war and destruction.

A happier day, it is to be hoped, is already dawning on the world,—a day when the peaceful progress of arts, science, literature, public and private virtue, and genuine prosperity, shall furnish the main themes of the historian. But the past, even to our own time, is yet overshadowed by the evil passions and evil deeds of man, registered in characters of bloodshed and havoc; and a knowledge of the past is necessarily, to a great extent, the knowledge of ill.

The fair scenes of our own beautiful region of the earth, have, again and again, been shrouded in the dark atmosphere of war. Three tempests of destruction have, in turn, swept over them. Two of these, we have tracked along their shifting paths of desolation. The "French war" rendered the border life of the early pioneers amid the receding wilderness of New York, a scene of ceaseless peril and suffering,—when every man's life might be said, as of old, to be "in his hand." The revolutionary war ravaged, for successive years, the previous abodes of peace and plenty, and set even neighbors and kindred at deadly strife. The whirlwind of European war, raised, in the early part of the present century, by the evil genius of Napoleon, drew America into its vortex; and in the second strife against the arrogance of England, the border region of New York was, once more, laid open to the inroads of hostile force, and all the attendant calamities of warfare, or became the theatre of preparation, whence they were to be launched on the adjoining provinces of Britain.

SEC. III.—EVENTS FROM 1795 TO 1812.

Reading Lesson CXXXI.

Election of John Jay, as governor.—At the state election of the year 1795, the office of governor was, by the choice of the people, conferred upon John Jay, who was expected soon to return from England, whither he had been sent, as envoy extraordinary, to adjust the treaty which bears his name. Mr. Jay continued in office till the year 1801, when he declined a reëlection, and retired to private life.

At the election of 1801, George Clinton was induced,

once more accepted the office of governor, which he had so long and so ably filled before; and in this station he continued for three years, when, having been chosen vice-president of the United States, he relinquished the former office, and took up his residence in the city of Washington.

Governor Lewis.—In 1804, the office of governor was conferred on Morgan Lewis, son of a signer of the Declaration of Independence. Governor Lewis had, in early life, served with distinction, in the revolutionary army, in the northern part of the state, but subsequently relinquished the military life, and adopted the profession of law, in which he attained the highest honors. At the time of his election, he was chief-justice of the supreme court of New York.

Governor Tompkins.—In 1807, the election fell on Daniel D. Tompkins, a member of the convention, in 1801, for revising the state constitution, subsequently, a representative in congress, and a judge of the supreme court of New York. Mr. Tompkins continued in office, till his resignation in 1817, in consequence of his election as vice-president of the United States.

It was during the incumbency of governor Tompkins, that the second war between the United States and Great Britain was begun and terminated. During the period of this war, New York, from its proximity to the British provinces of Canada, became, once more, the theatre of military operations.

War of 1812.—For a full account of the origin of this war, we refer our readers to the general history of the country. It may suffice, here, to say, that the grievances which induced congress to declare war against Britain, were the encroachments upon American commerce by the British "orders in council," and the impressment of American seamen.

The former of these aggressions may be briefly stated thus. England, being at war with France, had, in the year 1806, declared the whole coast of continental Europe, from Brest to the Elbe, in a state of blockade. Bonaparte retaliated by declaring the British isles under blockade. The commerce of America with Europe was thus virtually annihilated. In 1808 followed the British orders in council, prohibiting all trade with France and

her allies,—a plain violation of the law of nations. Bonaparte, who, when engaged in war, was seldom troubled with conscientious scruples, regarding national rights, retaliated by his "Milan decree," forbidding all commercial intercourse with England and her allies.

Congress, reacting on both the European contending powers, decreed an embargo, in 1808; but, as no recognition of the national rights was obtained by the measure, it was repealed, in 1809, and all commerce interdicted with either of the offending nations.

In November, 1810, Bonaparte revoked his restrictions on American commerce. But England continued hers; and the better to enforce them, actually stationed her ships of war before the principal ports of the Union, to intercept communication.

The public mind, throughout the Union, was highly irritated by these gross violations of the rights of neutral nations, and still more exasperated by the aggressive conduct of England, in frequently impressing American seamen into her naval service, without the least regard to remonstrance or protest, and sometimes, in face of direct evidence of citizenship, on the part of the injured seamen.

In April, 1812, an embargo, for ninety days, was decreed, on all vessels within the jurisdiction of the United States; and, in the month of June, war was formally declared against Great Britain.

CHAP. VII.—PERIOD OF THE WAR OF 1812.

SEC. I.—EVENTS OF 1812 AND 1813.

Reading Lesson CXXXII.

Attack on Queenstown.—The first military operation of the year, on the frontier of New York, was the attack on Queenstown, by a body of militia, under the command of general Stephen Van Rensselaer. On the morning of the 13th of October, a detachment of two hundred and twenty-five men, under colonel Solomon Van Rensselaer, crossed

the Niagara, and, after some resistance, in which the colonel was wounded, gained a small battery on the heights. Notwithstanding the unexpected arrival of general Brock, with a reïnforcement of several hundred men, the post was held, the enemy repulsed, and their general killed, by a party under captain (now general) Wool.

Thus far, the success of the Americans was complete. But, unfortunately for them, a powerful reïnforcement from fort George, came to the aid of the British, in the afternoon; and the reserve of the American troops being unwilling to cross the river, to the aid of their countrymen, the gallant storming party, and those who did cross to their assistance, were overwhelmed by the superior force of the enemy; and nearly all were either killed or taken prisoners.

A universal feeling of indignation was uttered, throughout the country, against the conduct of the militia, in this instance; and, unquestionably, the reluctance to go to the rescue of their countrymen in a situation of peril, seemed a feeling utterly unworthy of those who had assumed the duties and character of soldiers. But the people, in distant parts of the Union, could form no just idea of the repugnance which men, some of whom were natives of the very border, felt at hostilities against the inhabitants of a neighboring region, with some of whom they had been on terms of personal intimacy and friendship. The natural law of kindness in the human heart, will rise above the arbitrary rules of war, or the local lines of patriotism.

Attack on Toronto.—In the northern campaign of 1813, general Dearborn embarked, on the 25th of April, with a force of seventeen hundred men, at Sackett's harbor, for the purpose of capturing the British stores at York,—now Toronto. The landing was successfully effected, in spite of the enemy's resistance, and the assault bravely conducted by general Pike, when, during the advancing movement, the magazine blew up, killing and wounding several hundred men, and among the latter, the commanding officer, who did not long survive. The American troops, however, soon rallied, and carried the place, together with a large amount of baggage and public property; the British general and his regular force escaping with much difficulty.

Attack by the British, on Sackett's harbor.—The Ameri-

can squadron having returned to Sackett's harbor, set sail, soon after, for the Niagara frontier; and the British, taking advantage of this moment, proceeded to Sackett's harbor. They landed, for this purpose, a force of a thousand men, under Sir George Prevost. The small body of American regulars made an efficient resistance to the enemy's approach; and general Brown, meanwhile, rallied the militia, which, at first, had given way, and marched them towards the landing. Sir George, apprehending this movement as designed to cut off his retreat, withdrew, in great haste, to the boats.

Successful attack by the Americans, on fort George.—On the same day that the British were repulsed from Sackett's harbor, the American expedition made its attack on fort George, which was speedily taken.

Capture of generals Chandler and Winder.—The British troops which had relinquished fort George, were closely pursued by the Americans. On the night of the 6th of June, however, they attempted an attack on the American camp, in which, although they were repulsed, they were so far successful as to capture, amid the darkness and confusion of the moment, the brave generals Chandler and Winder.

Unsuccessful attempt on Montreal.—General Armstrong, who had recently been appointed secretary of war, had formed the plan of an invasion of Canada, by a junction of the forces under general Wilkinson with those under General Hampton, on the St. Lawrence, with a view to the reduction of Montreal. Many unforeseen obstacles interposed to frustrate this plan of operations. General Wilkinson's force, embarking from French creek, and proceeding down the St. Lawrence, were greatly annoyed by strong parties on the Canada shore; and the troops under general Brown, attempting to repulse them, were checked at Williamsburg, on the 11th of November, with a loss of several hundred men. On the 12th, the army reached St. Regis; but here general Wilkinson, learning that the proposed junction at Plattsburg was impracticable, withdrew to French Mills, and encamped for the season.

Success of the British, on the Niagara frontier.—In the month of December, the American general found it necessary to relinquish fort George, on the approach of a superior British force, and, as an expedient to cripple the

enemy, burned the opposite village of Newark. This ill-judged step caused a cruel reäction, on the part of the British, who, after suprising fort Niagara, aided by their wonted savage allies, retaliated, by burning several American villages.—At every step, in tracing the history of war, we see how it brutalizes the heart. The universal voice of the nation was lifted up, in England, in response to lord Chatham's eloquent invectives, in the British parliament, against the cruelty of employing the Indian race in the revolutionary war. But the boasted refinement of the nineteenth century, does not, we see, redeem the British character from this disgraceful stain.

SEC. II.—EVENTS OF 1814.

Reading Lesson CXXXIII.

Battle of Chippewa.—On the morning of the 3d of July, 1814, generals Scott and Ripley, with a force of three thousand men, crossed the Niagara river, and took possession of fort Niagara, without opposition. On the 4th, general Brown, who had been detached with two thousand troops, from general Wilkinson's command, advanced to the village of Chippewa, to attack the British force there intrenched, under general Riall. On the morning of the 5th, the British general drew out his troops, and offered battle, but was compelled to retire, with a loss of five hundred men. Riall felt himself compelled to fall back on Queenstown and Burlington heights. Here he was joined by general Drummond, who took the command.

Battle of Lundy's Lane.—The American force had advanced so as to encamp near the falls of Niagara, when, on the evening of the 25th of July, the advance of the two armies again encountered at Lundy's lane, not far from the Falls. The battle was obstinately fought by the advance, on each side, till the main body came up. Major (now general) Jessup, while general Scott was bravely maintaining the battle in front, against a vastly superior force, contrived to take the enemy in flank and rear, and to make general Riall and his suite prisoners.

Storming of a battery by colonel Miller and his regiment.—A British battery, on a commanding height, was dealing a most destructive fire on the Americans. To carry this position was the turning point on which depended the

fortune of the field. Colonel Miller was asked if he would attempt the task. "I will try, sir," was his modest answer to general Ripley, his commanding officer; and, with his brave troops, he advanced up the height till within a short distance of the enemy's guns, and then, in face of a sweeping fire of cannon and musketry, carried the battery, at the point of the bayonet. The American line was immediately formed on the height, and the ground held, notwithstanding the desperate efforts of the enemy to recover it.

Success of the Americans.—In the last of these assaults, general Drummond was wounded; and his troops were then withdrawn. The result of this hard-fought field, was, to the Americans,—notwithstanding their loss was nearly equal to that of the British,—equivalent to a decisive victory, owing to the number and character of the troops engaged on the opposite side.

Repulse of the British, in their attack on fort Erie.—Generals Scott and Brown having both been wounded, the command devolved on general Ripley, who deemed it prudent to retreat to fort Erie. Here he was attacked, on the 4th of August, by general Drummond, at the head of five thousand men. On the 5th, general Gaines, arriving from Sacket's harbor, as senior officer, took the command. On the 13th and 14th, a heavy cannonade was kept up, on both sides. On the 15th, a furious assault was made by the British, but issued in their final repulse, with a loss of nearly a thousand men.

On the 2d of September, general Brown was again able to take the command, and, on the 17th, a successful sortie was effected, in which the enemy's advance works were entirely destroyed, and several hundred prisoners taken. The British, on the night of the 21st, retreated to fort George, on learning the approach of general Izard, with reïnforcements for the American army.

Close of the campaign.—General Izard arrived on the 9th of October, and, deeming farther operations unadvisable, in that quarter, destroyed fort Erie, and withdrew the troops to winter quarters.

Operations in the vicinity of lake Champlain.—The British plan of campaign, in this quarter, was to obtain command of lake Champlain, and then to move down the Hudson, to coöperate with an intended attack on the city of New York. The enemy's expectation was, in this

way, to dismember the Union, by cutting off the New-England states from communication with the other portions of the country, as,—it will be recollected,—was a favorite attempt of the British, in the war of the revolution.

Reading Lesson CXXXIV.

General Wilkinson's position at Plattsburg.—In the latter part of February, general Wilkinson had left his winter quarters at French Mills, and removed his force to Plattsburg. He made an excursion thence into Canada, in the month of March. But, meeting a considerable force at La Colle on the Sorel, he had been repulsed, and compelled to fall back on Plattsburg. Here general Izard assumed the command, but, in August, was detached to the Niagara frontier, as already mentioned. Plattsburg, now under general Macomb, was thus left with a force of only fifteen hundred men.

Advance of the British on Plattsburg.—The establishment of peace in Europe, left large additions of military force at the disposal of England; and a portion of these was sent to Canada. Sir George Prevost, the commanding general, was thus enabled to bring an army of fourteen thousand choice troops against Plattsburg; and an attempt was, at the same time, to be made, to destroy the American flotilla on lake Champlain, under commodore MacDonough. The enemy reached Plattsburg on the 6th of September; and general Macomb withdrew his small force to a favorable position, across the Saranac, where, for four days, this heroic little band withstood every effort of the British veteran army to force a passage.

MacDonough's victory on the lake.—On the morning of the 11th, a general cannonade was opened on the American works; and, soon after, the British fleet, under commander Downie, bore down, and, anchoring in line, abreast of the American fleet, under commodore Mac Donough, commenced the attack.

The superior size, and number and weight of guns, of the British flag-ship, gave her great advantage over the American; so that, in the space of two hours, the latter became nearly unmanageable. By skilful manœuvering, however, she was winded on her antagonist, with a fresh broadside from her larboard, which was yet sound. The

errific havoc, thus effected, caused the enemy's flag to be truck, a few minutes afterward. Most other vessels of he British fleet, had, in the meantime, surrendered or been sunk. Among the killed, in this bloody encounter, was the British commander; and the prisoners amounted o nearly nine hundred. The inferiority of the American force, on this occasion, greatly enhanced the value of the victory.

Repulse and retreat of the British army.—The bombardment was maintained, meanwhile, on land, without interruption, till sunset; and three furious but unavailing attacks were made by the British, with a view to force a passage of the river, at three different points. But all attempts failed; and the surrender of the British force on the lake, which took place in sight of both armies, was but the prelude to the speedy retreat of the enemy, under favor of the dark. The loss of the British, in valuable military stores, in deserters, as well as in their number of killed and wounded, and their disabled sick, who were abandoned in the retreat, was very great; and the mortification of defeat was, in this instance, aggravated by the high expectations which had been formed of the results to be achieved by the valor and discipline of the veteran troops, engaged, contrasted with the scanty and raw force of the Americans.

Termination of the war.—In the month of August, 1814, the commissioners of Great Britain and the United States, met at Ghent, and, on the 24th of December following, concluded and signed a treaty of peace. The change in the political aspect of Europe, seemed, however, to render unnecessary any express stipulation regarding the causes of the contest; and, notwithstanding the passing clouds which have since, for a moment, obscured the sunshine of peace and cordial feeling between the two countries, there seems little reason to apprehend any future renewal of the attitude of contention and strife between them.

Nor can the hope be pronounced sanguine, that the footsteps of war shall no more pollute the soil or deface the fertile valleys of our native state. We may reasonably trust, that the repose of its beautiful scenes of river, lake, and mountain, shall never, henceforward, be disturbed by the roar of hostile cannon; and that the only

sounds which shall startle the echoes of its solitudes, shall be the peaceful and cheering echo of the woodman's axe, as he toils to let in the fertilizing light and warmth of the sun upon the bosom of the soil, or the harmless explosion of the powder blast, as it rends the rock, to level the way for the transit of the steam-car, destined to facilitate the interchange of the fruits of industry and the blessings of peace, throughout the world.

CHAP. VIII.—EVENTS FROM 1814 TO 1847.

Reading Lesson CXXXV.

Events subsequent to the treaty of Ghent.—Returning to the narrative of our state history, we omit, as was formerly explained, events connected only with the vicissitudes of political party, as unsuited to a work designed to subserve the purposes of general education, and to cherish the spirit of just local attachments in the mind of youth. The establishment and progress of public institutions, are reserved for connected and succinct accounts of such matters separately, at the close of our work. We proceed, therefore, to mention briefly the prominent facts of a character strictly historical, which occurred within the period subsequent to the conclusion of the peace secured by the treaty of Ghent.

De Witt Clinton chosen governor.—At the election of 1817, governor Tompkins was succeeded by De Witt Clinton, an individual whose name is inseparably connected with the prosperity of the state, in its great system of internal improvements, but particularly the construction of the Erie canal, and the other public works which have been produced as its ramifications. Governor Clinton was reëlected in 1820, but declined being a candidate in 1822.

Amendment of the state constitution.—The constitution of the state, which was adopted in 1777, had undergone revision in 1801, and was, in 1820, remodelled once more, so as to become adapted to the progress of popular sentiment, and the actual condition of the people. The

modifications to which we refer, will be found in a subsequent page, in the statements connected with a brief sketch of the constitutional history of the state. It will suffice, for the present, to mention, in explanation of the shortened period of office assigned to the station of governor, that, by the amendments of 1820, the term was limited to two years.

Terms of governors Yates, De Witt Clinton, &c.—In 1822, Joseph C. Yates was chosen governor; and, in 1824, De Witt Clinton was once more called to that office, and again reëlected, in 1826. His death, in February, 1828, occurred previous to the completion of his last term. The official duties were, in consequence, devolved on Nathaniel Pitcher, then lieutenant-governor. For three months of the year 1829, Martin Van Buren,—afterwards elevated to the presidency of the United States,—held the office of governor of the state of New York. The duties of this station were next discharged by Enos T. Throop, then lieutenant-governor, and, in 1830, elected governor. In 1832, William L. Marcy was chosen governor, and, having been reëlected in 1834 and 1836, continued in office till 1838. At the election of the year last mentioned, William H. Seward was appointed governor, was reëlected in 1840, and held office till 1842, when he was succeeded by William C. Bouck. In 1844, Silas Wright was chosen governor, and, in 1846, John Young.

Revision of the state constitution.—A convention, for the revision and modification of the constitution of the state, was held at Albany, in the summer of 1846; and the constitution then revised, was adopted, by the people, at the autumn election, in November of the same year. The principal features of the new constitution, will be found described at the close of this volume.

Concluding observations on the history of New York.

Our survey of the history of New York, is now finished. We have traced the stream of local events from its source, n the humble enterprise of Hudson, and the trading exoeditions of Dutch adventurers, down through the ampler ield of narrative presented in the era of the Dutch West-India company's power, and thence to that of British rule, when the American colonies became the grand theatre of

war between the great European rivals, England and France,—a period during which New York was occasionally the scene and the centre of warlike operations destined to a place in the historical records of the world.

We have followed the widening current of our history, through the years of that unnatural strife which the tyranny of England forced upon a people, chiefly descended from herself, speaking her own language as their native tongue, inheriting the immunities of her free institutions, and affectionately clinging to her, till the hand of filial attachment was harshly shaken off. We have witnessed the termination of the strife, in the triumph of justice and liberty, and the diffusion of the blessings of peace and plenty and order and happiness, over our own and the other united and independent states of the great American union. We have been reluctantly recalled to trace, once more, the footprints of war amid our native scenes, but soon again to rejoice in the establishment of peace and the enjoyment of its attendant benefits.

Amid these shifting scenes of weal and woe, we have frequently observed, conspicuously displayed, the brave deeds and noble characters of those whom we delight to claim, not only as American compatriots, but as native or adopted citizens of our own state. On the majestic and beautiful scenery of mountain and valley, lake and river, for which our native region stands conspicuous in the world, no eye can look with indifference; nor is it the mere boast of local partiality, which declares that, in this respect, New York has no rival among our whole family of confederated states.

But there is yet a nobler source of gratulation on which to dwell, in connection with our local attachments,—we allude to the men who have, by their valor, their wisdom, their patriotism, their intelligence, and their worth, shed a living lustre on the state of which they were honored members, and in which their memories will be gratefully cherished, through succeeding ages.

On the characters to which we now refer, we could not conveniently dwell, during our brief and rapid survey of historical events. But we feel assured that our readers will take pleasure in studying them individually, in the following pages. Such models may well inspire the mind of youth with the noblest incitements to virtue.

BIOGRAPHY

OF DISTINGUISHED INDIVIDUALS, CONNECTED WITH THE HISTORY OF NEW YORK.

Reading Lesson CXXXVI.

Introductory Observations.

The most instructive part of history, is that which informs us of the lives and characters of eminent men. History has been happily termed "philosophy teaching by examples;" and, in no part of it, does this definition prove more just than in biography. This private page of history reveals to us the secret springs of those great actions which constitute the themes of the historian: it exhibits the personal dispositions and characters of those conspicuous actors in the great theatre of the world, whose recorded deeds become the history of their times.

The biographical portion of history has a double charm for the mind. It wins our attention to our fellow-men in their daily routine of private life. It places them before us in a position which enables us to view them distinctly, as beings like ourselves, with whom we can sympathize, in whose successes or failures we take a lively interest, and whose example is full of instruction for warning or incitement. We learn, thus, to admire their virtues, to shun their faults, to emulate their noble qualities and great actions, and to trace the inseparable connection between the most illustrious deeds which confer renown on public life, and the cultivation of those traits of personal habit and private character, which are the sources of human conduct.

The remotest antiquity exerts, in this way, an influence on the present time, and still continues to teach and to inspire the virtues of life, in successive generations. But the record of human excellence becomes still more impressive in its instructions, when it comes down to our own period of the world's history, and speaks to us, from

its silent yet eloquent pages, of the thoughts and deeds of our ancestors, and even of our fathers. More instructive still, is the lesson of the historian, when he records the doings of those who have dwelt in the very scenes amid which we lead our daily life, and whose actions have consecrated to our hearts the very spots on which our eyes are daily turned, or on which we can plant our own footsteps.

History then seems to walk into our homes, and lift up its voice at our fireside. It resembles, then, the venerable relative, who recounts, amid the family circle, the tale of by-gone days, when our fathers, in their youth, mingled with their countrymen, to rescue their native land from oppression. Familiar names then fall from the lips of the narrator; and our kinsmen take each his place in the ranks of history. We dwell then, with double delight, on the portraits of human worth, and feel assured that merit is brought within our own reach.

The state of New York furnishes to its youth, for their perusal, a most instructive page of private history. Its list of great names in science, art, and literature, and in public life, is rich, and full of inspiring influence. The limits of a book such as this, restrict us to the selection of a few prominent actors on the stage of our local history, and to brief sketches of even these. But we hope that the mental relish of the slight repast which we here offer, will create a taste for more extensive reading in this department, in the subsequent years of life, when our young readers shall have completed the period of education, and have entered on the sphere of active duties and maturer age. The moments of leisure which may then intervene between the calls of business, can be spent in no way more useful, than in dwelling on the lives and actions of the men to whom New York owes her present position in the Union, and in the broader field of the world.

The order in which the following biographical sketches are presented, is designed to follow, as nearly as practicable, the succession of events in our local history.*

* The subjects of the following lessons have been drawn from various authentic sources, to which more particular references would have been made, but for the necessity of those modifications which such materials undergo, in the process of compilation, with a view to

Reading Lesson CXXXVII.

CAPTAIN WILLET.*

"Captain Willet, first mayor of New York, arrived at Plymouth, in 1629, a young man, but much esteemed for his good character and capacity for business. In 1630, the Plymouth company sent him to superintend their trading house at Penobscot, where he remained several years. In 1650, he was engaged by the Dutch governor, Stuyvesant, to aid in compromising the question of boundary with New Haven.

"In 1651, he was an 'assistant' in Plymouth colony; and he was annually reëlected till 1665,—when he was excused, at the request of colonel Nicolls, who, soon after, appointed him mayor of New York, which office he filled nine years. His acquaintance with the language and customs of the Dutch, made him highly serviceable to the new government.

"In 1674, he retired to his farm at Rehoboth, now in

adapt them to the purposes of a schoolbook. Teachers who wish to aid their pupils in extending their course of biographical reading, may refer them, advantageously, to the volumes of American biography, edited by Mr. Sparks, or to the more compendious articles in the Encyclopædia Americana,—works which ought to be accessible to all our youth, among the books contained in their school libraries.

One of the most substantial rewards which a teacher can confer on diligent and attentive pupils, is to relate to them, orally, for a few minutes, daily, the substance of those more extensive biographies which are embodied in separate works too extensive or costly for juvenile readers. Among such books we would mention the following, as connected with our local history.

The Life of Gouverneur Morris, by Jared Sparks; of Alexander Hamilton, by John C. Hamilton; of William Livingston, by Theodore Sedgwick, Jr.; of De Witt Clinton, by Professor Renwick; of Robert Fulton, by the same author, and by Cadwallader D. Colden; of John H. Livingston, by Alexander Gunn; of Samuel J. Mills, by Gardiner Spring; of Mrs. Schuyler, by Mrs. Grant; of Isabella Graham, by Divie Bethune; of Lucretia Maria Davidson, by Miss Sedgwick; of Margaret Miller Davidson, by Washington Irving.

To these may be added the lives of Brandt and Red Jacket, by W. L. Stone; the Indian Biographies, by B. B. Thacher; and the numerous and valuable biographical notices contained in Mr. Benjamin F. Thompson's copious and instructive volumes on the history of Long Island.

* For this and several other biographical sketches we are indebted to the valuable work of Mr. Thompson, mentioned in the preceding note.

the town of Seekonk, Bristol County, Massachusetts, where he died, August 4th, of that year. He maintained, through life, an exalted reputation for integrity and firmness, and was not inferior to any of the pilgrims, in those high qualities which rendered them so illustrious. Thus, the first English mayor of the first commercial city in America, lies buried on a lonely and barren heath in the humble town of Seekonk, at a place seldom visited by the footsteps of man; and a plain monument marks the spot where his ashes repose. The late colonel Marinus Willet," whose name our readers will recollect as occurring in our revolutionary history, "was his great-great-grandson, and held the same office, in 1807, which had been filled by his ancestor, one hundred and forty-two years before.

Reading Lesson CXXXVIII.

LION GARDINER,

"From whom Gardiner's island has its name, was a native of Scotland, and served as a lieutenant in the British army, in the Low Countries, under general Fairfax. He belonged to the republican party, with the illustrious Hampden, Cromwell, and others of the same stamp.

"He was commander of Saybrook fort, when captain Mason, in 1637, pursued and destroyed the Pequots, at a swamp in Fairfield, and came near being captured by that savage people; one of his men having been taken and tortured, the fort burned, and the family of captain Gardiner narrowly escaping the worst of deaths. He continued in command here, till 1639, when he removed to the island which bears his name, where he fixed his residence.

"This valuable island was purchased of lord Stirling's agent, by Lion Gardiner, March 10th, 1639, having previously agreed with the Indians for their right, to whom he paid, according to tradition, 'one large black dog, one gun, a quantity of powder and shot, some rum, and a few Dutch blankets.' The price paid Mr. Farret, the agent, was little more, with an annuity of £5, to the earl of Stirling, 'if demanded.' This was the first English settlement within the present limits of this state, being one year anterior to that of Southampton or Southold.

"Gardiner gave assistance to the planters of Easthamp-

on, both in organizing their settlement, and procuring the riendship of the Montauk sachem, and the people under is authority. In 1653, he gave his son David possession of the island, and took up his subsequent abode at East-ampton. In his family bible, among other entries, in is handwriting, is the following curious item:

"'In the yeare of our Lord, 1635, July the 10th, came , Lion Gardiner, and Mary, my wife, from Woerden, a owne in Holland, where my wife was borne. We came rom Woerden to London, and from thence to New Eng-and, and dwelt at Seabrooke forte four yeares, of which I vas commander; and then I went to an island of mine wne, which I bought of the Indians, called by them Man-honoke, by us the isle of Wite.'

"Mr. Gardiner was instrumental in restoring to the achem of Montauk his daughter, previously captured by Vinicraft, and his men, with thirteen other women; in ac-nowledgment of which, the noble-minded chief presented im a deed for a part of the territory now comprised in he limits of Smithtown. Having lived at Saybrook, dur-ng the final struggle with the Pequots, and being well cquainted with the circumstances attending it, Mr. Gardi-er was requested to commit to paper, what he recollected f that melancholy event, and the causes which led to it. His communication on the subject, is contained in an pistle, of which the following is a copy.

Reading Lesson CXXXIX.

Life of Lion Gardiner, continued.

"'Easthampton, June 12th, 1660.

"'Loving Friends, Robert Chapman and Thomas Hurl-ut.—My love remembered to you both. These are to nform, that, as you desired me, when I was with you and najor Mason, at Seabrooke, two years and a half ago, to onsider and call to mind the passages of God's provi-ence at Seabrooke, in and about the time of the Pequit war;—wherein I have now endeavored to answer your esires, and have rumaged and found some old papers hen written: it was a great help to my memory.

"'You know that when I came to you, I was an engi-eer or architect, whereof carpentry is a little part; but ou know I could never use all the tools; for, although

for my necessity, I was forced sometimes to use my *shifting chissel* and my *holdfast*, yet you know I could never endure nor abide the *smoothing-plane*.

"'I have sent you a piece of timber, scored and forehewed, unfit to join to any piece of handsome work; but, seeing I have done the hardest work, you must get somebody to chip it and to smooth it, lest the splinters should prick some men's fingers;—for the truth must not be spoken at all times; though, to my knowledge, I have written nothing but truth; and you may take out or put in what you please. But I think you may let the governor and major Mason see it. I have also inserted some additions of things that were done since, that may be considered together. And thus, as I was when I was with you, so I remain still, your loving friend, LION GARDINER.'

"The narrative of the letter was as follows:—'In the year, 1635, I, Lion Gardiner, Engineer and Master of Works of Fortifications, in the Legers* of the Prince of Orange, in the Low Countries, through the persuasion of Mr. John Davenport, Mr. Hugh Peters, with some other well-affected Englishmen of Rotterdam, I made an agreement with the forenamed Mr. Peters, for £100 per annum, for four years, to serve the company of patentees. I say, I was to serve them only in the drawing, ordering, and making of a city, towns, or forts of defence.

"'And so I came from Holland to London, and from thence to New England, where I was appointed to attend such orders as Mr. John Winthrop, Esquire, the present governor of Connecticut, was to appoint, whether at Pequit River or Connecticut, and that we should choose a place, both for the convenience of a good harbor, and also for capableness and fitness for fortification.'

"He then proceeds to express his disappointment, on arriving at the mouth of the river, to find so few men, so small means of defence, and slender provision for the number of persons necessary to the building of the fort. So they returned to Boston, and sent Mr. Stephen Winthrop to the mouth of the river for the purpose of trading with the natives in exchange for cloth, and who, with his own company, came near being killed. Afterwards, captains Endicott, Turner, and Underhill, with a company of soldiers, arrived at Saybrook, where they posted them-

* In modern orthography, *leaguers*,—sieges.

selves, much to the dissatisfaction of Mr. Gardiner, believing that their presence would exasperate the natives, and render them more hostile to the English."

But, as this narrative belongs more properly to the history of New England, we must omit it here, with the exception of its highly characteristic closing sentence. "Thus far I had written in a book, that all men and posterity might know how and why so many honest men had their *blood shed*, yea, and some *flayed alive*, others *cut in pieces*, and some *roasted alive*, only because one *Bay Indian* killed one Pequot." The allusion is here to the facts, in detail, connected with the commencement of the Pequot war.

Reading Lesson CXL.

CAPTAIN JOHN UNDERHILL.

"On a farm lately owned by one of his descendants, called by him Killingworth, and by the Indians Matinnecock, in the town of Oyster Bay, Long Island, is the grave of this wonderful man, of whom so frequent mention is made in the early histories of New England and New York. 'He was,' says the Rev. Mr. Bacon, 'one of the most dramatic persons in our early history.' Having served as an officer in the British forces, in the Low Countries, in Ireland, and at Cadiz, he came from England to Massachusetts, soon after the commencement of the colony, and was very generally employed in such expeditions as required the most extraordinary courage, energy, and perseverance.

"He had an important command in the war against the Pequots, in 1636; and, on the 2d of February, 1637, he was sent to Saybrook with twenty men, to keep the fort there against the Dutch and Indians; both of whom had manifested a design upon that place. He was a man of the most determined resolution, activity, and courage; and such was the rapidity of his movements, and his subtility of attack, that his enemies were almost always taken by surprise, and consequently defeated.

"He was one of the first deputies from Boston to the general courts, and one of the earliest officers of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company. Most of the accounts of that interesting period, are full of the particulars of his checkered life; and few persons were more

distinguished, or rendered more valuable service to the colonies, than this individual, especially in their wars and controversies with the savages.

"He was the personal and political friend of Sir Henry Vane, who, in 1637, at the age of twenty-six years, was appointed governor of Massachusetts. Underhill was also an enthusiast in religion, so far, at least, as appearances were concerned, yet was a debauchee in practice. Strange as it may seem, the church did not censure him so much for his irregularities, as for saying that he dated his conversion from the time he was *smoking tobacco.* He was eccentric in many respects, and, in everything he did, was apt to run into extremes.

"That he was in America, as early as 1632, is evident from the accounts of the treasurer of the Massachusetts colony, showing that he received a pension of thirty pounds a year, for services rendered to the colony, in its contests with the Indians. Hutchinson says, he was one of the most forward of the Boston enthusiasts; and Hubbard declares, that, in 1636, he was in high favor with the governor, or, as he calls him, right worthy Master Vane.

"He went to England, in 1638, where he was interrogated, and finally banished. While in England, he published a book, entitled, 'News from America, or a New and Experimental Discoverie of New England; containing a true relation of warlike proceedings, these two years past, with a figure of the Indian fort or palisado; by John Underhill, a commander in the wars there.'

"This curious book is now quite scarce, but is, in all respects, singularly characteristic of its author. He gives therein, in his peculiar and quaint manner, an account of the frequent, and sometimes sanguinary conflicts, between the whites and Indians. The war against the Block Islanders, was occasioned, he says, by their murder of captain John Oldham, whom 'they knocked upon the head, and martyred most barbarously, to the great grief of his poor distressed servants, which, by the providence of God, were saved. The blood of the innocent called,' says he, 'for vengeance; God stirred up the heart of the honored governor, Master Henry Vane, and the rest of the worthy magistrates, to send a hundred well-appointed soldiers, under the conduct of Capt. John Hendicot, and, in company with him, Capt. John Underhill, Capt.

Nathan Turner, Capt. William Jenningson, besides other inferior officers.'

"In the engagement which followed, Underhill received an arrow through his coat, and another against the helmet, upon his forehead, which said helmet he was advised by his wife to take. 'Therefore,' says he, 'let no man despise the advise and council of his wife, *though she be a woman.*'

"The writer gives a flattering description of the country, and observes that 'Long Island is a place worth the naming, as affording many accommodations.'"

Reading Lesson CXLI.

Life of captain Underhill, continued.

"Underhill afterwards resided at Dover, where he was made governor; but his conduct could not long be tolerated, on account of his great irregularity. He behaved very ungratefully toward the wife who, he acknowledges, had, by her precaution, saved his life, in the affair with the Indians; and, with many expressions of sincere remorse, he besought the church 'to have compassion on him, and deliver him out of the hands of Satan.'

"But the church considered him insincere, and cast him out of their communion. In 1639, he solicited to be received, with a few families, upon Long Island, and to enjoy the privileges of an inhabitant of the Dutch government. This request was granted by the governor, upon condition that he and his adherents should subscribe the oath of allegiance to the States General and the prince of Orange. It is probable that he declined the terms offered.

"Underhill had been engaged, with captain Mason, in an attack upon the Indian fort at Mystic, in which the fierce spirit of that warlike tribe was finally broken, by the loss of so many men, as were then destroyed; even Massacus was discouraged; and, very soon, those Indians, as a tribe, were extinguished. In 1641, having been chosen governor of Exeter and Dover, he was soon in trouble with the church, of which he was a member.

"He was, after his arrival on Long Island, employed by the Dutch, and took command in the war with the Indians north of the Sound, and west of the Connecticut

settlements. This contest lasted till 1646. In Trumbull's history, it is stated that Underhill destroyed three hundred Indians, north of the Sound, and one hundred and twenty upon Long Island, who had crossed the Sound, to ravage and destroy the Dutch plantations there. At the period of this military employment, he lived at Stamford, Connecticut, was a delegate from that town to the general court at New Haven, in 1643, and was appointed an assistant justice.

"In 1644 he came, with the Rev. Mr. Denton, and others of his church, to Long Island, and, soon after, became a resident of Flushing, where he evinced the same restless temper as formerly, and was anxious for a military employment.

"On the refusal of the committee of the United Colonies to engage in the controversy between England and Holland, he applied to Rhode Island, which, on the 17th of May, 1653, resolved to appoint a committee from each town, 'for the ripening of matters that concerned the Dutch,' whom they styled enemies of that commonwealth, and agreed to furnish 'two great guns, twenty men, and other aid.' They also gave a commission to Underhill and William Dyre, 'to go against the Dutch, or any enemies of the commonwealth of England.'

"Under this authority, it is supposed he made an attack upon the Indians at fort Neck, when he captured the fort, and destroyed many of the natives. He was afterwards settled in Oyster Bay; for, in 1655, he was a delegate from that town to the meeting at Hempstead, by order of governor Nicoll, and was by him made sheriff of the north riding on Long Island. The Dutch had been detected by him, at a former period, in correspondence with the Indians, for the destruction of the English; and, when they resumed possession of New York, in consequence of his disclosures in that respect, a guard of soldiers was sent from Manhattan to take him; but on his engaging to be faithful to the Dutch thereafter, he was set at liberty, and allowed to depart even without reproof.

"In 1667, the Matinnecock Indians conveyed to him a large tract of their lands, a part of which, called Killingworth, remained in his family, for nearly two hundred years. His death occurred in 1672."

Reading Lesson CXLII.

CADWALLADER COLDEN,

Distinguished as a mathematician, a physician, a naturalist and an historian, and, for many years, lieutenant-governor of the province of New York, was the son of the Rev. Alexander Colden, of Dunse, in Scotland, and was born February, 17th, 1688. He completed the usual course of study, at the university of Edinburgh, intending to devote himself to the profession of medicine. But his favorite pursuit was the study of mathematics, in which he made great proficiency, according to the standard of mathematical studies, at that time, in Scotland.

In 1708, he emigrated to Pennsylvania, and practised, as a physician, for some years; after which, he returned to England, and there acquired professional reputation by an ingenious essay on a branch of physiological research. From London he went to Scotland, and repaired again to America, in 1716.

He settled, a second time, in Pennsylvania, but, in 1718, removed to New York. After a residence of a year, in this city, he was appointed the first surveyor-general of the lands of the colony, an office for which his mathematical talent rendered him peculiarly competent. He received, at the same time, the appointment of master in chancery, for which, however, neither his general learning, nor his studies in Scotland, could have afforded him opportunity of special qualification. In 1720, he obtained a seat in the king's council, under governor Burnet.

For some time previous to this, he had resided on a tract of land, about nine miles from Newburg, on the Hudson river, for which he had received a patent. Here he was exposed, at every moment, to the attacks of the Indians; the tract being situated on what was then the frontier. His position, in this respect, was, no doubt, a chief cause of the interest which he took in the study of Indian life and character; and, to the same circumstance, we are probably indebted for his historical work on the Five Nations.

In 1761, he was chosen lieutenant-governor of New York, and occupied this station, during the remainder of

his life. He was, moreover, as the reader will remember, from our history, repeatedly placed at the head of affairs, by the absence or death of several governors.

Colden, we have seen in the history, was a resolute tory, faithful to his notions of colonial subjection, and determined to oppose, on all occasions, the diffusion of popular ideas of liberty and independence. He was, therefore, no favorite with the people, especially after the odious measures of parliament which led to the revolution.

On the return of governor Tryon, in 1775, he retired to a seat on Long Island, where he died, September 28th, 1776, in the 89th year of his age.

Dr. Colden's literary productions were numerous, consisting of botanical and medical essays. Among them, is a treatise showing the causes, and pointing out the remedies, of the yellow fever, which, about the year 1743, desolated New York. He also wrote an account of the prevalent diseases of the climate, besides his history of the five Indian nations. But the work which cost him most time and labor, was one on the cause of gravitation, or, as the title runs in the second and enlarged edition, the "principles of action in matter," to which is annexed a "treatise on fluxions."

Dr. Colden corresponded with many of the most distinguished characters of his day, among whom were Linnæus, Gronovius, the earl of Macclesfield, doctor Franklin, and other individuals of eminent repute.

He always took the greatest delight in the study of botany. His descriptions of between three and four hundred American plants, were published under the sanction of the university at Upsal, in Sweden, under the eye of the great botanist, Linnæus. He paid attention, also, to the climate, and left a long course of diurnal observations on the thermometer, the barometer, and the winds.

On his character as acting governor, we have already dwelt, in the historical part of our work.

Reading Lesson CXLIII.

Writings of Dr. Colden.

The following extracts will serve to give the reader an idea of the character of Dr. Colden's interesting work, the History of the Five Nations.

Customs of the Five Nations.

"The Five Nations think themselves by nature superior to the rest of mankind, and call themselves *Ongue honwe;* that is, men surpassing all others. This opinion, which they take care to cultivate into their children, gives them that courage which has been so terrible to all the nations of North America; and they have taken such care to impress the same opinion of their people on all their neighbors, that they, on all occasions, yield the most submissive obedience to them.

"I have been told by old men in New England, who remembered the time when the Mohawks made war on their Indians, that, as soon as a single Mohawk was discovered in the country, their Indians raised a cry from hill to hill, a Mohawk! a Mohawk!—upon which they all fled like sheep before wolves, without attempting to make the least resistance, whatever odds were on their side.

"The poor New-England Indians immediately ran to the christian houses; and the Mohawks often pursued so closely, that they entered along with them, and knocked their brains out, in the presence of the people of the house; but if the family had time to shut the door, they never attempted to force it, and, on no occasion, did any injury to the christians.

"All the nations round them have, for many years, entirely submitted to them, and pay a yearly tribute to them, in wampum: they dare neither make war nor peace, without the consent of the Mohawks. Two old men commonly go about, every year or two, to receive this tribute; and I have often had opportunity to observe what anxiety the poor Indians were under, while these two old men remained in that part of the country where I was. An old Mohawk sachem, in a poor blanket and a dirty shirt, may be seen issuing his orders with as arbitrary an authority, as a Roman dictator.

"It is not for the sake of tribute, however, that they make war; but from the notions of glory, which they have ever most strongly imprinted on their minds; and the farther they go to seek an enemy, the greater glory they think they gain. There cannot, I think, be a greater or stronger instance than this, how much the sentiments, impressed upon a people's mind, conduce to their grand-

eur, or one that more verifies a saying often to be met with, though but too little minded, that it is in the power of the rulers of a people to make them either great or little: for, by inculcating only the notions of honor and virtue, or those of luxury and riches, the people, in a little time, will become such as their rulers desire. The Five Nations, in their love of liberty and of their country, in their bravery in battle, and their constancy in enduring torments, equal the fortitude of the most renowned Romans. I shall finish their general character by what an enemy, a Frenchman, says of them.—Monsieur De la Poterie, in his history of North America.

"'When we speak,' says he, 'of the Five Nations in France, they are thought, by a common mistake, to be mere barbarians, always thirsting after human blood: but their true character is very different. They are, indeed, the fiercest and most formidable people in North America, and, at the same time, are as politic and judicious, as well can be conceived: and this appears from the management of all the affairs which they transact, not only with the French and English, but likewise with almost all the Indian nations of this vast continent.'"

Reading Lesson CXLIV.

Extract from the History of the Five Nations, continued.

"When any of the young men of these nations have a mind to signalize themselves, and to gain a reputation among their countrymen, by some notable enterprise against their enemy, they, at first, communicate their design to two or three of their most intimate friends; and, if they come into it, an invitation is made, in their names, to all the young men of the castle, to feast on dog's flesh; but whether this be because dog's flesh is most agreeable to Indian palates, or whether it be as an emblem of fidelity, for which the dog is distinguished by all nations, that it is always used on this occasion, I have not sufficient information to determine. When the company is met, the promoters of the enterprise set forth the undertaking in the best colors they can; they boast of what they intend to do, and incite others to join, from the glory there is to be obtained: and all who eat of the dog's flesh, thereby enlist themselves.

"The night before they set out, they make a grand feast: to this all the noted warriors of the nation are invited; and here they have their war-dance to the beat of a kind of a kettle-drum. The warriors are seated in two rows in the house, and each rises up in his turn, and sings the great acts he has himself performed, and the deeds of his ancestors; and this is always accompanied with a kind of a dance, or rather action, representing the manner in which they were performed; and, from time to time, all present join in a chorus, applauding every notable act. They exaggerate the injuries they have, at any time, received from their enemies, and extol the glory which any of their ancestors have gained by their bravery and courage; so that they work up their spirits to a high degree of warlike enthusiasm.

"I have sometimes persuaded some of their young Indians to act these dances, for our diversion, and to show us the manner of them; and even, on these occasions, they have worked themselves up to such a pitch, that they have made all present, uneasy. Is it not probable, that such designs as these have given the first rise to tragedy?

"They come to these dances with their faces painted in a frightful manner, as they always are when they go to war, to make themselves terrible to their enemies; and, in this manner, the night is spent. Next day, they march out with much formality, dressed in their finest apparel, and, in their march, observe a profound silence.

"An officer of the regular troops told me, that while he was commandant of fort Hunter, the Mohawks, on one of these occasions, told him, that they expected the usual military honors as they passed the garrison. Accordingly, he drew out his garrison; the men presented their pieces as the Indians passed, and the drum beat a march; and, with less respect, the officer said, they would have been dissatisfied. The Indians passed in a single row, one after another, with great gravity and profound silence; and every one of them, as he passed the officer, took his gun from his shoulder, and fired into the ground, near the officer's foot; they marched, in this manner, three or four miles from their castle.

"The women, on these occasions, always follow them with their old clothes; and they send back, by them, their finery in which they marched from the castle. But

before they go from this place, where they exchange their clothes, they always peel a large piece of the bark from some great tree. They commonly choose an oak as most lasting; upon the smooth side of this wood, they, with their red paint, draw one or more canoes, going from home, with the number of men in them, paddling, which go upon the expedition; and some animal, as a deer or fox, an emblem of the nation against which the expedition is designed, is painted at the head of the canoes; for they always travel in canoes along the rivers, which lead to the country against which the expedition is designed,—as far as they can.

"After the expedition is over, they stop at the same place, in their return, and send to their castle, to inform their friends of their arrival; that they may be prepared to give them a solemn reception, suited to the success they have had. In the meantime, they represent, on the same tree, or some one near it, the event of the enterprise; and now the canoes are painted with their heads turned towards the castle; the number of the enemy killed, is represented by scalps painted black, and the number of prisoners by as many withs, (in their painting not unlike pothooks,) with which they usually pinion their captives. These trees are the annals, or rather trophies of the Five Nations: I have seen many of them; and by them, and their war-songs, they preserve the history of their great achievements. The solemn reception of these warriors, and the acclamations of applause, which they receive, at their return, cannot but have, in the hearers, the same effect, in raising an emulation for glory, that a triumph had on the old Romans."

Reading Lesson CXLV.

An Indian hero.

[From the same work.]

"An Indian, named Piskaret, was, at this time,* one of the captains of greatest fame among the Adirondacs: this bold man, with four other captains, set out for Trois-Rivières in one canoe; each of them being provided with three muskets, which they loaded with two bullets

* Soon after the arrival of the French in Canada.

apiece, joined with a small chain, ten inches long; they met with five canoes on Sorel river, each having ten men of the Five Nations on board.

"Piskaret and his captains, as soon as those of the Five Nations drew near, pretended to give themselves up for lost, and sung their death-song, then suddenly fired upon the canoes, which they repeated with the arms that lay ready loaded, and tore those birch vessels betwixt wind and water. The men of the Five Nations were so surprised, that they tumbled out of their canoes, and gave Piskaret and his companions the opportunity of knocking as many of them on the head as they pleased, and saving the others, to feed their revenge, which they did, by burning them alive, with the most cruel torments.

"This, however, was so far from glutting Piskaret's revenge, that it seemed rather to give a keener edge to it; for he, soon after, undertook another enterprise, in which none of his countrymen durst accompany him. He was well acquainted with the country of the Five Nations, and set out about the time the snow began to melt,—with the precaution of putting the hinder part of his snow-shoes forward, that if any should happen upon his footsteps, they might think he was gone the contrary way; and, for farther security, went along the ridges and high grounds, where the snow was melted, that his track might be often lost. When he came near one of the villages of the Five Nations, he hid himself till night, and then entered a cabin, while every body was fast asleep, murdered the whole family, and carried their scalps into his lurking place.

"The next day, the people of the village searched for the murderer, in vain. The following night, he murdered all he found in another cabin. The inhabitants, next day, searched, likewise in vain, for the murderer; but, the third night, a watch was kept in every house.

"Piskaret, in the night, bundled up the scalps he had taken, the two former nights, to carry, as the proof of his victory, and then stole privately from house to house, till, at last, he found an Indian nodding, who was upon the watch in one of the houses; he knocked this man on the head; but as this alarmed the rest, he was forced immediately to fly.

"He was, however, under no great concern from the pursuit, being more swift of foot than any Indian then

living. He let his pursuers come near him, from time to time, and then would dart from them. This he did with design to tire them out, with the hopes of overtaking him.

"As it began to grow dark, he hid himself; and his pursuers stopped to rest. They, not being apprehensive of any danger from a single man, soon fell asleep; and the bold Piskaret, observing this, knocked them all on the head, and carried away their scalps among the rest."

Reading Lesson CXLVI.

Indian Tradition.

[From the same work.]

"In June, 1665, Monsieur De Tracy, appointed viceroy of America by the French king, arrived at Quebec, after he had visited the French islands in the West Indies, and brought with him four companies of foot; and, in September, of the same year, M. Courcelles arrived as governor general of Canada; he brought with him a regiment and several families, with all things necessary for establishing a colony. Their force being now thus considerably augmented, the French governor resolved to chastise the insolence of the Five Nations; and for that purpose, in the winter, sent out a party against the Mohawks; but these, by the cold, and their not knowing the use of snow-shoes, suffered very much, without doing anything against the enemy.

"This party, however, fell in with Schenectady,—a small town which Corlear, (a considerable man among the Dutch,) had then newly settled. When they appeared near Schenectady, they were almost dead with cold and hunger; and the Indians, who were then in that village, had entirely destroyed them, if Corlear, (in compassion to his fellow-christians,) had not contrived their escape. He had a mighty influence over the Indians; and it is from him, and in remembrance of his merit, that all governors of New York are called Corlear by the Indians, to this day, though he himself was never governor. He persuaded the Indians that this was a small party of the French army come to amuse them; that the great body was gone directly towards their castles; and that it was necessary for them immediately to go in defence of their

wives and children. This they believed, and readily obeyed; and, as soon as the Indians were gone, he sent to the French, and supplied them with provisions and other necessaries to carry them back.

"The French governor, in order to reward so signal a service, invited Corlear to Canada; but, as he went through the great lake, which lies to the northward of Albany, his canoe was overset, and he was drowned; and, from this accident, that lake has ever since been called Corlear's lake, by the people of New York.

"There is a rock in this lake, on which the waves dash and fly up to a great height, when the wind blows hard. The Indians believe that an old Indian lives under this rock, who has the power of the winds; and, therefore, as they pass it, in their voyages over, they always throw a pipe or some other small present to this old Indian, and pray a favorable wind. The English that pass with them, sometimes laugh at them; but they are sure to be told of Corlear's death. 'Your great countryman, Corlear, (say they,) as he passed by this rock, jested at our fathers making presents to this old Indian; but this affront cost him his life.'"

Reading Lesson CXLVII.

MADAME CATALINA SCHUYLER.

Niece and daughter-in-law of the first colonel Philip Schuyler, wife of the second of the same name and title, and aunt of the revolutionary general of the same name, was born at Albany, in the year 1701. This noble specimen of female character, eminent throughout the world, for her intelligence, worth, and loveliness, was scarcely more fortunate in the almost princely position which she occupied in life, than in the circumstance of having found a biographer in Mrs. Grant, whose faithful portrait of her benevolent patroness will form one of the most durable monuments ever erected to human excellence.

From the modest and unpretending work of Mrs. Grant, "Memoirs of an American lady," we have selected some of the most interesting particulars regarding Mrs. Schuyler, at the three characteristic stages of early, mature, and declining life. The simplicity and beauty of the author's

style render her book peculiarly suitable for our purpose of presenting to young readers interesting ideas of character, as well as incident and scenery, in connection with their native state.

Mrs. Grant gives us this account of the ancestral origin of Mrs. Schuyler.

"From the time of the great rebellion, so many English refugees frequented Holland, that the language and manners of our country became familiar at the Hague, particularly among the Stadtholder's party. When the province of New York fell under the British dominion, it became necessary that everybody should learn our language, as all public business was carried on in the English tongue, which they did the more willingly, as, after the revolution, the accession of the Stadtholder to the English crown very much reconciled them to our government. Still, however, the English was a kind of court language; little spoken, and imperfectly understood, in the interior. Those who carried over with them the French and English languages soon acquired a sway over their less enlightened fellow-settlers. Of this number were the Schuylers and Cuylers, two families among whom intellect of the superior kind seemed an inheritance; and whose intelligence and liberality of mind, fortified by well-grounded principle, carried them far beyond the petty and narrow views of the rest.

"Habituated, at home, to centre all wisdom and all happiness in commercial advantages, they would have been very ill-qualified to lay the foundation of an infant state, in a country that afforded plenty and content, as the reward of industry, but where the very nature of the territory, as well as the state of society, precluded great pecuniary acquisitions. Their object here was to tame savage nature, and to make the boundless wild subservient to agricultural purposes. Commercial pursuits were a distant prospect; and before they became of consequence, rural habits had greatly changed the character of these republicans. But the commercial spirit, inherent in all true Batavians, only slept to wake again, when the avidity of gain was called forth by the temptation of bartering for any lucrative commodity. The furs of the Indians gave this occasion, and were too soon made the object of the avidity of petty traders.

"To the infant settlement at Albany the consequences of this short-sighted policy might have proved fatal, had not these patriotic leaders, by their example and influence, checked, for a while, such illiberal and dangerous practices. It is a fact, singular and worth attending to, from the lesson it exhibits, that, in all our distant colonies, there is no other instance where a considerable town and prosperous settlement has arisen and flourished, in peace and safety, in the midst of nations disposed and often provoked to hostility, at a distance from the protection of ships, and from the only fortified city, which, always weakly garrisoned, was little fitted to awe and protect the whole province. Let it be remembered that the distance from New York to Albany is 170 miles; and that in the intermediate space, at the period of which I speak, there was not one town or fortified place. The shadow of a palisadoed fort, which then existed at Albany, was occupied by a single independent company, who did duty, but were dispersed through the town, working at various trades: so scarce, indeed, were artisans in this community, that a tradesman might, in these days, ask any wages he chose.

"To return to this settlement, which evidently owed its security to the wisdom of its leaders, who always acted on the simple maxim that honesty is the best policy; several miles north from Albany, a considerable possession, called the Flats, was inhabited by colonel Philip Schuyler, one of the most enlightened men in the province. This being a frontier, he would have found it a very dangerous situation, had he not been a person of singular worth, fortitude, and wisdom. If I were not afraid of tiring my reader with a detail of occurrences which, taking place before the birth of my friend, might seem irrelevant to the present purpose, I could relate many instances, almost incredible, of the power of mind displayed by this gentleman in governing the uninstructed, without coërcion or legal right. He possessed this species of power in no common degree; his influence, with that of his brother, John Schuyler, was exerted to conciliate the wandering tribes of Indians; and by fair traffic, (for he too was a trader,) and by fair, liberal dealing, they attained their object. They also strengthened the league already formed with the five Mohawk nations, by procuring for them

some assistance against their enemies, the Onondagoes of the Lakes.

"It may easily be supposed that such a mind as colonel Schuyler's was equally fitted to acquire and to communicate intelligence. He who had conversed with Addison, Marlborough, and Godolphin, who had gratified the curiosity of Oxford and Bolingbroke, of Arbuthnot and of Gay, with accounts of nature in her pristine garb, and of her children in their primitive simplicity;* he who could do all this, no doubt received ample returns of various information from those best qualified to give it; he was, besides, a diligent observer. Here he improved a taste for literature, native to him; for it had not yet taken root in this uncultivated soil. He brought home the Spectator and the tragedy of Cato, Windsor Forest, Young's poem on the Last Day, and, in short, all the works, then published, of that constellation of wits which distinguished the last female reign. Nay more, and better, he brought Paradise Lost; which, in after-times, afforded such delight to some branches of his family, that to them

'Paradise (indeed) seemed opened in the wild.'"

Reading Lesson CXLVIII.

Life of Madame Schuyler, continued.

"When colonel Schuyler returned from England, about the year 1709, his niece Catalina, the subject of this narrative, was about seven years old; he had a daughter and sons, yet this child was early distinguished above the rest for docility, a great desire of knowledge, and an even and pleasing temper; this her uncle had early observed. It was, at that time, very difficult to procure the means of instruction in those inland districts; female education, of consequence, was conducted on a very limited scale; girls learned needlework, (in which they were indeed both skilful and ingenious,) from their mothers and aunts; they were taught, too, at that period to read, in Dutch, the Bible, and a few Calvinistic tracts of the devotional kind. But, in the infancy of the settlement, few girls read

* Allusion is here made to colonel Schuyler's visit to England, when he was attended by several chiefs of the Five Nations,—as mentioned in the history.

English; when they did, they were thought accomplished; they generally spoke it, however imperfectly, and few were taught writing. This confined education precluded elegance; yet, though there was no polish, there was no vulgarity.

"The dregs of the people, who subside to the bottom of the mass, are not only degraded by abject poverty, but so utterly shut out from intercourse with the more enlightened, and so rankled with envy from a consciousness of the exclusion, that a sense of their condition gradually debases their minds; and this degradation communicates to their manners the vulgarity of which we complain. This more particularly applies to the lower classes in towns; for mere simplicity, or even a rustic bluntness, I would by no means call vulgarity.

"At the same time, these unembellished females had more comprehension of mind, more variety of ideas, more, in short, of what may be called original thinking, than could easily be imagined. Their thoughts were not like those of other illiterate women, occupied by the ordinary details of the day, and the gossiping tattle of the neighborhood. The life of new settlers, in a situation like this, where the very foundations of society were to be laid, was a life of exigences. Every individual took an interest in the general welfare: all contributed their respective shares of intelligence and sagacity, to aid plans that embraced important objects relative to the common good. Every day called forth some new expedient, in which the comfort or advantage of the whole was implicated; for there were no degrees but those assigned to worth and intellect.

"This singular community seemed to have a common stock, not only of sufferings and enjoyments, but of information and ideas; some preëminence, in point of knowledge and abilities, there certainly was, yet those who possessed it seemed scarcely conscious of their superiority; the daily occasions which called forth the exertions of mind, sharpened sagacity, and strengthened character; avarice and vanity were there confined to very narrow limits; of money there was little; and dress was, though in some instances valuable, very plain, and not subject to the caprice of fashion. The wolves, the bears, and the enraged or intoxicated savages, that always hung

threatening on their boundaries, made them more and more endeared to each other.

"In this calm infancy of society, the rigor of law slept, because the fury of turbulent passions had not awakened it. Fashion, that capricious tyrant over adult communities, had not erected her standard; that standard, to which the looks, the language, the very opinions of her subjects must be adjusted. Yet no person appeared uncouth, or ill-bred, because there was no accomplished standard of comparison. They viewed no superior with fear or envy, and treated no inferior with contempt or cruelty; servility and insolence were thus equally unknown. Perhaps they were less solicitous either to please or to shine, than the members of more polished societies; because, in the first place, they had no motive either to dazzle or deceive; and, in the next, had they attempted it, they felt there was no assuming a character with success, where their native one was so well known.

"Their manners, if not elegant and polished, were, at least, easy and independent; the constant efforts necessary to extend their commercial and agricultural possessions, prevented indolence; and industry was the certain path to plenty. Surrounded, on all sides, by those whom the least instance of fraud, insolence, or grasping meanness, would have rendered irreconcilable enemies, they were at first obliged to 'assume a virtue if they had it not;' and every circumstance that renders virtue habitual, may be accounted a happy one. I may be told that the virtues I describe were chiefly those of situation. I acknowledge it. It is no more to be expected that this equality, simplicity, and moderation, should continue in a more advanced state of society, than that the sublime tranquillity and dewy freshness, which adds a nameless charm to the face of nature in the dawn of a summer morning, should continue all day. Before increased wealth and extended territory, these 'wassel days' quickly receded; yet it is pleasing to indulge the remembrance of a spot, where peace and felicity, the result of moral excellence, dwelt undisturbed for,—alas! hardly for,—a century."

Reading Lesson CXLIX.

Life of Madame Schuyler, continued.

"Having given a sketch, which appears to my recollection, aided by subsequent conversations with my fellow-travellers, a faithful one, of the country and its inhabitants, it is time to return to the history of the mind of Miss Schuyler; for by no other circumstances than prematurity of intellect, and superior culture, were her earliest years distinguished. Her father, dying early, left her very much to the tuition of his brother. Her uncle's frontier situation made a kind of barrier to the settlement; while the powerful influence that his knowledge of nature and of character, his sound judgment and unstained integrity, had obtained over both parties, made him the bond by which the aborigines were united with the colonists. Thus, little leisure was left him for domestic enjoyments, or literary pursuits, for both of which his mind was peculiarly adapted. Of the leisure he could command, however, he made the best use; and soon distinguishing Catalina as the one among his family to whom nature had been most liberal, he was at pains to cultivate her taste for reading,—which soon discovered itself,—by procuring for her the best authors in history, divinity, and the belles lettres: in this latter branch, her reading was not very extensive; but then, the few books of this kind that she possessed were very well chosen, and she was early and intimately familiar with them.

"What I remember of her, assisted by comparisons since made with others, has led me to think that extensive reading, superficial and indiscriminate, such as the very easy access to books among us encourages, is not, at an early period of life, favorable to solid thinking, true taste, or fixed principle. Whatever she knew, she knew to the bottom; and the reflections which were thus suggested to her strong discerning mind, were digested by means of easy and instructive conversation.

"Colonel Schuyler had many relations in New York; and the governor and other ruling characters there carefully cultivated the acquaintance of a person so well qualified to instruct and inform them on certain points. Having considerable dealings in the fur trade too, he

went, every winter, to the capital, for a short time, to adjust his commercial concerns, and often took his favorite niece along with him, who, being of an uncommonly quick growth and tall stature, soon attracted attention by her personal graces, as well as by the charms of her conversation. I have been told, and should conclude, from a picture I have seen, drawn when she was fifteen, that she was, in her youth, very handsome. Of this few traces remained when I knew her; excessive corpulence having then overloaded her majestic person, and entirely changed the aspect of a countenance once eminently graceful.

"In no place did female excellence of any kind more amply receive its due tribute of applause and admiration than here, for various reasons. First, cultivation and refinement were rare. Then it was not the common routine that women should necessarily have such and such accomplishments; pains were taken only on minds strong enough to bear improvement without becoming conceited or pedantic. And lastly, as the spur of emulation was not invidiously applied, those who acquired a superior degree of knowledge, considered themselves as very fortunate in having a new source of enjoyment opened to them. But never having been made to understand that the chief motive of excelling was to dazzle or outshine others, they no more thought of despising their less fortunate companions, than of assuming preëminence for discovering a wild plum-tree or bee-hive in the woods, though, as in the former case, they would have regarded such a discovery as a benefit and a pleasure; their acquisitions, therefore, were never shaded by affectation.

"The women were all natives of the country, and few had more than domestic education. But men who possessed the advantages of early culture and usage of the world, daily arrived on the continent, from different parts of Europe. So that, if we may be indulged in the inelegant liberty of talking commercially of female elegance, the supply was not equal to the demand. It may be easily supposed that Miss Schuyler met with due attention; who, even at this early age, was respected for the strength of her character, and the dignity and composure of her manners.

"Her mother, whom she delighted to recollect, was mild, pious, and amiable; her acknowledged worth was

chastened by the utmost diffidence. Yet accustomed to exercise a certain power over the minds of the natives, she had great influence in restraining their irregularities, and swaying their opinions. From her knowledge of their language, and habit of conversing with them, some detached Indian families resided, for a while, in summer, in the vicinity of houses occupied by the more wealthy and benevolent inhabitants. They generally built a slight wigwam under shelter of the orchard-fence on the shadiest side; and never were neighbors more harmless, peaceable, and obliging,—I might truly add, industrious;—for in one way or other they were constantly occupied.

"The women and their children employed themselves in many ingenious handicrafts, which since the introduction of European arts and manufactures, have greatly declined. Baking trays, wooden dishes, ladles and spoons, shovels and rakes; brooms of a peculiar manufacture, made by splitting a birch-block into slender but tough filaments; baskets of all kinds and sizes, made of similar filaments, enriched with the most beautiful colors, which they alone knew how to extract from vegetable substances, and incorporate with the wood. They made, also, of the birch-bark,—which is here so strong and tenacious, that cradles and canoes are made of it,—many receptacles for holding fruit and other things, curiously adorned with embroidery, not inelegant, done with the sinews of deer; and leggings and moccasins,—a very comfortable and highly ornamental substitute for shoes and stockings, then universally used, in winter, among the men of our own people. They had, also, a beautiful manufacture of deer-skin, softened to the consistence of the finest chamois leather, and embroidered with beads of wampum, formed like bugles; these, with great art and industry, they formed out of shells, which had the appearance of fine white porcelain, veined with purple. This embroidery showed both skill and taste, and was, among themselves, highly valued. They had belts, large embroidered garters, and many other ornaments, formed, first of deer sinews, divided to the size of coarse thread, and afterwards, when they obtained worsted thread from us, of that material, formed in a manner which I could never comprehend. It was neither knitted nor wrought in the manner of net, nor yet woven; but the texture was more

like that of an officer's sash than anything I can compare it to.

"While the women and children were thus employed, the men sometimes assisted them in the more laborious part of their business, but oftener occupied themselves in fishing on the rivers, and drying or preserving, by means of smoke, in sheds erected for the purpose, sturgeon and large eels, which they caught in great quantities, and of an extraordinary size, for winter provision.

"Boys on the verge of manhood, and ambitious to be admitted into the hunting parties of the ensuing winter, exercised themselves in trying to improve their skill in archery, by shooting birds, squirrels, and raccoons. These petty huntings helped to support the little colony in the neighborhood, which, however, derived its principal subsistence from an exchange of their manufactures with the neighboring family, for milk, bread, and other articles of food.

"The summer residence of these ingenious artisans promoted a great intimacy between the females of the vicinity and the Indian women, whose sagacity and comprehension of mind were beyond belief.

"It is a singular circumstance, that though they saw the negroes, in every respectable family, not only treated with humanity, but cherished with parental kindness, they always regarded them with contempt and dislike, as an inferior race, and would have no communication with them. It was necessary, then, that all conversations should he held, and all business transacted with these females, by the mistress of the family. In the infancy of the settlement, the Indian language was familiar to the more intelligent inhabitants, who found it very useful, and were, no doubt, pleased with its nervous and emphatic idiom, and its lofty and sonorous cadence. It was indeed a noble and copious language, when one considers that it served as the vehicle of thought to a people whose ideas and sphere of action we should consider as so very confined.

"Conversation with these interesting and deeply reflecting natives, was, to thinking minds, no mean source of entertainment."

Reading Lesson CL.

Life of Madame Schuyler, continued.

" This digression, long as it is, has a very intimate connection with the character of my friend; she early adopted the views of her family, in regard to those friendly Indians, which greatly enlarged her mind, and, ever after, influenced her conduct. She was, even in childhood, well acquainted with their language, opinions, and customs; and, like every other person possessed of a liberality or benevolence of mind, whom chance had brought acquainted with them, was exceedingly partial to those high-souled and generous natives. The Mohawk language was early familiar to her; she spoke Dutch and English with equal ease and purity; was no stranger to the French tongue; and could, I think, read German. I have heard her speak it. From the conversations which her active curiosity led her to hold with native Africans, brought into her father's family, she was more intimately acquainted with the customs, manners, and government of their native country, than she could have been by reading all that was ever written on the subject.

" Books are, no doubt, the granaries of knowledge; but a diligent, inquiring mind, in the active morning of life, will find it strewed like manna over the face of the earth; and need not, in all cases, rest satisfied with intelligence accumulated by others, and tinctured with their passions and prejudices. Whoever reads Homer or Shakspeare may daily discover that they describe both nature and art from their own observation. Consequently, you see the images, reflected from the mirror of their great minds, differing from the descriptions of others, as the reflection of an object in all its colors and proportions from any polished surface, does from a shadow on a wall, or from a picture drawn from recollection.

" The enlarged mind of my friend, and her simple yet easy and dignified manners, made her readily adapt herself to those with whom she conversed, and everywhere command respect and kindness; and, on a nearer acquaintance, affection followed; but she had too much edateness and independence to adopt those caressing and nsinuating manners, by which the vain and the artful so

soon find their way into shallow minds. Her character did not captivate at once, but gradually unfolded itself; and you had always something new to discover. Her style was grave and masculine, without the least embellishment; and, at the same time, so pure, that every thing she said might be printed without correction, and so plain, that the most ignorant and most inferior persons were never at a loss to comprehend it. It possessed, too, a wonderful flexibility; it seemed to rise and fall with the subject. I have not met with a style which, to noble and uniform simplicity, united such variety of expression. Whoever drinks knowledge pure at its sources, solely from a delight in filling the capacities of a large mind, without the desire of dazzling or outshining others; whoever speaks, for the sole purpose of conveying to other minds those ideas from which he himself has received pleasure and advantage, may possess this chaste and natural style: but it is not to be acquired by art or study.

"Miss Schuyler had the happiness to captivate her cousin Philip, eldest son of her uncle, who was ten years older than herself, and was, in all respects, to be accounted a suitable, and, in the worldly sense, an advantageous match for her. His father was highly satisfied to have the two objects on whom he had bestowed so much care and culture, united. They were married in the year 1719, when she was in the eighteenth year of her age. When the old colonel died, he left considerable possessions to be divided among his children; and from the quantity of plate, paintings, &c., which they shared, there is reason to believe he must have brought some of his wealth from Holland; as, in those days, people had little means of enriching themselves in new settlements. He had also considerable possessions in a place near the town now called Fishkill, about twenty miles below Albany. His family residence, however, was at the Flats, a fertile and beautiful plain on the banks of the river. He possessed about two miles, on a stretch, of that rich and level champaign.

"This possession was bounded, on the east, by the river Hudson, whose high banks overhung the stream and its pebbly strand, and were both adorned and defended by elms, larger than ever I have seen in any other place, decked with natural festoons of wild grapes, which abound

along the banks of this noble stream. These lofty elms were left, when the country was cleared, to fortify the banks against the masses of thick ice, which make war upon them in spring, when the melting snows burst this glassy pavement, and raise the waters many feet above their usual level. This precaution not only answers that purpose, but gratifies the mind, by presenting to the eye a remnant of the wild magnificence of nature, amidst the smiling scenes produced by varied and successful cultivation.

"As you came along by the north end of the town, where the 'patroon' had his seat, you afterwards passed by the enclosures of the citizens,—where, as formerly described, they planted their corn,—and arrived at the Flats, colonel Schuyler's possession. On the right, you saw the river in all its beauty, there above a mile broad. On the opposite side, the view was bounded by steep hills, covered with lofty pines, from which a waterfall descended, which not only gave animation to the sylvan scene, but was the best barometer imaginable, foretelling, by its varied and intelligible sounds, every approaching change, not only of the weather, but of the wind.

"Opposite to the grounds lay an island, above a mile in length, and about a quarter in breadth, which also belonged to the colonel; exquisitely beautiful it was; and though the haunt I most delighted in, it is not in my power to describe it. Imagine a little Egypt, yearly overflowed, and of the most redundant fertility. This charming spot was at first covered with wood, like the rest of the country, except a long field in the middle, where the Indians had probably cultivated maize; round this was a broad shelving border, where the gray and weeping willows, the bending osier, and numberless aquatic plants, not known in England, were allowed to flourish in the utmost luxuriance, while within, some tall sycamores and wild fruit-trees towered above the rest. Thus was formed a broad belt, which, in winter, proved an impenetrable barrier against the broken ice, and, in summer, was the haunt of numberless birds and small animals, which dwelt in perfect safety; it being impossible to penetrate it.

"Numberless were the productions of this luxuriant spot; never was a richer field for a botanist; for, though the ice was kept off, the turbid waters of the spring flood

overflowed it annually, and not only deposited a rich sediment, but left the seeds of various plants swept from the shores it had passed by. The centre of the island, which was much higher than the sides, produced, with a slight degree of culture, the most abundant crops of wheat, hay, and flax."

Reading Lesson CLI.

Life of Madame Schuyler, continued.

"At the end of the island, which was exactly opposite to the family mansion, a long sand-bank extended; on this was a very valuable fishing-place, of which a considerable profit might be made. In summer, when the water was low, this narrow stripe,—for such it was,—came in sight, and furnished an amusing spectacle; for there the bald or white-headed eagle,—a large picturesque bird, very frequent in this country,—the ospray, the heron, and the curlew, used to stand in great numbers, in a long row, like a military arrangement, for a whole summer day, fishing for perch and a kind of fresh-water herring which abounded there. At the same season, a variety of wild ducks, which bred on the shores of the island, among which was a small white diver, of an elegant form, led forth their young to try their first excursion.

"What a scene have I beheld on a calm summer evening! There indeed were 'fringed banks,' richly fringed, and wonderfully variegated; where every imaginable shade of color mingled, and where life teemed prolific on every side. The river, a perfect mirror, reflected the pine-covered hills opposite; and the pliant shades bent without a wind, round this enchanting island, while hundreds of the white divers, saw-bill ducks with scarlet heads, teal, and other aquatic birds, sported at once, on the calm waters. At the discharge of a gun from the shore, these feathered beauties all disappeared at once, as if by magic, and, in an instant, rose again to view, in different places.

"How much they seemed to enjoy that life which was so new to them!—for they were the young broods first led forth to sport upon the waters;—while the fixed attitude and lofty port of the large birds of prey, that were ranged upon the sandy shelf, formed an inverted picture in the same clear mirror, and were a pleasing contrast to the

playful multitude around. These they never attempted to disturb, well aware of the facility of escape which their old retreats afforded them. Such of my readers as have had patience to follow me to this favorite isle, will be, ere now, as much bewildered as I have often been on its luxuriant shores.

"To return to the southward; on the confines of what might then be called an interminable wild, rose two gently sloping eminences, about half a mile from the shore. From each of these a large brook descended, bending through the plain, and having its course marked by the shades of primeval trees and shrubs, left there to shelter the cattle when the ground was cleared. On these eminences, in the near neighborhood and full view of the mansion at the Flats, were two large and well-built dwellings, inhabited by colonel Schuyler's two younger sons, Peter and Jeremiah. To the elder was allotted the place inhabited by his father, which, from its lower situation and level surface, was called the Flats. There was a custom prevalent among the new settlers, something like that of gavel-kind; they made a pretty equal division of lands among their younger sons. The eldest, by preëminence of birth, had a larger share, and generally succeeded to the domain inhabited by his father, with the slaves, cattle, and effects upon it.

"This, in the present instance, was the lot of the eldest son of that family whose possessions I have been describing. His portion of land on the shore of the river, was scarcely equal in value to those of his brothers, to whose possessions the brooks I have mentioned formed a natural boundary, dividing them from each other, and from his. To him was allotted the costly furniture of the family, of which paintings, plate, and china, constituted the valuable part; every thing else being merely plain and useful. They had also, a large house in Albany, which they occupied occasionally.

"I have neglected to describe, in its right place, the termination or background of the landscape I have such delight in recollecting. There the solemn and interminable forest was varied at intervals by rising grounds, near streams where birch and hickory, maple and poplar, cheered the eye with a lighter green, through the prevailing shade of dusky pines. On the border of the

wood, where the trees had been thinned for firing, was a broad shrubbery, all along, which marked the edges of the wood above the possessions of the brothers, as far as it extended.

"This was formed of sumach, a shrub with leaves, continually changing color, through all the varieties, from blending green and yellow, to orange tawny, and adorned with large lilach-shaped clusters of bright scarlet grains, covered with pungent dust of a sharp flavor, at once saline and acid. This the Indians use as salt to their food, and for the dyeing of different colors. The red glow, which was the general result of this natural border, had a fine effect, thrown out from the dusky shades which towered behind.

"To the northward, a sandy tract, covered with low pines, formed a boundary betwixt the Flats and Stonehook, which lay farther up the river."

Reading Lesson CLII.

Life of Madame Schuyler, continued.

"Philip Schuyler, who, on the death of his father, succeeded to the inheritance I have been describing, was a person of a mild, benevolent character, and an excellent understanding, which had received more culture than was usual in that country. But whether he had returned to Europe for the purpose of acquiring knowledge in the public seminaries there, or had been instructed by any French protestants, who were sometimes retained in the principal families for such purposes, I do not exactly know; but am led rather to suppose the latter, from the connection which always subsisted between that class of people and the Schuyler family.

"When the intimacy between this gentleman and the subject of these memoirs took place, she was a mere child; for the colonel, as he was soon after called, was ten years older than she. This was singular there, where most men married under twenty. But his early years were occupied by momentous concerns; for, by this time, the public safety began to be endangered by the insidious wiles of the French Canadians, to whom our frontier settlers began to be formidable rivals in the fur-trade, which the former wished to engross.

"Colonel Schuyler and his two brothers all possessed a superior degree of intellect, and uncommon external advantages. Peter, the only one remaining when I knew the family, was still a comely and dignified-looking old gentleman; and I was told his brothers were at least equal to him in this respect. His youngest brother, Jeremiah, who was much beloved for a disposition frank, cheerful, and generous to excess, had previously married a lady from New York, with whom he obtained some fortune: a thing then singular in that country. This lady, whom, in her declining years, I knew very well, was the daughter of a wealthy and distinguished family of French protestants. She was lively, sensible, and well informed.

"Peter, the second, was married to a native of Albany. She died early; but left behind two children, and the reputation of much worth, and great attention to her conjugal and maternal duties. All these relations lived with each other, and with the new-married lady, in habits of the most cordial intimacy and perfect confidence. They seemed, indeed, actuated by one spirit: having, in all things, similar views and similar principles. Looking up to the colonel as the head of the family, whose worth and affluence reflected consequence upon them all, they never dreamed of envying either his superior manners, or his wife's attainments, which they looked upon as a benefit and ornament to the whole.

"Soon after their marriage, they paid a visit to New York, which they repeated once a year, in the earlier period of their marriage, on account of their connection in that city, and the pleasing and intelligent society that was always to be met with there, both on account of its being the seat of government, and the residence of the commander-in-chief on the continent, who was then necessarily invested with considerable power and privileges, and had, as well as the governor for the time being, a petty court assembled round him. At a very early period, a better style of manners, greater ease, frankness, and polish prevailed at New York, than in any of the neighboring provinces. There was, in particular, a brigadier-general Hunter,* of whom I have heard Mrs. Schuyler talk a great deal, as coïnciding with her uncle and husband successively,

* Governor Hunter.

in their plans either of defence or improvement. He, I think, was the governor, and was as acceptable to the Schuylers, for his colloquial talents and friendly disposition, as estimable for his public spirit and application to business, in which respects he was not equalled by any of his successors. In his circle, the young couple were much distinguished.

"There were, too, among those leading families, the Livingstons and Rensselaers, friends connected with them both by blood and attachment. There was also another distinguished family to whom they were allied, and with whom they lived in cordial intimacy; these were the De Lanceys, of French descent, but, by subsequent intermarriages, blended with the Dutch inhabitants. Of the French protestants there were many then in New York, as will be hereafter explained; but as these conscientious exiles were persons allied in religion to the primitive settlers, and regular and industrious in their habits, they soon mingled with, and became a part of, that society which was enlivened by their sprightly manners, and benefited by the useful arts they brought along with them.

"In this mixed society, which must have had attraction for young people of superior and, in some degree, cultivated intellect, this well-matched pair took great pleasure; and here, no doubt, was improved that liberality of mind and manners which so much distinguished them from the less enlightened inhabitants of their native city. They were so much caressed in New York, and found so many charms in the intelligent and comparatively polished society of which they made a part, that they had, at first, some thoughts of residing there. These, however, soon gave way to the persuasions of the old colonel, with whom they principally resided till his death, which happened in 1721, two years after. This union was productive of all that felicity which might be expected to result from entire congeniality, not of sentiment only, but of original dispositions, attachments, and modes of living and thinking. He had been accustomed to consider her, as a child, with tender endearment. She had been used to look up to him, from infancy, as the model of manly excellence; and they drew knowledge and virtue from the same fountain, in the mind of that respectable parent whom they equally loved and revered."

Reading Lesson CLIII.

Life of Madame Schuyler, continued.

"A mind elevated by the consciousness of its own powers, and enlarged by the habitual exercise of them, for the great purpose of promoting the good of others, yields to the pressure of calamity, but sinks not under it; particularly when habituated, like these exalted characters, to look through the long vista of futurity, towards the final accomplishment of the designs of Providence.* Like a diligent gardener, who, when his promising young plants are blasted in full strength and beauty, though he feels extremely for their loss, does not sit down in idle chagrin, but redoubles his efforts to train up their successors to the same degree of excellence. Considering the large family Madame always had about her, of which she was the guiding star as well as the informing soul, and the innocent cheerfulness which she encouraged and enjoyed; considering, too, the number of interesting guests whom she received, and that complete union of minds which made her enter so intimately into all the colonel's pursuits, it may be wondered how she found time for solid and improving reading; because people whose time is so much occupied in business and society, are apt to relax, with amusing trifles of the desultory kind, when they have odd half hours to bestow on literary amusements. But her strong and indefatigable mind never loosened its grasp; ever intent on the useful and the noble, she found little leisure for what are indeed the greatest objects of feeble characters.

"After the middle of life she went little out; her household, long since arranged by certain general rules, went regularly on, because every domestic knew exactly the duties of his or her place, and dreaded losing it, as the greatest possible misfortune. She had always with her some young person, 'who was unto her as a daughter;' who was her friend and companion; and bred up in such a manner as to qualify her for being such; and one of whose duties it was to inspect the state of the household, and 'report progress,' with regard to the operations going

* Reference is here made to the severe domestic afflictions experienced, in her maturer years, by Madame Schuyler.

on in the various departments. For no one better understood, or more justly estimated, the duties of housewifery. Thus, those young females who had the happiness of being bred under her auspices, very soon became qualified to assist her, instead of encroaching much on her time. The example and conversation of the family in which they lived, was to them a perpetual school for useful knowledge, and manners easy and dignified, though natural and artless. They were not, indeed, embellished; but then they were not deformed by affectation, pretensions, or defective imitation of fashionable models of manners. They were not, indeed, bred up 'to dance, to dress, to roll the eye, or troll the tongue;' yet they were not lectured into unnatural gravity, or frozen reserve. I have seen those of them who were lovely, gay, and animated, though, in the words of an old familiar lyric,

'Without disguise or art, like flowers that grace the wild,
Their sweets they did impart whene'er they spoke or smiled.'

"Aunt was a great manager of her time, and always contrived to create leisure hours for reading; for that kind of conversation which is properly styled gossiping, she had the utmost contempt. Light, superficial reading, such as merely fills a blank in time, and glides over the mind without leaving an impression, was little known there; for few books crossed the Atlantic but such as were worth carrying so far for their intrinsic value. She was too much accustomed to have her mind occupied with objects of real weight and importance, to give it up to frivolous pursuits of any kind.

"She began the morning with reading the Scriptures. They always breakfasted early, and dined two hours later than the primitive inhabitants, who always took that meal at twelve. This departure from the ancient custom was necessary in this family, to accommodate the great numbers of British as well as strangers from New York, who were daily entertained at her liberal table. This arrangement gave her the advantage of a longer forenoon to dispose of. After breakfast she gave orders for the family details of the day, which, without a scrupulous attention to those minutiæ which fell more properly under the notice of her young friends, she always regulated in the most judicious manner, so as to prevent all appearance of hurry and confusion.

"There was such a rivalry among domestics, whose sole ambition was her favor, and who had been trained up from infancy, each to their several duties, that excellence in each department was the result both of habit and emulation; while her young protégées were early taught the value and importance of good housewifery, and were sedulous in their attention to little matters of decoration and elegance, which her mind was too much engrossed to attend to; so that her household affairs, ever well regulated, went on in a mechanical kind of progress, that seemed to engage little of her attention, though her vigilant and overruling mind set every spring of action in motion."

Reading Lesson CLIV.

Life of Madame Schuyler, continued.

"Having thus easily and speedily arranged the details of the day, she retired to read in her closet, where she generally remained till about eleven; when, being unequal to distant walks, the colonel and she, and some of her elder guests, passed some of the hotter hours among those embowering shades of her garden, in which she took great pleasure. Here was their Lyceum; here questions in religion and morality, too weighty for table-talk, were leisurely and coolly discussed; and plans of policy and various utility arranged. From this retreat they adjourned to the portico; and while the colonel either retired to write, or went to give directions to his servants, she sat in this little tribunal, giving audience to new settlers, followers of the army left in hapless dependence, and others who wanted assistance or advice, or hoped she would intercede with the colonel for something more peculiarly in his way, he having great influence with the colonial government.

"At the usual hour her dinner-party assembled, which was generally a large one; and here I must digress from the detail of the day to observe, that, looking up, as I always did to Madame, with admiring veneration, and having always heard her mentioned with unqualified applause, I look often back to think what defects or faults she could possibly have to rank with the sons and daughters of imperfection, inhabiting this transitory scene of existence; well knowing, from subsequent observation of life, that

error is the unavoidable portion of humanity. Yet of this truism, to which every one will readily subscribe, I can recollect no proof in my friend's conduct, unless the luxury of her table might be produced to confirm it. Yet this, after all, was but comparative luxury. There was more choice and selection, and perhaps more abundance at her table, than at those of the other primitive inhabitants; yet how simple were her repasts compared with those which the luxury of the higher ranks in this country offer to provoke the sated appetite!

"Her dinner-party generally consisted of some of her intimate friends or near relations; her adopted children, who were inmates for the time being; and strangers, sometimes invited, merely as friendless travellers, on the score of hospitality, but often welcomed for some time, as stationary visitors, on account of worth or talents, that gave value to their society; and, lastly, military guests, selected with some discrimination, on account of the young friends whom they wished not only to protect, but cultivate by an improving association. Conversation, here, was always rational, generally instructive, and often cheerful.

"The afternoon frequently brought with it a new set of guests. Tea was always drunk early here; and, as I have formerly observed, was attended with so many petty luxuries of pastry, confectionary, &c., that it might well be accounted a meal, by those whose early and frugal dinners had so long gone by. In Albany, it was customary, after the heat of the day was past, for the young people to go in parties of three or four, in open carriages, to drink tea at an hour or two's drive from home. The receiving and entertaining this sort of company, generally was the province of the younger part of the family; and of those many came, in summer evenings, to the Flats, when tea, which was very early, was over. The young people, and those who were older, took their different walks, while Madame sat in her portico, engaged in what might comparatively be called light reading—essays, biography, poetry, &c., till the younger party set out on their return home, and her domestic friends rejoined her in her portico, where, in warm evenings, a slight repast was sometimes brought; but they more frequently shared the last, and most truly social meal within.

"Winter made little difference in her mode of occupy-

ing her time. She then always retired to her closet, to read, at stated periods.

"In conversation she certainly took delight, and peculiarly excelled; yet did not in the least engross it, or seem to dictate. On the contrary, her thirst for knowledge was such, and she possessed such a peculiar talent for discovering the point of utility in all things, that from every one's discourse she extracted some information, on which the light of her mind was thrown in such a direction as made it turn to account. Whenever she laid down her book, she took up her knitting, which neither occupied her eyes nor attention, while it kept her fingers engaged; thus setting an example of humble diligence to her young protégées. In this employment she had a kind of tender satisfaction; as little children, reared in the family, were the only objects of her care in this respect. For these, she constantly provided a supply of hosiery till they were seven years old; and, after that, transferred her attention to some younger favorite.

"In her earlier days, when her beloved colonel could share the gayeties of society, I have been told they both had a high relish for innocent mirth, and every species of humorous pleasantry; but, in my time, there was a chastened gravity in his discourse, which, however, did not repulse innocent cheerfulness, though it dashed all manner of levity, and that flippancy which great familiarity sometimes encourages among young people who live much together. Had Madame, with the same good sense, the same high principle, and general benevolence towards young people, lived in society such as is to be met with in Britain, the principle upon which she acted would have led her to encourage in such society more gayety and freedom of manners. As the regulated forms of life in Britain set bounds to the ease that accompanies good breeding, and refinement, generally diffused, supplies the place of native delicacy, where that is wanting, a certain decent freedom is both safe and allowable. But, amid the simplicity of primitive manners, those bounds are not so well defined. Under these circumstances, mirth is a romp, and humor a buffoon; and both must be kept within strict limits."

Reading Lesson CLV.

Life of Madame Schuyler, continued.

"The Schuylers regarded the expedition against Ticonderoga,* with a mixture of doubt and dismay; knowing too well, from the sad retrospect of former failures, how little valor and discipline availed where regular troops had to encounter with unseen foes, and with difficulties arising from the nature of the ground, for which military science afforded no remedy. Of general Abercrombie's worth and valor they had the highest opinion; but they were doubtful of attacking an enemy so subtle and experienced on their own ground, in intrenchments; and this, they feared, he would have the temerity to attempt.

"In the meantime, preparations were making for the assault. The troops were marched in detachments past the Flats; and each detachment quartered, for a night, on the common, or in the offices. One of the first of these was commanded by Lee, of frantic celebrity, who afterwards, in the American war, joined the opponents of government, and was then a captain in the British service. Captain Lee had neglected to bring the customary warrants for impressing horses and oxen, and procuring a supply of various necessaries, to be paid for by the agents of government, on showing the usual documents; he, however, seized everything he wanted where he could most readily find it, as if he were in a conquered country; and, not content with this violence, poured forth a volley of execrations on those who presumed to question his right of appropriating for his troops everything that could be serviceable to them: even Madame, accustomed to universal respect, and to be considered as the friend and benefactress of the army, was not spared; and the aids which she never failed to bestow on those whom she saw about to expose their lives for the general defence, were rudely demanded, or violently seized.

"Never did the genuine christianity of this exalted character shine more brightly than in this exigency; her countenance never altered, and she used every argument to restrain the rage of her domestics, and the clamor of

* Reference is made here to the expedition under general Abercrombie, mentioned in the history.

her neighbors, who were treated in the same manner. Lee marched on, after having done all the mischief in his power, and was the next day succeeded by lord Howe, who was indignant upon hearing what had happened, and astonished at the calmness with which Madame bore the treatment she had received. She soothed him by telling him, that she knew too well the value of protection from a danger so imminent, to grow captious with her deliverers on account of a single instance of irregularity, and only regretted that they should have deprived her of her wonted pleasure, in freely bestowing whatever could advance the service, or refresh the exhausted troops. They had a long and very serious conversation, that night.

"In the morning, his lordship proposed setting out very early; but, when he arose, he was astonished to find Madame waiting, and breakfast ready: he smiled, and said he would not disappoint her, as it was hard to say when he might again breakfast with a lady. Impressed with an unaccountable degree of concern about the fate of the enterprise in which he was embarked, she again repeated her counsels and her cautions; and, when he was about to depart, embraced him with the affection of a mother, and shed many tears,—a weakness she did not often give way to.

"Meantime, the best prepared and disciplined body of forces that had ever been assembled in America, were proceeding on an enterprise that, to the experience and sagacity of the Schuylers, appeared a hopeless, or, at least, a very desperate one. A general gloom overspread the family; this, at all times large, was now augmented by several of the relations both of the colonel and Madame, who had visited them, at that time, to be nearer the scene of action, and to get the readiest and most authentic intelligence; for the apprehended consequence of a defeat was the pouring in of the French troops into the interior of the province; in which case Albany might be abandoned to the enraged savages attending the French army.

"A few days after lord Howe's departure, in the afternoon, a man was seen coming on horseback from the north, galloping violently, without his hat. Pedrom, as he was familiarly called, the colonel's only surviving brother, was with her, and ran instantly to inquire, well knowing he rode express. The man galloped on, crying out that lord

Howe was killed. The mind of our good aunt had been so engrossed by her anxiety and fears for the event impending, and so impressed by the merit and magnanimity of her favorite hero, that her wonted firmness sunk under the stroke, and she broke out into bitter lamentations. This had such an effect on her friends and domestics, that shrieks and sobs of anguish echoed through every part of the house. Even those who were too young or too old to enter into the public calamity, were affected by the violent grief of aunt, who, in general, had too much self-command to let others witness her sorrows. Lord Howe was shot from behind a tree, probably by some Indian; and the whole army were inconsolable for a loss they too well knew to be irreparable. This stroke, however, they soon found to be 'portent and pain, a menace and a blow;' but this dark prospect was cheered, for a moment, by a deceitful gleam of hope, which only added to the bitterness of disappointment.

"The next day, they heard the particulars of the skirmish, for it could scarce be called a regular engagement, which had proved fatal to the young warrior, whose loss was so deeply felt.

"Two thousand men were killed, wounded, or taken, on this disastrous day. On the next, those most dangerously wounded were sent forward in boats, and reached the Flats before evening; they, in a manner, brought, at least confirmed, the news of the defeat. Madame had her barn instantly fitted up into a temporary hospital, and a room in her house allotted for the surgeon who attended the patients; among these was Lee, the same insolent and rapacious Lee, who had insulted this general benefactress, and deprived her of one of her greatest pleasures, that of giving a share of everything that she had, to advance the service. She treated him with compassion, without adverting, by the least hint, to the past. She tore up her sheets and table-linen for bandages; and she and her nieces were constantly employed in attending and cheering the wounded, while all her domestics were busied in preparing food and everything necessary for those unhappy sufferers. Even Lee felt and acknowledged the resistless force of such generous humanity. He swore, in his vehement manner, that he was sure there would be a place reserved for Madame in heaven, though no other

woman should be there, and that he should wish for nothing better than to share her final destiny.

"The active industrious beneficence she exercised, at this time, not only towards the wounded, but the wretched widows and orphans who had remained here, and had lost their all, in their husbands and parents, was beyond praise. Could I clearly recollect and arrange the anecdotes of this period, as I have often heard them, they would, of themselves, fill a volume; suffice it, that such was the veneration in which she was held in the army after this period, that I recollect, among the earliest impressions received in my mind, that of a profound reverence for Madame, as these people were wont to call her. Before I ever saw her, I used to think of her as a most august personage, of a majestic presence; sitting on an elevated seat, and scattering bounty to wounded soldiers, and poor women and children."

Reading Lesson CLVI.

Life of Madame Schuyler, continued.

"My father removed to the town;* where a friend of his, a Scotch merchant, gave him a lodging in his own house, next to that very Madame Schuyler who had been so long my daily thought and nightly dream. We had not been long there when aunt heard that my father was a good, plain, upright man, without pretensions, but very well principled. She sent a married lady, the wife of her favorite nephew, who resided with her at the time, to ask us to spend the evening with her. I think I have not been, on any occasion, more astonished, than when, with no little awe and agitation, I came into the presence of Madame. She was sitting, and filled a great chair, from which she seldom moved. Her aspect was composed, and her manner, such as was at first more calculated to inspire respect than conciliate affection.

"Not having the smallest solicitude about what people thought of her, and having her mind generally occupied with matters of weighty concern, the first expression of her kindness seemed rather a lofty courtesy than attractive affability; but she shone out by degrees, and she was sure eventually to please every one worth pleasing,

* Albany.

her conversation was so rich, so various, so informing; everything she said bore such a stamp of reality; her character had such a grasp in it. Her expressions, not from art and study, but from the clear perceptions of her sound and strong mind, were powerful, distinct, and exactly adapted to the occasion. You saw her thoughts as they occurred to her mind, without the usual bias rising from either a fear to offend, or a wish to please. This was one of the secrets in which lay the singular power of her conversation.

"When ordinary people speak to you, your mind wanders in search of the motives that prompt their discourse, or the views and prejudices which bias it: when those who excite (and perhaps solicit) admiration, talk, you are secretly asking yourself whether they mean to inform or dazzle you. All this interior canvass vanished before the evident truth and unstudied ease of Aunt's discourse. On a nearer knowledge, too, you found she was much more intent to serve, than please you, and too much engrossed by her endeavors to do so, to stop and look round for your gratitude, which she heeded just as little as your admiration. In short, she informed, enlightened, and served you, without levying on you any tribute whatever, except the information you could give in return.

"I describe her appearance as it then struck me, and, once for all, her manners and conversation, as I thought of them when I was older, and knew better how to distinguish and appreciate. Everything about her was calculated to increase the impression of respect and admiration, which, from the earliest dawn of reflection, I had been taught to entertain of her. Her house was the most spacious, and best furnished, I had ever entered. The family pictures, and scripture paintings, were, to me, particularly awful and impressive. I compared them to the models which had before existed in my imagination, and was delighted or mortified, as I found they did or did not resemble them.

"In the front of Madame's house was a portico, towards the street. To this she was supported, in fine evenings, when the whole town were enjoying themselves on their respective seats of one kind or other. To hers there were a few steps of ascent, on which we used humbly to seat ourselves; while a succession of 'the elders of that

city' paid their respects to Madame, and conversed with her, by turns. Never was levee better attended. 'Aunt Schuyler is come out,' was a talismanic sentence that produced pleasure in every countenance, and set every one in motion who hoped to be well received; for, as I have formerly observed, Aunt knew the value of time much too well to devote it to every one. We lived, all this time, next door to her, and were often of these evening parties.

"The Indian war was now drawing to a close, after occasioning great disquiet, boundless expense, and some bloodshed. Even when we had the advantage, which our tactics and artillery, in some instances, gave, it was a warfare of the most precarious and perplexing kind. It was something like hunting in a forest, at best, could you but have supposed the animals you pursued armed with missile weapons, and ever ready to start out of some unlooked-for place. Our faithful Indian confederates, as far as I can recollect, were more useful to us, on this occasion, than all the dear-bought apparatus which we collected for the purpose of destroying an enemy too wise and too swift to permit us to come in sight of them; or, if determined to attack us, sufficiently dexterous to make us feel before we saw them.

"We said, however, that we conquered Pondiac, at which, no doubt, he smiled: for the truth of the matter was, the conduct of this war resembled a protracted game of chess. He was as little able to take our forts without cannon, as we were able, without the feet, the eyes, and the instinctive sagacity of Indians, to trace them to their retreats. After delighting ourselves, for a long while, with the manner in which we were to punish Pondiac's presumption, '*could we once but catch him*,' all ended in our making a treaty, very honorable for him, and not very disadvantageous to ourselves. We gave both presents and promises, and Pondiac gave——permission to the mothers of those children who had been taken away from the frontier settlements to receive them back again, on condition of delivering up the Indian prisoners.

"The joyful day when the congress was holden for concluding peace, I never shall forget. Another memorable day is engraven in indelible characters upon my memory. Madame, being deeply interested in the projected exchange, brought about a scheme for having it

take place at Albany, which was more central than any other place, and where her influence among the Mohawks could be of use in getting intelligence about the children, and sending messages to those who had adopted them, and who, by this time, were very unwilling to part with them:—in the first place, because they were grown very fond of them; and again, because they thought the children would not be so happy in our manner of life, which appeared to them both constrained and effeminate.

"This exchange had a large retrospect. For ten years back, there had been, every now and then, while these Indians were in the French interest, ravages upon the frontiers of the different provinces. In many instances, these children had been snatched away while their parents were working in the fields, or after they were killed. A certain day was appointed, on which all who had lost their children, or sought those of their relations, were to come to Albany, in search of them; where, on that day, all Indians possessed of white children, were to present them. Poor women, who had travelled some hundred miles, from the back settlements of Pennsylvania and New England, appeared here, with anxious looks and aching hearts, not knowing whether their children were alive, or how exactly to identify them, if they should meet them. I observed these apprehensive and tender mothers were, though poor people, all dressed with peculiar neatness and attention; each wishing the first impression her child should receive of her might be a favorable one.

"On a gentle slope near the fort, stood a row of temporary huts, built by retainers to the troops: the green before these buildings, was the scene of these pathetic recognitions, which I did not fail to attend. The joy of even the happy mothers, was overpowering, and found vent in tears; but not like the bitter tears of those who, after long travel, found not what they sought. It was affecting to see the deep and silent sorrow of the Indian women, and of the children, who knew no other mother, and clung fondly to their bosoms, from whence they were not torn without the most piercing shrieks; while their own fond mothers were distressed, beyond measure, at the shyness and aversion with which these long-lost objects of their love received their caresses.

"I shall never forget the grotesque figures and wild

looks of these young savages; nor the trembling haste with which their mothers arrayed them in the new clothes they had brought for them, as hoping that, with the Indian dress, they would throw off their habits and attachments. It was, in short, a scene impossible to describe, but most affecting to behold. Never were my good friend's considerate liberality and useful sympathy more fully exerted than on this occasion, which brought so many poor travellers from their distant homes, on this pilgrimage to the shrine of nature. How many traders did she persuade to take them gratis in their boats! How many did she feed and lodge; and in what various ways did she serve or make others serve them all! No one, indeed, knew how to refuse a request of Aunt Schuyler, who never made one for herself."

"To tell the history of Aunt during the years that her life was prolonged to witness scenes abhorrent to her feelings and her principles,* would be a painful task indeed, even if I were better informed than I am, or wish to be, of the transactions of those perturbed times. Of her private history I only know that, on the accidental death of her nephew, captain Cortlandt Schuyler, she took home his two eldest sons, and kept them with her till her own death, which happened in 1778 or 1779. I know, too, that, like the Roman Atticus, she kept free from the violence and bigotry of party; and like him, too, kindly and liberally assisted those of each side who, as the tide of success ran different ways, were considered as unfortunate. On this subject I do not choose to enlarge, but shall merely observe, that all the colonel's relations were on the republican side, while every one of her own nephews adhered to the royal cause, to their very great loss and detriment. She was, by that time, too venerable, as well as respectable, to be insulted for her principles; and her opinions were always delivered in a manner firm and calm, like her own mind, which was too well regulated to admit the rancor of party, and too dignified to stoop to disguise of any kind. She died full of years, and honored by all who could or could not appreciate her worth; for, not to esteem Aunt Schuyler, was to forfeit all pretensions to estimation."

* Referring to the period of the revolution, and to Mrs. Schuyler's predilections, as a loyalist.

Reading Lesson CLVII.

REV. DR. SAMUEL JOHNSON,*

"First president of King's (now Columbia) college, New York, was born at Guilford, Connecticut. He entered the college at Saybrook, at about fourteen years of age, and was graduated in 1714. In 1716, a college was established by the general court of the colony, at New Haven; and Mr. Johnson was appointed tutor, though not more than twenty years old.

"In 1720, he became a preacher at West Haven. A short time afterwards, he became an episcopalian, and, in 1722, went to England to obtain ordination. There he received the degree of master of arts, at Oxford and Cambridge. In 1723, he returned, and settled at Stratford, where he preached to a small congregation of episcopalian families.

"Here he was treated, by the people at large, as a schismatic and apostate, and continually thwarted; the object being to drive him from the country. This treatment he endured with patience and firmness.

"In 1743, the university of Oxford conferred on him the degree of doctor of divinity. In 1754, he was chosen president of the college just established at New York, and filled the office, with much credit, until 1763, when he resigned, and returned to Stratford, where he resumed his pastoral functions, and continued them till his death, in January, 1772,—in the seventy-sixth year of his age.

"Dr. Johnson was a man of great learning, quickness of perception, soundness of judgment, and benevolence. While bishop Berkeley was residing in Rhode Island,—which he did two years and a half from the time of his arrival, in 1729,—Dr. Johnson became acquainted with him, and embraced his theory of idealism. Dr. Johnson's publications were chiefly controversial. He also published a Hebrew and an English Grammar, which were of great service to the infant cause of education in America."

The name of this conscientious divine and laborious student, notwithstanding the odium into which it fell with

* For this and several other lives we are indebted to the excellent biographical notices by Mr. Walsh and others, in the Encyclopædia Americana.

one portion of the religious community, will descend to posterity as that of one of the venerable pioneers of learning, in this country. In the state of New York, Dr. Johnson will ever be held in high estimation, as the first provost of Columbia college; the duties of which station he discharged with distinguished zeal and ability. The impulse which, in this office, he gave to the cause of classical education, continued to be felt, long after he had ceased from all the duties of his active and useful life.

Reading Lesson CLVIII.

HON. PHILIP LIVINGSTON,

"One of the signers of the American Declaration of Independence, was born at Albany, January 15th, 1716, was graduated at Yale college, in 1737, and became a merchant in New York.

"In 1759, he was returned a member to the general assembly of the colony, and, afterwards, to the general congress of 1774, and to the congress that issued the Declaration of Independence.

"In 1777, Mr. Livingston was a senator in the state legislature of New York. In 1778, he was again deputed to the general congress, where his efforts aggravated a dropsy of the chest. He died June 12th, 1778, at York, Pennsylvania, to which congress had retired."

The life of this individual furnishes few incidents of interest. But to the personal history of every signer of the national Declaration, a strong interest is necessarily attached. To us, every one of that illustrious circle presents himself as a father of his country; and even the slightest particulars of his life are, so far, a source of satisfaction to the mind.

The number of eminent men of this name, renders it, also, a matter of importance, to young readers, to attach a distinct idea to them individually, so as to avoid confusion and mistake.

DR. JACOB OGDEN,

"Was descended from a respectable family, that early came to New England, and thence to Long Island and New Jersey. He was son of Josiah, and younger

brother of the honorable David Ogden, for many years one of his majesty's justices of the supreme court of New Jersey. He was born at Newark, 1721, and, having studied medicine, settled in Jamaica, Long Island, in 1746. He enjoyed, through life, an acquaintance with the most celebrated physicians, particularly Colden and the elder Bard.

"He was a bold supporter of inoculation, and early discovered the value of calomel in the diseases incident to our climate. His letters addressed to Hugh Gaine, on the malignant sore-throat distemper,—which made its appearance about that time, October, 1769, and again in 1774,—were considered the best treatise on that disorder, then published.

"'While others,' says Dr. Francis, 'were timidly and capriciously prescribing small doses of mercury, in the cure of this disease, Dr. Ogden, with more correct pathological principles, employed mercurial remedies with a confidence which his success amply warranted. He may, therefore, justly be considered as entitled to the honor of being the first in the United States, to whom may be attributed the free use of mercury, in the class of inflammatory diseases. His publications may be taken as creditable evidence of his attainments in medical literature and science. For, at a time when medicine, in this country, was obscured by prejudice, encumbered with forms, and shrouded in mystery, he thought and acted for himself, and proved, by a long course of success, that he was not only an original thinker, but a sagacious observer.'"

Reading Lesson CLIX.

GENERAL NATHANIEL WOODHULL.

"This distinguished patriot was the eldest son of Nathaniel, and great-grandson of Richard Woodhull, who settled at Setauket, in the year 1656. He was born at Mastic, Long Island, December 30th, 1722. His early life was passed in assisting his father to cultivate the possession which he afterwards inherited; and his education was such as was calculated to fit him for the duties of active life. He was endowed, by nature, with a strong, discriminating mind and a sound judgment, which soon attracted the notice of his fellow-citizens, and pointed him out as peculiarly qualified for public usefulness.

"His first public employment was in a military capacity, in the war between Great Britain and France, which commenced in 1754, and terminated in 1760. But it is not known that he entered the army before 1758. Previous to that year, the war had been conducted without much system or vigor; and the French had the superiority in every campaign.

"Being appointed a major in the provincial forces of New York, Mr. Woodhull, in 1758, served in that capacity, in the army under general Abercrombie, intended for the reduction of Ticonderoga and Crown Point. He was engaged in the daring, or rather rash assault, ordered by the English general, before the arrival of the artillery, upon the former place.

"Desirous of wiping off the stain of this repulse, general Abercrombie detached a portion of his army against Cadaraqui, or fort Frontenac, (now Kingston,) an important fortress at the communication of lake Ontario with the St. Lawrence.

"Lieutenant-colonel Bradstreet, with whom the design originated, commanded the enterprise; having a train of eight cannon and three mortars, and a body of three thousand men, of whom one hundred and fifty were regulars. The rest of the detachment was composed of provincials from different places. On the 27th of August, 1758, a combined operation was directed against the fort, by land and water. The conduct of the forces in the boats was committed to Corse and Woodhull,—the latter with orders to receive the fire of the fort without returning it, until their troops had loaded and fired. The resolution with which the operations were conducted dispirited the enemy, whose forces were insufficient to the defence of their works; and, after a feeble resistance, the garrison struck their colors, and capitulated.

"Whether Mr. Woodhull was employed in the campaign of the following year, is not ascertained; most of his papers having been destroyed by a fire, a few years after his death. It is believed, however, that he either marched with the force which general Prideaux conducted, in 1759, against Niagara, or that led by general Amherst against Ticonderoga and Crown Point, which last enterprise had a successful issue. In 1760, he served as colonel of the third regiment of New-York provincials,

under general Amherst, which marched against Montreal, and effected the final reduction of Canada. Upon the capitulation of the marquis De Vaudreuil, on the 8th of September, colonel Woodhull, with his troops, returned to New York, and retired to private life."

Reading Lesson CLX.

Life of general Woodhull, continued.

"The removal of French power from their neighborhood, so dangerous to the colonists, and their consciousness of having efficiently contributed to its achievement, produced, naturally, a more free inquiry into the relative rights of the provinces and the mother country. The spirit to which this inquiry gave rise, was stimulated by the pretensions of Britain, that Americans were to be taxed by parliament, for the expenses of whatever attacks might be made upon them, in any wars of interest or ambition, incurred by the parent state; and these pretensions grew, at last, into assertions of a right to tax them in all cases whatsoever. Acts of parliament rashly passed, and sometimes timidly repealed, only served to increase the existing discontent, and hasten the impending crisis.

"Participating in the general feeling, the assembly of New York, at the close of December, 1768, unanimously resolved that 'no tax *could*, or *ought to be*, imposed on the persons or estates of his majesty's subjects within the colony, but by their *own free gift*, and by their *representatives* in general assembly; that the rights and privileges of the legislatures could not be abridged, superseded, abrogated, or annulled; and that they had a right to consult with the other colonies in matters wherein their liberties might be affected.'

"In consequence of these resolutions, the governor, Sir Henry Moore, dissolved the assembly on the 2d of January, 1769. The language and proceedings of the assembly, were highly approved by the people of Suffolk; and, at the election in the spring of 1769, they returned to the assembly colonel Woodhull and William Nicoll, Esq.

"In their instructions, drawn for their representatives, the county emphatically expressed their reliance on the exertions of their members '*to preserve their freedom*

and the command over their own purses.' The injunction was faithfully observed by colonel Woodhull, who, during the six years that followed, of the continuance of the royal government, was constant in his devotion to the rights of his countrymen, and in his opposition to the court party.

"In the convention which met in the city of New York, April 10th, 1775, to choose delegates to the continental congress, colonel Woodhull appeared from the county of Suffolk. Pursuant to a recommendation from the New-York local committee, a provincial congress was deputed by the several counties, which met in the city, May 22d, 1775. This body practically asserted its right to entire sovereignty, suspending, in effect, from the time of its organization, and ultimately dissolving and expelling, the royal authority. Colonel Woodhull was placed at the head of the delegation from Suffolk.

"On the 22d of August, 1775, the provincial congress reörganized the militia of this colony into brigades, directing that a brigadier-general, with a major of brigade, be commissioned to the command of each. The militia of Suffolk and Queens constituted one brigade, of which colonel Woodhull was subsequently appointed general, and Jonathan Lawrence, Esq., a member of the provincial congress from Queens, major of brigade.

"On the 28th of August, 1775, general Woodhull was elected president of the provincial congress, which office he held in the body that succeeded it in 1776. The provincial congress, doubting its powers to conform to the recommendation of the continental congress by erecting a new form of government, to the exclusion of all foreign control, on the 31st of May, 1776, recommended to the electors of the several counties to vest the necessary powers either in their present delegates, or in others to be chosen in their stead.

"The British army having, on the 30th of June, appeared off the harbor of New York, the provincial congress, on its adjournment that day, directed that the congress in which those new powers were vested, should immediately assemble at White Plains. They did not, in fact, assemble till the 9th of July, 1776, when general Woodhull was chosen president. The declaration of independence, passed on the 4th, had not yet received the unanimous approbation of the colonies in continental

congress; the delegates from the colony of New York having declined to vote, (although they were personally in favor of the measure, and believed their constituents to be so,) because they were fettered by instructions drawn nearly twelve months before, when the hope of reconciliation was yet cherished.

"Immediately on this meeting, the new provincial congress unanimously adopted the declaration, general Woodhull presiding, on the part of the people of New York; thus filling the void occasioned by the want of the necessary powers in their delegates at Philadelphia. On the next day, they assumed the title of the *representatives of the state of New York.*"

Reading Lesson CLXI.

Life of general Woodhull, continued.

"The invading army, under lord Howe, had landed on Staten island; and, by the command which their naval force secured over the adjacent waters, they were enabled to threaten an attack from this point, either upon Long Island, or the island of New York. General Washington was therefore obliged to divide the force collected to oppose them; a portion of which entrenched themselves at Brooklyn, when the residue was stationed at different places on York island.

"On the 10th of August, general Woodhull's affairs requiring his return home, he obtained leave of temporary absence from the convention, whose sittings had been transferred to Harlem; and proceeded to his residence at Mastic, seventy-five miles from New York.

"On the 22d of August, the uncertainty that had prevailed, as to the first point of attack, on the part of the invaders, was dispelled by the landing of a portion of their forces at New Utrecht, at the place now called Bath. Aware of the increasing want of provisions among the enemy, and seeing that our army being confined to the lines, the whole stock and produce of Long Island would be in the power of the hostile troops, unless means were promptly used to prevent it,—the convention adopted a policy, since successfully pursued by the Russians, on a larger scale. This was, to deprive the invading foe of supplies, and thus compel their abandonment of the island, by re-

moving the stock and other provisions in the vicinity; and, if that could not be effected, by destroying them.

"Resolutions were accordingly passed on the 24th of August, ordering general Woodhull, or, in his absence, colonel Potter, of Huntingdon,—who had served against the French in 1758–59,—to march, without delay, one half of the western regiment of militia of Suffolk county, with five days' provisions, into the western parts of Queens county; and requiring that the officers of that county, should immediately order out the whole of its militia, to effect the desired object.

"An express being sent with these directions to major Lawrence, colonel Potter, and general Woodhull, the latter reached Jamaica on the next day, Sunday, and immediately took measures to apprize the convention of his arrival there, and awaited the approach of the forces intended to act under his command.

"He was, however, doomed to experience not only delay but disappointment; and his feelings may be more easily imagined than described. The convention were fully aware that the militia to be collected on this emergency, would be wholly insufficient to effect the desired object, and, more particularly, to enable the general to station a force, agreeably to their wishes, on the high grounds in the western part of Queens county, to repel the ravaging parties of the enemy.

"In the preceding year, it had been found necessary to despatch some of the troops under the command of general Wooster to Suffolk county, to prevent depredations along its exposed coast; and its armed inhabitants were not now more than competent to the same purpose. In Queens, a majority of the inhabitants were disaffected to the patriotic cause, and rendered the defence of the county much more difficult. The tories there had, in the preceding month of December, obtained a quantity of arms from the Asia man-of-war, and had even prevented, by their superior numbers at the polls, an election, then attempted, of delegates to the provincial congress; insomuch that a military intervention, under the direction of the continental congress, had become necessary to deprive the tories of offensive weapons, and to secure to the whigs the freedom of election. A large number of the whigs of that county were already embodied in the regiment of

colonel Remsen; and many of those at home were overawed by the neighborhood of the British force, or were employed in preparations for the flight of their families, if fortune should favor the British arms.

"The convention, accordingly, deputed a committee to general Washington, advising him of their object; of their apprehension of the insufficiency of the force they had ordered to join general Woodhull; and of their conviction that it would be most conducive to the public welfare that the regiments of colonels Smith and Remsen should be added."

Reading Lesson CLXII.

Life of general Woodhull, continued.

"The committee reported on the 26th, that, at the conference with general Washington, he seemed well pleased with the suggestion, but said he was afraid it was too late. He expressed his willingness, however, to afford every assistance to the convention, consistent with the public good; and stated that he would immediately give orders that Smith's and Remsen's regiments should march into Queens county, and join general Woodhull. Notice of this was forwarded to general Woodhull; as well as of the expectation that, by the time he received their letter, the promised reïnforcement would have joined him.

"On the same day, the whole militia that had been collected, was assembled at Jamaica, and was found to consist only of about one hundred men, led by colonel Potter, of Suffolk, about forty militia from Queens, and fifty horsemen belonging to the troop of Kings and Queens counties. With this handful of men, general Woodhull advanced to the westward of Queens county, agreeably to his orders.

"Owing probably, to the receipt of information that increased numbers of the British had disembarked, on the preceding day, at New Utrecht, the commanding officer at Brooklyn did not detach the second Long-Island regiment to join general Woodhull; and, by some fatality, the omission was neither communicated to the convention, nor to the expecting general.

"Disappointed at not meeting the additional troops, without whom he could not post any force on the heights, to repel depredations of the enemy, he, nevertheless, commenced, with vigor, the execution of the rest of his orders.

He placed guards and sentries to prevent communication between the tories and the enemy; and scouring, this and the succeeding day, the country southward of the hills in Kings, and a considerable part of Newtown and Jamaica, he sent off an immense quantity of stock, collected them towards the great plains, and ordered off a farther quantity from near Hempstead.

"In the mean time, his numbers had dwindled,—by the anxiety of the militia to reach their homes, and protect or remove their families,—to less than a hundred men, who, as well as their horses, were worn down. What they had effected, demonstrated that, with the force the convention had expected to place under his command, the object to which they attached so much importance, could have been accomplished. The subsequent disasters to the American arms would, however, have rendered its accomplishment useless.

"Early on the 27th of August, a pass through the hills in Kings county, which had been left unguarded by the American troops, was taken possession of by the enemy. The American outposts were surprised, and the army driven, after a sanguinary engagement, within their entrenchments at Brooklyn,—as was mentioned in the account of the battle of Long Island. Numbers of the British troops, during the same day, posted themselves on the hills between New York and Jamaica; and parties of the enemy's horse made incursions into the country, within a short distance of the general's force.

"In this state of things, he retired to Jamaica, sending, at different times, two messages to the convention, apprizing them of his situation; of the absolute necessity of reinforcements, and of his conviction that the two Long Island regiments could not join him, in consequence of the interruption of the communication. Unfortunately, the convention did not sit on that day; and the general, receiving no answer, despatched his brigade-major, who was also a member of that body, to repeat his representation, and obtain their orders.

"The convention, at their meeting on the 28th, still adhered to their former project; believing that by crossing the East River to Long Island, and making a detour to Flushing, the two regiments might still reach Jamaica. They accordingly sent major Lawrence to general Wash-

ington, with a letter expressing that opinion, and referring him to the brigade-major, for explanations as to the means. At the same time, they directed the necessary preparations for the transportation and landing of the troops; and, receiving, soon after, a reïteration of the call for an immediate reïnforcement, they deputed two of their body, John Sloss Hobart and James Townsend, to repair to general Woodhull with instructions and advice. Owing, probably, to the intermediate roads being in possession of the enemy, these gentlemen, it is believed, never reached him.

"Whether the express despatched by major Lawrence, as soon as ordered, on the mission to general Washington, was more successful, is not known. On the same morning, the convention forwarded a circular to the committees of the different towns of Connecticut lying upon the Sound, requesting their coöperation in removing the cattle from Long Island to that state, and an application to the governor for such force as could be speedily obtained. An application to him had been intermediately made by general Washington, to throw over one thousand men upon the island.

"In the afternoon, major Lawrence returned from the American camp, bringing a letter from the commander-in-chief, declining the request of the convention for the desired reïnforcement; because, in the opinion of himself and his general officers, the men they had, were not more than competent to the defence of their lines. The retreat across the river, which was effected on that night, might have been suspected and thwarted, if the passage of the second regiment had been attempted in open day. This, no doubt, formed an additional reason for non-compliance."

Reading Lesson CLXIII.

Life of general Woodhull, concluded.

"In the meantime, general Woodhull, whose notions of military obedience had been formed in the strictest school, was awaiting the expected orders and reïnforcements. At this time, the situation of general Woodhull was peculiarly embarrassing. If he had not received encouragement that he should be relieved, the smallness of his force would have justified an immediate retreat. Every communication from the convention, from whom he

received his orders, signified it as their wish that he should retain his station in the western part of Queens county, and encouraged him to expect a reïnforcement. The omission of any intelligence to the contrary, with the delay of the return of his brigade-major, who was detained by the convention, was calculated to strengthen that expectation. To have retreated under these circumstances, would have been a violation of military rules, and, in case of relief being sent, would have been deemed highly dishonorable.

"In this emergency, the general had no counsel but his own honorable feelings to consult; and he adopted the course which they dictated. He resolved not to make a final retreat until he heard from the convention. On the morning of the 28th, he ordered his troops to fall back, and take a station about four miles east of Jamaica, and there to remain until farther orders. The general remained at Jamaica, till afternoon, in momentary expectation of a message from the convention. He then retired slowly, with one or two companions, still indulging the hope of intelligence from the convention, until he fell a sacrifice to his reliance on their vigilance and his own high sense of military honor, which forbade his abandoning the station assigned him, however perilous, before he was assured that relief was hopeless, or he had orders to that effect. A severe thunder shower, as is supposed, obliged him to take refuge in a public house about two miles east of Jamaica. He was there overtaken by a detachment of the 17th regiment of British dragoons, and the 71st regiment of infantry, accompanied by some of the disaffected inhabitants as pilots.

"The general immediately, on being discovered, gave up his sword, in token of surrender. The ruffian who first approached him,—said to be a major Baird, of the 71st,—as reported, ordered him to say, 'God save the king;' the general replied, 'God save us all;' on which the British officer, in the most cowardly and cruel manner, assailed the defenceless general with his broad sword, and would have killed him upon the spot, if he had not been prevented by the interference of an officer of more honor and humanity,—said to be major Delancey of the dragoons,—who arrested his savage violence.

"The general was badly wounded in the head; and

one of his arms was mangled from the shoulder to the wrist. He was taken to Jamaica, where his wounds were dressed, and, with other prisoners, was detained there till the next day. He was then conveyed to Gravesend, and, with about eighty other prisoners, of whom colonel Troup of New York was one, was confined on board a vessel which had been employed to transport live stock for the use of the army, and was without accommodation for health or comfort.

"The general was released from the vessel, on the remonstrance of an officer who had more humanity than his superiors, and removed to a house near the church in New Utrecht, where he was permitted to receive some attendance and medical assistance. A cut in the joint of the elbow, rendered an amputation of the arm necessary. As soon as this was resolved on, the general sent for his wife, with a request that she should bring with her all the money she had in her possession, and all she could procure; which being complied with, he had it distributed among the American prisoners, to alleviate their sufferings;—thus furnishing a lesson of humanity to his enemies, and closing a useful life by an act of charity. He then suffered the amputation, which soon issued in a mortification, that terminated his life, September 20th, 1776, in the fifty-fourth year of his age.

"The talents of general Woodhull were peculiarly adapted to a military station. With personal courage, he possessed judgment, decision, and firmness of character, tempered with conciliating manners, which commanded the respect and obedience of his troops, and, at the same time, secured their confidence and esteem.

"His excellent wife, who had barely arrived soon enough to attend him in his last moments, was permitted to remove his dead body, which was prepared for the purpose by the British surgeons. Painful as her feelings must have been, while attending the mangled corse of her deceased husband and dearest friend, in its slow progress over a distance of seventy miles, she had the satisfaction of reflecting that it was out of the possession of the enemy, and the consolation of depositing it on his own farm, amid the graves of his ancestors.

"The cruel treatment of this gallant officer and eminent citizen, aroused, in every patriotic bosom, feelings of in-

dignation. Nor can the circumstances ever be recollected without admiring the lofty spirit which no extremity could bend to dishonor, nor without disdain and abhorrence of a coward brutality, which vainly seeks for extenuation in the bitter animosities of the times."

Reading Lesson CLXIV.

SAMSON OCCOM,

An Indian clergyman, and a writer on the Indian tribes, was born at Mohegan, in the year 1723; and was the first Indian pupil educated by the Rev. Mr. Wheelock,* at Lebanon. In 1742, he entered at the age of nineteen, and remained four years.

"About the year 1755, he went to Montauk, Long Island, where he opened a school, and officiated as public teacher of the Indian tribe there. He preached, also, occasionally, to the Indians at Shinnecock. He continued at Montauk Point about ten years.

"On the 29th of August, 1759, he was ordained by the Suffolk presbytery. He next engaged in a mission to the Oneidas, and continued with them till he accompanied Mr. Whittaker to Europe, and was the first Indian preacher who visited England. The houses in which he preached, when there, were thronged. Between February 16th, 1766, and July 22d, 1767, he preached in various parts of the kingdom, and between three and four hundred sermons. There he collected about £1000 for establishing schools among the American Indians.

"On his return from Europe, he remained a while at Mohegan, whence he removed, in 1786, to the Stockbridge Indians at Brothertown, Oneida county. Many of the Mohegans, and several of the Montauk tribe, accompanied him to that place, where he died in July, 1792. While in England, he preached to crowded audiences in the chapels of London, and even occupied, with acceptance, the pulpit of Whitefield. The house in which he formerly lived, and the church in which he preached, are, or were lately, standing at Montville, in New London county, Connecticut.

"The Rev. Doctor Buell, in a letter to the Rev. David

* The individual whose pious labors secured the foundation of Dartmouth college.

Bostwick, May 9th, 1761, speaks as follows, of the Rev. Samson Occom :—'As a preacher of the gospel, he seems always to have in view the end of the ministry, the glory of God and the salvation of men. His manner of expression, when he preaches to the Indians, is vastly more natural, free, clear, and eloquent, quick and powerful, than when he preaches to others. He is the glory of the Indian nation.' And it is added by another, that 'while he was in England, he was an object of much attention.'"

He failed, however, to maintain, at all times, his character for sobriety, and occasionally fell into intemperance, to an extent which showed the inveteracy peculiar to the habits of the Indian.

Reading Lesson CLXV.

LEWIS MORRIS,

"One of the signers of the American Declaration of Independence, was born in the state of New York, in the year 1726. He was proprietor of the large manor of Morrisania, in the county of Westchester. He was educated at Yale college, of which he received the honors; and, on his return home, he devoted himself to agriculture.

"When the dissensions between the colonies and the mother country began, he was in a most fortunate situation; with an ample estate, a fine family, an excellent constitution, literary taste, and general occupations of which he was fond. But he renounced, at once, his personal enjoyment and domestic comfort, to assert the rights of his country.

"He was elected to the congress of 1775, and served on the most important committees. That body assigned to him the arduous task of detaching the western Indians from the coälition with Great Britain. On this errand, he repaired to Pittsburgh, and acted with zeal and address.

"In the beginning of 1776, he resumed his seat in congress, where he was a laborious and very useful member. When he signed the Declaration of Independence, it was at the risk of his beautiful and extensive manor, near New York, which was, in fact, soon after laid waste by the enemy. Three of his sons served in the army, with much distinction. He relinquished his seat in congress, in 1777,

and was afterwards in the state legislature, and a major-general of militia.

"Mr. Morris died on his paternal estate, in January, 1798, at the age of seventy-one, possessing the universal esteem and gratitude of his country."

PHILIP SCHUYLER,

"Distinguished as a revolutionary general, was born at Albany, in 1731, of an ancient and respectable family. He served as an officer in the war which commenced at lake George, in 1775. When quite young, he became a member of the New-York legislature, and was eminent for his intelligence and influence.

"To him and governor Clinton, it was chiefly owing that the province made an early and decided resistance to those British measures which terminated in the independence of the colonies.

"When the revolution commenced, he was appointed a major-general, and," as has been mentioned in our history, "was directed to proceed immediately from New York to Ticonderoga, to secure the lakes, and make preparations for entering Canada. But being taken sick, in September, the command devolved upon Montgomery. On his recovery, he devoted himself zealously to the management of affairs in the northern departments, and gave much of his attention to the superintendence of Indian concerns.

"On the approach of Burgoyne, in 1777, he made every exertion to obstruct his progress; but the evacuation of Ticonderoga by St. Clair, occasioning unreasonable jealousies in regard to Schuyler, in New England, he was superseded by general Gates.

"He was afterwards, though not in the regular service, very useful to his country, in the military transactions of New York. He was a member of the old congress; and, when the present government of the United States commenced its operation, in 1789, he was appointed a senator in the national legislature. He was chosen, a second time, in 1797, to the same station. In the senate of New York, he contributed, probably more than any other man, to the code of laws adopted by the state.

"He died at his seat near Albany, November 18th, 1804, in the seventy-third year of his age. He possessed

great strength of mind and purity of intention. In the contrivance of plans of public utility, he was wise and circumspect; and, in their execution, enterprising and persevering. In his deportment, he was dignified, but courteous. He was a pleasing and instructive companion, and, in all the functions of private life, was highly exemplary."

Reading Lesson CLXVI.

WILLIAM FLOYD,

"Commonly called general Floyd, great-grandson of the first emigrant of his name, was born on the family estate at Mastic, December 17th, 1734. His early education was less extensive than might have been expected from the wealth and ability of his father. His natural intelligence was great, and his moral character elevated. His academic course was hardly closed, when the death of his parent made it necessary for him to take charge of his patrimonial estate.

"His sound mind, disciplined and enlightened by the moderate education he had received, his friendly disposition, his kindness and affability, all united in rendering him popular in the community where he lived; and, at an early age, made him a leading man among his fellow-citizens. His fidelity in the execution of minor offices imposed upon him, induced his promotion to others of more importance, and, eventually, to some of the highest places of political trust and confidence. He was early chosen an officer in the militia of Suffolk county, and rose finally to the rank of major-general.

"At an early period of the controversy between Great Britain and her colonies, the feelings of general Floyd were strongly enlisted on the side of the people; and he entered, with zeal, into every measure calculated to ensure their rights and liberties. These feelings, on his part, excited a correspondent sympathy on the part of the people, and led to his subsequent appointment to the first continental congress, which met at Philadelphia, September 5th, 1774, and he most heartily concurred in all measures adopted by that body.

"On the journals of 1775, are recorded the numerous committees on which he served and the important ser-

vices which his intelligence and active habits, enabled him to render, to promote the common cause.

"Few of the leading patriots of the revolution suffered more severity than he. His mansion-house and farm were exposed to the enemy, during their possession of Long Island; and his family were, of course, exiled from their home and property. The produce and stock of his estate were seized, to furnish provisions for the British army; his woods cut down, for their use; and his dwelling used as a rendezvous for a party of horse. Thus, for seven years, he derived no benefit from his lands; while he and his family were driven to find shelter and safety in Connecticut. When again allowed to return to his home, he found it, as might have been expected, in a state of dilapidation and ruin. The naked soil was nearly all that remained without bearing marks of destruction.

"General Floyd was one of that immortal band of patriots, who, on the 4th of July, 1776, signed and published to the world the great charter of American independence. In 1777, he was elected a senator, and, on the 7th of November, of that year, took his seat in the first constitutional legislature of this state. On the 15th of October, 1778, he was appointed by the legislature a member of congress, and was reäppointed, on the 14th of October, 1779.

"On the adoption of the federal constitution, in 1788, and when the government was to be new-organized, he was returned a member of the first congress convened in New York, March 4th, 1789, when general Washington was inaugurated president of the United States.

"In 1784, he purchased a tract of land, now of great value, on the Mohawk river, then in a state of nature, without inhabitants or culture; and, when free from public life, he undertook to improve it. To this estate he removed with his family in 1803,—after having been, in 1800, one of the electors of president and vice-president of the United States, when he deposited his vote for the republican candidates, Jefferson and Burr, and, in 1801, having been a delegate from Long Island, to the convention called to revise the state constitution. He afterwards served repeatedly as presidential elector, and, for the last time, in 1820.

"He continued to enjoy unusual health, till near the close of life; and the faculties of his mind remained un-

impaired to the last. In his person, he was of middle stature, and possessed a natural dignity, which seldom failed to impress those with whom he associated. He was eminently a practical man, without ostentation or vanity. When his plans were once formed, he found no reason to alter them; and his firmness and resolution were seldom equalled. In his political character, there was much to admire. Uniform and independent, his views were his own, and his opinions, the result of reason and reflection. If the public estimation of a man be a just criterion by which to judge, general Floyd was excelled by few of his cotemporaries; since, for more than fifty years, he was honored by his fellow-citizens with offices of trust and responsibility."

Reading Lesson CLXVII.

GENERAL JAMES CLINTON,

"The fourth son of colonel Charles Clinton, was born, August 9th, 1736, at the residence of his father, in Ulster, (afterwards Orange) county, New York. He received an excellent education, and acquired much proficiency in the exact sciences; but his ruling inclination was for a military life.

"He was appointed an ensign, in the second regiment of the militia of Ulster county, by Sir Charles Hardy, the governor, and rose to the rank of lieutenant-colonel, in the same regiment, before the commencement of the revolution.

"During the war of 1756, between the English and the French, he displayed much courage, and particularly distinguished himself at the capture of fort Frontenac, where he was a captain under colonel Bradstreet, and rendered essential service, by taking a sloop of war on lake Ontario, which obstructed the advance of the army.

"The confidence which was reposed in his character, may be estimated by his appointment as captain commandant of the four regiments levied for the protection of the western frontiers of the counties of Ulster and Orange,—a post of great responsibility and danger, by which he was intrusted with the safety of a line of settlements of, at least, fifty miles in extent, which were continually threatened by the savages.

"After the French war, Mr. Clinton retired from the army to private life. But he did not very long enjoy repose. On the 30th of June, 1775, he was appointed, by the continental congress, colonel of the third regiment of New-York forces; the American revolution being then on the eve of commencement.

"In the same year, he marched, with Montgomery, to Quebec; and, in 1777, having been previously promoted to the rank of brigadier-general in the army of the United States, commanded at fort Clinton, when it was attacked by the English general, Sir Henry Clinton, in order to create a diversion in favor of general Burgoyne.

"After a gallant defence, fort Clinton, as well as fort Montgomery,—of both of which his brother George, the governor, was commander-in-chief,—were carried by storm. General Clinton was the last man to leave the works; but he escaped with a severe wound, and reached his house covered with blood."

Of general Clinton's expedition against the Indians of the interior, mention was made in the historical part of this work.

"During a considerable part of the war, general Clinton was stationed at Albany, where he commanded. He was at the siege of Yorktown; and here his conduct was marked by his usual intrepidity. He made his last appearance in arms, on the evacuation of the city of New York by the British, when he bade an affectionate farewell to the commander-in-chief, and retired to his ample estates.

"He did not, however, enjoy uninterrupted repose, but was often called by his fellow-citizens to perform civic duties, such as those of a commissioner to adjust the boundary line between Pennsylvania and New York, of a member of the legislature, and of the convention which adopted the present constitution of the United States, and of a senator; all of which offices he filled with credit to himself and advantage to his country.

"General Clinton was of a mild and affectionate disposition, but when greatly provoked, displayed extraordinary energy. In battle, he was calm and collected. He died, December 22d, 1812."

Reading Lesson CLXVIII.

GENERAL RICHARD MONTGOMERY,

"A major-general in the army of the United States, was born in 1737, in the north of Ireland. He embraced the profession of arms, and served under Wolfe, at Quebec, in 1759; but, on his return to England, he left his regiment, although his prospects of promotion were fair. He then removed to America, for which country he entertained a deep affection, purchased an estate in New York, about a hundred miles from the city, and married a daughter of judge Livingston." The narrative of the remainder of his life forms but a brief recapitulation of a part of the history of his adopted country.

"His feelings in favor of America were so well known, that, on the commencement of the revolutionary struggle, he was intrusted with the command of the continental forces in the northern department, in conjunction with general Schuyler. The latter, however, fell sick, and the chief command, in consequence, devolved upon Montgomery, who, after various successes,—the reduction of fort Chambly, the capture of St. John's, and of Montreal,—proceeded to the siege of Quebec. This he commenced December 1st, 1775, after having formed a junction with colonel Arnold, at Point-aux-Trembles.*

"But, as his artillery was not of sufficient calibre to make the requisite impression, he determined upon attempting the capture of the place by storm. He made all his arrangements, and advanced at the head of the New-York troops, along the St. Lawrence. He assisted, with his own hands, in pulling up the pickets that obstructed his approach to the second barrier, which he was resolved to force, when the only gun fired from the battery of the enemy, killed him and his two aid-de-camps. The three fell at the same time; and their lifeless bodies rolled upon the ice formed on the river."

The circumstances of his death were peculiar. He was killed by a discharge of grape-shot, from a cannon fired by a slow match, which one of the besieged had left ignited, when retreating to the inner barrier.

"The next day, his body was brought into Quebec, and

* Pronounced, *Pwawntōtrámble.*

buried without any mark of distinction. Congress directed a monument, with an inscription, to be erected to his memory, and placed in front of St. Paul's church, in New York; and, July 8th, 1818, his remains were brought from Quebec, in consequence of a resolve of the state of New York, and interred near the monument.

"General Montgomery was gifted with fine abilities, and had received an excellent education. His military talents, especially, were great; his measures were taken with judgment, and executed with vigor. The sorrow for his loss was heightened by the esteem which his amiable character had gained him. At the period of his death, he was only thirty-eight years of age."

Reading Lesson CLXIX.

GOVERNOR GEORGE CLINTON,

"The youngest son of colonel Charles Clinton, was born July 15th, 1739, in Orange, (then Ulster) county, New York. His education was superintended by his father, a gentleman of a highly cultivated mind, assisted by a minister of the gospel, named Daniel Thain, who had been educated at the university of Aberdeen.

"He evinced, at an early age, that spirit of activity and enterprise which marked his after-life. During what was called the French war, he left his father's house, and entered on board a privateer, which sailed from the port of New York; and, after encountering great hardships and perils, returned home, and immediately accepted a lieutenancy in a company commanded by his brother James.

"He was present at the capture of fort Frontenac, now Kingston, where the company to which he belonged, behaved with great gallantry. After the usual time of study, he was admitted to the bar, and practised, with much success, in his native county, until his election to the colonial assembly, where he became the head of the whig party, or minority, and uniformly opposed the arbitrary course of the government.

"In April 22d, 1775, he was chosen a delegate to the continental congress; and, in 1776, he was also appointed brigadier-general of the militia of Ulster county, and, some time after, a brigadier in the army of the United

States. At the first election under the constitution of the state, which was adopted at New York, April 20th, 1777, he was chosen both governor and lieutenant-governor.

"Having accepted the former office, the latter was filled by Pierre Van Cortlandt. He continued in the chief magistracy of the state during six terms, or 18 years, when he declined a reëlection.

"In consequence of the great number of tories who resided in the state of New York, and its distracted condition, the situation of governor Clinton was more arduous and important than any other in the Union, save that of the commander-in-chief. He, however, behaved with the greatest energy and intrepidity, not only as chief magistrate, but as actual head of the militia; and, by his judicious measures, for a long time, resisted the attacks of the whole British army, commanded by Sir Henry Clinton.

"By a vigorous exertion of authority in the impressment of flour, on an important occasion, he preserved the army from dissolution. His conduct at the storming of forts Montgomery and Clinton, in October, 1777, was particularly praiseworthy. He was greatly instrumental, also, in crushing the insurrection under Shays, which took place in Massachusetts, in 1787.

"Governor Clinton was unanimously chosen president of the convention which assembled at Poughkeepsie, June 17th, 1788, to deliberate on the new federal constitution. After remaining five years in private life, he was elected a member of the state legislature, at a time when the country was in an agitated and critical condition; and it is affirmed that his influence was the principal cause of the great political revolution which took place in the state, in 1801. At that period, he was also induced to accept again the station of governor; and, after continuing in that capacity for three years, he was elevated to the vice-presidency of the United States, a dignity which he retained until his demise at Washington, April 20th, 1812.

"The following anecdotes are related of his energy and decision.—'At the conclusion of the revolutionary war, when violence against the tories was the order of the day, a British officer was placed on a cart, in the city of New York, to be tarred and feathered. This was the signal of violence and assassination. Governor Clinton, at this

moment, rushed in among the mob with a drawn sword, and rescued the victim at the risk of his life.'

"'Some years afterwards, a furious assemblage of people collected, called the "doctors' mob," raged through New York, with the intention of killing the physicians of that city, and pulling down their houses, on account of their having dug up bodies for dissection.

"'The violence of this mob intimidated the local magistracy. Governor Clinton fortunately appeared in person, called out the militia, and restored peace to the city.'

"He discharged the functions of vice-president of the United States, with great dignity.

"In private life, he was kind and amiable, and warm in his friendships; as a public man, he is entitled to respectful and grateful remembrance."

Reading Lesson CLXX.

MR. STEPHEN SAYRE,

"Was descended from Job Sayre, one of the first settlers of Southampton, Long Island, and born there, in 1745. He was conspicuous for personal elegance and accomplishments. Being a staunch whig, it is supposed that he went to London in 1775, as a confidential agent of his country, having resided there before, and was, of course, well versed in British affairs. He obtained admission to the best society, and was on terms of intimacy with many leading men in the administration. He married a lady of rank and fortune, and, entering into commercial business in which he was highly successful, was, in 1773, choser high-sheriff of London.

"On this occasion, he delivered a speech to the Livery of London, as follows:—

"'Gentlemen of the Livery:—It is impossible for me to express the feelings of gratitude which predominate in my breast, upon the present occasion. The honor you have done me calls for a return, which a life entirely devoted to your services only can make. I deem myself more highly favored, because I am well convinced, that nothing under heaven could have induced you to elect me into the office of sheriff, but an opinion of my independence, and sincere attachment to the public cause. I am

independent: I will continue so. Upon public grounds only I presumed to solicit your favor: upon public grounds only I will study to deserve it. It shall be the labor of my life to convince you, that, in vesting me with your gracious choice, you have selected one who will strain every nerve in combating our common foe. I will labor assiduously to stop the progress of despotism: at least, I will, by a vigorous exertion of those powers with which you have entrusted me, prevent its making any inroads into this great, this opulent, this free and independent city.'"

"His advocacy of the American cause, and consequent opposition to the arbitrary measures of the administration, drew down upon him the displeasure of the government: a charge of treason was preferred against him; and he was most unceremoniously thrown into the Tower.

"The following account of the matter is from the 'London Public Ledger,' of October 25th, 1776:—'Two king's messengers, attended by a constable, repaired to the house of Stephen Sayre, Esquire, in Oxford street. As an excuse to obtain an interview with him, they pretended that a forged draft for £200 had been issued by the bank, of which Mr. Sayre is a proprietor. He no sooner appeared, than they acquainted him that they had an order, signed by lord Rochford, one of the secretaries of state, to take him into custody, on a charge of high treason, and to search for, take, and carry with them, such of his papers as they might deem effectual for their purposes.

"'Mr. Sayre heard the summons with composure, and obeyed its dictates with manly dignity; conscious of his innocence, he smiled at the malignity of the charge, and, in perfect reliance upon his own integrity, permitted the officers to search his tables and rifle his bureau. They conducted him to lord Rochford, where they also found Sir John Fielding. The charge in the information was, that Mr. Sayre had expressed an intention of seizing the king's person, as he went to the parliament house, and of taking possession of the Tower, &c.

"'The advice of Mr. Sayre's counsel, was, that he should not answer any interrogatories which lord Rochford or Sir John Fielding might put, nor sign any paper whatever. Mr. Sayre was then ordered into an adjoining apartment, and afterwards committed a close prisoner to the Tower.

"'On the 14th of December, 1776, he appeared at the Old Bailey; and his counsel, Mr. Arthur Lee, moved to discharge the recognizance entered into on the 28th of October last, on Mr. Sayre's being brought before lord Mansfield, upon a writ of habeas corpus. Mr. baron Burland, who, with the lord mayor, presided at the court, accordingly discharged the recognizance; and Mr. Sayre immediately gave orders to commence actions against lord Rochford, the under secretaries of state, and the king's messengers.'"

"In Gordon's History, it is also stated that, 'in 1775, many suspicions were entertained of combinations in favor of America; and, upon certain hints thrown out, Mr. Sayre, an American, and a banker in London, was secured; and being examined before the secretary of state, lord Rochford, and confronted by his accuser, was committed to the Tower for high treason, on the ridiculous charge of designing to seize his majesty at noon-day, in his passage to the house of peers, of conveying him a prisoner to the Tower, and afterwards out of the kingdom, and of overturning the whole form of government, by bribing a few sergeants of the guards.'"

"Mr. Sayre remained some years after in London, and, on his return to America, settled upon the Delaware, near Bordentown, New Jersey, where he spent the remainder of his days. The estate of Mr. Sayre became afterwards the property of Joseph Bonaparte, ex-king of Spain."

Reading Lesson CLXXI.

JOHN JAY,

'An eminent jurist and statesman, was born in the city of New York, December 1st, 1745, old style. After receiving the elements of education, at a boarding-school, and under private tuition, he was placed, when fourteen years of age, at King's (now Columbia) college, in his native city. Here he devoted himself principally to those branches which he deemed most important in reference to the profession of law, upon the study of which he entered, after receiving his bachelor's degree.

"In 1768, he was admitted to the bar, and, in 1774, was chosen a delegate to the first American congress, which met at Philadelphia, and was placed on a commit-

tee with Mr. Lee and Mr. Livingston, to draught an address to the people of Great Britain. It was prepared by Mr. Jay, and is one of the most eloquent productions of the time.

"In the two following years, he was reëlected, and served on various important committees. In 1776, he was chosen president of congress. In 1777, he was a member of the convention which framed the constitution of New York; and the first draught of that instrument proceeded from his pen.

"In the following year, when the government of New York was organized, he was appointed chief-justice of that state. In 1779, we find him again a member of congress, and in the chair of that body. From this, however, he was removed, in the same year, by his appointment as minister plenipotentiary to Spain.

"The objects of Mr. Jay's mission were, to obtain from Spain an acknowledgment of our independence, to form a treaty of alliance, and to procure pecuniary aid. With regard to the first two points, no satisfactory conclusion was obtained; and, in the summer of 1782, Mr. Jay was appointed one of the commissioners to negotiate a peace with England, at the same time that he was authorized to continue the negotiation with Spain.

"In conjunction with Mr. Adams and Dr. Franklin, he resolved to disobey the instructions of congress, to follow, in all things, the advice of the French minister, count De Vergennes, who was embarrassing the negotiation with England, in order to benefit France, at the expense of the United States; and, accordingly, they signed a treaty with the British minister, without consulting the count.

"The definitive treaty having been signed, in September, 1783, he soon afterwards resigned his commission, as minister to Spain, and, in May, 1784, embarked for the United States. He was then placed at the head of the department for foreign affairs, in which office he continued until the adoption of the present constitution, when he was appointed chief-justice of the United States.

"In 1787, he received a serious wound in the forehead, from a stone, when acting as one of a volunteer corps to preserve the peace of the city, at the time of 'the doctors' mob.' He was, in consequence, confined to his bed, for some time,—a circumstance which obliged him to discon-

tinue writing for the Federalist, to which he had already contributed several numbers.

"In 1794, he was sent, as envoy extraordinary, to Great Britain, and concluded the treaty which has been called after his name. Before his return in 1795, he had been elected governor of his native state,—a post which he occupied until 1801. In that year, he declined a reëlection, as well as a reäppointment to the office of chief-justice of the United States, and retired to private life.

"The remainder of his days was passed in devotion to study, particularly theological, and to practical benevolence.

"He died, May 17th, 1829, universally honored and beloved.

"He was a man of inflexible firmness of mind in the performance of duty, of great discernment, extensive information, and fine talents as a writer. Although rather cautious with strangers, with friends he was affable and frank: economical in his expenses, he was, at the same time, generous towards every object worthy of his bounty. The letters between him and general Washington,—various extracts of which are contained in Marshall's history,—exhibit the elevated place he held in the confidence and esteem of that illustrious man."

Reading Lesson CLXXII.

HON. EGBERT BENSON,

Says chancellor Kent, in his brief memoir of judge Benson, "was born in the city of New York, June 21st, 1746, of respectable Dutch parents, and was educated at King's (now Columbia) college, where he was graduated, in 1765. He was one of those sound classical scholars, for the formation of whom, that learned seminary always has been, and still is, most justly distinguished. His taste for classical literature never forsook him, even during the strength and vigor of his age, and amidst the ardor of official duties. His legal education was acquired in the office of John Morin Scott, one of that band of deep-read and thorough lawyers of the old school, who were an ornament to the city, at the commencement of the revolution.

"When he came to the bar, there were very few, if any, better instructed in the ancient and modern learning

of the English common law. To great quickness and acuteness of mind, and profound discernment of character, he added much deliberation and candor. He was a master of order and method in business. If he was not the first, he was one of the first proficients in the science of pleading; and his equal does not exist, at the present day. But, though a strict technical lawyer, he did not cease to penetrate the depths of the science, and rest himself upon fundamental principles. He was more distinguished than any man among us,—Hamilton alone excepted,—for going, in all researches, to the reasons and grounds of the law, and placing his opinion on what he deemed to be solid and elementary principles.

"His morals and manners were pure and chaste. He was liberal and catholic in his sentiments, without the smallest tincture of fanaticism or affectation of austerity; and nothing could weaken his faith or disturb his tranquillity, though he had to pass through the storms of a tempestuous age, in which the French revolution, and the daring speculations which accompanied it, attacked equally the foundations of religious belief, and the best institutions of social life.

"Mr. Benson commenced the practice of law at Red Hook, Dutchess county, in 1772; but before he had time to enter largely into business, or to acquire much more than a scanty temporary provision for his support, the American war broke out, and raised him, at once, to an elevated scene of action. Here his abilities and spirit were brought to a test, and proved to be of sterling value. He was present at, and guided, the earliest meetings in Dutchess county, preparatory to a more organized resistance to the claims of the British government. He took the lead in all the Whig measures adopted in that county; a more zealous and determined patriot, or one more thoroughly master of the grounds of the great national contest, did not exist.

"It followed, of course, that his knowledge of law and of the enlightened principles of civil liberty, and his practical and business talents, would carry him forward rapidly to places of high public trust. He was, accordingly, appointed first attorney-general of this state, by the ordinance of the convention of the 8th of May, 1777; and this painful and most responsible office, he discharged with the

utmost zeal, ability, and integrity, during the whole period of the American war, and down to the spring of 1787, when he voluntarily resigned it, on assuming other public duties.

"He was a member of the first legislative assembly of this state, elected in 1777. His name, in the public opinion, seemed to be identified with wisdom, patriotism, and integrity. He draughted almost every important bill that passed the assembly during the war; and it is matter of public notoriety, with those persons whose memories can date back to that period, that his name truly merits this transcendent eulogy.

"During the war, he was the most confidential and efficient adviser of the elder governor Clinton; and it is well known that no governor had greater difficulties to contend with, or surmounted them with better discretion and firmness. He was importuned and taxed with a perplexing variety of public concerns, during the most busy and perilous period of our revolutionary history. He was president of the board of commissioners in Dutchess county for detecting and defeating conspiracies; and it was under this authority that the board, in July, 1778, sent the Hon. William Smith, the historian of New York, into the British lines; who did not fail to complain severely of the stern and inflexible manner in which the chairman of the commissioners had exerted that power."

Reading Lesson CLXXIII.

Life of Egbert Benson, continued.

"Amidst the various and important duties of his several trusts, he was brought in contact, and formed friendships with, that host of eminent men, who then swayed the councils of the state. A common sympathy, as well as a common interest, is excited and felt, at times of public calamity, and leads to generous and disinterested actions. Mutual respect and strong friendships were created and subsisted between Mr. Benson and governor Clinton, general Schuyler, chief-justice Jay, chancellor Livingston, judge Hobart, James Duane, Alexander Mc Dougal, Alexander Hamilton, William Duer, and a roll of other distinguished patriots, who adorn the page of our revolutionary history; and we need no better evidence of the

great and useful talents of Mr. Benson, than to know the fact that he was admired and beloved, and his counsels and society anxiously sought after, by all the leading men of the state, during the best and brightest period of our domestic history.

"He took a zealous part in the adoption of the constitution of the United States, on which, as he uniformly thought and declared, he rested all his hopes of American liberty, safety, and glory. No person could be more devoted to its success.

"In 1789, he was elected one of the six representatives from this state to the first congress, in which he continued four years. He drew the bills organizing the executive department of the government; and he labored incessantly to further and sustain the measures that distinguished the glorious and unparalleled administration of Washington. In this situation, he had the happiness to add largely to the number of his particular friends, and to associate, on cordial and confidential terms, with such men as George Cabot, Fisher Ames, Oliver Ellsworth, Rufus King, William Patterson, George Clymer, and others of the same brilliant stamp, with whom there was an equal interchange of respect and esteem. As for Hamilton, he never thought or spoke of him, without expressing his highest admiration of his talents, and reverence for his patriotism. Of Fisher Ames he used to say, that he thought him the most perfect man he ever knew, and that he had the purity and wisdom of a seraph.

"In 1794, Mr. Benson was called into judicial life, and appointed a judge of the supreme court of this state; in which situation he remained several years, and fulfilled all its duties with the utmost precision, diligence, and fidelity. He did more to reform the practice of that court than any member of it ever did before, or ever did since. He resigned in 1801, on receiving the appointment of chief judge in the second circuit, under a new arrangement of the circuit courts of the United States; but was deprived of the office by a repeal, in the following year, of the statute creating the new courts.

"During the remainder of his life, judge Benson was principally confined to the occasional calls of professional duty, and with short assumptions of places of public trust. He was a regent of the university from 1787 to 1802. He

removed, many years ago, to Jamaica, where he continued during the rest of his life, boarding in the family of Mr. William Printine. He continued to be blessed with a protracted old age, 'exempt from scorn or crime,' and that 'glided in modest innocence away;' while the circle of his old friends and acquaintance became gradually more contracted, as his descending sun was casting his lengthened shadows before him.

"He used to amuse himself with the publication, now and then, of short tracts on what he deemed the errors and follies of the times; for he had naturally a quick and keen perception of the false and ridiculous; and the flame of genuine patriotism never ceased to live and glow in his bosom,—of which his criticism on the 'British Rule of 1756,' and his 'Vindication of the Captors of Andre,' may be cited as examples."

Reading Lesson CLXXIV.

ROBERT R. LIVINGSTON,

"Eminent as a politician, was born in the city of New York, November 27th, 1746. He was educated at King's college, and was graduated in 1765. He studied and practised law, in New York, with great success.

"Near the commencement of the American revolution, he lost the office of recorder, on account of his attachment to liberty, and was elected to the first general congress of the colonies. He was one of the committee who prepared the Declaration of Independence; and, in 1780, was appointed secretary of foreign affairs; and, throughout the war of the revolution, he signalized himself by his zeal and efficiency in the revolutionary cause.

"At the adoption of the constitution of New York, he was appointed chancellor of that state, which office he held, until he went, in 1801, to France, as minister plenipotentiary, appointed by president Jefferson. He was received by Napoleon Bonaparte, then first consul, with marked respect and cordiality; and, during a residence of several years in the French capital, the chancellor appeared to be the favorite foreign envoy.

"He conducted, with the aid of Mr. Monroe, the negotiation which ended in the cession of Louisiana to the United States, took leave of the first consul, in 1804, and

made an extensive tour on the continent of Europe. On his return from Paris, as a private citizen, Napoleon, then emperor, presented to him a splendid snuff-box, with a miniature likeness of himself, (Napoleon,) painted by the celebrated Isabey.

"It was in Paris that chancellor Livingston formed a friendship and close personal intimacy with Robert Fulton, whom he materially assisted with counsel and money, to mature his plans of steam navigation.

"In 1805, Mr. Livingston returned to the United States, and thenceforward employed himself in promoting the arts and agriculture. He introduced into the state of New York the use of gypsum, and the Merino race of sheep. He was president of the New-York academy of fine arts, of which he was a chief founder, and, also, of the society for the promotion of agriculture. He died, March 26th, 1813, with the reputation of an able statesman, a learned lawyer, and a most useful citizen."

Reading Lesson CLXXV.

CAPTAIN CALEB BREWSTER,

"Was a descendant of elder William Brewster, of Plymouth, one of those worthies who arrived in the May Flower, in December, 1620.

"The father of Mr. Brewster was a farmer, and, as was too often the custom of that day, gave his son only a limited education. Caleb was born at Setauket, Long Island, in 1747, and learned such branches as were taught in the country schools of that period, comprehending little else than reading, writing, and arithmetic. Being naturally of an ardent and enterprising disposition, and anxious to explore beyond the confines of his native town, he chose the life of a sailor; and, at the age of nineteen, engaged himself on board a whaling vessel, commanded by captain Jonathan Worth, bound to the coast of Greenland. His next voyage was to London in a merchant ship; and, upon his return, he found his country involved in the revolutionary contest.

"His enthusiasm in the cause of liberty did not allow him to hesitate, for a moment, as to the course which his duty called him to pursue; and he immediately volunteered his services in securing American independence.

He was honored, in a short time, with the commission of lieutenant of artillery, and, from that time forward, was eminently distinguished for zeal and intrepidity; possessing, to the fullest extent, the confidence of the officers of the army, and that of the commander-in-chief.

"In short, such was the exalted opinion entertained of his integrity, courage, patriotism, and prudence, that, in 1778, he was employed as a confidential and secret agent of congress; and he devoted himself, through the remainder of the struggle, in procuring and transmitting the most minute, accurate, and important intelligence relative to the movements and intentions of the enemy at different points, and particularly in New York and on Long Island; for which he was uncommonly well qualified, as well by his intimate topographical knowledge of the country, as his acquaintance with the people on both sides of the great political question, and therefore knew in whom, of either party, he could venture to confide.

"He was among those, who, under colonel Parsons, crossed the Sound to Long Island in August, 1777, for the purpose of capturing a body of British and tories, which, under colonel Hewlett, had taken possession of and garrisoned the presbyterian church at Setauket. On the 23d of June, 1780, he was appointed captain of artillery, and was frequently engaged with separate gangs of marauders, who sometimes extended their predatory excursions upon the main.

"In November, 1780, he was a volunteer with Benajah Strong and Heathcote Muirson, in the expedition under major Tallmadge, to the south side of Long Island, where they surprised and took prisoners a party of British troops encamped upon Smith's Point at Mastic, and, on their return, destroyed a large quantity of hay and military stores at Corum. In 1781, he engaged with and captured an armed boat, with her whole crew, in the Sound, which he carried safely into Black-Rock harbor."

Reading Lesson CLXXVI.

Life of captain Brewster, continued.

"On the 7th of December, 1782, captain Brewster, with the whale-boats under his command, gave chase to several armed boats of the enemy in the Sound; and, after a des-

perate encounter, in which most of the men on both sides were either killed or wounded, he succeeded in capturing two of the enemy's boats. This action has generally been denominated, by way of distinction, the 'boat fight;' and, at the time, was justly considered, in connection with its attendant circumstances, one of the most valorous and extraordinary engagements of that portentous period.

"It was, indeed, a truly perilous adventure; yet the contest lasted only twenty minutes; and some of his boats refusing to come up, he was compelled, from his peculiar situation, to engage with the enemy almost single-handed. During this short but terrible conflict, his shoulder was pierced by a rifle ball, which passed out at his back. His prudence and resolution enabled him to keep this occurrence a profound secret, till the enemy surrendered, when he found himself exhausted from the effusion of blood.

"After reaching the shore, he was confined, under the hands of a surgeon, for some time; for the injury thus received, he was placed upon the pension-roll of the army, and continued to receive a gratuity from his country, for the remainder of his life. He participated in several other important and hazardous engagements, while attached to the line of the army, the interesting particulars of which it is impossible to ascertain, as none of his compatriots and coädjutors, on those occasions, are now living.

"On the 9th of March, 1783, he took command of a sloop at Fairfield, for the purpose of attacking the Fox, a British armed vessel in the Sound; and, as soon as he came near, he ordered his men to board her with fixed bayonets, himself leading the way. In less than two minutes, she became their prize. Captain Johnson, of the Fox, and two men, were killed, and several others wounded; while captain Brewster had not a person injured.

"This extraordinary exertion on his part, was more than his state of health could endure; and, in consequence of it, he was confined to his bed for several months. When he recovered, the preliminaries of peace had been exchanged; and his beloved country had assumed her appropriate station among the free nations of the earth.

"In 1793, he was commissioned as lieutenant of the revenue-cutter, for the district of New York; and such

was his well-known skill and prudence, that, on the death of captain Dennis, soon after, he was appointed her commander, which he retained till 1816, with the exception of three years of Mr. Adams's administration, to which he was opposed. In that year, he retired to his farm at Black Rock, where he departed this life, at the age of seventy-nine years, February 13th, 1827.

"In stature, captain Brewster was above the common size, of fine proportions, a commanding countenance, a constitution athletic and vigorous, and of extraordinary activity. His talent for wit and humor was almost unrivalled; and, for relating anecdotes, few men could be found more entertaining."

Reading Lesson CLXXVII.

GOUVERNEUR MORRIS,

"Eminent as a statesman and an orator, was born at Morrisania, near the city of New York, January 31st, 1752. He was educated at King's college, in that city, where he was graduated bachelor of arts, in May, 1768.

"Immediately after, he entered the office of William Smith, the historian of the colony, as a student of law. In 1771, he was licensed to practise. His proficiency in all his studies, was remarkable. He acquired, early, much reputation, as a man of brilliant talents and various promise. His person, address, manners, and elocution, were of a superior order.

"In May, 1775, Mr. Morris was chosen a delegate to the provincial congress of New York. In June, of that year, he served on a committee with general Montgomery, to confer with general Washington, respecting the manner of the latter's introduction to the congress. He entered with zeal and efficiency into all the measures preparatory to a vigorous resistance to the pretensions of the mother country.

"In December, 1776, he acted as one of the committee for draughting a constitution for the state of New York, which was reported in March, and adopted in April, of the following year, after repeated and very able debates, in which Jay, Morris, and Robert R. Livingston, were the principal speakers.

"In July, 1777, he served as member of a committee

from the New-York congress, to repair to the head-quarters of Schuyler's army, to inquire into the causes of the evacuation of Ticonderoga. In October of that year, he joined the continental congress at York, Pennsylvania, and, in 1778, wrote the patriotic and successful pamphlet called Observations on the American Revolution, which he published at the beginning of 1779. The journals of congress amply testify to his many and valuable services, rendered in that body, to the revolutionary cause.

"In July, 1781, he accepted the post of assistant superintendent of finance, as the colleague of Robert Morris. Every office to which he was called, he filled with characteristic zeal and ability.

"After the war of the revolution, he embarked, with Robert Morris, in mercantile enterprises. In 1785, he published an Address to the Assembly of Pennsylvania, on the abolition of the bank of North America, in which he cogently argued against that project.

"In December, 1786, he purchased from his brother the fine estate of Morrisania, and made it his dwelling-place. Here he devoted himself to liberal studies. In the following year, he served, with distinction, as a member of the convention for framing the constitution of the United States."

Reading Lesson CLXXVIII.

Life of Gouverneur Morris, continued.

"On the 15th of December, 1788, he sailed for France, where he was occupied in selling lands, and pursuing money speculations, until March, 1790, when he proceeded to London, as private agent of the American government, and with a view to ascertain the inclination of the British cabinet to form a commercial treaty. In November, 1790, he returned to Paris, having made a tour in Germany. In the interval between this period and the beginning of the year 1792, he passed, several times, on public business, between the British and French capitals.

"On the 6th of February, 1792, he received his appointment as minister plenipotentiary to France, and was presented to the king, June 3d. He held this station, with much distinction, until October, 1794. He witnessed the most interesting scenes of the revolution in the capital,

and maintained personal intercourse with the conspicuous politicians of the several parties.

"The abundant memorials which he has left of his sojourn in France, and his travels on the European continent, possess the highest interest and much historical value. He made extensive journeys, after he ceased to be minister plenipotentiary, of which he kept a full diary. In the autumn of 1798, Mr. Morris returned to the United States, to engage in politics with enhanced celebrity, and a large additional stock of political and literary knowledge. He was universally admitted to be one of the most prominent and accomplished gentlemen of his country.

"In 1800, he entered the senate of the United States, where his eloquence and extensive information made him conspicuous. The two eulogies which he pronounced,—one on general Washington, and the other at the funeral of general Hamilton,—are specimens of his rhetorical style. His delivery was excellent.

"Mr. Morris, at an early period, gave special and sagacious attention to the project of the grand canal, by which the state of New York has been so much honored and benefited. In the summer of 1810, he examined the canal route to lake Erie, and subsequently took a prominent part in originating and promoting that noble work.

"In May, 1812, he pronounced a public and impressive eulogium on the venerable George Clinton; in the same year, he delivered an oration before the New-York historical society; in 1814, another on the restoration of the Bourbons in France; and, in 1816, a discourse before the New-York historical society.

"Mr. Morris died at Morrisania, on the 5th of November, 1816. He had passed the latter years of his life on his estate, exercising an elegant and munificent hospitality, reviewing the studies of his early days, and carrying on a very interesting commerce of letters with statesmen and literati in Europe and America. The activity of his mind, the richness of his fancy, and the copiousness of his eloquent conversation, were the admiration of all his acquaintance. A selection from his voluminous and valuable papers, accompanied by a sketch of his life, has been published by Mr. Jared Sparks."

Reading Lesson CLXXIX.

COLONEL BENJAMIN TALLMADGE.

"This able soldier, statesman, and patriot, who has received the most honorable notice in the histories of his time, as a highly brave, active, and enterprising officer of the revolution, was the second son of the Rev. Benjamin Tallmadge of Setauket, Long Island, where he was born, February 25th, 1754.

"He very early exhibited a fondness for learning, and, under the tuition of his father, who was an excellent classical scholar, made such progress, that, at twelve years of age, he was examined by President Dagget, of Yale college, then on a visit to Brookhaven, and found well qualified to enter that institution. He did not enter, however, till some years after, and was graduated in 1773. Soon after, he was invited to take charge of the high school at Wethersfield, which station he held, with pleasure to himself and satisfaction to the public, until the bloody scenes of Lexington and Bunkerhill, induced his entrance into the army.

"The legislature of Connecticut having resolved to raise their quota of troops for the campaign of 1776, he accepted a commission of lieutenant, and soon after received the appointment of adjutant, in the regiment of colonel Chester. He joined his regiment in New York, in June, from which time to the end of the war, he was in constant and active service.

"He was engaged in the battle of Long Island, on the 27th of August, 1776, and was one of the rear-guard, when the army retired to New York, from their lines at Brooklyn. Before the regiment to which he belonged was discharged, he received the appointment of captain of the first troop, in the second regiment of dragoons. The commission was dated December 14th, 1776. The regiment was ordered to rendezvous at Wethersfield, where the winter was occupied in preparing for the campaign of 1777.

"In the course of this year, he received the commission of major, and was honored with the confidence of the commander-in-chief, and the principal officers of the army. He was in most of the general battles that took place with

the main army in the northern states, at Long Island, White Plains, Brandywine, Monmouth, Germantown, and White Marsh. He opened, this year, a secret correspondence, for general Washington, with some persons in New York, and, particularly, with the late Abraham Woodhull of Setauket, which lasted through the war. He kept one or more boats constantly employed in crossing the Sound, on this business.

"On Lloyd's Neck, an elevated promontory between Huntingdon and Oyster Bay, the enemy had established a strongly fortified post, with a garrison of about five hundred men. In the rear of this fort, a band of marauders had encamped themselves, who, having boats at command, were constantly plundering the inhabitants along the main shore, and robbing the small vessels in the Sound. This horde of banditti major Tallmadge had a great desire to break up; and, on the 5th of September, 1777, embarked with one hundred and thirty men of his detachment, at Shippan Point, near Stamford, at eight o'clock in the evening. In about two hours, they landed on Lloyd's Neck, and proceeded to the attack, which was so sudden and unexpected, that nearly the whole party was captured, and landed in Connecticut before morning. Not a man was lost in the enterprise.

"For the purpose of breaking up the whole system of intercourse between the enemy and the disaffected, on the main, he was appointed to a separate command, consisting of the dismounted dragoons of the regiment and a body of horse. While stationed near North Castle, a prisoner was brought in, calling himself John Andersen, and who turned out to be major Andre, on his way to New York, after his interview, near West Point, with the infamous general Arnold. Of this prisoner, major Tallmadge had the custody up to the day of his execution, and walked with him to the gallows at Tappan, October 2d, 1780.

Reading Lesson CLXXX.

Life of colonel Tallmadge, continued.

"In November of the same year, he resumed his favorite scheme of annoying the enemy on Long Island, and having obtained the most accurate information of fort

St. George, erected on a point projecting into the south bay at Mastic, he communicated his project to the commander-in-chief, who, considering the attempt as too hazardous, desired him to abandon it. Having crossed the Sound, and examined the particular condition of the post, he was finally authorized, by Washington, to risk the enterprise.

"Major Tallmadge ordered the detachment to repair to Fairfield. Here, being met by other troops, the party embarked, on the 21st of November, 1780, at four o'clock, *p. m.*, in eight whale-boats. The whole number, including the crews of the boats, amounted to eighty men. They crossed the Sound in four hours, and landed at 'Old Man's,' at nine o'clock. After leaving their boats, the body of the troops had marched about five miles, when, it beginning to rain, they returned, and took shelter under their boats, and lay concealed in the bushes, all that night and the next day.

"At evening, the rain abating, the troops were again put in motion, and, at three o'clock in the morning, were within two miles of the fort. Here he divided his men into three parties, ordering each to attack the fort, at the same time, at different points. The order was so well executed, that the three divisions arrived nearly at the same moment. It was a triangular enclosure of several acres, with strongly stockaded, well barricaded houses at two of the angles, and, at the third, a fort, with a deep ditch and wall, encircled by an abatis of sharpened pickets, projecting at an angle of forty-five degrees. The stockade was cut down, the column led through the grand parade; and, in ten minutes, the main fort was carried by the bayonet.

"The vessels near the fort, laden with stores, attempted to escape; but the guns of the fort being brought to bear upon them, they were secured and burned, as were the works and stores. The number of prisoners was fifty-four, of whom seven were wounded. While they were marched to the boats under an escort, major Tallmadge proceeded with the remainder of his detachment, destroyed about three hundred tons of hay, collected at Corum, and returned to the place of debarkation, just as the party with the prisoners had arrived, and reached Fairfield, by eleven o'clock, the same evening; having accomplished the en-

terprise, including a march of forty miles by land, and as much by water, without the loss of a man.

"Congress passed a resolve complimentary to the commander and troops engaged in this expedition, which was pronounced to have been planned and conducted with wisdom and great gallantry, by major Tallmadge, and executed with intrepidity and complete success, by the officers and soldiers of his detachment.

"During that part of the campaign of 1781 in which the main army was in Virginia, major Tallmadge was left with the forces under general Heath, in the highlands on the Hudson; still, however, holding a separate command, he moved wherever duty or a spirit of enterprise dictated. In continuation of his former design of annoying the enemy upon Long Island, he marched his detachment to Norwalk; and as fort Slongo, at Tredwell's Bank, near Smithtown, was possessed by a British force, he determined to destroy it.

"On the night of the 9th of October, 1781, he embarked a part of his troops under the command of major Prescott, with orders to assail the fort, at a particular point. At the dawn of day, the attack was made, the fortress subdued, the block-house and other combustible materials burned; and the detachment returned in safety with their prisoners, and a handsome piece of brass artillery."

Reading Lesson CLXXXI.

Life of colonel Tallmadge, continued.

"On the 11th of April preceding, major Tallmadge sent a note to general Washington, wherein he says: 'At Lloyd's Neck, it is supposed, are assembled about eight hundred men, chiefly refugees or deserters from our army. Of this number, there may be about four hundred and fifty, or five hundred, properly armed. Their naval squadron consists of one vessel of sixteen guns, two small privateers, and a galley. About eight miles east of Lloyd's Neck, they have a post at Tredwell's Bank, of about one hundred and forty men, chiefly wood-cutters, armed. I have seen an accurate draft of this post and works.' He believed that, if two frigates should enter the Sound, in the absence of the British fleet, and, at the same time, a suitable body of troops were embarked in

boats, the posts might be cut off; and he offered to aid or direct an enterprise for such an object. To this proposition the commander-in-chief replied as follows:—

"'New Windsor, April 8th, 1781.

"'Sir:—The success of the supposed enterprise must depend on the absence of the British fleet, the secrecy of the attempt, and a knowledge of the exact situation of the enemy. If, after you have been at the westward, the circumstances, from your intelligence, shall still appear favorable, you will be at liberty to be the bearer of a letter to the count De Rochambeau, to whose determination I have referred the matter. Yours, etc.,

"'G. Washington.'

"Nothing more is heard of this matter till the July following, when the count De Barras, having no employment for his squadron at Newport, detached, for this service, three frigates, with two hundred and fifty land troops, the whole under the command of the baron D'Angely. The detachment sailed on the 10th of July, and was joined, in the Sound, by several boats, with a few volunteers and pilots from Fairfield. But it was soon evident that the fort on Lloyd's Neck was much stronger than had been supposed, and not to be carried without the help of cannon, which had not been provided. The party, after a few shots from the fort, reëmbarked, having two or three killed and wounded.

"After the affair of fort Slongo, major Tallmadge returned to the neighborhood of White Plains, where he found full employment, in guarding the inhabitants against the refugee corps under colonel Delancey, and the 'cowboys and skinners,' who infested the lines. In the course of the ensuing winter, he took his station on the Sound, and arranged another plan to beat up the enemy's quarters on Long Island; but a violent storm prevented its being carried into effect; he succeeded, however, in capturing many of the enemy's vessels engaged in illicit trade between the opposite shores, and several cargoes of valuable goods were taken and condemned.

"The secret correspondence conducted by major Tallmadge, during several years, within the British lines, has been before alluded to. And when the American army was about to enter the city of New York, after the peace,

he entered before it was evacuated by the British, that he might afford protection to those who where the secret friends of their country, and who otherwise would have been exposed to ill treatment, as refugees or tories. He retired from the army with the rank of colonel. He was, for several years, treasurer, and afterwards president, of the Cincinnati society.

"In 1800, colonel Tallmadge was chosen a representative in congress from Connecticut; having been for many years previous, engaged in mercantile business, in Litchfield. He was in congress during eight successive elections, a firm and judicious member of that body, and watchful of the political interest of a country, whose independence he had so nobly contributed to achieve. After sixteen years of service in the national legislature, he declined a reëlection, and retired, with dignity and honor, to the shades of private life. He was, however, by no means an indifferent spectator of passing events, but felt truly anxious for the future glory and welfare of his country. To public objects of charity and benevolence, it has been observed, he always gave largely and freely.

"He died at Litchfield, March 7th, 1835."

Reading Lesson CLXXXII.

GENERAL MORGAN LEWIS,

"Was the son of Mr. Francis Lewis, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, and was born in the city of New York, October 16th, 1754. He was graduated at Princeton college, in 1773, when he entered upon the study of law in the office of Mr. Jay, afterwards chief-justice.

"On the breaking out of the war of the revolution, in 1775, he joined the American army under general Washington, in the neighborhood of Boston, and continued in active service, until the peace. During the contest, he distinguished himself, on various occasions, particularly at Saratoga, where, with the rank of colonel, he held the office of quarter-master-general, under general Gates, and, subsequently, in the operations undertaken by general Clinton, in the northern part of the state of New York,

against Sir John Johnson's mixed force of British regulars and savages.

"At the end of the war, he resumed his profession of the law, and was, shortly after, elected a member of the state legislature, from the city of New York. He next represented, in the same body, the county of Dutchess, whither he had removed; and was then appointed, successively, a judge of the court of common pleas, attorney-general of the state, a judge of the supreme court, and, in 1801, chief-justice of the same court.

"In 1804, he was elected governor of New York; in 1810, he served as a member of the senate of that state; and, in 1812, he was appointed quarter-master-general of the United States army, with the rank of a brigadier-general.

"The last-mentioned office he held, however, only for about ten months, being promoted in March, 1813, to the rank of a major-general. In the earlier part of the campain of that year, he acted under the orders of general Dearborn, on the Niagara frontier; and, in the latter part of it, he accompanied general Wilkinson in his expedition down the river St. Lawrence, against Montreal.

"In 1814, he was entrusted with the command of the forces destined for the defence of the city and harbor of New York from an apprehended attack of the enemy.

"From the close of the war, 1815, down to the period of his death, general Lewis lived in retirement from all public duties, with the single exception of an oration which he delivered,—he being then in his seventy-eighth year,—by the request of the corporation of the city of New York, on the 22d of February, 1832; that day being the centennial anniversary of the birth of the 'father of his country.'"

Reading Lesson CLXXXIII.

COMMODORE THOMAS TRUXTUN,

"Whose achievements shed lustre on the infant navy of this country, was the son of an eminent English lawyer of the (then) colony of New York, and born at Jamaica, Long Island, on the 17th of February, 1755.—While yet a child, he was, in consequence of the death of his father, placed under the guardianship of his father's inti-

mate friend, John Troup, Esq., of Jamaica, who bestowed every kind attention on him which his bereaved situation required.

"At the age of twelve years, he made choice of the profession of a sailor, and entered on board a ship bound to Bristol; and, the next year, at his own request, was bound apprentice to captain Chambers, a well-known commander in the London trade. In the dispute relative to the Falkland islands, he was impressed on board a British sixty-four.

"In 1775, he commanded a vessel, and brought a considerable quantity of powder into the colony; but his vessel was afterwards taken and condemned. Having arrived, soon after, at Philadelphia, he sailed, early in 1776, as lieutenant in the private armed ship Congress, and captured several valuable Jamaica ships off Havana, and, taking command of one of them, brought her safe into New Bedford.

"In 1777, in conjunction with Isaac Sears, he fitted out a vessel, called the Independence, of which he took command; and, off the Azores, besides making several other prizes, he fell in with a part of the Windward-Island convoy, of which he captured three large and valuable ships, one of which was superior to his own, in guns and men. On his return, he fitted out the ship Mars, mounting upwards of twenty guns, and sailed on a cruise in the English channel, and took many prizes. Sailing in the St. James, of twenty guns, he disabled a British ship, of thirty-two guns. He returned from France, with a most valuable cargo. On his return, he settled in Philadelphia, was part owner of several armed vessels built there, and brought, from France and the West-India islands, large cargoes of such articles as were of the first necessity for the army.

"After the peace in 1783, he turned his attention to commerce, and was concerned in an extensive trade to Europe, China, and the East Indies, until the commencement of our naval establishment, in 1794; when he was one of the first six captains selected by president Washington. He superintended the building of the Constellation, of thirty-six guns; and in her he was, the same year, appointed, with a squadron under his command, to protect the American commerce in the West Indies; and such

was his vigilance and success, that an enemy's privateer could scarcely look out of port without being captured.

"On the 9th of February, 1799, he engaged, in the Constellation, and captured, the French frigate L'Insurgente, of forty guns and four hundred and seventeen men, twenty-nine of whom were killed and forty-four wounded; while, on board his own ship, he had but one killed and two wounded. He received congratulatory addresses from all quarters; and the merchants at Lloyd's coffee-house, sent him a service of plate, valued at six hundred guineas, with the action between the frigates engraved upon it; which offering was presented through Mr. King, our minister at London.

"Captain Barreau of L'Insurgente, says, in a letter to commodore Truxtun, 'I am sorry our two nations are at war; but since I have unfortunately been vanquished, I felicitate myself and crew upon being prisoners to you: you have united all the qualities which characterize a man of honor, courage, and humanity. Receive from me the most sincere thanks; and be assured, I shall make it a duty to publish to all my fellow-citizens the generous conduct which you have observed toward us.'

"Hearing that La Vengeance, a large French national ship, with fifty-four guns and upwards of five hundred men, including officers, was lying at Guadaloupe, he proceeded, in January, 1800, off that port. The ships came to action on the 1st of February, which lasted nearly five hours, when the French ship was completely silenced. But the mainmast of the Constellation going by the board, and a gale coming on, the French ship escaped in the night, and got into Curaçao; having one hundred and sixty men killed and wounded, and nearly all her masts and rigging shot away. The Constellation lost fourteen men killed, and had twenty-five wounded.

"For the signal gallantry displayed in this action, the congress of the United States voted 'that a gold medal be presented to commodore Truxtun.' This was his last cruise. Having, during the administration of Mr. Jefferson, been appointed to the command of the expedition against Tripoli, and being denied a captain to command his flag-ship, he declined the service; which the president construing into a resignation of his rank, he was therefore dismissed.

"He retired to the country, until the citizens of Philadelphia, in 1816, elected him high-sheriff. He remained in that office till 1819, and died, May 5th, 1822, in his sixty-seventh year."

Reading Lesson CLXXXIV.

HON. RUFUS KING.

"This eminent statesman and patriot, was the eldest son of Richard King, a merchant of Scarborough in Maine, where he was born, in 1755. He began his education at Byfield academy, in the town of Newbury, under the superintendence of the celebrated Mr. Samuel Moody. In 1773, he entered Harvard college, soon after which, he lost his father. In 1775, in consequence of the war, the studies of the college were suspended, and the students dispersed. They, however, assembled again in the fall, at Concord, under their former teacher, and continued there till the British army evacuated Boston in 1776, when Mr. King returned to Cambridge, and was graduated with great reputation as a classical scholar, and as an orator of extraordinary powers, in 1777.

"He immediately commenced juridical studies, in the office of the late chief-justice Theophilus Parsons, at Newburyport, and was admitted to the bar, in 1780. He had, however, in 1778, taken the field as a volunteer, and served under general Sullivan, to whom he was appointed aid-de-camp, in his enterprise with count D'Estaing, against the British in Rhode Island.

"In the first cause in which he was engaged at the bar, he had for a competitor his legal preceptor, Parsons. He was soon afterwards elected a representative from Newburyport, to the legislature or general court of Massachusetts, in which he manifested much ability, and urged the vesting of full authority in congress, to regulate the commerce of the country, and to impose such duties as might be necessary for that purpose.

"In 1784, he was chosen a delegate to the 'old congress,' which assembled at Trenton, and subsequently adjourned to New York. He never after resumed his practice at the bar.

"On the 16th of March, 1785, he brought forward and advocated the passage of the resolution by which slavery

was prohibited in the territory northwest of the Ohio, and became an active and leading member of that body which led, eventually, to the establishment of the present national government.

"In 1787, he was appointed, by the legislature of Massachusetts, a delegate to the general convention at Philadelphia, which formed the present federal constitution.

"In 1788, Mr. King removed from Massachusetts to New York. In 1789, he was chosen by the citizens a representative to the state assembly; and, the same year, he and general Schuyler were elected the first senators from this state, under the constitution of the United States.

"Mr. King, in 1794, published, in conjunction with his friend, Alexander Hamilton, a series of papers under the signature of Camillus, on the subject of the British treaty, which helped to reconcile the people to its various and highly important provisions.

"'At this time,' says Mr. Sullivan, 'Rufus King was about thirty-three years of age—and an uncommonly handsome man; he had a powerful mind, well cultivated, and was a dignified and graceful speaker. He had the appearance of one who was a gentleman by nature, and who had well improved all her gifts.'

"After the expiration of his first term, he was reëlected to the senate, and, in the spring of 1796, was appointed, by general Washington, minister plenipotentiary to Great Britain, and remained at the court of England, during the residue of the administration of Washington, the whole of that of the elder Adams, and for two years of that of Mr. Jefferson, when he returned home."

Reading Lesson CLXXXV.

Life of Rufus King, continued.

"While abroad, he lived on intimate terms with the most eminent statesmen and literary characters; and, by the mild dignity of his manners, and his talents and capacity for public business, he acquired and maintained a powerful personal influence, which he exerted to advance the interests of his country. In May, 1806, he removed with his family to his farm at Jamaica, Long Island, which he made his permanent residence.

"In 1813, he was again chosen by the legislature of

his state, a senator in congress; and, although opposed o the declaration of war, in 1812, as in his opinion both unwise and impolitic, yet no man exhibited a higher degree of patriotism in supporting it, pledging his credit and fortune to the government in its prosecution, rather than it should yield any of the national rights to the enemy, or submit to an inglorious peace.

"At this momentous crisis, which applied the touchstone to the hearts of men, Mr. King was neither idle nor dismayed. His love of country dispelled his attachments to party. In terms of the warmest solicitude, and in strains of the most impassioned eloquence, he remonstrated with the leaders of opposition, on the folly, the madness, and mischief of their course; he contributed largely of his means, in loans to government, and used all his efforts to infuse courage and perseverance in others. Having done all in his power, to stimulate exertions at home, Mr. King repaired to his post in congress, where he zealously supported the prominent measures of the administration, to sustain the country in the severe struggle in which she was engaged.

"In 1816, he was nominated by the anti-administration party, for governor of this state, which was done without his knowledge, and failed without his regret.

"In 1820, he was again reëlected to the senate, in which he continued, till the expiration of his term, in 1825. During this period, in 1821, he was chosen a delegate, from this county, to the state convention for amending the constitution; and was one of the most useful and intelligent, as well as active members of that dignified and enlightened body.

"Upon his retirement from the senate, in 1825, with the intention of closing his political career, he was solicited, by president John Quincy Adams, again to represent the United States, at the court of St. James. But, on his passage, he was attacked by disease, which prevented him, on his arrival in England, entering upon an active discharge of the duties of his office.

"After remaining abroad a year, in the hope of being enabled, by returning health, to assume the high functions with which he was charged, he returned to the United States; and here, in the bosom of his family, and with exemplary calmness and resignation, awaited his approach-

ing end. This event took place on the 29th of April, 1827, at the age of seventy-two years.

"In person, Mr. King was above the common size, and somewhat athletic; with a countenance manly, dignified, and bespeaking high intelligence. His manners were courteous, his disposition affable, and his conversation and writings remarkable for conciseness and force.

"Mr. King's manner, in the senate, was highly dignified, and in private life, that of a polished gentleman. His speeches, in manner and weight, gave him an exalted rank. Among his superior advantages, was an accurate knowledge of dates and facts, of most essential service in the senate. His two finest speeches are said to have been, on the burning of Washington by the British, and on the exclusion of Mr. Gallatin from the senate, for the reason that he had not been a citizen of the United States long enough to enfitle him to a seat there.

"Mr. King was a public man, throughout his long and valuable life, with few and short intervals; but, like all other men in the country, whose pride or pleasure depends on office, he was subjected to some disappointments. Yet he may be considered as one of the most successful of the eminent men whose relations to the public endured so long."

Reading Lesson CLXXXVI.

ALEXANDER HAMILTON,

"Was born in 1757, in the island of Nevis. His father was a native of England, and his mother of the island. At the age of sixteen, he became a student of Columbia college; his mother having emigrated to New York.

"He had not been in that institution more than a year, before he gave a brilliant manifestation of the powers of his mind, in the discussion concerning the rights of the colonies. In support of these, he published several essays, which were marked by such vigor and maturity of style, strength of argument, and wisdom and compass of views, that Mr. Jay, at that time in the meridian of life, was supposed, at first, to be the author.

"When it had become necessary to unsheath the sword, the ardent spirit of young Hamilton would no longer allow him to remain in academic retirement; and, before

the age of nineteen, he entered the American army, with the rank of captain of artillery. In this capacity, he soon attracted the attention of the commander-in-chief, who appointed him his aid-de-camp, with the rank of lieutenant-colonel. This occurred in 1777, when he was not more than twenty years of age.

"From this time, he continued the inseparable companion of Washington, during the war, and was always consulted by him, and, frequently, by other eminent public functionaries, on the most important occasions. He acted as Washington's first aid-de-camp, at the battles of Brandywine, Germantown, and Monmouth; and, at the siege of Yorktown, he led, at his own request, the detachment that carried by assault one of the enemy's outworks, October 14th, 1781. In this affair, he displayed the most brilliant valor.

"After the war, colonel Hamilton, then about twenty-four, commenced the study of law; as he had, at that time, a wife and family depending upon him for support. He was soon admitted to the bar.

"In 1782, he was chosen a member of congress, from the state of New York, where he soon acquired the greatest influence and distinction, and was always a member, and sometimes chairman, of those committees to which were confided such subjects as were deemed of vital interest to the nation. The reports which he prepared are remarkable for the correctness and power which characterize every effort of his pen. At the end of the session, he returned to the practice of his profession, in the city of New York, and became eminent at the bar.

"In 1786, he was chosen a member of the legislature of his state, and was mainly instrumental in preventing a serious collision between Vermont and New York, in consequence of a dispute concerning territorial jurisdiction.

"He was elected a delegate of New York, to the convention which was to meet at Philadelphia, in order to form a constitution for the United States. As the doors of the convention were closed during its sittings, and its records have never been given to the world, it is not possible to state the precise part which he acted in that body. It is well ascertained, however, that the country is at least as much indebted to him for the excellence of the con-

stitution, as to any other member of the illustrious assembly. Hamilton and Madison were its chief oracles and artificers.

"After the adoption of the constitution, by the convention, he associated himself with Mr. Madison and Mr. Jay, for the purpose of disposing the public to receive it with favor. The essays which they wrote with that design, addressed to the people of New York, during the years of 1787 and 1788, are well known under the name of the Federalist, and contributed powerfully to produce the effect for which they were composed. The larger portion of them was written by Hamilton.

"In 1788, he was a member of the state convention of New York, which met to deliberate on the adoption of the federal constitution, and it was chiefly in consequence of his efforts that it was accepted.

"On the organization of the federal government, in 1789, he was appointed to the office of secretary of the treasury. This was a situation which required the exercise of all the great powers of his mind; for the public credit was, at that time, in the lowest state of depression; and, as no statistical account of the country had ever been attempted, its fiscal resources were wholly unknown. But before Hamilton retired from the post, which he did after filling it during somewhat more than five years, he had raised the public credit to a height, altogether unprecedented in the history of the country, and, by the admirable system of finance which he established, had acquired the reputation of one of the greatest financiers of the age. His official reports to congress are considered as masterpieces; and the principles which he advocated in them, still continue to exercise a great influence in the revenue department of the general government."

Reading Lesson CLXXXVII.

Life of Hamilton, continued.

"Whilst secretary of the treasury, Hamilton was, *ex officio*, one of the cabinet counsellors of president Washington; and such was the confidence reposed by that great man, in his integrity and ability, that he rarely ventured upon any executive act of moment, without his concurrence. He was one of the principal advisers of

the proclamation of neutrality, issued by Washington, in 1793, in consequence of the attempt made by the minister of France, to cause the United States to take part with his country, in the war then waging between it and England. This measure he defended in a series of essays, under the signature of Pacificus, which were successful in giving it popularity.

"In 1795, Hamilton resigned his office, and retired to private life, in order to be better able to support a numerous family, by the practice of his profession. In 1798, however, when an invasion was apprehended from the French, and a provisional army had been called into the field, his public services were again required. President Adams had offered the chief command of the provisional army to Washington, who consented to accept it, on condition that Hamilton should be chosen second in command, with the title of inspector-general. This was accordingly done; and, in a short time, he succeeded in bringing the organization and discipline of the army to a high degree of excellence. On the death of Washington, in 1799, he succeeded, of course, to the chief command.

"When the army was disbanded, after the cessation of hostilities between the United States and France, general Hamilton returned again to the bar, and continued to practise, with increased reputation and success, until 1804.

"In June of that year, he received a note from colonel Burr,—between whom and himself a political had become a personal enmity,—in which he was required, in offensive language, to acknowledge or disavow certain expressions derogatory to the latter. The tone of the note was such as to cause him to refuse to do either; and a challenge was the consequence. The parties met at Hoboken, July 11th; and, on the first fire, Hamilton fell, mortally wounded, on the same spot where, a short time previously, his eldest son had been killed in a duel. He lingered until the afternoon of the following day, when he expired.

"The sensation which this occurrence produced throughout the United States, had never been exceeded on this continent. Men of all political parties felt that the nation was deprived of its greatest ornament. His transcendent abilities were universally acknowledged; every citizen felt the fullest confidence in his spirit of honor, and his capacity for public service.

"Of all the coädjutors and advisers of Washington, Hamilton was, doubtless, the one in whose judgment and sagacity he reposed the greatest confidence, whether in the military or civil career; and, of all American statesmen of his day, he displayed the most comprehensive understanding and the most varied ability, whether applied to subjects practical or speculative.

"His style is nervous, lucid and animated; he excels in reasoning, founded on general principles and historical experience."

Reading Lesson CLXXXVIII.

GENERAL JOHN ARMSTRONG,

"Was born at Carlisle, in Pennsylvania,* in the year 1758. He was the youngest of two sons. His brother, the late Dr. James Armstrong, was a man of unblemished character, and of considerable eminence in his profession. His father, general John Armstrong, of Carlisle, served with distinction in the French and Indian war of 1755.

"At or about the commencement of the war of the revolution, the subject of the present notice joined the American army, as a volunteer, when only eighteen years of age, contrary to the wishes of his parents, who were anxious that he should continue, for a time longer, to prosecute his studies.

"We find him at the battle of Princeton, in the capacity of an aid-de-camp to general Mercer; and it was in his arms, that the latter, when mortally wounded, was carried from the field. Accident subsequently made him acquainted with general Gates, who, pleased with his manners and conversation, asked him to dinner, and, before the party broke up, invited him to become a member of his military family,—an invitation which was promptly accepted. In this situation, and with the rank of major, he continued to serve until the close of the war.

"When, on the occurrence of this auspicious event,—auspicious as connected with the permanent establishment of American independence,—and before the disbanding of the army, a high degree of dissatisfaction was felt by both officers and men, on account of the neglect of congress to provide for the payment of the arrears due to

* His life, however, was chiefly spent in the state of New York.

them, major Armstrong, at the suggestion of several of the officers of high rank, prepared the celebrated anonymous addresses, commonly known by the name of the Newburg addresses." Of these mention was made, it will be recollected, in the historical part of this volume.

"Armstrong's conduct on this occasion, though sanctioned, at the time, by so many of his brother officers, whose love of liberty and country has never been doubted, subjected him, in after life, to no small degree of obloquy. But, in justice to his character, it is proper to state here, that the knowledge of his being the author of the anonymous addresses, did not impair the confidence that general Washington reposed in his integrity and patriotism.

"'Whatever may have been thought by general Washington, at the time,' says Mr. Sparks, 'as to the character and objects of the Newburg addresses, it appears, by the following letter, that he was afterwards led to form a different opinion of the motives of the author from that expressed in his address to the officers.'

"In the letter referred to, general Washington, addressing himself to general Armstrong, says, 'Believing that there may be times and occasions, on which my opinion of the anonymous letters and their author, as delivered to the army in the year 1783, may be turned to some personal and malignant purpose, I do hereby declare, that I did not, at the time of writing my address, regard you as the author of the said letters; and farther, that I have since had sufficient reason for believing that the object of the author was just, honorable, and friendly to the country, though the means suggested were certainly liable to much misunderstanding and abuse.'"

Reading Lesson CLXXXIX.

Life of general Armstrong, continued.

"The first civil appointment held by general Armstrong, was that of secretary of the state of Pennsylvania, during Franklin's administration of its government; and, soon afterwards, he became a member of the 'old congress.'

"In 1789, having married a sister of the late chancellor Livingston, he was led to establish himself on the banks of the Hudson river, in the county of Dutchess, and state of New York.

"In November, 1800, he was elected a United-States senator, by an almost unanimous vote of both houses of the New-York legislature; and, in 1804, before his senatorial term had expired, he received, from Mr. Jefferson, the appointment of minister to France. He discharged the complicated and highly responsible duties of this mission with distinguished ability, and in a manner highly honorable to the country which he represented, and creditable to himself.

"During his residence abroad, it may be mentioned that he also performed all the functions of a separate mission to Spain; for which service he neither received nor claimed any remuneration from the government.

"His mission to France terminated, at his own request, in the autumn of 1810; repose being necessary to his health, and his private affairs, long neglected, requiring his supervision at home.

"Soon after the declaration of war by the United States against Great Britain, in 1812, he was appointed a brigadier-general in the United States army, and assigned to the command of the district embracing the city and harbor of New York; and, in February of the following year, he succeeded Dr. Eustis as secretary of war. This office he accepted with the greatest reluctance, having no confidence in the fitness of the generals whom the president, Mr. Madison, had appointed to the chief command of the American forces, and expecting only defeat and disaster, until they should be superseded by younger, and more active, as well as more able men. They had, it is true, seen and done some service in the war of the revolution, but only in subordinate capacities; and, becoming enervated by a repose of thirty years, they had, according to general Armstrong, 'lost all ambitious aspirations, while they had forgotten all they ever knew, and were ignorant of the later improvements in military science.'

"In this condition of things, the new secretary of war adopted the step, with difficulty acquiesced in by Mr. Madison, of transferring his department of the government from Washington to Sackett's harbor, that he might be near the scene of the operations to be directed, from the state of New York, against Canada.

"But even his presence was unable to counteract the evils resulting from the mistaken appointments which had

been made. The generals in command were not deterred from setting aside his instructions as to the plan of the campaign (of 1813;) and, superadding to their other disqualifications that of quarrelling among themselves, the result of the efforts made for the conquest of Canada, was precisely such as general Armstrong, before going into office, had predicted as likely, under the circumstances, to ensue."

Reading Lesson CXC.

Life of general Armstrong, continued.

"The capture of Washington, in August, 1814, led to general Armstrong's retirement from the war-office, an act which terminated his political career. That no especial blame could be attached to him, for this untoward event, must be manifest, when we are told that the individual,—general Winder,—who was placed at the head of the forces which had been assembled for the defence of the district of Columbia, and who commanded against the enemy in the action at Bladensburg, had been appointed by the president to this post, 'against the advice of the secretary,' as also that the latter had, under a decision of the president, been constrained 'to leave the military functionaries to a discharge of their own duties, on their own responsibility.'

"Public opinion, however, without any minute inquiry into the causes of the disaster which had happened, very naturally, perhaps, fixed upon the head of the war department of the administration, as a principal object of blame. Mr. Madison, though aware of the injustice of the clamor raised against the secretary, and in nowise disposed to take any step of a nature calculated to affect the reputation of this officer injuriously, was induced, from motives of precaution, to yield to it, to a certain extent. He intimated to general Armstrong, that a brief visit to his family would give time for the ebullition of passion and prejudice to subside, when he would be able to return, and resume the functions of his office, under more favorable circumstances. But the general regarded this intimation as itself an act of injustice, and felt indignant at its having been given. Determining to exercise his functions wholly or not at all, he sent in his resignation, which the president accepted.

"In his retirement, general Armstrong's pen was employed on various subjects connected with the public good, or belonging to the history of his own times. Among the fruits of his literary labors, we have a treatise upon gardening, and another upon agriculture, that are held in high esteem; a review of general Wilkinson's memoirs, in which he handles the author with great severity; several biographical notices, and a history, in two volumes, of the last war. It was his intention to leave behind him a history of the war of the revolution, a work in which he had made some progress; and which, had he been permitted to finish it, would, there is no doubt, have been invested with no ordinary interest, from the fact of his personal knowledge of the distinguished men, and most of the important events, of that period.

"Towards the latter part of the year 1842, he fell into a decline; and, gradually wasting away, he breathed his last, in the full possession of his mental faculties, and in the eighty-fifth year of his age, on the 1st day of April, 1843."

Reading Lesson CXCI.

COLONEL AARON BURR,

"Was born on the 6th of February, 1756, at Newark, in New Jersey.* His father, the Rev. Aaron Burr, was the first president of the college of New Jersey, which was opened at Newark, but was subsequently removed to Princeton; his mother was the daughter of the Rev. Jonathan Edwards, so distinguished as a metaphysician and divine, and who succeeded his son-in-law in the presidency of the college. The former died in 1757, and the latter in the following year, leaving only two children, Aaron and a daughter, afterwards the wife of judge Tappan Reeve, of Connecticut.

"Colonel Burr inherited from his father a considerable property. He was graduated at Princeton, when he was only sixteen years old. When in his twentieth year, he joined the American army, after the battle of Bunkerhill, in the neighborhood of Boston. Here he volunteered to accompany general Arnold, in the expedition against Quebec.

* The principal part of Mr. Burr's life was connected with scenes and events in the state of New York.

"This officer led the detachment under his command into Canada, by way of the Kennebec, and through the wilderness between the St. Lawrence and the settlements in the region now constituting the state of Maine.

"On his arrival at Chaudière pond, Burr was sent with a communication to general Montgomery, who was advancing from the state of New York with the forces under his immediate orders; and who was so much pleased with the young messenger as to appoint him to be one of his aid-de-camps. In this capacity, Burr was present at the battle of Quebec, and near the person of the general, when he was killed.

"On his return from Canada, in May, 1776, Burr proceeded to the city of New York, on being 'notified verbally that it would be agreeable to the commander-in-chief' that he should do so. But it would seem that colonel, then already major, Burr, for some reason or other, failed to make a favorable impression, personally, on general Washington. He, in consequence, became, in his turn, dissatisfied, and even inclined to quit the service; when, through the instrumentality of governor Hancock, he obtained the appointment of aid-de-camp to general Putnam,—an appointment which he gladly accepted.

"In July, 1777, he was promoted to the rank of a lieutenant-colonel; but was obliged, in March, 1779, to resign his commission in the army, on account of the impaired state of his health. He had, on various occasions during the war, highly distinguished himself by his bravery, vigilance, and skill, and had been repeatedly selected by Washington to execute his commands, on important emergencies, although that great man and admirable judge of character, had formed but a low estimate of his principles and morals.

"On retiring from the army, and, after an interval of repose required for the restoration of his health, colonel Burr applied himself to the study of the law, as well to provide himself with an adequate field for distinction among his countrymen, in his future life, as to repair the pecuniary losses which he had incurred during the period of his military service, by the liberality and extravagance of his expenditure. He commenced the practice of his profession at Albany, in the month of April, 1782, and married in July, following.

"As soon as the British troops had evacuated the city of New York, at the conclusion of the war, in November, 1783, he removed thither, where he speedily acquired an extensive and lucrative practice.

"He was a member of the legislature, during the sessions of 1784 and 1785; but, as that body met in the city where he resided, and as he took part in its deliberations only on a few of the most important questions which came before it for its decision, his professional vocation scarcely suffered any interruption; and it was only after the existing constitution of the Union went into operation, that he became prominent as a party politician."

Reading Lesson CXCII.

Life of colonel Burr, continued.

"In 1789, Mr. Burr was appointed attorney-general of the state. In January, 1791, he was elected a senator of the United States; and he took his seat in that body, in the autumn of that year.

"He was appointed in October, 1792, a judge of the supreme court of the state of New York, but declined the appointment; preferring to hold his position in the United States senate, as one of the most prominent leaders of the party, (the democratic,) to which he belonged.

"At the presidential election which took place in the autumn of 1800, an equal number of votes was found to have been given for the two highest candidates on the list, Mr. Jefferson and colonel Burr; and it, in consequence, devolved on the members of the house of representatives, voting by states, to decide which of these gentlemen should hold the office of president, and which of them, that of vice-president.

"Notwithstanding that, prior to the choice of electors, Mr. Jefferson was alone intended, by the party that nominated him, as their candidate for the presidency, it was not until after thirty-six ballotings that the contest was decided in his favor.

"From this time forth,—as, from the circumstances of the case, might naturally have been expected,—colonel Burr lost the confidence of the majority of his former political friends; and the attempts which he made to in-

gratiate himself with those to whom he had been heretofore opposed, were only partially successful.

"In 1804, he was a candidate for the office of governor of New York, but failed of being elected. He was supported by a portion of both the political parties; by a minority of the democrats, and a majority of the federalists.

"Of the latter party, general Hamilton had been one of those who most earnestly opposed him; and a duel took place, on the 11th of July, between these distinguished men, growing out of their rivalship and adverse relation to each other. Burr was the challenger, conceiving himself to have been injuriously spoken of at the period of the preceding election, by Hamilton. The latter was mortally wounded in the encounter; and his death was universally deplored, as a national loss.

"Colonel Burr continued at his post in the senate of the United States, till within two days of the expiration of his term of service as vice-president.

"It was not very long afterwards that he formed the scheme of his singular, and even yet not satisfactorily explained, western expedition, ostensibly designed for an insurrectionary movement in Mexico, but which led to his arrest and trial at Richmond, in Virginia, in August and September, 1807, for treason, first, and, then, for a misdemeanor. He was acquitted, however, on both these charges.

"In June, 1808, he embarked from New York for England; induced to take this step, in a certain degree, by the personal and political prejudices that had been excited against him, by the death of Hamilton, and by the equivocal course he had pursued in the western country; but, in a degree, also, by an expectation of being able to obtain encouragement and assistance from some of the European governments, for attempting the emancipation of the Spanish American colonies from the oppressive domination of the mother country,—a project which he had long contemplated.

"His efforts in this respect, were, however, entirely unsuccessful; and he returned to the United States, in June, 1812, after an absence abroad of four years. He opened an office in the city of New York, and practised law there, but without attracting the attention of the public, to any considerable extent.

"In 1816, general Toledo, then in the city of New York, and whose object in visiting the United States was "not only to obtain the means of continuing the war, (of Mexico against Spain,) but to seek the person best capable of employing them,' invited him to 'assume the management' of the 'political and military affairs' of the Mexican republic.

"Colonel Burr declined this invitation. But, in 1819, he received a commission from the government of Venezuela, authorizing him to raise troops for the sea and land service of that republic, and pledging itself to pay all debts, of his contracting, in the exercise of the authority granted him.

"Colonel Burr died on the 14th of September, 1836, in the eighty-first year of his age, on Staten island, where he had passed the summer, for the benefit of pure air. Agreeably to his own request, his body was conveyed to Princeton, to be there buried."

Reading Lesson CXCIII.

BROCKHOLST LIVINGSTON,

"Judge of the supreme court of the United States, was the son of William Livingston, governor of New Jersey, and was born in the city of New York, November 25th, 1757. He entered Princeton college, but, in 1776, left it for the field, and became one of the family of general Schuyler, commander of the northern army. He was afterwards attached to the suite of general Arnold, with the rank of major, and shared in the honor of the conquest of Burgoyne.

"In 1779, he accompanied Mr. Jay to the court of Spain, as his private secretary, and remained abroad about three years. On his return, he devoted himself to law, and was admitted to practise in April, 1783.

"His talents were happily adapted to the profession, and soon raised him into notice, and, ultimately, to eminence. He was called to the bench of the supreme court of the state of New York, January 8th, 1802, and, in November, 1806, was transferred to that of the supreme court of the United States; the duties of which station he discharged with distinguished faithfulness and ability, until his death, which took place during the sittings of the

court at Washington, March 18th, 1823, in the sixty-sixth year of his age.

"He possessed a mind of uncommon acuteness and energy, and enjoyed the reputation of an accomplished scholar, and an able pleader and jurist, an upright judge, and a liberal patron of learning."

Reading Lesson CXCIV.

WILLIAM JAMES MACNEVEN, M.D.,

"Was born at Ballynahowne, in the county of Galway, in Ireland, on the 21st of March, 1763. When ten or twelve years of age, he was sent for by an uncle, to be educated in Germany;—a custom very general in the catholic families of the country, and rendered necessary, at that time, by the operation of the penal laws. He received an excellent classical education in the college at Prague, and then studied medicine there, and afterwards at Vienna, where he was graduated, in 1783.

"In the following year, he commenced the practice of his profession in Dublin. He was soon enabled, by his practice, to live with comfort and independence; and a prosperous career seemed to be opened before him.

"Of an ardent temperament, and an enthusiastic lover of his country, Dr. Macneven could scarcely avoid taking a deep interest in the political discussions and contentions of the period. A speech which he made, in December, 1791, before the 'Catholic Committee' in Dublin, on the subject of a remonstrance to be offered to the government, —which he opposed as too submissive in its tone,— brought him into general notice, as an efficient advocate of liberal and patriotic principles.

"In the following year, 1792, he represented the town of Navan in a general convention of the catholics of Ireland; and in this body originated the measure,—an amendment to a petition to the king,—which obtained the elective franchise for the forty shilling freeholders. He also became a member of the secret society of United Irishmen, and a prominent leader in the great object of the political emancipation of his countrymen. In the meantime, he continued the practice of his profession, and mingled in society as usual, until the attention of the British government was, at length, directed to him, as one

of the individuals most actively engaged in the scheme for entirely shaking off the dominion of England, and for calling in a French force, to assist in the accomplishment of this design.

"He was, accordingly, arrested at Dublin, in March, 1798, and imprisoned with his friend, Mr. Thomas Addis Emmet, and others, for a year, in Kilmainham gaol, and three years more, at fort George, in Scotland.

"On their liberation, Dr. Macneven passed the summer and autumn of 1802, in travelling through Switzerland on foot, of which journey he published an account under the title of 'A Ramble in Switzerland.' He also visited his relations in Germany; and, in 1803, went to Paris.

"In that or the following year, he entered the French army as a captain in the Irish brigade; but, disappointed in the hopes which he had been induced to entertain of being employed in an expedition to Ireland, he resigned his commission, and set sail from Bordeaux for New York, where he arrived on the 4th of July, 1805.

"Dr. Macneven lost no time in declaring his intention of becoming a citizen of the United States; and, fixing upon the city of New York as his permanent residence, he entered immediately on the practice of his profession, in which he was so successful as speedily to assure himself an easy competence.

"In 1808, he was appointed to a professor's chair, in the college of physicians and surgeons; in 1811, he exchanged this appointment for that of another department; in 1812, he was appointed to the office of 'resident physician' by governor Clinton; and, in 1816, the department of 'materia medica' was added to his chair, which arrangement continued until 1820, when the branches that he taught were again separated.

"In 1826, he resigned his professorship in the college of physicians, and united with Drs. Hosack, Francis, Mott, and Godman, in another medical school; the chair of 'materia medica' being assigned to him. This school had been established under the auspices of Rutgers college, in New Jersey; and, after having been in successful operation during four years, it was compelled, by the enactments of the New-York legislature, to close its doors. Dr. Macneven thenceforth ceased to be a public teacher.

"During the cholera, in the year 1832, he was one of the medical council charged with the supervision of the hospitals, and other establishments for the use of the sick. And he, a second time, held the office of resident physician, in 1840–41.

"Besides the 'Rambles in Switzerland,' already mentioned, Dr. Macneven published an 'Exposition of the Atomic Theory,' originally propounded by Higgins and Dalton, and an edition of Brande's Chemistry, together with some papers on medical subjects, inserted in the New-York Medical and Philosophical Journal, and one on the mineral waters of Schooley's mountain, in the Transactions of the New-York literary and philosophical society.

"Dr. Macneven had a peculiar aptitude for acquiring languages. 'As a classical scholar,' we are told by one of his biographers, 'his claims were unquestioned. He spoke German and French with the same facility as English; and in the Italian, unlocked with delight the treasures of Dante and Ariosto. His native tongue, the Erse, was the first he had learned; and through life, he conversed in it, with fluency.'

"Another characterizes him thus:—'As a lecturer, he was simple, clear, and animated; as a practitioner, judicious, and efficient; as a man, amiable, honest, and kind-hearted; as a patriot, ardent, active, bold, and disinterested.'

"Dr. Macneven died on the 12th of July, 1841, in the seventy-ninth year of his age."

Reading Lesson CXCV.

DR. SAMUEL L. MITCHILL,

"An eminent naturalist, was born at Plandome, August 20th, 1764. His father and mother were in good standing with the society of Friends, and brought up their children in the habits and strict morality of that sect.

"Dr. Mitchill was, in his early life, particularly assisted and patronized by his uncle, Dr. Latham, who was a skilful and intelligent medical practitioner, in his native place. The resources of this gentleman happily enabled him to enter upon and complete that system of education which

the limited income of his father, of necessity, denied. Of his uncle, he always spoke with becoming gratitude and ardent affection.

"At an early age, he was placed under the direction of the Rev. Leonard Cutting, the minister of Hempstead, and a graduate of the university of Oxford. With this excellent instructor he continued for several years, and acquired an intimate acquaintance with classical literature, which constituted one of the favorite amusements of his leisure hours, through life. It is due to this kind preceptor to state, that he early predicted the future eminence of his pupil, and contributed by his praise and encouragement to its fulfilment. While at Hempstead, he obtained a partial knowledge of the French language, from Mr. John H. Hertzy, which he farther perfected, on his subsequent visit to France.

"After acquiring some of the elementary principles of medicine, with Dr. Latham, he became, in 1780, a pupil of Dr. Samuel Bard of New York, with whom he continued about three years. Dr. Latham died in 1781; after which young Mitchill had little farther opportunity for education.

"In 1784, he went to Europe, and was at the medical school of Edinburgh, then adorned by the talents of Cullen, Black, and Monro. He there had, for his friends and compeers, the late Thomas Addis Emmet and Sir James Mackintosh; and we have the testimony of the former that no student of the university exhibited greater tokens of promise. On the death of this gentleman, at New York, in 1828, Dr. Mitchill performed the melancholy duty of pronouncing his eulogium.

"Dr. Mitchill, on his return from Europe, in 1786, devoted a portion of his time to acquire a knowledge of the laws and constitution of his country, under the direction of Robert Yates of Albany, at that time chief-justice of the state of New York. By the influence of this gentleman, he was employed on the commission for holding a treaty with the Iroquois Indians, and was present at the adjustment made at fort Stanwix, 1788, by which the right to a large portion of the western district, became the property of the state.

"In 1790, he was chosen a member of the legislature from Queens county, and, in 1792, was appointed profes-

sor of natural history, chemistry, and agriculture, in Columbia college.

"At this institution he first made known to his countrymen the new theory of chemistry, recently matured by the genius of Lavoisier and his associates, in opposition to the theory of his former master, Dr. Black. In 1796, he made his able mineralogical report of a survey of the state of New York; and, in 1797, commenced, in connection with Drs. Miller and Smith, the publication of the Medical Repository, of which he was chief editor, for more than sixteen years.

"He was a member of numerous scientific institutions. Of the lyceum of natural history of New York he was the founder, and, for many years, president. He enriched its annals with many contributions, and still farther displayed his zeal and liberality by a donation of a large portion of his valuable cabinet. For about twenty years, he acted as one of the physicians of the New-York hospital.

"Notwithstanding his immense literary labors, and publications on almost every subject of science, he found time to mingle in the bustle of politics. He was elected, from the city of New York, a member of the seventh, eighth, and ninth congresses; and, afterwards, a state senator of the United States.

"Few men ever enjoyed a more enviable popularity, or preserved a more voluminous correspondence in every part of the world. In private life, he was distinguished for affability and simplicity of manners, and was always ready to impart to others of his immense stores of knowledge, which probably exceeded, in value and amount, those of any man living. The illustrious Cuvier always mentioned him in terms of great approbation; and Audubon, the ornithologist, has bestowed upon him the tribute of his sincere applause. He died, after a short but severe illness, at his residence, in the city of New York, in the sixty-seventh year of his age, September 7th, 1831."

Reading Lesson CXCVI.

EDWARD LIVINGSTON,

"Was born in the year 1764, at Clermont, (Livingston's manor,) in Columbia county, in the state of New York. He was a younger brother of Mr. Robert R. Livingston,

of whom a notice was given in a previous page of this work. "He went to school at Albany, and then at Esopus or Kingston, on the Hudson river. In 1779, he entered an advanced class of Princeton college, where he took his degree of A.B., two years afterwards.

"Having selected the law for a profession, he pursued the study of it at Albany, and, upon being admitted to the bar, in 1785, established himself in the city of New York. There, before he reached the age of thirty, he had acquired a high reputation for his attainments as a jurist, and ability as an advocate.

"Mr. Livingston was, in 1794, elected a representative in congress, from the city of New York and some of the neighboring counties. During the six years that he was a member of that body, he was one of the leaders of the party opposed to the administration of the general government. His opposition, however, was devoid of asperity, and was far from being indiscriminate in its character.

"Nor was his attention, by any means, confined to the political questions by which the community was, at that time, agitated. To him were owing the first, though ineffectual, attempts to mitigate the severity of our criminal laws, and to adapt the punishments inflicted, more justly than had before been done, to the nature of the offence which was committed. He urged the passage, also, of several laws to protect or relieve American seamen, left by accident or misfortune, on foreign shores. And he gave his earnest support to the measures for the gradual increase of the navy.

"Shortly after retiring from congress, he was appointed by the president, Mr. Jefferson, to the office of attorney of the United States, for the state of New York; and, about the same time, he was elected mayor of the city of New York, an office which, as then constituted, required the exercise of important judicial functions, in addition to the duties ordinarily performed by the first municipal magistrate of a large city.

"In 1803, during his mayoralty, the city experienced an attack of the yellow fever, when 'his personal exertions and benevolence were fearlessly displayed, at the risk, and almost with the loss, of his own life.' In the meantime, his private affairs having been completely neglected, in consequence of his assiduous attention to those of the public,

they became greatly deranged; and, through the misconduct of persons who had been entrusted by him with the collection of debts due to the United States, he was subjected to heavy liabilities. He at once resigned his offices, and by a removal to Louisiana,—which had just been purchased from France,—sought a rich field, where, by his professional labors, he could hope to obtain the means of relieving himself from his pecuniary embarrassments. Nor was he disappointed; for he was ultimately enabled to discharge the obligations which he had incurred, both principal and interest.

"Shortly after his arrival in Louisiana, the legislature of that territory entrusted to him, in conjunction with the late Mr. James Brown, the preparation of a system of judicial procedure. Discarding the fictions and technicalities of the English law, and avoiding also the prolixity of the Spanish, and not unfrequently of the French code, they produced a simple and intelligible system, and one well calculated to prevent unnecessary delay and expense. It was adopted by the legislature, as well through the ability displayed by its framers in its support, as on account of its own intrinsic merits; in despite of the resistance which it met with from the members of the bar, generally, who had removed to Louisiana from the other states of the American Union.

"But this was merely an introductory step to other still more important labors of a similar character. In 1820, he was appointed, jointly with Messrs. Derbigny and Moreau, to revise the system of civil or municipal law, a compound of French, Spanish, and American or English jurisprudence, hitherto in use in the state of Louisiana; and, in 1821, he was charged, solely, with the preparation of a new system of penal law."

Reading Lesson CXCVII.

Life of Edward Livingston, continued.

"The new civil code was presented to the legislature in 1823, and, with the exception of the commercial part, to which objections were made, was promptly adopted by it. Mr. Livingston made, in 1822, a preliminary report on the principles and plan on which he proposed to frame the new criminal code, with specimens of the mode of its

execution. This report was soon afterwards reprinted in London; and a French translation of it, was published at Paris, in 1825. The system of penal law, in the form in which we now have it, was submitted to the legislature in the year 1826. It is not, properly speaking, a single code, but consists of 'a code of crimes and punishments, a code of criminal procedure, a code of evidence, a code of reform and prison discipline, and a book of definitions, together with introductory reports to each of the codes, pointing out the changes made in the existing laws, the new enactments proposed, and the principles and reasons on which they were founded.' These were all published together, at Philadelphia, in one large octavo volume, in the year 1833.

"'The system,' Mr. Gilpin tells us, in his biographical notice of Mr. Livingston,—read before the American Philosophical Society, and inserted in the third volume of the American Law Magazine,—' has not, it is believed, been yet finally acted upon, in its extended form, by the legislature of Louisiana; but it does not, on this account, claim less justly the admiration of the philanthropist and jurist. It is a work worthy of the deep consideration of all communities. The beauty of its arrangement, the wisdom of its provisions, and the simplicity of its forms, have never been surpassed, probably never equalled, in any similar work; and it is not without entire justice, that this admirable production has contributed, perhaps more than any other of his labors, to secure to Mr. Livingston that eminent place which he holds among those who are regarded, not merely as distinguished jurists, but as public benefactors.'

"For a period of twenty years, Mr. Livingston had taken no part in public affairs, excepting in so far as they were connected with the theory or practice of his profession, and excepting, too, the part which he acted in the defence of New Orleans, in the capacity of an aid-de-camp of general Jackson.

"At length, in 1823, on his signifying his intention to retire from the bar, he was elected a representative in congress from the state of Louisiana; in 1829, he was transferred to a seat in the senate of the United States; and, in 1831, he was appointed, by general Jackson, to the office of secretary of state, then vacant by the resignation of Mr. Van Buren.

"During his service in congress, from 1823 to 1831, Mr. Livingston did not speak often, and only on important questions of general policy. He was always listened to with marked attention and respect, and distinguished himself especially in the celebrated debate in the senate, on Mr. Foote's resolution relative to the public lands.

"As the head of the department of state, his correspondence, and other documents of which he was the author, will compare, without disparagement, with those that have proceeded from the other eminent men who, since the organization of the government, have occupied the same position, and exhibit, throughout, a most enlightened and liberal spirit, in reference to the foreign relations of the country.

"In the summer of 1833, the president selected Mr. Livingston to fill the post of American minister to France; it being, at the time, one of unusual importance, on account of the difficulties which had sprung out of the refusal by the French Chambers, to make provision for the payment of the indemnity due to the United States, for injuries committed against their commerce, during the last European war.

"Mr. Livingston conducted his mission under trying circumstances, in a manner redounding very much to his own credit, as well as to the honor of the country which he represented.

"On his return to America, in the spring of 1835, he retired to his seat at Rhinebeck, on the Hudson river, in the midst of his numerous family connections. He died there, on the 23d of May, 1836.

"Eminent as he was, as a statesman, and as a member of the American bar, it is, however, as a theoretical jurist that Mr. Livingston is most extensively known; and upon his merits as such, his reputation will chiefly rest, and long endure. These merits were acknowledged in letters to him, and otherwise, by some of the most distinguished of his contemporaries abroad, as well as at home; and they procured for him, among other honors of a similar nature, that of being chosen to be one of the foreign associates of the academy of science of Paris, in the moral and political department."

Reading Lesson CXCVIII.

THOMAS ADDIS EMMET,

"Eminent, in both hemispheres, as a devoted patriot, and an eloquent lawyer, was born in the city of Cork, in Ireland, in 1765. His parents were of highly respectable standing, and lived in easy circumstances. Emmet was placed, in his boyhood, at the university of Dublin, and designed, by his father, for the profession of medicine. He was educated accordingly, and pursued his medical studies at Edinburgh.

"The death of his elder brother, a member of the Irish bar, occasioned him, at the desire of his parents, to relinquish the practice of medicine for the study of law. He went, accordingly, to London, where he studied two years in the Temple, and attended the courts at Westminster.

"On his return to Dublin, he commenced practice, as a lawyer, and soon attained success and professional distinction. Among his contemporaries and associates, was the celebrated Curran, who was one of his circuit and term companions.

"Emmet's ardent and patriotic temper led him to imbibe deeply the national antipathy to the British government; and, when the societies of United Irishmen were revived in the year 1795, he joined the association, and soon became a leader. The aim of this secret union, was to effect a revolution, and secure an independent government for Ireland.

"Emmet acted as one of the executive committee of the societies, which were so numerous as to comprise nearly half a million of ardent hearts, devoted, with all the characteristic enthusiasm of Ireland, to what they deemed the rescue of their country. In March, 1798, he was arrested as a conspirator, and committed to prison, at Dublin, by the vice-regal government, along with Oliver Bond, Dr. Macneven, and other chiefs of the disaffected party.

"In July, after a strict imprisonment, an interview took place between Emmet and lord Castlereagh, at Dublin castle; and it was agreed that he and the other state prisoners should be permitted to go to the United States, as soon as they had made certain disclosures of their plans of revolution, and the projected alliance between the

nited Irishmen and France. These disclosures were nade in a memoir, delivered August 4th, but without the onfession of any names, which were inflexibly refused by he writers. They were, soon after, examined, in person, efore the secret committees of both houses of the Irish arliament.

"Instead, however, of being sent to the United States, Emmet and nineteen more, were, early in 1799, landed n Scotland; and, as their disclosures were deemed incomplete, in consequence of the withholding of the names efore referred to, they were consigned to fort George, a ortress in the county of Nairn. Here they were liberally reated; but their detention lasted three years. At the xpiration of that period, the list of pardons arrived, inluding the name of every prisoner except Emmet. The overnor of the fortress released him, notwithstanding, aking all the responsibility.

"Emmet and his exemplary wife, who had shared unremittingly his imprisonment, both in Ireland and Scotand, were landed at Cuxhaven from a British frigate, nd spent the winter of the year 1802, in Brussels, and hat of 1803, in Paris. In October, 1804, they sailed from Bordeaux for the United States, and arrived in New York n the 11th of the following month.

"Emmet hesitated, at first, in choosing between the rofessions of law and medicine; but his friends induced im to undertake the former. George Clinton, then govrnor of the state of New York, persuaded him to abandon his original plan of settling in Ohio, and to remain in he city of New York. He was admitted to the bar, at nce, by special dispensation, and, by his diligence in usiness and surpassing eloquence, soon reached the first anks of the profession.

"In the course of a few years, he rivalled, in business nd fame, the most eminent of American lawyers. Occasionally, the ardor of his temperament, and the vividness f his political recollections, betrayed him into party politics; but his general career and character were those of a laborious, able, and most successful pleader, an energetic and eloquent orator, a sound republican citizen, and a courteous gentleman.

"In 1812, he was appointed to the office of attorney-general of the state of New York. His death occurred

suddenly, in the sixty-third year of his age, November 14th, 1827, while attending the trial of an important cause at New York, in the circuit court of the United States. He was seized with an apoplectic fit, which put an end to his life, the following night. It was only on the 13th, that he had delivered a most animated and powerful address to a jury, in a cause of the greatest importance and of the utmost difficulty.—An ample and deserved tribute of public respect was paid to his memory.

"Mr. Emmet was a thorough classical scholar, and conversant with the physical sciences. During his detention at the fortress in Scotland, he wrote part of an essay towards the History of Ireland, which was printed in New York, in 1807. His character, in private life, was irreproachable; and he was held in the highest esteem, by all classes of society. His personal appearance was manly and impressive, his features were strong and regular,—advantages which harmonized with the effect of his energetic and fervid eloquence."

Reading Lesson CXCIX.

ROBERT FULTON,

"The celebrated engineer, was born in Little Britain, in Pennsylvania,* in 1765. In his infancy, he was put to school in Lancaster, in his native state, where he acquired the rudiments of a common English education.

"His peculiar genius manifested itself at a very early age. In his childhood, all his hours of recreation were passed in the shops of mechanics, or in the employment of his pencil. At the age of seventeen years, he painted portraits and landscapes, in Philadelphia, where he remained till he was about twenty-one.

"In his twenty-second year, he went to England, and was received with great kindness by his distinguished countryman, Mr. West, who was so pleased with his promising genius and his amiable qualities, that he took him into his house, where he continued an inmate, for several years. After leaving the family of West, he appears, for

* As New York was the chief scene of Fulton's experiments in steam navigation, and of his actual residence, for a great part of his life, we have ventured to class him among the eminent men of New York.

some time, to have made painting his chief employment. He spent two years in Devonshire, where he formed an acquaintance with the duke of Bridgewater, so famous for his canals, and lord Stanhope, a nobleman celebrated for his love of science, and particularly for his attachment to the mechanic arts.

"In 1793, we find Mr. Fulton actively engaged in a project to improve inland navigation. Even at that early period, he had conceived the idea of propelling vessels by steam; and he speaks, in some of his manuscripts, with great confidence of its practicability.

"In May, 1794, he obtained, from the British government, a patent, for a double inclined plane, to be used for transportation; and, in the same year, he submitted to the British society for the promotion of arts and commerce, an improvement of his invention on mills for sawing marble, for which he received the thanks of the society and an honorary medal. He also obtained patents for machines for spinning flax and making ropes, and invented a mechanical contrivance for scooping out the earth, in certain situations, to form the channels for canals or aqueducts. The subject of canals appears chiefly to have engaged his attention, about this time. He now, and probably for some time previously, professed himself a civil engineer. Under this title, he published his work on canals.

"Throughout his course, as a mechanist and civil engineer, he derived great advantage from his talent for drawing and painting. He was an elegant and accurate draftsman. After his attention was directed to mechanics, he seems not to have used his pencil as a painter, till a short time before his death, when he painted some portraits of his own family.

"In 1797, he went to Paris, where he lived seven years in the family of Joel Barlow, during which time, he studied the higher mathematics, physics, chemistry, and perspective. While there, he projected the first panorama that was exhibited in Paris. He also made an experiment there, in 1797, on the Seine, with a machine designed to propel carcasses of gunpowder, under water, to a given point, and there to explode them. Although this project failed, he continued to employ his attention on the subject, until he had perfected the plan for his *submarine boat*, as it was afterwards executed."

Reading Lesson CC.

Life of Robert Fulton, continued.

"Fulton returned to America, in 1806. We must now revert to an early period of Mr. Fulton's life, to trace the progress of that great improvement in the arts, for which the world is so much indebted to him—we mean, the practical establishment of navigation by steam.

"At what time his attention was first directed to this subject, is not known; but it is ascertained, that, in 1793, he had matured a plan, in which he had great confidence. The evidence of this is his letter to lord Stanhope, dated September 30th, 1793.

"It is impossible to say what progress he had made in his plans for steamboat navigation previously to 1801, when he and chancellor Livingston met in Paris. His papers, however, render it evident, that the application of water-wheels, as they are now used in this country, was among his first conceptions of the means by which steam vessels might be propelled.

"He had given to Messrs. Watt and Bolton, instructions for constructing the first engine which was successfully used in a boat; yet he made no pretensions, as an *inventor*, with respect to the engine. On the contrary, he was often heard to declare, that he did not pretend himself to have made, and did not know of any improvement that had been made by any other person, upon engines which were constructed according to Mr. Watt's principles.

"Robert R. Livingston, minister to France, met Mr. Fulton there, and communicated to him the importance of steamboats to their common country, informed him of what had been attempted in America, by Fitch, and advised him to turn his attention to the subject. They immediately proceeded to make experiments on the subject, the principal direction of which was left to Mr. Fulton. After some trials on a small scale, they built a boat upon the Seine, under the direction of Mr. Fulton, in 1803, which was completely successful.

"On Mr. Fulton's arrival at New York, in 1806, they immediately engaged in building a boat of what was then deemed very considerable dimensions. This boat began

to navigate the Hudson river, in 1807; its progress through the water was at the rate of five miles an hour.

"February 11th, 1809, Mr. Fulton took out his first patent for his inventions in navigation by steam; and, February 9th, 1811, he obtained a second patent for some improvements in his boats and machinery.

"In 1811 and 1812, two steamboats were built under Mr. Fulton's directions, as ferry-boats for crossing the Hudson river, and, soon after, one of the same description for the East river. Of the former, Mr. Fulton wrote and published a description, in the American Medical and Philosophical Register, for October, 1812. These boats were what are called 'twin-boats;' each of them being two complete hulls, united by a deck or bridge; sharp at both ends, and moving equally well with either end foremost, so that they cross and recross, without losing any time in turning. He contrived, with great ingenuity, floating docks for the reception of these boats, and a means by which they are brought up to them without a shock.

"Mr. Fulton died February 24th, 1815. In person, he was about six feet high, slender, but well proportioned, with large dark eyes and a projecting brow. His manners were easy and unaffected. His temper was mild, and his disposition lively. He was fond of society. He expressed himself with energy, fluency, and correctness; and, as he owed more to experience and reflection than to books, his sentiments were often interesting from their originality.

"In all his domestic and social relations, he was zealous, kind, generous, liberal, and affectionate. He knew of no use for money but as it was subservient to charity, hospitality, and the sciences. But what was most conspicuous in his character, was his calm constancy, his industry, and that indefatigable patience and perseverance which always enabled him to overcome difficulties."

Reading Lesson CCI.

JAMES WADSWORTH.

This eminent friend and patron of the interests of agriculture and of education, was born in Durham, Connecticut, on the 20th of April, 1768. The following particulars of his life and character, we derive from the valuable

memoir by professor James Renwick, of Columbia college, contributed by him to the Monthly Journal of Agriculture.

"We have no details of the pursuits of Mr. Wadsworth's boyhood, which, however, were, no doubt, spent in the alternate occupations of agricultural industry and scholastic discipline, until we find him taking his degree of Bachelor of Arts, at Yale college, in the twentieth year of his age.

"Before he had thus completed his collegiate education, his father had died; and the property upon which the latter had sustained his family in competence, and by whose products he had been enabled to give his sons the best education which the country could furnish, was now to be divided into three portions. Neither of these, it was obvious, would suffice even for the decent maintenance of an individual, far less for the support of a family. Industry, directed by intelligence, was therefore to be looked to, in the place of patrimonial fortune, and, when united to enterprise and moral courage, might open a way to wealth. All these requisites were united in the characters of James Wadsworth and William, one of his brothers.

"At the present day, the sons of families under circumstances similar to those of the Wadsworths, flock to our cities to seek situations at the counter of the retailer, or places at the desk of the counting-house; throng into the schools of medicine or divinity; or embark in the study of legal science. In these lotteries, that one chance in the hundred turns out a prize, in the acquisition of mercantile wealth, the enjoyment of high professional standing, the consciousness of spiritual usefulness, or the attainment of political eminence, is more than the average amount of success. Yet the glitter of the few prizes continues to tempt youth from the pursuits of agriculture to the waste of their slender patrimonies, the destruction of their health, or the ruin of their character and morals.

"James Wadsworth's ambition was more wisely directed. He did not see, in his superior education, the means of escaping from the pursuits of his forefathers, as if rural toil were disgraceful to the man of intelligence, but rather the instrument by which intellect and mental energy might be substituted for rustic manipulation. At that moment, the adoption of the Federal Constitution

promised a government of sufficient strength to maintain supremacy over the Indian tribes bordering upon the settlements of more ancient date; and large tracts of land, hitherto held as Indian hunting-grounds, lay open to purchase under unquestionable titles, derived from cessions by the aborigines to the states within whose chartered limits they lay. Massachusetts and New York had compromised their claims to the country west of the Seneca lake; the former acquiring the right of soil, the latter that of jurisdiction; and Massachusetts, in a happy hour for the prosperity of New York, had sold her wide but apparently valueless estate to the copartnership long conspicuous on the maps of the state of New York under the names of Phelps and Gorham. This firm, buying at a price which, estimated by the acre, at the present day, would be called nominal, contracted from the vast extent of the tract to which they had acquired a title, engagements large for the time, and both for the purpose of diminishing the amount at stake, and realizing early profits, sought to embark others in the speculation, as purchasers from them. Among these was colonel Wadsworth of Hartford, Connecticut, who from his wealth, and public services in the war of the revolution, was looked up to by those of his name as their chief.

"The young Wadsworths, while they were unable to count kin with him, were acknowledged as the descendants of a common ancestor; and he, with the patriarchal feeling which has now become almost obliterated, was willing to extend his patronage to those who bore the same patronymic as himself. To James and his brother William he gave not only sound advice, but what proved to be the most useful aid. He proposed to them that they should take an interest in his remote and almost inaccessible estate, by purchasing a part, and becoming his agents for the management of the remainder. It has rarely happened that young men of intelligence, education, and sure, although limited capital, have been induced to make such obvious sacrifices for the attainment of a certainly distant, and possibly unattainable benefit. What difficulties beset and long attended them, will be understood from our narrative.

"The patrimonial property of the two Wadsworths, was worth some $12,000 or $15,000. It consisted in lands in

the township of Durham, Connecticut, for which there was but little demand, and served rather as the basis of credit than as a moneyed capital. Their purchase was situated in what are now known as the townships of Geneseo and Avon, on the eastern bank of the Genesee river. In the year 1790, when their enterprising journey commenced, the Little Falls of the Mohawk formed the extreme limit of continuous cultivation in the state of New York. Small clearings were beginning to appear on the German Flats and at Cosby's manor. The Indian trade enabled a couple of white families to earn a scanty support at each of the two places where Utica and Geneva now stand; and Canandaigua was the seat of the land office of Phelps and Gorham.

"With these exceptions, the whole region was a wilderness, rendered more dreary by the necessary ravages of Sullivan's army, and more dangerous by the rancor which those ravages had excited in the breasts of the warriors of the Five Nations. This rancor was kept up by the promptings of traders issuing from the fortress of Niagara, over which the British flag still floated, and had, for its only soothers, the magnanimity of the chiefs who disdained to feel resentment for the woes of open war, and the fears which the inferior warriors entertained of the prowess of the *Long-Knives*.*

"To encounter the perils of this position, and perform the labor of bringing their land into cultivation, the brothers hired a small band of hardy axemen in Connecticut, purchased provisions to maintain them until the first crops should ripen, and provided agricultural implements sufficient for their proposed farm. The whole party, with its heavy encumbrances, ascended the Hudson to Albany, then often the voyage of a week; made the long portage through the pines to Schenectady; embarked in batteaux upon the Mohawk, not yet improved even by the partial operations of the Western Land and Navigation company; and followed its tortuous course until they reached the limit of continuous settlement. Here cattle were purchased to serve as the foundation of a future stock, and for temporary support; and the party was divided into two bands. James continued the laborious task of threading nameless streams, encumbered by wood-drifts and run-

* The Americans of the United States.

ning in shallow channels, while William undertook the still more difficult duty of driving the stock through the pathless forest. Finally, the party was again united upon a small savannah on the bank of the Genesee, a spot which, hardly altered in appearance, is now overlooked by a flourishing town and mansions which, if unpretending, unite, in the highest degree, the refinements and elegances of civilization.

"Here the bold and gallant bearing of William Wadsworth, united with, or, we may say, directed by the sagacity, moral courage, and strict justice of James, won upon the neighboring chiefs to such a degree as to have made them the instruments by which the enterprise was preserved from almost immediate ruin. A house having been built by the aid of no other implement than the axe, crops were planted, and the cattle turned to graze in the rich savannah. The forest which then encumbered much the greater part of the selected portion of the Genesee Flats, was vigorously attacked; and the mighty trees yielded to the Yankee axe.

"Classic superstition, in the events which followed, would have seen the Dryads uniting to avenge the destruction of their desecrated groves; for, with the autumn came the enervating and unmanning attacks of the ague. This, to natives of a country where it was unknown, presented such terrors that the hired men broke the conditions of their engagement, and hurried, as they best could, toward the older settlements, leaving the two brothers almost if not quite alone, in their log-built cabin. In this position, even mere passiveness on the part of their neighbor Big-Tree, the chief of the Indian village on the Genesee, immediately opposite to the settlement of the Wadsworths, might have compelled them to follow their servants; but they now obtained from him ready and efficient aid,—an aid not given, however, without satisfactory equivalent, and far more than repaid to his race in their waning fortunes."

Reading Lesson CCII.

Life of James Wadsworth, continued.

"With the opening of a new spring, a fresh supply of white laborers was obtained; and whether they were ac-

climatized or had been familiarized to the endemic disease, no farther interruption occurred in the progress of the clearing.

"The Indian corn of their first crop was beaten into meal, in a mortar fashioned by the axe, from the stump of a gigantic oak; and the pestle was swung as on a spring, from a long and pliant pole. Gradually, in the progress of the clearing, the falls of a little stream were reached, where a saw and grist mill, erected by the Wadsworths, formed the nucleus of the now flourishing village of Geneseo.

"The gradual extension and successful prosecution of the enterprise, together with the duties of the land agency, led to a division of the labors of the two brothers. Upon William, more robust in frame and more valid in constitution, devolved the direction of their own agricultural labors, and, of necessity, much of the direction of the business of the land office; while to the lot of James fell the travelling necessary to the successful prosecution of their own business, and for keeping up their connections with the landholders whose concerns were committed to them.

"To judge of the extent of the labor involved in the first of the branches committed to James, it may be stated that the first plan which presented itself for rendering available the exuberant fertility of their meadows, was the purchase, fattening, and sale of cattle. This was the only form in which a surplus agricultural product could be made to yield a remunerative price, in the distant and secluded valley in which the Wadsworths had placed themselves. The cattle which formed the subject of this trade were purchased young and lean, in the Eastern states, driven to Geneseo, and, when fit for market, were either again driven to the remote markets of New York and Philadelphia, or to Hornellsville, on the Tioga branch of the Susquehannah, whence they were transported in the rude embarkations called arks, to Baltimore.

"The West, although then limited by the Niagara river, had not begun to exercise that fascination which it now does. Men residing on comfortable farms, and delicate females, were not willing to abandon the homes of their youth, to try the perils and labors of the wilderness. Purchasers for lands and tenants of farms were, in conse-

quence, to be sought for at the places of their birth, instead of swarming, at each returning spring, from the native hive. It therefore became one of the tasks assumed by James Wadsworth, to travel on horseback through the regions most abounding in population, and endeavor to make sale of the wild lands of his agency, or, by the tender of liberal terms, acquire tenants to occupy lands already brought into cultivation.

"The parties most desirous to remove, were those in the least affluent circumstances,—persons, who, by the continual division of lands among successive generations, had reached that stage in which the amount of soil held by them was inadequate for their support, and who, in a population wholly agricultural, could find no room for occupation, as laborers. With these, the great difficulty to be overcome was to find purchasers for their worn-out and impoverished possessions. To meet this case, lands in the Eastern states were taken in payment for those of the Genesee Valley, or for the outfit necessary to remove families to occupy farms as tenants. The lands thus acquired were, in their turn, to be sold, or made productive of rent. In the records of operations of this description, it appears that there were instances in which six acres of the virgin soil of the West were given in exchange for a single acre of little better than rock in New England; and it is now certain that, after an interval of fifty years, the relative value of the two portions is reversed. Thus, while the objects of the speculators in the Genesee Valley, were completely answered, on the one hand; on the other, the parties who purchased from them, have multiplied their original capital thirty-six fold.

"The success which attended the early operations of the Wadsworths, in drawing settlers to their own lands, and those of which they were the agents, attracted the attention of other parties holding property of the same description. It was obvious that it was to the personal address and business talent of James, that this success was, in a great degree, to be attributed. He was in consequence, in the year 1796, requested to undertake a mission to England, for the purpose of interesting the capitalists of that country in the lands of the Western district of New York. Direct advantage was to be derived by the proprietors of large tracts, by the sale, at a profit, of what

they held as a speculation; but more important, although indirect, benefit was to be attained by the whole region, in a manner that will be presently seen.

"The circumstances of this mission, and the high character of the parties for whom he was to act, gave him introduction and brought him into contact with persons whose position in European society was best suited to enlarge the views, improve the mind, and polish the manners of a young man of so apt a disposition. While, therefore, he was successful in accomplishing the objects of his mission, he derived no small amount of personal advantage and gratification from his foreign tour. His manner and address must have been from his youth prepossessing; but he would have differed from all his Connecticut brethren, had he been free from provincial peculiarities, which, whether the growth of the Ouse, the Trent, the Severn, or the Housatonic—nay, even if generated within the sound of Bow-bell, taint, with vulgarity, manners, in other respects, the most gentlemanly. In the subsequent years of Mr. Wadsworth's life, there was no trace of such a defect; and so far as language is concerned, he might have undergone the most severe and surest of tests, that of being able to pass through every region in which the English language is spoken, without exciting an inquiry as to the place of his birth."

Reading Lesson CCIII.

Life of James Wadsworth, continued.

"The results of Mr. Wadsworth's mission to Europe had effects on the prosperity of the region in which he had fixed his residence, little appreciated at the time, and now, in a great degree, forgotten. It is the fashion of the day to advocate the infinitesimal division of the national domain, and to consider purchases of large contiguous tracts as a public evil. The experience of the state of New York was in direct opposition to these narrow views. The large estates would have been destined to remain an unproductive wilderness in the hands of their owners, had they not been opened to the view of persons seeking for places of settlement. Hence roads were laid out and worked, bridges built, aids given to the erection of schools

and churches; and, under the influence of this forced growth, the region between Seneca lake and the sources of waters running to lake Erie, outstripped, in its improvement, the more accessible and equally fertile Military Tract, which the gratitude of the state of New York had divided into small lots among its revolutionary soldiers. The accumulation of the surplus products of the former region created a necessity for the means of transport; and its population, animated by the ardor of a youthful vigor and directed by minds of no little power, formed the popular force which Clinton wielded with such skill, when the construction of the Erie canal was decreed, in opposition to the vote of the city of New York and of the River counties.

"It has been asserted, and the assertion is supported by evidence almost intrinsic, that, for thirty years from the time the Pulteney family acquired the estate known by their name, no remittance had been made to them in England, either as income, or as a return for the original investment and the large additional capital expended in opening communications. The condition of the Wadsworth estate was not different, with the exception that the funds destined by the foreign proprietors to the support of agents, served to defray the unostentatious but liberal hospitalities of the American landholders. When the time, at length, arrived, at which the profits of the long struggle were to be reaped, the difference between the foreign and resident owner became apparent. The former had indeed fairly earned them by the employment of his capital, and deserved them for benefits which a regard for his own interests had induced him to confer. Here, however, his influence ceased. The remittance of his capital and accumulated profits, created a vent for the products of the very fields of which it was the price, to an equal amount; and the account was balanced without farther profit or loss to either hand. The Wadsworths, on the other hand, adopted as the principle of their action, that their profits should be reinvested upon the spot, and, in this way, gave a second impulse to the industry of their neighborhood. Thus, while a part of the original purchase was actually disposed of in fee, a larger quantity of land than was sold, was added to the estate. Of this, the death of general William Wadsworth

without children, left the subject of our memoir the sole proprietor.

"Mr. Wadsworth was probably the only instance, since the breaking out of the revolutionary contest, of the investment of a fortune accumulated by the industry of a whole life, in agricultural property. In most, if not all, of the other cases in which fortune has been derived from the purchase and sale of land, it has been changed in its investment from the tillable soil, to city lots or moneyed securities. It would be difficult to form an estimate of the enormous magnitude of the amount which has thus been drawn, in the western part of the state of New York alone, from the support of agriculture. Flourishing as that region is, imagination can hardly conceive how much more flourishing it might have been, had the whole of the profit derived from the rise in the value of its wild lands, been reïnvested upon the spot.

"The estate of the Wadsworths, reserved in compliance with the principle originally adopted, that their capital should not be withdrawn from the region in which it was accumulated, was partly held in their own hands, partly leased, and partly cultivated 'upon shares.' The Home Farm, cultivated under their own immediate direction, comprises upward of two thousand acres, of which more than half is a rich alluvial 'flat' of the Genesee river. This portion was for many years the only part from which any profit was derived; and to the raising and feeding of cattle, of which mention has already been made, was added the culture of hemp, for which crop the inexhaustible fertility of the soil was admirably adapted.

"The hilly land which borders the alluvial soil on the east, was, in its original state, what is styled an 'oak opening,' namely, a swelling surface studded with gigantic black-oak trees, and free from undergrowth. The latter had been kept down by the fires which the Indians were accustomed to light in it, for the purpose of rendering it a profitable hunting-ground. Where this custom is put a stop to, young trees and bushes speedily make their appearance; and unless cultivation of some description be applied, the whole soon becomes a tangled thicket. This description of land was at first considered to be of little value. When, however, the state of the Spanish peninsula

led to the importation of considerable flocks of Merino sheep, the Wadsworths were speedily among the largest proprietors of animals of that species, which were fed upon the uplands; and the high prices which the fleeces long bore upon the seaboard, sufficed to defray the cost of the tedious transportation to the navigable waters of the Hudson.

"Experience has shown that the oak openings, so much underrated at first, are better fitted for the growth of wheat than any other soils. But it is not surprising that this valuable property should have so tardily developed as to be considered by some a fortuitous discovery. It was not until the Erie canal was opened, that wheat would yield a return of the bare freight from the Genesee river to a market; and hence there was no inducement to cultivate more of that grain than could be consumed on the spot. In spite, however, of the admirable adaptation of the upland of the Home Farm to the production of wheat, grazing was, to the very last, the principal object. This application to a purpose which might, at first sight, appear the least profitable, was dictated by the prudence of Mr. Wadsworth, who was aware that it was impossible, by means of hired labor, to cultivate grain on as good terms as could be done by those who held their own ploughs. For similar reasons, root crops never formed a part of his system of husbandry.

"The leasehold lands were, at first, granted to the settlers for the term of two joint lives and the survivor; the parties named being usually the settler and his wife. By mutual agreement, these were subsequently changed to leases for a term of years: and this became, from that time, the form of the original contract. These farms usually comprised each about one hundred acres. The rent was, in most cases, fixed by a money standard; but it was many years before money began to pass from the tenant to the landlord. The convenience of the former demanded that it should be received in the product of the farm, or worked out in labor. It was not until the war of 1812 caused the expenditure of government funds in the Western district of New York, that money made its appearance; and this was in the form of a partially depreciated paper. The establishment of banks speedily followed; and they were, in spite of the taint on their

origin, the instruments of no little benefit to the poor landholders and the tenants of small farms.

"Larger farms than those of one hundred acres, were leased for shorter terms, on the conditions of the payment of a share, usually one-third, of the grain crops, and a stipulated sum for the portions not under the plough. The rotation of the crops on property of this description, and the manner of cultivation, required much individual attention from the proprietor, and, although more profitable to him than lands leased in the other manner, were far more troublesome to manage."

Reading Lesson CCIV.

Life of James Wadsworth, continued.

"In the collection of his rents, Mr. Wadsworth looked for the same punctuality and good faith from his tenants that he was accustomed to exhibit in his own dealings with others. Hence, with the improvident or careless, he gained the reputation of severity. That this was unmerited, none acquainted with his active benevolence and equanimity of temper can doubt. The knowledge, on the part of his tenants, of the steadiness of his course, in this respect, was, to the industrious, rather a benefit than an injury, for it compelled them to a close calculation of their profits; and the requirement of punctuality in payment prevented the careless from accumulating debts beyond their ability to discharge.

"Many of the farms held for long terms of years, reverted to Mr. Wadsworth before his death; and, while the land itself was generally in good order, the tenants had, for the most part, made such profit from the occupation as to be in comfortable circumstances. From inquiries and comparisons made upon the spot, it was inferred that the tenants of his estate were, upon the whole, more successful in their pursuits, enjoyed a greater share of comfort, and laid by larger profits than those who purchased, upon credit, lands of equal quality in the neighborhood.

"Mr. Wadsworth married, in the year 1804, Naomi Wolcott, of East Windsor, Connecticut. In his wife he had the good fortune to meet with tastes and disposition congenial to his own; and those who had the happiness of

enjoying her acquaintance, still speak in the highest terms of her worth. Under her inspection and management, in circumstances that all who have attempted housekeeping on a liberal scale in new settlements, will know to be those of difficulty, the mansion at Geneseo became a model of well-ordered, generous, and yet unostentatious hospitality.

"The loss of his wife, of his brother, and of a daughter who had just reached the age of womanhood, and been fortunately married, shed a gloom over some of his later years; but he still took pleasure in collecting a circle of select friends at his residence, during the season at which Geneseo was readily accessible. Intelligent, well informed, and fond of intellectual converse, he possessed, in a high degree, the happy talent of drawing out his guests, and bringing their several talents and acquirements into requisition, for their mutual entertainment. The visitors of his house, hence, never felt the pains of *ennui;* and while he laid no restriction upon their engaging in games of chance or skill, the customary resource of vacant minds in country residences, it is said that no desire for amusements of this description was felt by his occasional inmates for the last twenty years of his life.

"The success which attended Mr. Wadsworth's career was due, in a great degree, to his regularity and skill, as a man of business. We have seen how actively he was employed, for many years, in bringing his property into a productive state. In his later years, he, without noise or apparent effort, directed the cultivation of the large farm retained in his own hands, superintended the numerous tracts let upon shares, and gave due attention to his interests in the leases for long terms of years; while he, at the same time, fulfilled with punctilious exactitude the duties of agent for several considerable estates. All this was effected with so much ease and method, that, to his visitors, he had the air of being entirely at leisure.

"Habits of this description gave him, during the winter and times unfavorable for travelling, the command of many hours in each day. These were employed by him in reading and literary correspondence. His favorite study was political economy; but he did not fail to keep himself informed of the progress of all the physical

sciences. He, in fact, furnished a singular instance of a person who had closed his elementary education, and entered into a life of great activity, at a period when the very names of chemistry, geology, and mineralogy, were yet unknown in our colleges; and had, notwithstanding, and at a distance from all the usual facilities, contrived to acquire as much of them as is considered necessary as an accomplishment, in our modern schemes of instruction.

"The interest he took in these pursuits, was enhanced by the clear view which he took of their power of being usefully applied to agriculture; and while, upon his own lands, the necessity of renovating the soil appeared in a perspective too remote to affect his descendants for several generations, he, notwithstanding, felt a generous impulse to bring the aid of science to those less fortunately situated. Selected tracts on scientific subjects in general, and others specially devoted to the application of science to agriculture, were, for this purpose, printed at his expense, for gratuitous distribution. In many cases the fact of his intervention in these publications, remained unknown, except to himself and the editors. Other articles of less extent he caused to be inserted, at his expense, not only in agricultural periodicals, but also in the newspapers circulating among the farmers of the state."

Reading Lesson CCV.

Life of James Wadsworth, continued.

"The utility of these efforts was evidently limited by the want of education among the persons for whose benefit they were intended; and a knowledge of this fact led to the direction of his attention to the extension and improvement of the school system of the state. The subject of the education of the body of the people, thus became the absorbing interest of his later years. In his reflections on this subject, he formed the conclusion that the important point was to form a taste for reading, and provide suitable books; and it was among his projects to give to subjects of instruction the popular form of the newspaper. To carry this into effect would have required more time than he could have personally devoted to it; and he found no one equally enthusiastic in the

cause with himself. Failing in this, he suggested the plan of the school-district libraries; and, when this had received the sanction of the state legislature, his influence was exerted in procuring the printing of an annual series of suitable works, and his taste consulted in the choice of a competent editor. To insure the publication of the series thus selected, he became responsible for the sums directed by the law to be raised in school districts in his own neighborhood—of which in most cases a part, and in some the whole, became an actual contribution to the cause of education from his private purse. He had thus the consciousness of bestowing a charity of the best description, and in the most unostentatious manner; for, so far as the publishers or the public could learn, the funds appeared to be raised in the usual manner, by subscription or assessment among the inhabitants of the district.

"His influence was more directly and openly exerted in urging the enactment of a law by which the controller of the state of New York was authorized to purchase, and send to every school district in the state, a copy of Hall's 'Lectures on Teaching.' Finally, aware of the want of text-books specially adapted to the use of the common schools, he placed in trust a sum sufficient to call the best talents into competition, to be paid to the authors of the best elementary treatises on certain specified subjects. After much delay, on the part of the very distinguished gentlemen who were invested with the power of awarding the prize, the money was paid to the successful candidates; but, by this time, the want he had desired to supply had been satisfied by individual enterprise, and the successful treatises have not been published. In the selection of his umpires, Mr. Wadsworth had regard to a character beyond suspicion of improper influence, and intelligence of the highest order. It was not his fault that they undertook a duty which their important avocations as statesmen prevented them from performing for a long time, and then, it is believed, by deputy. Nor can we blame him if the works exhibited for competition were so inferior in quality, or the judgment in awarding the prizes so imperfect, that the authors of the preferred treatises have not yet been able to find a publisher bold enough to risk his capital on the faith of the award.

"His plan had embraced the publication, at his own cost, of the successful compositions. The necessity of such publication having been done away with by private enterprise, the fund he had set apart for this purpose was applied, by his directions, to the publication of a work drawn up by professor Nott and Mr. Emerson, entitled, 'The School and the Schoolmaster.'

"With views of the same description, he encouraged the access of lecturers on subjects of utility to his neighborhood; and the sums with which he eked out their remuneration from their auditors reached, in the aggregate, a large amount.

"In his efforts for the promotion of education and the dissemination of knowledge among the people of the state, Mr. Wadsworth studiously avoided publicity. He appears to have shrunk with instinctive modesty from any mention of his name as a public benefactor. Many of the facts which have just been stated, have been reached with difficulty; and it may be inferred that they are far from being a complete list of the benefits he conferred upon his fellow-men.*

"The correspondence of Mr. Wadsworth was necessarily voluminous, from the amount of the interests which he either possessed or represented. But, in the later years of his life, it took a more extended form; and to the details of mere business he added a series of communications on subjects of literature and science, in particular relation to his darling scheme of extending and improving the means of popular education. His letters are marked with the precision of the man of business and the pure diction of the scholar; and it is said that they were occasionally extended into well-digested essays on the subjects he had so much at heart. Of these, but one has seen the light, in a printed form. This was a letter on the subject of civilizing the Indians, which appeared in the newspapers of the day. The publication, however, took place without his knowledge; and, had he been consulted, he

* It may not be deemed irrelevant, here, to state the fact, known only to the publishers of the original American Journal of Education, and the compiler of the present work, then editor of that periodical, that when that work was established, in 1826, its existence was, for a time, maintained, to a great extent, by the personal liberality of Mr. Wadsworth and the friends whom he induced to coöperate with him.

would probably have refused his assent. The distinguished statesman to whom it was addressed, was, no doubt, of opinion that he had no right to lock up so valuable a communication from the public, on whom it was well calculated to produce a powerful impression, and that favorable to the interests of a race which, unless some powerful agency intervene, seems destined to destruction.

"It might have been expected that with such extensive concerns to manage, as a land agent and landlord, not to mention the great extent of his own farm, cultivation on a small scale could have created but little interest in his breast. But this was not so; for he delighted in directing the culture of his garden, and in propagating the finest descriptions of fruit adapted to the climate, although he eschewed the costly luxury of the forcing-house.

"One peculiarity marks and distinguishes his possessions not only from those of small proprietors, but from those of the greater part of large landholders. This is, the manner in which they are studded with trees, isolated and in clumps, or surrounded and divided by belts. In this respect, their aspect is that of the most admired portions of England, with this difference in their favor—that the trees are not planted by the hand of man, but continue to exhibit the grandeur of form and dimensions which they had acquired in the primeval forest. In England, according to his own statement, he learned to love trees, ere it was too late to prevent their entire destruction on his own domains, by the unsparing axe of the pioneer of cultivation. He, moreover, was taught that a time is finally reached, in the progress of population, when timber is of more value than any other product, even of the most fertile arable soils. With this love of the beauty of trees as a mere object of sight, and sense of their prospective value, he willingly encountered the prejudice which represents them as injuring the meadows, whether for the scythe or for pasture, by their shade. To his surprise, he found no diminution in the product of hay in his sheltered savannah, while to his stock, in the summer of our climate, the umbrageous shelter proved of incalculable benefit. More particularly his rich alluvial land, extended in the form of a peninsula from a narrow isthmus, has been protected from encroachment and from the wash of the river, by the native belt of wood which surrounds it.

"Few as are the events which mark epochs in the quiet and successfully industrious life of Mr. Wadsworth, it would be possible to dilate, at great length, upon these and other points in which his example and experience might be of great value to the proprietor and cultivator of land. We have, however, already exceeded the limits to which we are confined, and must hasten to a conclusion.

"In 1843, Mr. Wadsworth became sensible of a decline in his health. His disorder soon exhibited symptoms which demonstrated its probably incurable nature. The certainty of his dissolution, at no distant day, became apparent to him; and although he yielded to the wishes of his friends and children, by trying a change of scene and air, he was himself aware how fruitless must be the attempt. The slow and gradual approach of death he awaited with equanimity and fortitude; and, although he no longer manifested his accustomed interest in his favorite active pursuits, his intercourse with his friends was not devoid of its usual cheerfulness, which was damped rather by their anxieties than by his own. Returning to his residence at Geneseo, he there died on the 7th of June, 1844."

Reading Lesson CCVI.

DAVID HOSACK, M.D. and LLD.,

"Eminent as a physician, and as a lecturer in several departments of his profession, was born in the city of New York, on the 31st of August, 1769. After receiving his preparatory classical education, first, in the school of the Rev. Dr. McWhorter, at Newark, in New Jersey, and, next, in that of Dr. Peter Wilson, at Hackensack, in the same state, he became a student of Columbia college, in his native city, in the year 1786. There he continued during the space of two years and a half, when he went to Princeton college, where he was graduated A.B., in 1789.

"On his return to New York, he studied medicine, under the direction of Dr. Richard Bayley. He subsequently attended the medical lectures in the University of Pennsylvania, in Philadelphia. The degree of M.D. was conferred upon him, by this institution, in 1791.

"Dr. Hosack commenced the practice of his profession at Alexandria, in the District of Columbia; but quitted that place, about a year afterwards,—although he had made

a very favorable impression on its inhabitants,—with the design of fixing his residence in the city of New York.

"Not long, however, after his arrival there, he changed his plans, and went to Europe, to prosecute his medical studies more extensively and profitably, than it was, at that period, supposed could be done in his own country. He heard lectures, and attended the hospitals, at Edinburgh and London; and he did not confine his attention exclusively to subjects strictly professional. His attainments in natural history, and especially in botany, led to his being elected a member of the Linnæan society.

"A paper was also presented by him to the Royal society, the purpose of which was, to show that the eye adapts itself to view objects at different distances, by means of the external muscles. This paper was published in the transactions of the society, in 1794.

"Dr. Hosack returned to New York, in the course of the year just mentioned, and immediately entered on the duties of his profession. Through his own merits, as well as the patronage of Dr. Samuel Bard, then an eminent practitioner of medicine, who took him into partnership, his reputation rapidly grew; and when Dr. Bard, in 1800, retired to his country-seat at Hyde-Park on the banks of the Hudson, Dr. Hosack was left in the possession of an extensive and valuable practice. Such a practice too, he continued to enjoy until he himself, thirty years afterwards, retired to the same Hyde-Park, which he had purchased.

"Dr. Hosack was equally distinguished as a professor or lecturer, and as a practitioner of medicine. His first professorship was that of botany, in Columbia college; to which he was appointed in 1795, the year following that in which he returned from Europe. In 1797, he became professor of materia medica, as well as of botany. On the establishment of the college of physicians and surgeons of the state of New York, he was chosen, by the regents, to one of the chairs of that institution.

"On the organization of the Rutgers medical college, in 1826, he became professor of the theory and practice of physic in that institution, and remained such until its operations were suspended, in 1830, by the action of the state legislature in behalf of the medical school under the superintendence of the regents of the university.

"As an author, Dr. Hosack is also entitled to public notice. His medical writings consist of a number of essays or discourses,—for the most part inserted in the medical journal,—which were collected and published by him, in three volumes octavo, under the title of Medical Essays, together with a System of Practical Nosology.

"His other writings are a discourse on horticulture, one on temperance, biographical notices of Dr. Rush and Dr. Wistar, and an elaborate memoir of De Witt Clinton.

"Dr. Hosack was a fellow of the Linnæan society of London, and of the Royal society of London, of the Royal society of Edinburgh, and also a member of the American philosophical society.

"He died of an attack of apoplexy, on the 23d of December, 1825, in the sixty-seventh year of his age."

Reading Lesson CCVII.

DE WITT CLINTON,

"Was born, March 2d, 1769, at Little Britain, in Orange county, New York. His family was of English origin. His father served, with great distinction, during the revolutionary war, and became a major-general in the army of the United States. His mother's original name was De Witt: she was a member of the distinguished Dutch family of that name; her parents having emigrated to America.

"Mr. Clinton was educated at Columbia college, where he highly distinguished himself. He then commenced reading law with the late honorable Samuel Jones, and, in due time, was admitted to the bar. But before he was able to acquire any practice of importance, he was appointed private secretary to his uncle, George Clinton, and continued in this office until the end of his relative's administration, in 1785.

"In the interim, he had been chosen secretary to the board of regents of the university, and to the board of fortifications of New York.

"In 1797, Mr. Clinton was elected a member of the legislature of New York, at the time when the two great parties which have since divided the country, were organized, and embraced the republican or democratic side.

"In 1800, he was chosen by 'the council of appoint-

nent,' of which body he was a member, to support their ause, in a controversy between them and governor Jay. This was finally settled by a convention, which met at Albany, in 1801, when the constitution of New York was nodified in various ways.

" The same year, he was chosen a member of the senate f the Union, in order to supply the vacancy occasioned y the resignation of general Armstrong, and continued a nember of that body for two sessions. After that period, e was chosen mayor of New York, and remained in this ituation, with the intermission of but two years, until 815.

" In 1817, he was elected, almost unanimously, gover- or of the state; the two great parties having combined or the purpose of raising him to that dignity,—so high vas the general sense of his talents and services.

" After his reëlection, great resistance, on the part of is political opponents, was made to his measures; but, ortunately, the canal scheme, of which Mr. Clinton was ne of the prime movers and most efficient advocates, had een so firmly established, that it was secure from attack.

" In 1822, he declined offering himself again as a can- idate, and retired into private life."

Reading Lesson CCVIII.

Life of De Witt Clinton, continued.

"In 1810, Mr. Clinton had been appointed, by the sen- te of his state, one of the board of canal commissioners; ut his political opponents, who were, at that time, great- y predominant in the legislature, succeeded in depriving im of his office.

" This act, however, occasioned a complete reäction of he public feeling towards him. His friends did not suf- er the opportunity to escape, but again brought him for- vard, as a candidate for the office of governor, and suc- eeded in securing his election. In 1826, he was again lected; but he died before the term was completed.

" His decease was in consequence of a catarrhal affec- ion of the throat and chest, which, being neglected, oc- asioned a fatal disease of the heart. He expired almost nstantaneously, whilst sitting in his library, after dinner, February 11th, 1828.

"The next day, business was suspended in Albany. The public testimonials of respect paid to his memory, throughout the state and the Union, were almost numberless. His body was interred with every honor.

"In person, Mr. Clinton was tall, finely proportioned, and of a commanding aspect. In his domestic and social relations, he was cheerful and kind; in his friendships, warm and sincere; and, in his moral character, unexceptionable. His manners were rather distant and reserved, in consequence of long habits of abstraction, and a natural diffidence, of which he never could divest himself.

"Mr. Clinton was an early riser, and extremely laborious; every moment which he could spare from his necessary duties, being devoted to the cultivation of his mind. No one was ever more ambitious of a reputation for science and literature. In some of the physical sciences he was especially versed; and his proficiency, as a classical and belles-lettres scholar, was very considerable. He was a member of a large part of the literary and scientific institutions of the United States, and an honorary member of many of the learned societies of Great Britain and the continent of Europe.

"His productions are numerous, and consist of his speeches in the state legislature and in the senate of the Union; his speeches and messages as governor; his discourses before various literary, philosophical, and benevolent institutions; his addresses to the army, during the late war; his communications concerning the canal; and his judicial opinions; besides various fugitive pieces.

"As a public character, he is entitled to lasting honor. His national services were of the greatest importance; the Erie canal, especially, although his title to the merit of being the originator of the project may be disputed, will always remain a monument of his patriotism and perseverance. He was, also, a promoter and benefactor of many religious and charitable institutions.

"In the performance of judicial duties which he was called upon to discharge whilst mayor, and as a member of the 'court of errors,'—the highest judicial tribunal of New York,—his learning and ability have received unqualified encomium.

"As a magistrate, he was firm, vigilant, dignified, and of incorruptible integrity. From none of his official sta-

tions did he derive any pecuniary benefit; though he had often opportunities of acquiring affluence. As an orator, he was forcible and manly, though not very graceful."

Reading Lesson CCIX.

CADWALLADER D. COLDEN,

"Was the grandson of lieutenant-governor Colden, and son of David Colden,—a gentleman who was distinguished for his attainments in mathematics and natural philosophy, as well as his correspondence with Dr. Benjamin Franklin.

"The subject of our present sketch was born at Springhill, near Flushing, in Queen's county, Long Island, on the 4th of April, 1769, and was educated, in part, at home, by a private tutor. He went to school, however, at the town of Jamaica, not many miles distant.

"In the spring of 1784, he embarked with his father for England, where he attended a classical school near London, until the autumn of 1785, when he returned to New York. He then commenced the study of law, in that city; but his family affairs making it necessary for him to visit the British province of New Brunswick, he pursued his legal studies there, for some time, and completed them, on coming back to the state of New York in 1789, at Kinderhook, on the Hudson river.

"Mr. Colden was admitted an attorney, in January, 1791, and received from governor George Clinton a commission as a public notary. He had practised his profession in the city of New York for a short period only, when he removed to Poughkeepsie, in Dutchess county. There his success was so decided as to encourage him to resume his station at the New-York bar, in 1796.

"About this time, he received the appointment of district attorney; and, by his zeal, industry, and talents, soon laid the foundation of his subsequent eminence as a lawyer.

"His intense application to business, however, so impaired his health, in the course of a few years, that his friends became seriously alarmed on his account; and it was judged expedient that he should go on a journey, with a view to its restoration. He embarked, accordingly, for France, in the spring of 1803, and spent about eighteen

months in that country and other parts of the continent of Europe.

"Returning from abroad, with his constitution reïnvigorated by this excursion, he not only found no difficulty in recovering the business which he had before his departure from home, but rapidly extended it. His success was, indeed, flattering in the extreme; and, it was not many years before his standing, as a commercial lawyer, was at the head of his profession; while, in every other respect, he was ranked among the first.

"On the occurrence of the war with Great Britain, in 1812, although it is probable that his practice at the bar was more lucrative than that of any other member of his profession in the state, Mr. Colden relinquished a large portion of it, that he might attend to military duties. He was colonel of a regiment of volunteers, and contributed his aid, efficiently, in the erection of the fortifications which were deemed necessary for the defence of the city of New York.

"Mr. Colden was elected a member of the House of Assembly, in 1818; and, during the same year, succeeded Mr. De Witt Clinton, as mayor of the city. As such, he presided in the municipal court, and, by his ability, dignity, and impartiality as a judge, fully sustained the high reputation which that court had obtained.

"In 1822, he was elected to congress; and, in 1824, to the senate of his own state. He was a distinguished and useful member of these bodies; his opinions being always listened to with great respect, and especially so on questions requiring, for their proper decision, extensive legal attainments.

"In addition to the professional and other duties already mentioned, which Mr. Colden was called upon to perform, he found leisure to bestow much attention on devising the means of promoting, in various ways, the improvement and well-being of the community to which he belonged. The intellectual and moral education of youth was, with him, a favorite object; and the public schools in New York, accordingly, ranked him among their most active and efficient founders and patrons. He took a prominent part in digesting a proper system for the reformation of juvenile delinquents, and was subsequently the president of the society incorporated for this impor-

tant purpose. For many years he was one of the governors of the New-York hospital."

Reading Lesson CCX.

Life of Cadwallader D. Colden, continued.

"Mr. Colden was one of the earliest and most zealous promoters of the system of 'internal improvement' in the state of New York. His name is recorded among those subscribed to the celebrated memorial on the subject, bearing date in February, 1816; and he was a member of the committee of correspondence appointed by the great meeting held in the city of New York, in that year, relating to it. In the history of the Erie canal, which was published by order of the state legislature, we find his name often recorded in connection with measures conducive to the accomplishment of that important work. After its completion, he wrote, as is well known, the memoir concerning it which was published by the common council of the city.

"Subsequently to his withdrawal from the senate, in 1827, he devoted much of his time to the superintending of the construction of the Morris canal, connecting the waters of the Delaware river with the bay of New York.

"His life of his friend, Robert Fulton, is his chief literary production. It was read by him before the New-York literary and philosophical society, and published by that association, with the laudable design of erecting some memorial in honor of that eminent and successful experimental philosopher.

"Mr. Colden contemplated the publication of the writings of lieutenant-governor Cadwallader Colden, in a number of volumes, with an original memoir of his life, drawn up from materials in his possession; but he made only partial advances in the undertaking.

"His death, from dropsy in the chest, took place on the 7th of February, 1834, in Jersey city, where he had resided for several years.

"What has been said by Mr. Colden of Fulton, may, with entire propriety, be applied to himself:—'In all his domestic and social relations, he was generous, liberal, and affectionate. He knew of no use for money, but as it was subservient for charity, hospitality, and the sciences.'

"Besides the time and money which he spent in promoting the interests of his fellow-citizens, in the various modes already mentioned, it may be stated, to his great credit, that he was ever solicitous to afford encouragement to the younger members of his profession, to genius in the arts and sciences, and, in short, to all who were actuated by commendable motives. To such he liberally imparted his counsels, his hospitalities, and even, if requisite, pecuniary aid. And there was no advocate at the bar more prompt to lend his professional services, without reward, when the occasion called for it, in defence of the poor and unfortunate."

Reading Lesson CCXI.

MRS. FRANCES P. LUPTON,

"A woman of very extraordinary attainments, was the daughter of Dr. Platt Townsend, formerly of Cedar Swamp, Long Island, and was married early to Lancaster Lupton, Esq.,—a lawyer of respectable attainments, who died, a few years after his marriage, leaving to his widow the care of an infant daughter, who likewise died, —ere she completed her sixteenth year.

"On the decease of her husband, Mrs. Lupton devoted herself to the acquisition of knowledge, both as a source of rational delight, and for the improvement of her child. And, having tasted the pleasures of science, she continued the pursuit, after the object which first urged her forward, had been taken away by death.

"She acquired a general knowledge of natural history, particularly of botany, of which she was very fond, and, in which she made great proficiency. She spoke the French language with facility, and was also well versed in its literature. She read Spanish and Italian with ease, and had so far mastered Hebrew, as to have perused the Old Testament in that language. She was, moreover, learned in the polite literature of her own country; and her knowledge of ancient history was distinguished for its accuracy and extent. Her taste and skill in the fine arts, excited universal approbation.

"She was an honorary member of the National Academy of Design, and executed, during her leisure, many pieces in painting and sculpture, which elicited high com-

mendation from the most competent judges. Among all her various pursuits, she neither overlooked nor despised the ordinary avocations of her sex.

"Her productions in embroidery, needle-work, dress, and fancy articles, would of themselves, on account of their execution, have justly entitled her to the praise of uncommon industry. In short, she attempted nothing in which she did not excel; and in an industrious and well-spent life, there were but few things which she did not attempt. She spent much time, however, in society, and mingled in its enjoyments with alacrity and pleasure. In a word, she was one of those rare and highly gifted females, whose endowments are not only an ornament to her sex, but to human nature. In all the relations of wife, mother, relative, and friend, she was all that duty required, or that affection could desire."

Reading Lesson CCXII.

JOHN MITCHELL MASON, D.D.,

"An eminent theologian and pulpit orator, was born in the city of New York, March 19th, 1770. He entered Columbia college, in that city, and was graduated in May, 1789, with the reputation he ever afterwards sustained, of a thorough classical scholar.

"Under his father, a learned and respectable clergyman of the Presbyterian denomination, he then prepared himself for the sacred ministry, until the year 1791, when he left his native country, in order to complete his education at the university of Edinburgh. Here he attended the most celebrated courses of lectures connected with divinity, and formed valuable and distinguished acquaintance. In the theological societies, he made himself conspicuous by the vigor of his understanding, the energy of his elocution, and the rigor of his doctrines.

"Towards the end of the year 1792, he was obliged to return to New York, by the death of his father, whom he soon succeeded in the Scotch presbyterian church in Cedar street.

"In 1800, he conceived the idea of a public theological seminary, to be established by the authority, and to continue under the superintendence of the general synod of the 'associate reformed church.' The plan which he

digested, was carried into operation, by his own agency and influence, in 1801.

"The synod appointed him their professor; and, with their sanction, he visited Europe, for the purpose of procuring a library. After his return, he zealously discharged the duties of his office, until he was constrained to leave it, by the decline of his health.

"In 1810, he dissolved his pastoral relation with the Cedar-street church, and formed a new congregation, with which he took possession of the Murray-street church, when it was opened in 1812.

"In 1811, he accepted the appointment of provost of Columbia college—a station which he filled for five years. The variety and severity of his labors, at length affected his health so seriously that he resigned his provostship, and, in 1816, repaired to Europe to recruit his debilitated frame. He returned towards the end of 1817, in better condition, and preached and taught, again, with characteristic force and success. But weakness and exhaustion soon recurred, in consequence of two paralytic attacks in 1819.

"In 1821, however, he undertook the charge of Dickinson college, in Pennsylvania; and, in this, his strength again failed. In the autumn of 1824, he returned to New York, where he lingered, the shadow of what he had been, until the period of his death, the last week of 1829, in the sixtieth year of his age.

"Dr. Mason possessed uncommon powers, as a preacher and controversialist, acquired great celebrity for erudition and zeal as a teacher, and deserved esteem for his domestic virtues.

"The principal works of Dr. Mason, besides his polemical writings, consist of sermons, essays, orations, and reviews, published at different times. His funeral discourse on general Alexander Hamilton, is a noble specimen of his ability, in that department of composition."

Reading Lesson CCXIII.

ROBERT ADRAIN, LL.D.,

"Was born on the 30th of September, 1775, at Carrickfergus, in Ireland. He was remarkable, even in child-

hood, for the quickness of his intellect, and for his rapid proficiency in learning.

"His education at school, however, was discontinued at the age of fifteen, in consequence of the death of his parents. Young as he was, he was obliged, in order to gain a livelihood, to open a school.

"At Ballycarry, while teaching there, he happened, one day, to meet, in an old book on arithmetic, with some of the signs used in algebra. So strong a curiosity was excited in him to know their meaning, that he gave himself no rest until it was gratified; and, by his own unaided efforts, he soon made himself acquainted with the elements of algebraical science.

"At the commencement of the civil war, or rebellion, of 1798, Mr. Adrain was engaged in the occupation of a private tutor, in the family of a Mr. Mortimer, an officer under the government. This engagement, however, was abruptly terminated in consequence of Mr. Adrain taking an active part with the insurgents. His employer, although previously on the most intimate and kindly terms with him, was so much exasperated, at this step, as to offer a reward of £50 for his apprehension.

"An action soon afterwards took place between the hostile parties, in which Mr. Mortimer was mortally wounded, and Mr. Adrain, who held the rank of captain in his own company, received a wound in the back, whether accidentally or intentionally, from one of his own men. The wound was so severe that Mr. Adrain was not expected to recover. It was reported, indeed, through the country, that he was actually dead: a circumstance which facilitated his escape from pursuit, and, perhaps, enabled him, —the cause of his country having become manifestly hopeless,—to make his way to America in safety.

"He landed at New York during the prevalence of the yellow fever; and, being told, on the morning following his arrival, that the bed he had slept on was one in which a man had died of the fever, he hastened to leave the city, and to seek employment elsewhere, as a teacher.

"At Princeton, in New Jersey, he obtained an appointment in the academy of that place, and continued there two or three years, when he removed to York, in Pennsylvania, and became principal of the York county academy.

"He now became a contributor to the Mathematical

Correspondent, edited by Mr. George Baron, and published in the city of New York. The different problems proposed in this work, were all of them solved by him; and his solutions were remarkable for their simplicity, ingenuity, and elegance.

"In 1805, Mr. Adrain took charge of the academy at Reading, in Pennsylvania. During his residence at this place, he edited a periodical work entitled the Analyst, intended as a successor to the Mathematical Correspondent, which had, for some time, ceased to be published."

Reading Lesson CCXIV.

Life of Dr. Adrain, continued.

"Mr. Adrain was, at length, extensively known as a skilful mathematician; and, in the year 1810, he was appointed to fill the professorship of mathematics and natural philosophy in Queen's (now Rutgers) college, at New Brunswick, in New Jersey. Honors of different kinds were now awarded him. Shortly after removing to New Brunswick, the degree of LL.D. was conferred upon him; in 1812, he was elected a member of the American philosophical society; and, in the following year, a member of the American academy of arts and sciences.

"About this period, he published an edition of Hutton's Course of Mathematics, which was improved in its arrangement, and enriched with various notes and additions.

"In the summer of the year 1813, Dr. Adrain was chosen professor of mathematics and natural philosophy in Columbia college, in the city of New York, in the place of Dr. John Kemp, who had died, a few months previously; and, when a few years afterwards, it was deemed expedient, by the trustees of the college, to divide the professorship which he held, into the two distinct professorships of mathematics, and of natural philosophy, he continued in charge of the former of these.

"After having resided in New York thirteen years, he was induced by the state of his wife's health, which required the air of the country, to resign his professorship, and to accept an appointment to the same post which he had once before occupied at New Brunswick, where,

however, he remained only until 1827, when he accepted the office of professor of mathematics, in the university of Pennsylvania. In this situation he continued till the year 1834.

"On his resignation of his professorship, in that year, he retired, at first, to New Brunswick; but, after a short period, unable to overcome his propensity to communicate knowledge to others, he once more went to the city of New York, and engaged in the business of instruction, both in his own apartments, and in the grammar-school connected with Columbia college.

"About three years before his death, he was induced, by the persuasion of his family, to quit this field of his labors, and once more to retire to New Brunswick. His death took place on the 10th of August, 1843.

"The period of Dr. Adrain's first residence in New York, was one, with him, of much intellectual activity. In the early part of it, a paper of his appeared in the transactions of the American philosophical society, on the figure and magnitude of the earth, which added considerably to his reputation, and is, without doubt, the most important of his productions. He also made contributions on mathematical subjects to several periodicals, and edited, during the latter portion of the period in question, the Mathematical Diary, a work of the same general character as the Analyst.

"Dr. Adrain left behind him a number of manuscripts, which, like his published works, have been pronounced, by a competent judge, to exhibit a very high order of ability. Great ingenuity, as well as a remarkable degree of simplicity and clearness, characterized every thing that he wrote. It may be added that his acquirements were by no means confined to the department of science in which he excelled. He was a good classical scholar, was extensively acquainted with general literature, and possessed no little skill and power in conversation."

Reading Lesson CCXV.

MAJOR-GENERAL JACOB BROWN.

"Was born in Bucks county, Pennsylvania,* where his

* The greater part of general Brown's life was spent, however, in the state of New York.

ancestors, for several generations, had been members of the society of Friends. His father was a respectable farmer, who, however, not content with the moderate income which his occupation afforded him, embarked in commercial enterprises, which, proving unsuccessful, deprived him entirely of his property.

"When this happened, young Brown, though only about sixteen years old, applied himself manfully to the task of making his own way in the world. From eighteen to twenty-one years of age, he taught a school at Crosswicks in New Jersey; devoting, during the same period, his leisure time, most assiduously, to the improvement of his mind.

"He next spent two years in the neighborhood of Cincinnati, being employed in surveying the public lands. Going to the city of New York, in 1798, he, once more, but for a few months only, taught a public school. There, too, he commenced the study of law, but soon abandoned it, not finding it congenial with his tastes.

"Having purchased some land in that part of the state of New York, which is now embraced within the limits of Jefferson county, near lake Ontario and the river St. Lawrence, he established himself upon it, in 1799, while wholly uncultivated. The new settlement made rapid progress; and general Brown distinguished himself, as an enlightened and practical cultivator, as well as by the ability and energy with which he prosecuted the measures best adapted to promote the improvement of the country.

"In 1809, he was appointed to the command of a regiment of militia, and, in 1811, promoted to the rank of a brigadier-general. At the beginning of the war with Great Britain, in June, 1812, general Brown was entrusted with the command of a brigade in the first detachment of New-York militia, which was called into the service of the United States, and was charged with the defence of the frontier from Oswego to lake St. Francis, a distance of nearly two hundred miles.

"He had speedily an opportunity of distinguishing himself by his bravery and skill in the defence of Ogdensburg, on the 4th of October. With a force of less than four hundred men, he succeeded in repelling the attack of eight hundred well-appointed British troops.

"After the expiration of his term of service, he returned

to his residence, at Brownville. The government, however, highly appreciating the military qualifications of general Brown, and unwilling to lose his services, even for a season, tendered to him the appointment of a colonel in the regular army,—an offer declined by him, from an unwillingness to fall from the rank which he already held.

"In the spring of the year 1813, the important post of Sackett's harbor, having been left with only four hundred troops for its defence, was threatened by the enemy. Colonel Backus, who commanded this force, and who had been merely a few days on the ground, and was unacquainted with the neighboring localities, sent to general Brown, residing, as he did, not farther than eight miles from Sackett's harbor, to invite him to come with as large body of the militia as he could collect, and take command of the post.

"Brown hesitated not a moment in complying. The threatened attack was made, and defeated by the resolute valor of the Americans, disposed and directed by their leader, with admirable judgment and skill."

Reading Lesson CCXVI.

Life of general Brown, continued.

"The government, a few months afterwards, appointed general Brown a brigadier in the United States army. He partook in the unsuccessful expedition, in the autumn of this year, 1813, down the St. Lawrence, against Montreal, and, at French creek, repulsed, with his own brigade, a considerable force sent from Kingston to impede his progress.

"He was the officer of the day, on passing the British fort of Prescott; and the safety of the army is to be attributed, on that occasion, in a great measure, to his able conduct. During the whole course of the expedition, indeed, he was distinguished for the ability with which he performed the duties assigned to him.

"Soon after the retreat of the troops from Canada, in November, general Brown was invested with the chief command of them, by the sickness of general Wilkinson, and the absence, of the other officers, his seniors; and, early in the year 1814, he was promoted to the rank of a

major-general. Through his exertions and those of a number of efficient officers, under his orders, the spirits of the troops were, in the course of the following winter, in a remarkable degree revived, and their discipline also, exceedingly improved.

"The enemy having, in the meantime, obtained possession of fort Niagara, and being in considerable force on the opposite shore, a determination was once more formed to remove the principal seat of the war to that frontier. In the spring of 1814, general Brown, accordingly, was directed to march with his division from French Mills, by the way of Sackett's harbor, to Buffalo, and to take the chief command of the expedition intended to invade Canada."

The following brief recapitulation of the events of the campaign, as recorded in the historical part of this volume, will enable the reader to trace, in connection, the incidents of general Brown's life.

"Stopping no longer at Buffalo, than was requisite for making the necessary preparations, he led his troops across the Niagara river, and reduced fort Erie. On the 5th of July, he fought the battle of Chippewa; and, on the 25th of the same month, another in the immediate vicinity of the Falls; in both of which he was victorious against superior numbers.

"In the last of these actions, he was twice severely wounded, but did not quit the field until the victory was completed, although so enfeebled from loss of blood, as to require to be supported on his horse.

"After recovering from his wounds, we find him within the walls of fort Erie, to which the American army had retired, on the British receiving a preponderating reïnforcement. The latter, in his absence, had made an ineffectual attempt to carry the fort by storm; but general Brown, not satisfied with acting on the defensive, made a sortie on the 17th of September, the day before the fire from the enemy's batteries was to commence. The besiegers were driven from their position; and their works were destroyed or rendered unserviceable; and this was accomplished, too, with a force of two thousand against nearly four thousand men.

"An end, soon after this, was put to the war, by the treaty of Ghent; and general Brown, who remained on

the peace establishment of the army, was appointed to the command of the northern military division. In 1821, he became commander-in-chief; from which time, till his death, on the 24th of February, 1828, he resided at Washington city. The disease of which he died, is said to have been a consequence of another contracted by him at fort Erie, during the war, and from the effects of which he had never since been wholly exempted.

"General Brown possessed, in an eminent degree, the various qualifications requisite for being a successful military chief. To great personal bravery, he united a moral courage, which on no emergency was found to waver; and, to an excellent judgment in determining the objects it was in his power to accomplish with the means at his disposal, and skill in combining his measures, he added great firmness and decision of character, an untiring activity, and the faculty of gaining the respect and confidence of those with whom he had intercourse, and especially of all subjected to his authority. Nothing, in short, seems to have been wanting, to give him a place in the foremost rank of military commanders, excepting a longer period, and a wider field, of action."

Reading Lesson CCXVII.

JESSE BUEL,

"Was born at Coventry, in the state of Connecticut,* on the 4th of January, 1778. When twelve years of age, his father removed from Coventry to Rutland, in Vermont, where, two years afterwards, he was, at his own urgent desire, apprenticed to the printing business.

"When he had attained his eighteenth year, he purchased the unexpired three years of his term of service, and worked, for some time, as a journeyman, first in the city of New York, and, subsequently, at Waterford and Lansingburg.

"In 1797, he commenced the publication of a political newspaper, at Troy. In September, 1801, he married, and removed to Poughkeepsie. The newspaper which

* The principal part of his life was occupied, however, in connection with the press, and, subsequently, the business of agriculture, in the state of New York.

he there published proving an unsuccessful speculation, he found himself reduced to utter bankruptcy.

"His next residence was Kingston, at which place he again established a weekly paper, and continued from 1803 to 1813; applying himself, with great diligence, to his occupation. During a part of this period, he sustained, with reputation, the office of judge, in the Ulster county court; and he not only retrieved his losses, but even acquired considerable property.

"He removed, in 1813, to Albany, by the persuasion of judge Spencer and other friends, to undertake the editorship of the Argus, and, in the following year, was appointed state printer. This office he held until 1820, when he sold his interest in the Argus, as well as his printing establishment, and purchased a small farm not far from Albany.

"On this farm he resided during the last nineteen years of his life; his attention being almost exclusively directed to its improvement, and to the acquirement and diffusion of agricultural information. His very remarkable success in the accomplishment of these objects, has entitled him to a notice, in connection with the progress of agriculture in the state of New York.

"'By manuring, by draining, by good tillage, by alternating crops, by root culture, and by the substitution of fallow crops for naked fallows,' he succeeded in transforming a barren tract into a productive estate, which became every year more valuable.

"After satisfying himself, by actual experiment, of the advantages of his system of agriculture, he grew desirous of making it as extensively known as possible, and, for this purpose, commenced in 1834, under the auspices of the New-York state agricultural society, the publication of the Cultivator, a monthly periodical, devoted to agricultural and horticultural subjects; which has, in fact, been very instrumental in exciting a spirit of improvement among farmers, through a wide extent of country.

"Besides numerous articles contributed by Mr. Buel to the columns of the Cultivator, he was the author of the Farmer's Companion, a work 'containing, within a small compass, the embodied results of his agricultural experience,' and a great number of addresses, delivered before agricultural and horticultural societies, in New York and

some of the neighboring states. Such societies, even in the remoter states, also vied with each other in enrolling his name in the list of their members.

"Nor were his merits acknowledged in his own country only. He was chosen a member of the Lower Canada agricultural society, of the London horticultural society, of the royal and central society of agriculture, at Paris, and also a member of the society of universal statistics, in the same city.

"Mr. Buel was, several times, a member of the New-York legislature. In 1836, he was an unsuccessful candidate for the office of governor of the state; and he was one of the regents of the university, at the time of his death,—which occurred, October 6th, 1839, at Danbury, in Connecticut, while on his way to deliver a lecture to an agricultural society at New Haven.

"He was without reproach in the various relations of private life, and was esteemed by all who knew him, for his integrity of character, and for the unaffected affability and simplicity of his deportment."

Reading Lesson CCXVIII.

WILLIAM LEET STONE,

"Was born at Esopus, in New York, in 1793, and was the son of the Rev. William Stone, a clergyman of the presbyterian church. When quite young, he removed to the western part of this state, where he used to assist his father, in the care of a farm, and where he acquired a fondness for agricultural pursuits, which he always retained.

"At the age of seventeen, he left home, and placed himself with colonel Prentiss, the proprietor of the Cooperstown Freeman's Journal, to learn the printing business; and, from this time, he began to write newspaper paragraphs.

"In 1813, he became an editor of the Herkimer American. He next edited a political newspaper at Hudson, then one at Albany, and then, again, one at Hartford, in Connecticut. At length, in the spring of 1821, Mr. Stone succeeded Mr. Zachariah Lewis in the editorship of the New-York Commercial Advertiser, becoming also one of its proprietors.

"He continued in charge of this journal, till his death, which took place at Saratoga Springs, August 15th, 1844.

"The attention of Mr. Stone, during his career as an editor, was very far from having been absorbed by the party contentions of the day. While residing at Hudson, he was the editor of a literary periodical, styled the Lounger, which was distinguished for sprightliness and frequent sallies of wit. Subsequently, he furnished a number of tales to the annuals; some of which, with additions, he republished in 1834, under the title of Tales and Sketches. Many of the characters and incidents in these are historical, being founded on traditions respecting the revolutionary or still earlier history of the United States, that he had listened to when a boy, from the lips of his father.

"In 1832, Mr. Stone published his Letters on Masonry and Anti-masonry; then followed his Mathias and his Impostures; and, in 1836, appeared a little work from his pen, styled Ups and Downs in the Life of a Gentleman,—intended as a satire on the follies of the day; although the main facts stated actually occurred in the life of an individual well known to him.

"It had been the purpose of Mr. Stone, from an early period of his life, to gather up and preserve what remained concerning the traits and character of the red men of America, and to connect with an account of these, an authentic history of the life and times of the prominent individuals who figured immediately before the revolution, more especially of Sir William Johnson.

"His main design was never executed; but the materials which he had collected, enabled him to prepare, and give to the public, several works on the general subject to which they had reference. These were the Memoirs of Joseph Brandt, a Memoir of Red-Jacket, the Life of Uncas, and Wyoming."

Reading Lesson CCXIX.

ROBERT C. SANDS,

"Distinguished as a writer, was born in the city of New York, May 11th, 1799. He was remarked, at an early age, for the quickness of his apprehension, and his facility in acquiring knowledge. When seven years old, he began

the study of the Latin language, and, when only thirteen, was admitted to the sophomore class of Columbia college. After graduating in 1815, he entered upon the study of the law, in the office of Mr. David B. Ogden, an eminent member of the New-York bar.

"In 1820, he commenced the practice of his profession. His first attempt, however, as an advocate, was unsuccessful, or, at least, did not approach the standard of excellence at which he had aimed; and he was, in consequence, so much discouraged, that he made no second attempt, of any moment, before a jury, and gradually withdrew himself from practising as an attorney.

"He thenceforth devoted himself exclusively to literary pursuits, and depended upon his pen for the means of support,—a support which, at length, was rendered less precarious by his becoming assistant-editor of the New-York Commercial Advertiser, with a liberal salary. He died from an attack of apoplexy, which he experienced, while engaged in composition, on the 17th of December, 1832, in the thirty-fourth year of his age.

"Although, while a student in college, Mr. Sands had performed, in a highly creditable manner, the exercises assigned to him, in every branch of the course of instruction, it was to classical and general literature that his attention was, in preference, directed; and his tastes for these studies were farther extended and improved, in the subsequent period of his career. He became, also, conversant with the French, Italian, Spanish, and Portuguese languages and literatures.

"A selection from his writings was published after his death, with a memoir of the author, prefixed by Mr. Gulian C. Verplanck, in two volumes, octavo. These contained an Historical notice of Hernan Cortes, conqueror of Mexico, which was translated into Spanish, and circulated extensively in Mexico, South America, and the Spanish West Indies;—an essay on Domestic Literature;—Isaac, a Type of the Redeemer;—a notice of the Caio-Gracco of Monti;—the Garden of Venus, from the Italian of Politian;—Yamoyden, a Tale of the Wars of King Philip, a poem in six cantos, the joint production of Mr. Sands and the Rev. James Wallis Eastburn;—and a number of minor pieces, concluding with the lines entitled The Dead of 1832, which ap-

peared in the Commercial Advertiser, only about a week before the death of Mr. Sands."

Reading Lesson CCXX.

HENRY INMAN,

"A distinguished painter, was born at Utica, in the state of New York, on the 20th of October, 1801. His talent for that department of art in which he became eminent, showed itself early; but he received no regular instruction in drawing, until his parents removed to the city of New York, about the year 1812.

"While under the care of an elementary teacher, he attracted the attention of Jarvis, the painter, who proposed to receive him as a pupil. This proposal decided his career: a warrant which had been obtained for him to enter the military academy at West Point as a cadet, was relinquished; and he entered upon a seven years' apprenticeship with Jarvis. He continued to serve out this whole term; and to this exact and regular discipline, much of his professional reputation was owing.

"Inman began his career as a portrait and miniature painter, in New York, and soon acquired a high reputation for the excellence and fidelity of his likenesses. He afterwards removed to Philadelphia, and then to a farm which he purchased in the neighborhood of Mount Holly, New Jersey; being constantly engaged in his profession, chiefly as a portrait painter. He returned, subsequently, to the city of New York, which was his place of residence, during the remaining years of his life.

"Remarkable for great rapidity as well as truth, in his portraits, he has left, amidst a large number of pictures, likenesses of many of his distinguished countrymen. Among these, his portraits of bishop White and chief-justice Marshall, may be mentioned as works of the highest order of merit. The genius of Inman was not restricted to that branch of art in which he was chiefly engaged; he enjoyed, also, a fine reputation for fancy and landscape painting, of which he has left some admirable specimens.

"The prosperity of Inman's professional career, was followed by pecuniary embarrassment, in which he became involved by unfortunate speculations, about the year 1836. His health, too, was, for many years, seriously

impaired; and he was prevented from executing the commission from congress to paint a picture for the capitol, for which he had chosen, as his subject, a scene illustrative of settlers in the west.

"In the summer of 1844, Inman visited England, for his health,—and, during his short visit, executed two of his most remarkable likenesses, the portraits of Wordsworth and of Chalmers. He returned without improvement of his health; and the malady which had, for many years, afflicted him, proved to be a disease of the heart, in one of its most aggravated forms, accompanied with frequent and severe paroxysms. During the intervals, he continued to practise his art with an unabated zeal and genius, until within a few weeks of his death, which took place early in January, 1846.

"Mr. Inman was gifted with brilliant conversational powers; and his private and professional career was distinguished by the feelings of a genuine artist, towards his fellow-artists, from whom he received an expression of their esteem by being chosen vice-president of the national academy of design. Immediately after his death, a public exhibition was given, in New York, of such of his paintings as could readily be collected, for the benefit of his widow and children. The extent of his works may be, in some measure, judged of from the fact, that this partial collection contained one hundred and twenty-seven paintings of various kinds."

As an artist, Mr. Inman was distinguished by the neatness of his drawing, and the suavity and amenity of his style. His pencil was most happily adapted to the mixed class of subjects, in which portrait is combined with landscape or scenic compositions. His family groups,—but particularly those of children,—owe much of their peculiar charm, to the kindred character which, in every instance, he has contrived to infuse into the picturesque accompaniments of his portraits. His productions all possess a pleasing simplicity and breadth, even when they are partially deficient in vigor, depth, and effect. The light "key," which he preferred in coloring, also imparts an attractive air of cheerfulness to his pictures, and seems peculiarly so in some of his charming delineations of female beauty and of childhood.

Reading Lesson CCXXI.

WILLIAM LEGGETT,

"Eminent as a miscellaneous writer, was born in the city of New York, in the year 1802, and, after the necessary preparatory studies, was sent to the college at Georgetown, in the district of Columbia, where he acquitted himself with credit, but did not stay long enough to take a degree. He was withdrawn from it, in consequence of the pecuniary embarrassments into which his father had fallen.

"In 1819, he accompanied his parents to the state of Illinois, of which they were among the early settlers. Having obtained a midshipman's warrant, he returned, in 1822, to the Atlantic states. He retired, however, from the navy, in 1826, on account of the arbitrary treatment to which he was subjected by the officer under whose command he was placed.

"Shortly after he left the service, he published a volume of occasional verses, under the title of Leisure Hours at Sea, and, about the same time, wrote for the Atlantic Souvenir, a tale, styled The Rifle, which attracted much attention, by the spirit and truth of its sketches of the manners and dialect of the western settlers, among whom, as has been mentioned, he had, for some years, resided.

"In November, 1828, he established, in the city of New York, a weekly literary paper, entitled the Critic, which was, at the end of six months, united with the Mirror, to which he then became a regular contributor. The tales which he wrote and inserted in the Critic, were subsequently collected and published, under the titles of Tales of a Country Schoolmaster and Sketches of the Sea. Most of them are possessed of a high order of merit, and claim for their author a prominent position among American novelists.

"In 1829, Mr. Leggett became joint-editor, with Mr. Bryant, of the New-York Evening Post, and in June, 1834, by the departure of the latter for Europe, was left sole editor, for a time, of that journal. In October of the following year, he was attacked by a severe and dangerous illness, which was occasioned by the intensity of his

labors, as a public writer, and which disabled him from all literary exertion, for the period of an entire year.

"Near the close of the year 1836, he judged it expedient to retire altogether from his connection with the Evening Post; and he then established a weekly political and literary paper, under the name of the Plain Dealer, in which he resumed, with great boldness and vigor, the discussion of the various important questions that had occupied him before his illness. It soon obtained a large and increasing circulation, but was discontinued, at the end of ten months, in consequence of the failure of its publishers. After this, the decline of his health prevented Mr. Leggett from engaging in any other literary enterprise.

"In April, 1840, he was appointed by the president, Mr. Van Buren, a diplomatic agent to the republic of Guatemala. And he was preparing to set out for that country, when he died at his residence in New Rochelle, about nineteen miles from New York, on the 29th of May.

"A collection of the Political Writings of William Leggett, selected and arranged, with a preface, by Theodore Sedgwick, Jr., in two volumes, was published shortly after his decease."

Reading Lesson CCXXII.

LUCRETIA MARIA DAVIDSON,

Was born at Plattsburg, on the 27th of December, 1808. "Her father, Dr. Oliver Davidson," says Miss Sedgwick, in her beautiful memoir of Lucretia, "was a lover of science, and a man of intellectual tastes. Her mother, Margaret Davidson, (born Miller,) was of a most respectable family, and received the best education her times afforded, at the school of the celebrated Scottish lady, Isabella Graham,—an institution in the city of New York, that had no rival in its day."

Such was the origin of one of the most brilliant ornaments in the intellectual diadem of our state, whose name has been wafted over the whole land, and beyond the ocean, as one of the most touching instances that the present century has produced, of the too frequent union of premature genius and early decline.

To the youth of New York, the names of Lucretia and her sister Margaret, possess a peculiar charm, as realizing, amid the scenes of their native state, the ideal of living genius, springing up in the seclusion of our western scenery, and attaining a beauty and perfection of development, which have called forth the admiration of the world.

"The family of Miss Davidson," continues Miss Sedgwick, "lived in seclusion. Their pleasures and excitements were intellectual. Her mother had suffered, year after year, from ill health and debility; and being a person of imaginative character, and most ardent and susceptible feelings, employed on domestic incidents, and concentrated in maternal tenderness, she naturally loved and cherished her daughter's marvellous gifts, and added to the intensity of the fire with which her genius and her affections, mingling in one holy flame, burned, till they consumed their mortal investments."

At the early age of four or five years, Lucretia gave decided indications of the bent of her mind, and the poetic tinge of her genius, in her infantile attempts at verse. Of these, however, she was by no means vain, but, on the contrary, shrunk, with the most sensitive delicacy, from having them shown, even to the other members of her family.

Her first school years were spent at the Plattsburg academy, and commenced as early as the period just mentioned. So earnest was her devotion to learning, that, at that early age, her mother had to restrain her application, and tried, though with little success, to divert her attention by needle-work.

At the age of twelve, having, on one occasion, accompanied her father to the celebration of Washington's birthnight, her susceptible spirit drank in a characteristic depth and fulness of poetic impression from the mingled influence of the scene and her previous reading. The result was a beautiful effusion, which, to her mother, proved so clearly the destination of her child, as to induce her to sanction Lucretia's secret cultivation of her poetic gifts.

The remarkable beauty of the scene amid which it was Lucretia's happiness to spend the years of her childhood, was a perpetual source of inspiration to her genius; and many of her juvenile impressions, as uttered in her

fugitive pieces, at that period, while they betray no straining after effect, possess an uncommon depth and serenity, blended with the most delicate perceptions of natural beauty,—the rarest and surest indications of genuine power.

Her impressions of nature, however, were by no means of that vague and indefinite character, which is so easily invested in generalized terms, that "play around the head, but never reach the heart." Her study of nature was intimate and individual, as the following touching and natural incident will evince.

"Indulgent as Mrs. Davidson was, she was too wise to permit Lucretia to forego, entirely, the customary employments of her sex. When nominally engaged with these, it seems she sometimes played truant with the muse. Once, she had promised to do a sewing task, and had eagerly run off for her work-basket: she loitered; and, when she returned, she found her mother had done the work, and that there was a shade of just displeasure on her countenance. 'Oh! mamma,' she said, 'I *did* forget: I am grieved; I did not mean to neglect you.' 'Where have you been, Lucretia?' 'I have been writing,' she replied, confused; 'as I passed the window, I saw a solitary sweet pea: I thought they were all gone; this was alone; I ran to smell it; but, before I could reach it, a gust of wind broke the stem; I turned away disappointed, and was coming back to you; but as I passed the table, there stood the inkstand and I forgot you.' If our readers will turn to her printed poems, and read the Last Flower of the Garden, they will not wonder that her mother kissed her, and bade her never resist a similar impulse."

Reading Lesson CCXXIII.

Life of Lucretia Davidson, continued.

Lucretia's habits, in relation to her moods of composition, form an interesting page in Miss Sedgwick's memoir.

"When composing her long and complicated poems, like Amir Khan, she required entire seclusion. If her pieces were seen in the process of production, the spell was dissolved, she could not finish them; and they were

cast aside as rubbish. When writing a poem of considerable length, she retired to her own apartment, closed the blinds, and, in warm weather, placed her æolian harp in the window.

"Her mother has described her on one of these occasions, when an artist would have painted her as a young genius communing with her muse. We quote her mother's graphic description: 'I entered the room—she was sitting with scarcely light enough to discern the characters she was tracing; her harp was in the window, touched by a breeze just sufficient to rouse the spirit of harmony; her comb had fallen on the floor; and her long dark ringlets hung, in rich profusion, over her neck and shoulders; her cheek glowed with animation, her lips were half unclosed, her full dark eye was radiant with the light of genius, and beaming with sensibility, her head rested on her left hand, while she held her pen in her right:—she looked like the inhabitant of another sphere. She was so wholly absorbed, that she did not observe my entrance. I looked over her shoulder, and read the following lines:

> "What heavenly music strikes my ravished ear,
> So soft, so melancholy, and so clear?
> And do the tuneful nine then touch the lyre,
> To fill each bosom with poetic fire?
> Or does some angel strike the sounding strings,
> Who caught from echo the wild note he sings?
> But ah! another strain, how sweet! how wild!
> Now rushing low, 'tis soothing, soft, and mild."

"'The noise I made, in leaving the room, roused her; and she soon after brought me her Lines to an Æolian Harp.'"

Like all other children of song, Lucretia Davidson had a soul peculiarly susceptible to the effects of genuine art. When, in her fourteenth year, she visited Canada, for the restoration of her health, which had been impaired by study, she there took great delight in the effect exerted over her youthful imagination by the catholic service, aided by the grandeur of cathedral architecture. Her pencil sketches, at this age, attracted great admiration.

The force of character which this feebly organized girl possessed, was strikingly evinced at this period, by the sternness of her self-denying resolution to throw aside wholly her books and pen, during a long illness of her mother's, and devote herself to the duties of nurse, for

both her mother and infant sister. To these new duties were unexpectedly added those of housekeeping, which were suddenly and unavoidably devolved on her. The heroic spirit of Lucretia bore up, with great firmness, amid these disadvantages and hindrances to intellectual progress, which, to one constituted as she was, and possessing such a thirst for acquisition, were severely trying. The victory over self was not, in this instance, gained without many struggles against the depression and despondency arising from the utter absence of wonted incitement and mental activity.

Reading Lesson CCXXIV.

Life of Lucretia Davidson, continued.

An important event in the brief life of this fragile being, was her leaving home in December, 1824, to attend the Troy female seminary, then under the care of Mrs. Willard. The excitement of the new scene, however, was too much for her constitution. Illness, more serious than she made known to others, reduced her strength, and depressed her spirits.

She struggled, however, to sustain herself; feeling anxious to meet the expectations of the kind friend who had furnished her with this opportunity of intellectual advancement; and, although extremely solicitous in relation to her appearance at the closing examination of the school, and shrinking from the publicity of the scene, she bore up against a serious attack of illness, with the utmost fortitude, and acquitted herself with distinguished approbation.

On her return from the house of a relative, with whose family she had spent the vacation of the seminary, her courage and presence of mind were most unexpectedly called forth. On this occasion her native energy of soul and serenity of mind, were strikingly evinced. She thus describes, in a letter to her mother, the occurrence to which we refer.

"Uncle went to the ferry with me," she says, "where we met Mr. Paris. Uncle placed me under his care; and, snugly seated by his side, I expected a very pleasant ride with a very pleasant gentleman. All *was* pleasant, except that we expected, every instant, that all the ice in

the Hudson would come drifting against us, and shut in scow, stage, and all, or sink us to the bottom, which, in either case, you know, mother, would not have been quite so agreeable.

"We had just pushed from the shore, I watching the ice with anxious eyes, when, lo! the two leaders made a tremendous plunge, and tumbled headlong into the river. I felt the carriage following fast after; the other two horses pulled back with all their power; but the leaders were dragging them down, dashing and plunging, and flouncing in the water.

"'Mr. Paris, in mercy let us get out,' said I. But, as he did not see the horses, he felt no alarm. The moment I informed him they were overboard, he opened the door, and cried, 'Get out, and save yourself, if possible. I am old and stiff; but I will follow in an instant.'

"'Out with the lady! let the lady out!' shouted several voices at once; 'the other horses are about to plunge, and then all will be over.'

"I made a lighter spring than many a lady does in a cotillion, and jumped upon a cake of ice. Mr. Paris followed; and we stood, (I trembling like a leaf,) expecting, every instant, that the next plunge of the drowning horses would detach the piece of ice upon which we were standing, and send us adrift. But, thank Heaven! after working, for ten or fifteen minutes, by dint of ropes, and cutting them away from the other horses, they dragged the poor creatures out, more dead than alive."

In the spring vacation, Lucretia returned to her home, evidently much impaired in health. For change of air, a journey to Albany was deemed advisable; and here she entered the school of Miss Gilbert, where she soon resumed study, with all her wonted ardor; and intense application, combined with the slow but sure progress of her constitutional malady, soon brought her low. Her letters home, at this period, betrayed so plainly her sinking condition, that her mother came to Albany, for the purpose of accompanying her home.

The journey was not performed without difficulty; and even the tranquillity and the cheerfulness of home proved insufficient to effect any substantial improvement in her health. She had the happiness, however, before her death, of an interview with the almost paternal friend who had

hoped to witness and to aid the full development of her genius; and she was able to tranquillize and console the minds of her relatives, by the calm and truly christian spirit with which she anticipated her decease. She died in her seventeenth year, on the 27th of August, 1825.

Reading Lesson CCXXV.

Life of Lucretia Davidson, continued.

The life of Lucretia Davidson, by Miss Sedgwick, was preceded by a biographical sketch from the pen of professor Morse, prefixed to an earlier edition of her Amir Khan and other poems, from which we derive the following enumeration of her works. "Her poetical writings, which have been collected, amount, in all, to two hundred and seventy-eight pieces of various lengths. When it is considered, that there are among these at least five regular poems, of several cantos each, some estimate may be formed of her poetical labors. Besides these were twenty-four school exercises, three unfinished romances, a complete tragedy, written at thirteen years of age, and about forty letters, in a few months, to her mother alone." "This statement," says Miss Sedgwick, "does not comprise the large proportion,—at least one-third of the whole,—which she destroyed.

"The genius of Lucretia Davidson has had the meed of far more authoritative praise than ours. The following tribute is from the London Quarterly Review; a source whence praise of American productions is as rare as springs in the desert. The notice is by Mr. Southey, and is written with the earnest feeling that characterizes that author, as generous as he is discriminating. 'In these poems, (Amir Khan, &c.) there is enough of originality, enough of aspiration, enough of conscious energy, enough of growing power, to warrant any expectations, however sanguine, which the patrons, and the friends and parents of the deceased, could have formed.'

"But, prodigious as the genius of this young creature was,—still marvellous, after all the abatements that may be made for precociousness and morbid development,—there is something yet more captivating in her moral loveliness. Her modesty was not the infusion of another mind, not the result of cultivation, not the effect of good

taste; nor was it a veil cautiously assumed and gracefully worn; but an innate quality, that made her shrink from incense, even though the censer were sanctified by love. Her mind was like the exquisite mirror, that cannot be stained by human breath."

The following are some brief specimens of the early poetic effusions of this wonderful child. The limits of a work such as ours, preclude the introduction of lengthened extracts.

"THE LAST FLOWER OF THE GARDEN."

(Written in her thirteenth year.)

"The last flower of the garden was blooming alone,
The last rays of the sun on its blushing leaves shone;
Still a glittering drop on its bosom reclined,
And a few half-blown buds 'midst its leaves were entwined.

"Say, lonely one, say, why lingerest thou here?
And why on thy bosom reclines the bright tear?
'Tis the tear of a zephyr,—for summer 'twas shed,
And for all thy companions now withered and dead.

"Why lingerest thou here, when around thee are strown
The flowers once so lovely, by autumn gust blown?
Say, why, sweetest floweret, the last of thy race,
Why lingerest thou here, the lone garden to grace?

"As I spoke, a rough blast, sent by Winter's own hand,
Whistled by me, and bent its sweet head to the sand;
I hastened to raise it;—the dew-drop had fled,
And the once lovely flower was withered and dead."

Reading Lesson CCXXVI.

Extracts from the works of Lucretia Davidson, continued.

"TO MY MOTHER."

(Written in her sixteenth year.)

"O thou whose care sustained my infant years,
And taught my prattling lip each note of love;
Whose soothing voice breathed comfort to my fears,
And round my brow hope's brightest garland wove;—

"To thee my lay is due, the simple song,
Which Nature gave me at life's opening day;
To thee these rude, these untaught strains belong,
Whose heart indulgent will not spurn my lay.

"Oh! say, amid this wilderness of life,
What bosom would have throbbed like thine for me?
Who would have smiled responsive?—who, in grief,
Would e'er have felt, and feeling, grieved like thee?

"Who would have guarded, with a falcon eye,
Each trembling footstep or each sport of fear?
Who would have marked my bosom bounding high,
And clasped me to her heart, with love's bright tear?

"Who would have hung around my sleepless couch,
And fanned, with anxious hand, my burning brow?
Who would have fondly pressed my fevered lip,
In all the agony of love and woe?

"None but a mother,—none but one like thee,
Whose bloom has faded in the midnight watch;
Whose eye, for me, has lost its witchery,
Whose form has felt disease's mildew touch.

"Yes, thou hast lighted me to health and life,
By the bright lustre of thy youthful bloom;—
Yes, thou hast wept so oft o'er every grief,
That woe hath traced thy brow with marks of gloom.

"Oh! then, to thee, this rude and simple song,
Which breathes of thankfulness and love for thee,
To thee, my mother, shall this lay belong,
Whose life is spent in toil and care for me."

"MODESTY."

(Written in her sixteenth year.)

"There is a sweet, though humble flower,
Which grows in nature's wildest bed;
It blossoms in the lonely bower,
But withers 'neath the gazer's tread.

"'Tis reared alone, far, far away
From the wild noxious weeds of death;
Around its brow the sunbeams play,
The evening dew-drop is its wreath.

"'Tis Modesty; 'tis nature's child;
The loveliest, sweetest, meekest flower
That ever blossomed in the wild,
Or trembled 'neath the evening shower.

"'Tis Modesty; so pure, so fair,
That woman's witcheries lovelier grow,
When that sweet flower is blooming there,
The brightest beauty of her brow."

"MY LAST FAREWELL TO MY HARP."

"And must we part?—yes, part for ever;
I'll waken thee again—no, never:
Silence shall chain thee, cold and drear,
And thou shalt calmly slumber here.
Unhallowed was the eye that gazed
Upon the lamp that brightly blazed,—

The lamp which never can expire,
The undying, wild, poetic fire.
And oh! unhallowed was the tongue
Which boldly and uncouthly sung;
I blessed the hour when o'er my soul,
Thy magic numbers gently stole,
And o'er it threw those heavenly strains
Which since have bound my heart in chains;
Those wild, those witching numbers still
Will o'er my widowed bosom steal.
I blessed that hour, but O my heart,
Thou and thy lyre must part;—yes, part;
And this shall be my last farewell,
This my sad bosom's latest knell.
And here, my harp, we part for ever;
I'll waken thee again,—oh! never:
Silence shall chain thee, cold and drear,
And thou shalt calmly slumber here."

Reading Lesson CCXXVII.

WILLIS GAYLORD CLARKE,

"Was born at the town of Otisco, in Onondaga county, in the year 1810. His father had served, with credit, in the war of the revolution, and was a man of considerable cultivation of mind. This qualified him, with the aid of the Rev. George Colton, a relative of the family, to superintend, with advantage, the education of his son, and to lay a judicious foundation for the future acquirements of the latter.

"The poetic inclinations of Willis Clarke were manifested at a very early age; and his descriptions of his native scenery, were distinguished for their distinctness and force; as was his versification, for the ease and harmony with which it flowed. It was not long, too, before he added to these qualities that tone of gentle and even melancholy solemnity, for which his poetic effusions are, in general, so remarkable.

"Mr. Clarke came to the city of Philadelphia, when about twenty years old, and was induced to commence there a weekly literary journal, similar in its character to the New-York Mirror. But becoming satisfied that there was little probability of the profits of the undertaking proving an adequate compensation for the labor applied, he abandoned it, after a short period.

"He next engaged, in conjunction with the Rev. Dr. Brantley, afterwards president of Beaufort college, South

Carolina, in editing the Columbian Star, a religious and literary journal, published weekly. He inserted in it many poetic pieces of his own, of a high order of merit. Some of them were subsequently collected, and printed, in a small volume, with a poem of considerable length, under the title of the Spirit of Life.

"Mr. Clarke's connection with the Columbian Star was dissolved, on his assuming the editorship of the Philadelphia Gazette, one of the oldest and most respectable daily political papers of the city. After some time, he became its proprietor; and he conducted it till his death, with diligence and ability, and with a uniform observance, even in his animadversions on the sentiments and conduct of those from whom he most differed, of the courtesies proper to the character of a christian gentleman.

"Besides his writings in the journals of which he was the editor, Mr. Clarke contributed, also, during many years, to the magazines and annuals of his own country, and occasionally also to some of the English periodicals.

"An eminent English author, now living, after having spoken of Mr. Clarke's poems in high terms, characterized him as one 'who has an enviable genius, to be excited in a new and unexhausted country, and a glorious career before him, where, in manners, scenery, and morals, hitherto undescribed and unexhausted, he can find wells where he may be the first to drink.'

"'As a prose writer,' says the author of an article in the American Quarterly Review, 'Mr. Clarke possesses a rare combination of dissimilar qualities. At times, eloquent, vehement, and impassioned, pouring out his thoughts in a fervent tide of strong and stirring language, he sweeps the feelings of his readers along with him; and, at others, playful, jocular, and buoyant, he dallies with his subject, and mingles mirth and argument, drollery and gravity, so oddly, yet so aptly, that the effect is irresistible.'

"Mr. Clarke died, much regretted, in 1841."

Reading Lesson CCXXVIII.

MARGARET MILLER DAVIDSON,

The youngest sister of Lucretia,—of whose life we have given a brief sketch, on a preceding page,—was born at Plattsburgh, on the 26th of March, 1823.

In her constitution, both of body and mind, and in her early death, she resembled her gifted sister. Her life was a succession of alternate depression and exaltation, as her organic condition or her poetic inspirations preponderated. But, in whatever state of bodily or mental influence the fleeting days of her brief life were passed, she appears the same noble, devoted, amiable being; living in an atmosphere of almost celestial purity, truth, and love. The aspirations of her soul were all directed to a perfection of beauty and power which can never be realized on earth; and, her early transit to a higher sphere of being, seems to have been but the appropriate consummation of such a life as she daily led.

From the beautiful record of her life, by Washington Irving, which is prefixed to a collection of her works, we derive an impression of the effect produced on Margaret's mind, by her sister's character and death.

"Margaret, from the first dawnings of intellect, gave evidence of being no common child: her ideas and expressions were not like those of other children, and often startled by their precocity. Her sister's death had made a strong impression on her; and, though so extremely young, she already understood and appreciated Lucretia's character. An evidence of this, and of the singular precocity of thought and expression just noticed, occurred but a few months afterwards. As Mrs. Davidson was seated, at twilight, conversing with a female friend, Margaret entered the room with a light elastic step, for which she was remarkable.

"'That child never walks,' said the lady; then turning to her, 'Margaret, where are you flying now?' said she.

"'To heaven!' replied she, pointing up with her finger, 'to meet my sister Lucretia, when I get my new wings.'

"'Your new wings! When will you get them?'

"'Oh! soon, very soon; and then I shall fly!'

"'She loved,' says her mother, 'to sit, hour after hour, on a cushion at my feet; her little arms resting upon my lap, and her full dark eyes fixed upon mine; listening to anecdotes of her sister's life, and details of the events which preceded her death; often exclaiming, while her face beamed with mingled emotions, 'Oh! mamma, I will try to fill her place! Oh! teach me to be like her!'"

The early education of Margaret, was, with the exception of her fifth year, which was spent in Canada, conducted by her mother, at home, with a view to avoid the evils likely to arise from the excitements of a school life, on a temperament so peculiarly susceptible as hers. But the mother's own genius and tendencies were so decidedly of a poetic character, that her influence as an instructress, was necessarily such as to foster every trait of that description, in the dawning mind of her daughter.

To the poetic influence of her mother's spirit was added that of the beautiful scenery in which she lived. She gives us, in one of her own juvenile tales, the following sketch of her birth-place.

"There stood, on the banks of the Saranac, a small neat cottage, which peeped forth from the surrounding foliage, the image of rural quiet and contentment. An old-fashioned piazza extended along the front, shaded with vines and honeysuckles; the turf, on the bank of the river, was of the richest and brightest emerald; and the wild rose and sweet brier, which twined over the neat enclosure, seemed to bloom with more delicate freshness and perfume, within the bounds of this earthly paradise. The scenery around was wildly, yet beautifully romantic; the clear, blue river, glancing and sparkling at its feet, seemed only as a preparation for another and more magnificent view, when the stream, gliding on to the west, was buried in the broad white bosom of Champlain, which stretched back, wave after wave, in the distance, until lost in faint blue mists, that veiled the sides of its guardian mountains, seeming more lovely from their indistinctness."

"Such," says Mr. Irving, "were the natural scenes which presented themselves to her dawning perceptions; and she is said to have evinced, from her earliest childhood, a remarkable sensibility to their charms. A beautiful tree, or shrub, or flower, would fill her with delight; she would note, with surprising discrimination, the various effects of the weather, upon the surrounding landscape; the mountains wrapped in clouds; the torrents roaring down their sides in time of tempest; the 'bright, warm sunshine,' the 'cooling showers,' the 'pale, cold moon;' for such was, already, her poetical phraseology. A bright starlight night, also, would seem to awaken a mysterious rapture in her infant bosom; and one of her early expres-

sions, in speaking of the stars, was, that they 'shone like the eyes of angels.'

"One of the most beautiful parts of the maternal instruction was in guiding these kindling perceptions from nature up to nature's God."

"I cannot say," observes her mother, "at what age her religious impressions were imbibed. They seemed to be interwoven with her existence. From the very first exercise of reason, she evinced strong devotional feelings; and, although she loved play, she would, at any time, prefer seating herself beside me, and, with every faculty absorbed in the subject, listen while I attempted to recount the wonders of Providence, and point out the wisdom and benevolence of God, as manifested in the works of creation. Her young heart would swell with rapture, and the tear would tremble in her eye, when I explained to her, that He who clothed the trees with verdure, and gave the rose its bloom, had also created her with capacities to enjoy their beauties; that the same power which clothed the mountains with sublimity, made her happiness his daily care. Thus a sentiment of gratitude and affection towards the Creator, entered into all her emotions of delight, at the wonders and beauties of creation."

Mr. Irving says, "there is nothing more truly poetical than religion, when properly inculcated, and it will be found that this early piety, thus amiably instilled, had the happiest effect upon her, throughout life; elevating and ennobling her genius; lifting her above everything gross and sordid; attuning her thoughts to pure and lofty themes; heightening rather than impairing her enjoyments, and, at all times, giving an ethereal lightness to her spirits. To use her mother's words, 'she was like a bird on the wing, her fairy form scarcely seemed to touch the earth as she passed.' She was, at times, in a kind of ecstasy from the excitement of her imagination, and the exuberance of her pleasurable sensations. In such moods, every object of natural beauty inspired a degree of rapture, always mingled with a feeling of gratitude to the Being 'who had made so many beautiful things for her.' In such moods, too, her little heart would overflow with love to all around; 'indeed,' adds her mother, 'to love and be beloved was necessary to her existence.' Private prayer became a habit with her, at a very early age; it

was almost a spontaneous expression of her feelings, the breathings of an affectionate and delighted heart."

Reading Lesson CCXXIX.

Life of Margaret Davidson, continued.

"By the time she was six years old," says Mrs. Davidson, "her language assumed an elevated tone; and her mind seemed filled with poetic imagery, blended with veins of religious thought. At this period, I was chiefly confined to my room, by debility. She was my companion and friend; and, as the greater part of my time was devoted to her instruction, she advanced rapidly in her studies. She read not only well, but elegantly. Her love of reading amounted almost to a passion; and her intelligence surpassed belief. Strangers viewed with astonishment a child little more than six years old, reading, with enthusiastic delight, Thomson's Seasons, the Pleasures of Hope, Cowper's Task, the writings of Milton, Byron, and Scott, and marking, with taste and discrimination, the passages which struck her. The sacred writings were her daily studies; with her little Bible on her lap, she usually seated herself near me, and there read a chapter from the holy volume. This was a duty which she was taught not to perform lightly; and we have frequently spent two hours in reading and remarking upon the contents of a chapter."

The family talent of facility in versification, was evinced in Margaret's early childhood, to an extent which, to strangers, seemed incredible. She possessed, also, even at that period, an expertness in weaving the fabric of a story, which would enchain her hearers for hours. Into these manifestations of mental power she was drawn unconsciously, by sympathetic interest, and never indulged in them for the purpose of display.

The plan of education, pursued by her mother, seems to have been regulated with great care, so as to avoid the effects of undue mental exertion. But a spirit like hers cannot easily be restrained, when the field of acquisition is once opened to its view: the pleasures of expanding knowledge and conscious advancement, are too fascinating to be withstood, and the onward impulse too strong to be resisted.

"At the age of between six and seven, she entered upon a course of English grammar, geography, history, and rhetoric, still under the direction and superintendence of her mother; but such was her ardor of application, that it was necessary to keep her in check, lest a too intense pursuit of knowledge should impair her delicate constitution. She was not required to commit her lessons to memory, but to give the substance of them in her own language, and to explain their purport; thus she learned nothing by rote, but everything understandingly, and soon acquired a knowledge of the rudiments of English education. The morning lessons completed, the rest of the day was devoted to recreation; occasionally sporting and gathering wild flowers on the banks of the Saranac; though the extreme delicacy of her constitution prevented her taking as much exercise as her mother could have wished."

An event, of great interest to Margaret, occurred in 1830, in the visit of an English gentleman to Plattsburgh, who had read the memoir and the works of her sister, and who had come to visit the scene which her genius had consecrated. Margaret was, then, but seven years old. The interest excited in her, however, by the affable and sympathetic spirit of the visitor, was deep and permanent, and formed one of her most vivid and pleasing remembrances in after life.

The delicate state of health which had already become habitual with her, now rendered it advisable to resort to Saratoga Springs; and, subsequently, she accompanied her parents on a visit to the city of New York, where she entered, with intense delight, into the numerous sources of mental excitement with which the scene abounded. Here, too, she enjoyed the unexpected pleasure of the society of her English friend, in whose company she once enjoyed the realization of that world of romance which is opened to the young mind in dramatic representation; but which, to a susceptible nature like hers, forms an epoch in the mental history of the individual.

The change of air and scene, and the suspension of her accustomed intellectual application, had the best effect on Margaret's health and spirits. She seemed to have imbibed a new life; and the good influence continued during spring and summer. But, with the return of

autumn, her vigor began, once more, to subside. Her mother resolved, therefore, on a visit to Canada, as a relief from the effects of the damp air of lake Champlain.

The change of atmosphere produced the happiest effects; and her devoted mother,—though suffering from extreme weakness, being herself an habitual invalid, and, at the time, unusually low in health,—continued to superintend her daughter's progress in education. Margaret, whose health was much benefited by the drier weather of Canada, repaid her mother's care by the most assiduous attentions of filial love.

An attack of scarlet fever, in January, 1833, while she was still in Canada, reduced her strength to the lowest ebb; and a journey to the city of New York was recommended; her mother having, at length, recovered a degree of health. The change of scene was beneficial; and the mental impulse arising from novel and diversified objects, exerted its usual effect on Margaret's susceptible spirit. She kept a journal of her daily observations; and, in her record of interesting events, occurs a visit to Black Hawk and his colleagues, who were, at the time, passing through New York, on their tour, as prisoners of war.

Margaret was, at this time, a source of peculiar pleasure to her friends in New York, by the activity of her mind and the buoyancy of her spirits. One of her juvenile efforts, in the form of dramatic writing, was brought out, during this visit, for the amusement of her young playmates, who performed the piece under her direction.

The stay of Mrs. Davidson and her daughter in New York, was protracted till autumn; and it was then deemed unsafe for the invalids to encounter the moist and chilling air of the lake around their home. A change of residence to Ballston was, greatly to Margaret's regret, decided on, as most favorable. Her touching and beautiful farewell to her native scene, written on this occasion, shows how largely she had already partaken of "the fatal gift of song." The piece is a genuine reflection of herself,—simple, natural, and tender,—revealing the beauty and truth that slumber in the heart of unperverted childhood, ever ready to be called forth by the touch of circumstance.

"MY NATIVE LAKE."

"Thy verdant banks, thy lucid stream,
Lit by the sun's resplendent beam,
Reflect each bending tree so light
Upon thy bounding bosom bright:—
Could I but see thee once again,
My own, my beautiful Champlain!

"The little isles that deck thy breast,
And calmly on thy bosom rest,
How often, in my childish glee,
I've sported round them, bright and free:—
Could I but see thee once again,
My own, my beautiful Champlain!

"How oft I've watched the freshening shower,
Bending the summer tree and flower,
And felt my little heart beat high
As the bright rainbow graced the sky!
Could I but see thee once again,
My own, my beautiful Champlain!

"And shall I never see thee more,
My native lake, my much-loved shore?
And must I bid a long adieu,
My dear, my infant home, to you?
Shall I not see thee once again,
My own, my beautiful Champlain?"

READING LESSON CCXXX.

Life of Margaret Davidson, continued.

To direct aright the education of such a child, was assuredly no easy task. To check her application was to dispirit and distress her: to incite her to mental action was to incur serious danger.

"As the powers," says Mr. Irving, "of this excitable and imaginative little being developed themselves, Mrs. Davidson felt more and more conscious of the responsibility of undertaking to cultivate and direct them; yet to whom could she confide her, that would so well understand her character and constitution? To place her in a boarding-school would subject her to increased excitement, caused by emulation; and her mind was already too excitable for her fragile frame. Her peculiar temperament required peculiar culture; it must neither be stimulated nor checked; and, while her imagination was left to its free soarings, care must be taken to strengthen her judgment, improve her mind, establish her principles,

and inculcate habits of self-examination and self-control. All this, it was thought, might best be accomplished under a mother's eye; it was resolved, therefore, that her education should, as before, be conducted entirely at home. 'Thus, she continued,' to use her mother's words, 'to live in the bosom of affection, where every thought and feeling was reciprocated. I strove to draw out the powers of her mind by conversation and familiar remarks upon subjects of daily study and reflection, and taught her the necessity of bringing all her thoughts, desires, and feelings, under the dominion of reason; to understand the importance of self-control, when she found her inclinations were at war with its dictates. To fulfil all her duties from a conviction of right, because they were duties; and to find her happiness in the consciousness of her own integrity, and the approbation of God. How delightful was the task of instructing a mind like hers! She seized with avidity upon every new idea; for the instruction proceeded from lips of love. Often would she exclaim, "Oh! mamma! how glad I am that you are not too ill to teach me! Surely I am the happiest girl in the world!" She had read much, for a child of little more than ten years of age. She was well versed in both ancient and modern history, (that is to say, in the courses generally prescribed for the use of schools;) Blair, Kaimes, and Paley, had formed part of her studies. She was familiar with most of the British poets. Her command of the English language was remarkable, both in conversation and writing. She had learned the rudiments of French, and was anxious to become perfect in the language; but I had so neglected my duty in this respect, after I left school, that I was not qualified to instruct her. A friend, however, who understood French, called occasionally, and gave her lessons for his own amusement; she soon translated well; and such was her talent for the acquisition of languages, and such her desire to read everything in the original, that every obstacle vanished before her perseverance. She made some advances in Latin, also, in company with her brother, who was attended by a private teacher; and they were engaged upon the early books of Virgil, when her health again gave way, and she was confined to her room by severe illness. These frequent attacks upon a frame so

delicate, awakened all our fears. Her illness spread a gloom throughout our habitation; for fears were entertained that it would end in a pulmonary consumption.'"

On recovering from this illness, and while yet but in her eleventh year, she was visited with a severe affliction in the loss of her only surviving sister, at whose home she had spent so many happy hours in Canada. One of Margaret's most beautiful productions, was called forth by this melancholy event.

To divert her mind from dwelling on the painful loss of her sister, she was sent, once more, on a visit to New York; and her farewell, at that time, to her mother, is another most touching effusion of a heart hallowed by affection, and inspired by poetic genius.

Margaret returned much improved in health, for a time, only to relapse into an illness which continued till spring. The reäwakening of nature brought, with it, to the young sufferer, a yet greater intensity of mental excitement, and a more earnest desire for intellectual progress. A visit to some relatives residing on the banks of the Mohawk, was therefore planned, as a diversion from application; and the change had its usual brief effect.

In the autumn of 1835, Mr. Davidson removed his family to a beautiful spot on the East River, near to the Shot Tower, and about four miles distant from the city. The mansion and grounds were singularly poetic in character and associations; their appearance even to an ordinary eye, was strikingly romantic. To Margaret's vision, they were a paradise of the imagination, realized on earth.

In the month of October, she writes thus to Mr. M. Kent, the patron and friend of her departed sister, Lucretia,—one whom she used affectionately to address as "uncle."

"We are now at Ruremont; and a more delightful place I never saw. The house is large, pleasant, and commodious; and the old-fashioned style of everything around it, transports the mind to days long gone by; and my imagination is constantly upon the rack to burden the past with scenes transacted on this very spot. In the rear of the mansion, a lawn, spangled with beautiful flowers, and shaded by spreading trees, slopes gently down to the river-side, where vessels of every description are con-

stantly spreading their white sails to the wind. In front, a long shady avenue leads to the door; and a large extent of beautiful undulating ground is spread with fruit-trees of every description. In and about the house, there are so many little nooks and by-places, that sometimes I fancy it has been the resort of smugglers; and who knows but I shall yet find their hidden treasures somewhere? Do come and see us, my dear uncle; but you must come soon, if you would enjoy any of the beauties of the place. The trees have already doffed their robe of green, and assumed the red and yellow of autumn; and the paths are strewed with fallen leaves. But there is loveliness even in the decay of nature. But do, do come soon, or the branches will be leafless; and the cold winds will prevent the pleasant rambles we now enjoy."

Reading Lesson CCXXXI.

Life of Margaret Davidson, continued.

For a time, the health and spirits of Margaret were much improved by the change of residence. But, ere long, she began, once more, to droop. In this state of depression, she received from her English friend an invitation for herself and her mother, to join him and his family at Havana, whither he had resorted for the benefit of a mild winter climate. This invitation, however, it was not deemed, at the time, advisable to accept.

Meanwhile, the inspiration of the scene around her, exerted its full influence on her impressible imagination. The following is Mr. Irving's account of the spot.

"The writer of this memoir visited Ruremont, at the time it was occupied by the Davidson family. It was a spacious, and somewhat crazy and poetical-looking mansion, with large waste apartments. The grounds were rather wild and overgrown, but so much the more picturesque. It stood on the banks of the Sound, the waters of which rushed, with whirling and impetuous tides below, hurrying on to the dangerous strait of Hell-gate. Nor was this neighborhood without its legendary tales. These wild and lonely shores had, in former times, been the resort of smugglers and pirates. Hard by this very place stood the country retreat of Ready-money Prevost,

of dubious and smuggling memory, with his haunted tomb, in which he was said to conceal his contraband riches; and scarce a secret spot about these shores but had some tradition connected with it, of Kidd the pirate and his buried treasures. All these circumstances were enough to breed thick-coming fancies in so imaginative a brain; and the result was a drama in six acts, entitled The Smuggler, the scene of which was laid at Ruremont, in the old time of the province. The play was written with great rapidity, and, considering she was little more than twelve years of age, and had never visited a theatre but once in her life, evinced great aptness and dramatic talent. It was to form a domestic entertainment for Christmas holidays; the spacious back parlor was to be fitted up for the theatre. In planning and making arrangements for the performance, she seemed perfectly happy, and her step resumed its wonted elasticity; though her anxious mother often detected a suppressed cough, and remarked a hectic flush upon her cheek."

To avoid the certain evils of depression and decline, which, it was plainly foreseen, the interruption of her education would cause, she was allowed to visit the city, a few times a week, for lessons in what are termed "the accomplishments" of her sex.

The winter of this year brought a new experience to Margaret's heart, in the death of a young brother. Her feelings on this occasion, were embodied in one of her most exquisite productions. Her health now gave decided indications of irretrievable decline. But it was deemed advisable to leave her uninformed of the opinion of her physicians; as she clung eagerly to life, and fought off every idea of premature dissolution. The delights of mental action and of intellectual attainment, were, to her nature, so intense, and her desire after a life of usefulness and distinction so strong, that it was long ere she could be reconciled to the thought of dying so young. She seems, however, to have received through the medium of those pleasing dreams by which an exalted cerebral action is sometimes attended, a silent intimation of her destination to a higher happiness than the utmost expansion or activity of her powers could have afforded her, on earth. Her ecstatic effusion, entitled the Joys of Heaven, was

written on the occasion of passing from one of these states of rapturous elation.

It was during this stage of her illness that she enjoyed the happiness of becoming acquainted with Miss Sedgwick, to whom she continued most ardently attached, and whose friendship was one of the genial beams that cheered the declining hours of her brief life.

With the aid of skilful treatment, the strength of the young patient was at length rallied, and, so far restored, that she was able to accompany her brother on a journey to the western part of the state. Her Farewell to Ruremont, written on this occasion, shows how deeply she had imbibed the spirit of the scene, and how true was the echo of her heart to the beauty of nature.

On her return home, in September, she showed a degree of improvement in her health. But a change had evidently come over her mind, in regard to the nature of her malady. She was now, at last, willing to relinquish her mental application, and, for a time, avoided every cause of excitement. Six weary months she had the self-denial to spend in this way. But "the waste of feeling unemployed," became at length insupportable; and she sought relief in the composition of her beautiful Apostrophe to Earth.

The resumption of mental activity, seems to have had a favorable effect on the sufferer; and, for another brief space, she recovered something of her tone of health. The change, however, was transient. A return of bleeding from the lungs, and the chilling effect of winter, soon combined to reduce her strength to the lowest point compatible with life. Still she was unwilling to be considered fatally ill. Intellectual ambition was, with her, a powerful principle, though never indulged in reprehensible forms. She looked forward, with intense desire, to the pleasure of intellectual distinction; and this secret wish of her heart was inseparable from her sympathy with her sister Lucretia, whose image was so identified in her mind with intellectual excellence. To this state of feeling we owe the beautiful apostrophe to her sister.

Reading Lesson CCXXXII.

Life of Margaret Davidson, continued.

"TO MY SISTER LUCRETIA."

"My sister! With that thrilling word
What thoughts unnumbered wildly spring!
What echoes in my heart are stirred,
While thus I touch the trembling string!

"My sister! ere this youthful mind
Could feel the value of thine own;
Ere this infantine heart could bind
In its deep cell, one look, one tone,

"To glide along on memory's stream,
And bring back thrilling thoughts of thee,
Ere I knew aught but childhood's dream,
Thy soul had struggled and was free!

"My sister! with this mortal eye,
I ne'er shall see thy form again;
And never shall this mortal ear
Drink in the sweetness of thy strain!

"Yet fancy wild, and glowing love,
Reveal thee to my spirit's view,
Enwreathed with graces from above,
And decked in heaven's own fadeless hue.

"Thy glance of pure seraphic light
Sheds o'er my heart its softening ray;
Thy pinions guard my couch by night,
And hover o'er my path by day.

"I cannot weep that thou art fled,—
For ever blends my soul with thine;
Each thought, by purer impulse led,
Is soaring on to realms divine.

"Thy glance unfolds my heart of hearts,
And lays its inmost recess bare;
Thy voice a heavenly calm imparts,
And soothes each wilder passion there.

"I hear thee in the summer breeze,
See thee in all that's pure or fair;
Thy whisper in the murmuring trees,
Thy breath, thy spirit everywhere.

"Thine eyes, which watch when mortals sleep,
Cast o'er my dreams a radiant hue;
Thy tears, 'such tears as angels weep,'
Fall nightly with the glistening dew.

"Thy fingers wake my youthful lyre,
And teach its softer strains to flow;
Thy spirit checks each vain desire,
And gilds the lowering brow of woe.

"When fancy wings her upward flight
On through the viewless realms of air,
Clothed in its robe of matchless light,
I view thy ransomed spirit there!

"Far from her wild, delusive dreams,
It leads my raptured soul away,
Where the pure fount of glory streams,
And saints live on through endless day.

"When the dim lamp of future years
Sheds o'er my path its glimmering faint,
First in the view thy form appears,
My sister, and my guardian saint!

"Thou gem of light! my leading star!
What thou hast been, I strive to be;
When from the path I wander far,
Oh! turn thy guiding beam on me.

"Teach me to fill thy place below,
That I may dwell with thee above;
To soothe, like thee, a mother's woe,
And prove, like thine, a sister's love.

"Thou wert unfit to dwell with clay,
For sin too pure, for earth too bright!
And death, who called thee hence away,
Placed on his brow a gem of light!

"A gem, whose brilliant glow is shed
Beyond the ocean's swelling wave,
Which gilds the memory of the dead,
And pours its radiance on thy grave.

"When day hath left his glowing car,
And evening spreads her robe of love;
When worlds, like travellers from afar,
Meet in the azure fields above;

"When all is still, and fancy's realm
Is opening to the eager view,
Mine eye full oft, in search of thee,
Roams o'er that vast expanse of blue.

"I know that here thy harp is mute,
And quenched the bright poetic fire,
Yet still I bend my ear, to catch
The hymnings of thy seraph lyre.

"Oh! if this partial converse now
So joyous to my heart can be,
How must the streams of rapture flow
When both are chainless, both are free!

"When borne from earth for evermore,
Our souls in sacred joy unite,
At God's almighty throne adore,
And bathe in beams of endless light!

"Away, away, ecstatic dream,
I must not, dare not dwell on thee;
My soul, immersed in life's dark stream,
Is far too earthly to be free.

"Though heaven's bright portal were unclosed,
And angels wooed me from on high,
Too much I fear my shrinking soul
Would cast on earth its longing eye.

"Teach me to fill thy place below,
That I may dwell with thee above;
To soothe, like thee, a mother's woe,
And prove, like thine, a sister's love."

Reading Lesson CCXXXIII.

Life of Margaret Davidson, continued.

In the month of May, 1837, the Davidson family removed to Ballston, where Margaret enjoyed much happiness in communicating with a family distinguished for intellectual attainments, whose friendship was the solace of her remaining life. The vicissitudes of the treacherous disease under which she labored, here, also, afforded her a few intervals of enjoyment in activity and in recreative exercise, amid the scenes of nature. But the reaction which followed these excited moments, was sometimes deeply depressing. Her piece entitled Aspirations, was a production of these vacillations of feeling.

The impaired condition of her health did not prove an obstacle to her intellectual pursuits, in the form of reading; and, during the autumn and winter seasons, she enjoyed many delightful hours of respite, in this form, and in conversation with her friends. She still found it practicable to read somewhat extensively, in history and philosophy, besides recreating her mind with the life and novels of Scott.

The following extracts from her mother's memoranda, touch on subjects, which had now grown deeply interesting to the invalid. "Her views of the divine character and attributes had ever been of that elevated cast, which, while they raised her mind above all grosser things, sublimated and purified her feelings and desires, and prepared her for that bright and holy communion, without which she could enjoy nothing. Her faith was of that character, 'which casteth out fear.' It was sweet and

soothing to depend upon Jesus for salvation. It was delightful to behold, in the all-imposing majesty of God, a kind and tender father, who pitied her infirmities, and on whose justice and benevolence she could rest for time and eternity. Her meekness and humility led her sometimes to doubt her own state. She felt that her religious duties were but too feebly performed, and that, without divine assistance, all her resolutions to be more faithful, were vain. She often said, 'Mamma, I am far from right. I resolve and re-resolve, and yet remain the same.' I had shunned every thing that savored of controversy; knowing her enthusiasm and extreme sensibility on the subject of religion, I dreaded the excitement it might create. But I now more fully explained, as well as I was able, the simple and divine truths of the Gospel, and held up to her view the beauty and benevolence of the Father's character, and the unbounded love which could have devised the atoning sacrifice; and advised her, at present, to avoid controversial writings, and make a more thorough examination of the Scriptures, that she might found her principles upon the evidence to be deduced from that groundwork of our faith, unbiassed by the opinions and prejudices of *any man*."

The care taken to preserve a summer atmosphere in the house, gave the young sufferer so much relief that she often, during the winter, entered heartily into the festive spirit of the season. Her lines to her mother at Christmas, and her Departure of the year 1837, and Commencement of 1838, evince a healthy and joyous state of feeling, as well as a wonderful development of reflective power and expressive grace.

The circumstances attending the composition of the latter piece, are thus impressively described by her mother.

"The last day of the year 1837 arrived. 'Mamma,' said she, 'will you sit up with me to-night until after twelve?' I looked inquiringly. She replied, 'I wish to bid farewell to the present, and to welcome the coming year.' After the family retired, and we had seated ourselves by a cheerful fire, to spend the hours which would intervene until the year 1838 should dawn upon us, she was serious, but not sad; and, as if she had nothing more than usual upon her mind, took some light sewing in her hand, and so interested me by her conversation,

that I scarcely noticed the flight of time. At half-past eleven, she handed me a book, pointing to some interesting article to amuse me, then took her seat at the writing-table, and composed the piece on the departure of the old year, 1837, and the commencement of the new one, 1838. When she had finished the Farewell, except the last verse, it wanted a few minutes of twelve. She rested her arms in silence upon the table, apparently absorbed in meditation. The clock struck—a shade of deep thought passed over her expressive face—she remained solemn and silent, until the last tone had ceased to vibrate, when she again resumed her pen and wrote, 'The bell! it hath ceased.' When the clock struck, I arose from my seat, and stood leaning over the back of her chair, with a mind deeply solemnized by a scene so new and interesting. The words flowed rapidly from her pen, without haste or confusion, and at one o'clock we were quietly in bed."

Reading Lesson CCXXXIV.

Life of Margaret Davidson, continued.

"ON THE DEPARTURE OF THE YEAR 1837, AND THE COMMENCEMENT OF 1838."

"Hark to the house-clock's measured chime,
As it cries to the startled ear,
A dirge for the soul of departing time,
A requiem for the year.'

"Thou art passing away to the mighty past,
Where thy countless brethren sleep;
Till the great archangel's trumpet-blast
Shall waken land and deep.

"Oh! the lovely and beautiful things that lie
On thy cold and motionless breast!
Oh! the tears, the rejoicings, the smiles, the sighs,
Departing with thee to their rest.

"Thou wert ushered to life amid darkness and gloom,
But the cold, icy cloud passed away;
And spring, in her verdure, and freshness, and bloom,
Touched with glory thy mantle of gray.

"The flowerets burst forth in their beauty,—the trees
In their exquisite robes were arrayed;
But thou glidedst along, and the flower and the leaf,
At the sound of thy footsteps, decayed.

"And fairer young blossoms were blooming alone;
And they died at the glance of thine eye:
But a life was within, which should rise o'er thine own,
And a spirit thou couldst not destroy.

"Thou hast folded thy pinions, thy race is complete,
And fulfilled the Creator's behest:
Then, adieu to thee, year of our sorrows and joys,
And peaceful and long be thy rest!

"Farewell! for thy truth-written record is full,
And the page weeps, for sorrow and crime;
Farewell! for the leaf hath shut down on the past,
And concealed the dark annals of time.

"The bell! it hath ceased with its iron tongue,
To ring on the startled ear;
The dirge o'er the grave of the lost one is rung—
All hail to the new-born year!

"All hail to the new-born year!
To the child of hope and fear!
He comes on his car of state,
And weaves our web of fate;
And he opens his robe to receive us all,
And we live or die, and we rise or fall,
In the arms of the new-born year!

"Hope! spread thy soaring wings!
Look forth on the boundless sea,
And trace thy bright and beautiful things
On the veil of the great To Be.

"Build palaces broad as the sky,
And store them with treasures of light;
Let exquisite visions bewilder the eye,
And illumine the darkness of night.

"We are gliding fast from the buried year,
And the present is no more;
But hope, we will borrow thy sparkling gear,
And shroud the future o'er.

"Our tears and sighs shall sleep
In the grave of the silent past;
We will raise up flowers—nor weep
That the air-hues may not last.

"We will dream our dreams of joy;—
Ah, Fear! why darken the scene?
Why sprinkle that ominous tear,
My beautiful visions between?

"Hath not sorrow swift wings of her own,
That thou must assist in her flight?
Is not daylight too rapidly gone,
That thou must urge onward the night?

"Ah! leave me to fancy, to hope,—
For grief will too quickly be here;
Ah! leave me to shadow forth figures of light,
In the mystical robe of the year.

"'Tis true, they may never assume
The substance of pleasure,—the real;—
But believe me, our purest of joy
Consists in the vague—the ideal.

"Then away to some darksome cave,
With thy sisters, the sigh and the tear;—
We will drink, in the crystal wave,
To the health of the new-born year."

Reading Lesson CCXXXV.

Life of Margaret Davidson, continued.

The following extract from a letter of Margaret to a cousin, possesses peculiar interest, as disclosing the most intimate workings of her mind.

"Dear Kate:—This day I am fifteen; and you can, you will, readily pardon and account for the absurd flights of my pen, by supposing that my tutelary spirits, nonsense and folly, have assembled around the being of their creation, and claimed the day as exclusively their own; then I pray you to lay to their account all that I have already scribbled, and believe that, uninfluenced by these grinning deities, I can think and feel, and love, as I love you, with all warmth and sincerity of heart. Do you remember how we used to look forward to sweet fifteen, as the pinnacle of human happiness, the golden age of existence? You have but lately passed that milestone in the highway of life; I have just reached it; but I find myself no better satisfied to stand still, than before, and look forward to the continuance of my journey, with the same ardent longing I felt at fourteen.

"Ah! Kate, here we are, two young travellers, starting forth upon our long pilgrimage, and knowing not whither it may conduct us! *You*, some months my superior, in age, and many years, in acquaintance with society, in external attractions, and all those accomplishments necessary to form an elegant woman. *I*, knowing nothing of life but from books, and a small circle of friends, who love me as I love them; looking upon the *past* as a faded dream, which I shall have time enough to study and expound, when old age and sorrow come on: upon the *present* as

a nursling, a preparative for the *future;* and, upon that future, as what?—a mighty whirlpool, of hopes and fears, of bright anticipations and bitter disappointments, into which I shall soon plunge, and find there, in common with the rest of the world, my happiness or misery."

The approach of spring enkindled the liveliest hopes of recovery in the bosom of the young invalid, and even in those of her family. On their removal, in the month of May, to Saratoga, an additional impulse seemed to have been given to her improvement. But the fatal symptom of returning cough, soon made its appearance. The physician forbade all hope of recovery, and advised only such measures as seemed best adapted to soothe and cheer the remaining hours of life to the sufferer.

She was allowed, accordingly, to amuse herself with superintending a flower-bed in the garden, and, subsequently, to attempt a journey to New York, in company with her brother, notwithstanding a return of hemorrhage which, for a time, caused her family much alarm.

From New York she made an excursion to West Chester, which yielded her much enjoyment, from the beauty of the scenery on the Hudson, the quiet style of the dwellings, and the historical and literary associations connected with the vicinity.

The return home was effected not without difficulty; and serious apprehensions, though still mingled with the earnest wish for life, began now to occupy the mind of Margaret herself. Some of her friends having urged the importance of change of climate, as a means of restoration, the physician was consulted on this point; and his dissuasion of the attempt seemed to make Margaret more fully aware, than hitherto, of her condition; although this consciousness was manifested rather by silence than expression.

The current of her thoughts was still farther evinced in her closer searching of the Scriptures. One of the last pieces she ever wrote, her lines to her mother, indicates, at last, the full consciousness of her condition, and the composure of soul, with which she was now enabled to contemplate her departure from earth.

"TO MY MOTHER."

"O mother, would the power were mine
To wake the strain thou lov'st to hear,
And breathe each trembling, new-born thought,
Within thy fondly listening ear,
As when, in days of health and glee,
My hopes and fancies wandered free!

"But, mother, now a shade has past
Athwart my brightest visions here,—
A cloud of darkest gloom has wrapt
The remnant of my brief career!
No song, no echo, can I win,—
The sparkling fount has died within.

"The torch of earthly hope burns dim,
And Fancy spreads her wings no more;
And, oh! how vain and trivial seem
The pleasures that I prized before!
My soul, with trembling steps and slow,
Is struggling on through doubt and strife;
Oh! may it prove, as time rolls on,
The pathway to eternal life—
Then, when my cares and fears are o'er,
I'll sing thee as in days of yore.

"I said that hope had passed from earth:
'Twas but to fold her wings in Heaven,
To whisper of the soul's new birth,
Of sinners saved and sins forgiven.
When mine are washed in tears away,
Then shall my spirit swell my lay.

"When God shall guide my soul above,
By the soft cords of heavenly love;
When the vain cares of earth depart,
And tuneful voices swell my heart,
Then shall each word, each note I raise,
Burst forth in pealing hymns of praise;
And all, not offered at His shrine,
Dear mother, I will place on thine."

Reading Lesson CCXXXVI.

Life of Margaret Davidson, continued.

Mr. Irving closes his admirable memoir of this lovely being, with the following touching expressions.

"We here conclude this memoir, which, for the most part, as the reader will perceive, is a mere transcript of the records furnished by a mother's heart. We shall not pretend to comment on these records: they need no comment; and they admit no heightening. Indeed, the farther

we have proceeded with our subject, the more has the intellectual beauty and the seraphic purity of the little being we have endeavored to commemorate, broken upon us; and the more have we shrunk at our own unworthiness for such a task. To use one of her own exquisite expressions, she was 'a spirit of heaven fettered by the strong affection of earth;' and the whole of her brief sojourn here, seems to have been a struggle to regain her native skies. We may apply to her a passage from one of her own tender apostrophes to the memory of her sister Lucretia

—— "One who came from heaven, awhile
To bless the mourners here,
Their joys to hallow with her smile,
Their sorrow with her tear:

"Who joined to all the charms of earth
The noblest gifts of heaven;
To whom the Muses, at her birth,
Their sweetest smiles had given:

"Whose eye beamed forth with fancy's ray,
And genius pure and high;
Whose very soul had seemed to bathe
In streams of melody.

"The cheek which once so sweetly beamed,
Grew pallid with decay;
The burning fire within consumed
Its tenement of clay.

"Death, as if fearing to destroy,
Paused o'er her couch awhile;
She gave a tear for those she loved,
Then met him with a smile."

We subjoin three beautiful specimens of the poetic effusions of this brief sojourner on earth, which disclose the workings of her soul, in some of its most characteristic moods,—one, that of calm contemplation; another, that of affectionate endearment; a third, that of earnest aspiration.

"TWILIGHT."

"Twilight! sweet hour of peace,
Now art thou stealing on;
Cease from thy tumult, thought! and fancy, cease!
Day and its cares have gone!
Mysterious hour,
Thy magic power
Steals o'er my heart like music's softest tone.

"The golden sunset hues
Are fading in the west;
The gorgeous clouds their brighter radiance lose,
Folded on evening's breast.
So doth each wayward thought,
From fancy's altar caught,
Fade like thy tints, and muse itself to rest.

"Cold must that bosom be,
Which never felt thy power,
Which never thrilled with tender melody,
At this bewitching hour;
When nature's gentle art
Enchains the pensive heart;
When the breeze sinks to rest, and shuts the fragrant flower.

"It is the hour for pensive thought,
For memory of the past,
For saddened joy, for chastened hope
Of brighter scenes at last;
The soul should raise
Its hymn of praise,
That calm so sweet on life's dull stream is cast.

"Wearied with care, how sweet to hail
Thy shadowy, calm repose,
When all is silent but the whispering gale
Which greets the sleeping rose;
When, as thy shadows blend,
The trembling thoughts ascend,
And borne aloft, the gates of heaven unclose.

"Forth from the warm recess
The chained affections flow,
And peace, and love, and tranquil happiness
Their mingled joys bestow;
Charmed by the mystic spell,
The purer feelings swell,
The nobler powers revive, expand, and glow."

"ON MY MOTHER'S FIFTIETH BIRTHDAY."

"Yes, mother, fifty years have fled,
With rapid footsteps o'er thy head,—
Have passed with all their motley train,
And left thee on thy couch of pain!
How many smiles, and sighs, and tears,
How many hopes, and doubts, and fears,
Have vanished with that lapse of years!
Though past, those hours of pain and grief
Have left their trace on memory's leaf;
Have stamped their footprints on the heart,
In lines which never can depart;
Their influence on the mind, must be
As endless as eternity.

Years, ages, to oblivion roll,
Their memory forms the deathless soul;
They leave their impress as they go,
And shape the mind for joy or woe!
Yes, mother, fifty years have passed,
And brought thee to their close at last.
Oh! that we all could gaze, like thee,
Back on that dark and tideless sea,
And, 'mid its varied records, find
A heart at ease with all mankind,
A firm and self-approving mind!
Grief, that had broken hearts less fine,
Hath only served to strengthen thine;
Time, that doth chill the fancy's play,
Hath kindled thine with purer ray;
And stern disease, whose icy dart
Hath power to chill the shrinking heart,
Hath left thine warm with love and truth,
As in the halcyon days of youth.
Oh! turn not from the meed of praise
A daughter's willing justice pays;
But greet with smiles of love again
This tribute of a daughter's pen."

"ASPIRATIONS."

"Oh! for a something more than this,
To fill the void within my breast;—
A sweet reality of bliss,
A something bright, but unexpressed!

"My spirit longs for something higher
Than life's dull stream can e'er supply;—
Something to feed this inward fire,
This spark, which never more can die.

"I'd hold companionship with all
Of pure, of noble, or divine;
With glowing heart adoring fall,
And kneel at nature's sylvan shrine.

"My soul is like a broken lyre,
Whose loudest, sweetest chord is gone;
A note half trembling on the wire,—
A heart that wants an echoing tone.

"When shall I find this shadowy bliss,
This shapeless phantom of the mind?—
This something words can ne'er express,
So vague, so faint, so undefined?

"Why are these restless, vain desires,
Which always grasp at something more,
To feed the spirit's hidden fires,
Which burn unseen,—unnoticed soar?

"Well might the heathen sage have known
That earth must fail the soul to bind;
That life, and life's tame joys, alone,
Could never chain the ethereal mind."*

* To some minds, the article which closes above, may seem to have been unduly lengthened. We can only offer the brief answer—that our pages are designed for the young, and, in this instance, for female readers,—to whom the quiet unfolding of youthful genius and feminine character, in the seclusion of domestic life, has a charm as powerful as the fascination of greatness and renown, to the admirer of the actions of statesmen and heroes.

PRIMITIVE COLONIAL LIFE.

MODES OF LIVING IN ALBANY.

Reading Lesson CCXXXVII.

Introductory Observations.

The following graphic passages furnish interesting views of the early modes of life, in colonial New York. They will enable our readers to give to our outlines of historical and biographical narrative, that relief and coloring of detail which could not be given in preceding pages, without too frequent interruption to the current of events in history, or the connection of incidents in biography.

The sketches which are here presented, are drawn from Mrs. Grant's vivid descriptions of American scenery and society: she gives these partly from her own observation in Albany and the adjoining region, about a hundred years ago, and, partly, from conversation with persons, whose memory extended to the state of things at the close of the preceding century.

Gardening.—"Not only the training of children, but of plants, such as needed peculiar care or skill to rear them, was the female province. Every one, in town or country, had a garden; but all the more hardy plants grew in the field, in rows, amidst the hills, as they were called, of Indian corn. These lofty plants sheltered them from the sun, while the same hoeing served for both: there, cabbages, potatoes, and other esculent roots, with variety of gourds, grew to a great size, and were of an excellent quality.

"Kidney-beans, asparagus, celery, great variety of salads, and sweet herbs, cucumbers, &c., were only admitted into the garden, into which no foot of man intruded, after it was dug in spring. There were no trees: those grew in the orchard, in high perfection. Straw-

berries, and many high-flavored fruits of the shrub kind, abounded so much in the woods, that they did not think of cultivating them in their gardens, which were extremely neat, but small, and not, by any means, calculated for walking in.

"I think I yet see, what I have so often beheld, both in town and country, a respectable mistress of a family going out to her garden, in an April morning, with her great calash, her little painted basket of seeds, and her rake over her shoulder, to her garden labors. These were, by no means, merely figurative.

'From morn till noon, from noon till dewy eve,'

a woman, in very easy circumstances, and abundantly gentle in form and manners, would sow, and plant, and rake, incessantly. These fair gardeners were also great florists; their emulation and solicitude in this pleasing employment, did indeed produce "flowers worthy of Paradise." Though not set in "curious knots," they were arranged in beds, the varieties of each kind by themselves; this, if not varied and elegant, was at least rich and gay. To the Schuylers this description did not apply; they had gardens, and their gardens were laid out in the European manner.

Interchange of visits between the inhabitants of Albany and those of New York.—"Perhaps I should reserve my description of the manner of living in that country for that period, when, by the exertions of a few humane and enlightened individuals, it assumed a more regular and determinate form. Yet, as the same outline was preserved through all the stages of its progression, I know not but that it may be best to sketch it entirely, before I go farther; that the few and simple facts which my narrative affords may not be clogged by explanations relative to the customs, or to any other peculiarities, which can only be understood by a previous acquaintance with the nature of the country, its political relations, and the manners of the people: my recollection, all this while, has been merely confined to Albany, and its precincts.

"At New York, there was always a governor, a few troops, and a kind of little court kept; there, too, was a mixed, and, in some degree, polished society. To this the accession of many families of French Huguenots,

rather above the middling rank, contributed not a little: those conscientious exiles had more knowledge and piety than any other class of the inhabitants; their religion seemed indeed endeared to them, by what they had suffered for adhering to it. Their number and wealth were such as enabled them to build, not only a street, but a very respectable church, in the new city. In this place of worship, within my recollection, service continued to be celebrated in the French language; though the original congregation was, by that time, much blended in the mass of general society.

"It was the custom of the inhabitants of the upper settlement, who had any pretensions to superior culture or polish, among which number Mr. Schuyler stood foremost, to go, once a year, to New York, where all the law courts were held, and all the important business of the province was transacted. Here, too, they sent their children occasionally to reside with their relations, and to learn the more polished manners and language of the capital. The inhabitants of that city, on the other hand, delighted in a summer excursion to Albany. The beautiful, and, in some places, highly singular banks of the river, rendered a voyage to its source both amusing and interesting, while the primitive manners of the inhabitants diverted the gay and idle, and pleased the thoughtful and speculative."

Reading Lesson CCXXXVIII.

Albany, in early times.—"The city of Albany stretched along the banks of the Hudson; one very wide and long street lay parallel to the river; the intermediate space between it and the shore, being occupied by gardens. A small but steep hill rose above the centre of the town, on which stood a fort, intended (but very ill adapted,) for the defence of the place, and of the neighboring country. From the foot of this hill, another street was built, sloping pretty rapidly down, till it joined the one before mentioned, that ran along the river. This street was still wider than the other; it was only paved on each side, the middle being occupied by public edifices. These consisted of a market-place, or guard-house, a town hall, and the English and Dutch churches.

"The English church, belonging to the episcopal persuasion, and in the diocese of the bishop of London, stood at the foot of the hill, at the upper end of the street. The Dutch church was situated at the bottom of the descent where the street terminated; two irregular streets, not so broad, but equally long, ran parallel to those; and a few even ones opened between them.

"The town, in proportion to its population, occupied a great space of ground. This city, in short, was a kind of semi-rural establishment; every house had its garden, well, and a little green behind; before every door a tree was planted, rendered interesting by being coëval with some beloved member of the family: many of their trees were of a prodigious size and extraordinary beauty, but without regularity; every one planting the kind that best pleased him, or which he thought would afford the most agreeable shade to the open portico at his door, which was surrounded by seats, and ascended by a few steps. It was in these that each domestic group was seated, in summer evenings, to enjoy the balmy twilight, or the serenely clear moonlight.

"Each family had a cow, fed in a common pasture, at the end of the town. In the evening, the herd returned all together, of their own accord, with their tinkling bells hung at their necks, along the wide and grassy street, to their wonted sheltering trees, to be milked at their masters' doors.

"Nothing could be more pleasing to a simple and benevolent mind, than to see thus, at one view, all the inhabitants of a town, which contained not one very rich or very poor, very knowing or very ignorant, very rude or very polished, individual; to see all these children of nature enjoying in easy indolence, or social intercourse,

'The cool, the fragrant, and the *dusky* hour,'

clothed in the plainest habits, and with minds as undisguised and artless. These primitive beings were dispersed in porches, grouped, according to similarity of years and inclinations. At one door, were young matrons; at another, the elders of the people; at a third, the youths and maidens, gayly chatting or singing together; while the children played round the trees, or waited by the cows, for the chief ingredient of their frugal supper, which they

generally ate sitting on the steps, in the open air. This picture, so familiar to my imagination, has led me away from my purpose, which was to describe the rural economy, and modes of living in this patriarchal city.

"At one end of the town, as I observed before, was a common pasture, where all the cattle belonging to the inhabitants grazed together. At the other end of the town, was a fertile plain along the river, three miles in length, and near a mile broad. This was all divided into lots, where every inhabitant raised Indian corn sufficient for the food of two or three slaves, (the greatest number that each family ever possessed,) and for his horses, pigs, and poultry; their flour and other grain they purchased from farmers in the vicinity. Above the town, a long stretch to the westward was occupied first by sandy hills, on which grew bilberries of uncommon size and flavor, in prodigious quantities; beyond, rose heights of a poor hungry soil, thinly covered with stunted pines, or dwarf oak. Yet, in this comparatively barren tract, there were several wild and picturesque spots, where small brooks, running in rich and deep bottoms, nourished, on their banks, every vegetable beauty: there, some of the most industrious early settlers had cleared the luxuriant wood from these charming glens, and built neat cottages for their slaves, surrounded with little gardens and orchards, sheltered from every blast, wildly picturesque, and richly productive.

"Those small sequestered vales had an attraction that I know not how to describe, and which probably resulted from the air of deep repose that reigned there, and the strong contrast which they exhibited to the surrounding sterility. One of these was, in my time, inhabited by a hermit. He was a Frenchman, and did not seem to inspire much veneration among the Albanians. They imagined, or had heard, that he retired to that solitude, in remorse for some fatal duel in which he had been engaged; and considered him as an idolater, because he had an image of the Virgin in his hut. I think he retired to Canada, at last; but I remember being ready to worship him for the sanctity with which my imagination invested him, and being cruelly disappointed because I was not permitted to visit him. These cottages were, in summer, occupied by some of the negroes, who cultivated the grounds about them, and served as a place of joyful liberty to the children

of the family, on holidays, and as a nursery for the young negroes, whom it was the custom to rear very tenderly, and instruct very carefully."

Reading Lesson CCXXXIX

Treatment of children.—"The girls, from the example of their mothers, rather than any compulsion, very early became notable and industrious, being constantly employed in knitting stockings, and making clothes for the family and slaves: they even made all the boys' clothes. This was the more necessary, as all articles of clothing were extremely dear. Though all the necessaries of life, and some luxuries, abounded; money, as yet, was a scarce commodity.

"This industry was the more to be admired, as children were there indulged to a degree that, in our vitiated state of society, would have rendered them good for nothing. But there, where ambition, vanity, and the more turbulent passions were scarcely awakened; where pride, founded on birth, or any external preëminence, was hardly known; and where the affections flourished fair and vigorous, unchecked by the thorns and thistles with which our minds are cursed in a more advanced state of refinement, affection restrained parents from keeping their children at a distance, and inflicting harsh punishments. But then they did not treat them like apes or parrots, by teaching them to talk with borrowed words and ideas, and afterwards gratifying their own vanity by exhibiting these premature wonders to company, or repeating their sayings. They were tenderly cherished, and early taught that they owed all their enjoyments to the Divine Source of beneficence, to whom they were finally accountable for their actions.

"For the rest, they were very much left to nature, and permitted to range about, at full liberty, in their earliest years, covered in summer with some slight and cheap garb, which merely kept the sun from them, and in winter with some warm habit, in which convenience only was consulted. Their dress of ceremony was never put on but when their '*company*'* were assembled. They were

* The allusion above is to the custom of children associating in limited groups or circles, which were called companies.

extremely fond of their children; but, luckily for the latter, never dreamed of being vain of their immature wit and parts, which accounts, in some measure, for the great scarcity of coxcombs among them. The children returned the fondness of their parents with such tender affection, that they feared giving them pain as much as ours do punishment, and very rarely wounded their feelings by neglect, or rude answers. Yet the boys were often wilful and giddy, at a certain age; the girls being sooner tamed and domesticated.

"These youths were apt, whenever they could carry a gun,—which they did at a very early period,—to follow some favorite negro to the woods, and, while he was employed in felling trees, to range, the whole day, in search of game, to the neglect of all intellectual improvement; and they thus contracted a love of savage liberty, which might, and, in some instances, did, degenerate into licentious and idle habits. Indeed, there were three stated periods in the year, when, for a few days, young and old, masters and slaves, were abandoned to unruly enjoyment, and neglected every serious occupation for pursuits of this nature."

Game.—"Along the sea-banks, in all these southern provinces, are low, sandy lands, which never were nor will be inhabited, covered with the berry-bearing myrtle, from which wax is extracted, fit for candles. Behind these banks are woods, and unwholesome swamps, of great extent. The myrtle groves formerly mentioned, afford shelter and food to countless multitudes of pigeons, in winter, when their fruit is in season; while wild geese and ducks, in numbers nearly as great, pass the winter in the impenetrable swamps behind.

"Some time in the month of April, a general emigration takes place to the northward, first of the geese and ducks, and then of the pigeons; they keep the direction of the sea-coast, till they come to the mouths of the great rivers, and then follow their course, till they reach the great lakes in the interior, where nature has provided for them with the same liberality as in their winter haunts. On the banks of these lakes, there are large tracts of ground, covered with a plant taller and more luxuriant than the wild carrot, but something resembling it, on the seeds of which the pigeons feed, all the summer, while they are rearing their young. When they pass in spring,

which they always do in the same track, they go in great numbers, and are very fat. Their progression northward and southward, begins always about the vernal and autumnal equinoxes; and it is this that renders the carnage so great, when they pass over inhabited districts. They begin to fly in the dawn, and are never seen after nine or ten o'clock in the morning; possibly feeding and resting in the woods, all the rest of the day. If the morning be dry and windy, all the fowlers,—that is, everybody, —are disappointed; for then the pigeons fly so high that no shot can reach them; but, in a cloudy morning, the carnage is incredible; and it is singular that their migration falls out at the times of the year when the weather, even in this serene climate, is generally cloudy.

"This migration, as it passed by, occasioned, as I said before, a total relaxation from all employments, and a kind of drunken gayety, though it was rather slaughter than sport; and, for above a fortnight, pigeons in pies and soups, and every way they could be dressed, were the food of the inhabitants. These were immediately succeeded by wild geese and ducks, which concluded the carnival for that season, which was to be renewed in September.

"About six weeks after the passage of these birds, sturgeons of a large size, and in great quantity, made their appearance in the river. Again the same ardor seemed to pervade all ages, in pursuit of this new object. Every family had a canoe; and, on this occasion, all were launched; and these persevering fishers traced the course of the sturgeon up the river; followed them by torch light; and often continued two nights upon the water; never returning till they had loaded their canoes with this valuable fish, and many other very excellent in their kinds, that come up the river, usually, at the same time. The sturgeon not only furnished them with good part of their food, in the summer months, but was pickled or dried, for future use or exportation."

Reading Lesson CCXL.

An Albanian youth, setting out in life.—"When one of the *boys*,—as the young men were called,—was disposed to marry, his fowling-piece and fishing-rod were at once relinquished. He demanded of his father forty or, at most,

fifty dollars, a negro boy, and a canoe; all of a sudden, he assumed the brow of care and solicitude, and began to smoke,—a precaution absolutely necessary to repel aguish damps, and troublesome insects. He arrayed himself in a habit very little differing from that of the aborigines, into whose bounds he was about to penetrate, and, in short, commenced Indian trader. That strange amphibious animal, who, uniting the acute senses, the strong instincts, and the unconquerable patience and fortitude of the savage, with the art, policy, and inventions of the European, encountered, in the pursuit of gain, dangers and difficulties equal to those described in the romantic legends of chivalry.

"The small bark canoe, in which this hardy adventurer embarked himself, his fortune, and his faithful *squire*, (who was generally born in the same house, and predestined to his service,) was launched amidst the tears and prayers of his female relations, among whom was generally included his destined bride, who well knew herself to be the motive of this perilous adventure.

Outfit of an Indian trader.—"The canoe was entirely filled with coarse strouds and blankets, guns, powder, beads, &c., suited to the various wants and fancies of the natives. One pernicious article was never wanting, and often made a great part of the cargo. This was ardent spirits, for which the natives too early acquired a relish, and the possession of which always proved dangerous, and sometimes fatal to the traders. The Mohawks bring their furs and other peltry habitually to the stores of their wonted friends and patrons. But it was not in that easy and safe direction that these trading adventures extended.

Toils of the Indian trader's life.—"The canoe generally steered northward, towards the Canadian frontier. They passed by the Flats and Stonehook, in the outset of their journey. Then commenced their toils and dangers, at the famous waterfall called the Cohoes, ten miles above Albany, where three rivers, uniting their streams into one, dash over a rocky shelf, and, falling into a gulf below, with great violence, raise clouds of mist, bedecked with splendid rainbows. This was the Rubicon which they had to cross, before they plunged into pathless woods, ingulfing swamps, and lakes, the opposite shores of which the eye could not reach.

"At the Cohoes, on account of the obstruction formed by the torrent, they unloaded their canoe, and carried it, above a mile farther, upon their shoulders, returning again for the cargo, which they were obliged to transport in the same manner. This was but a prelude to labors and dangers incredible to those who dwell at ease. Farther on, much longer carrying-places frequently recurred; where they had the vessel and cargo to drag through thickets impervious to the day, abounding with snakes and wild beasts, which are always to be found on the side of rivers.

Scanty supplies of food.—"Their provision of food was necessarily small, from fear of overloading the slender and unstable conveyance already crowded with goods. A little dried beef and Indian-corn meal was their whole stock; though they formerly enjoyed both plenty and variety. They were, in a great measure, obliged to depend upon their own skill in hunting and fishing, and on the hospitality of the Indians: for hunting, indeed, they had small leisure, their time being sedulously employed by the obstacles that retarded their progress. In their slight and fragile canoes, they often had to cross great lakes, on which the wind raised a terrible surge.

Customary resorts.—"Afraid of going into the track of the French traders, who were always dangerous rivals, and often declared enemies, they durst not follow the direction of the river St. Lawrence; but, in search of distant territories and unknown tribes, were wont to deviate to the east and southwest, forcing their painful way towards the source of 'rivers unknown to song,' whose winding course was often interrupted by shallows, and, oftener still, by fallen trees of great magnitude, lying across, which it was requisite to cut through, with their hatchets, before they could proceed. Small rivers which wind through fertile valleys, in this country, are peculiarly liable to this obstruction. The chestnut and hickory grow to so large a size in this kind of soil, that, in time, they become top-heavy, and are then the first prey to the violence of the winds; and thus falling, form a kind of accidental bridge over these rivers.

Night in the woods.—"When the toils and dangers of the day were over, the still greater terrors of the night commenced. In this, which might literally be styled the howling wilderness, they were forced to sleep in the open

air, which was frequently loaded with the humid evaporation of swamps, ponds, and redundant vegetation. Here the axe must be again employed, to procure the materials of a large fire, even in the warmest weather. This precaution was necessary, that the flies and mosquetoes might be expelled by the smoke, and that the wolves and bears might be deterred by the flame, from encroaching on their place of rest. But the light which afforded them protection, created fresh disturbance.

> 'Loud as the wolves on Orca's stormy steep,
> Howl to the roarings of the northern deep,'

the American wolves howl to the fires kindled to affright them, watching, the whole night, on the surrounding hills, to keep up a concert, which truly 'rendered night hideous;' meantime the bullfrogs, terrible though harmless, and smaller kinds, of various tones, and in countless numbers, seemed, all night, calling to each other from opposite swamps, and formed the most dismal assemblage of discordant sounds.

"Though serpents abounded very much in the woods, few of them were noxious. The rattlesnake, the only dangerous reptile, was not so frequently met with as in the neighboring provinces; and the remedy which nature has bestowed, as an antidote to his bite, was very generally known.

Scenery.—"The beauties of rural and varied scenery seldom compensated the traveller for the dangers of his journey. 'In the close prison of innumerous boughs,' and on ground thick with underwood, there was little of landscape open to the eye. The banks of streams and lakes, no doubt, afforded a rich variety of trees and plants; the former, of a most majestic size, the latter, of singular beauty and luxuriance; but, otherwise, they only travelled through a grove of chestnuts or oak, to arrive at another of maple, or poplar, or a vast stretch of pines and other evergreens. If, by chance, they arrived at a hill crowned with cedars, which afforded some command of prospect, still the gloomy and interminable forest, only varied with different shades of green, met the eye, whichever way turned, while the mind, repelled by solitude so vast, and silence so profound, turned inward on itself. Nature here wore a veil rich and grand, but impenetrable; at least, this was the impression likely to be made on a European

mind; but a native American, familiar from childhood with the productions and inhabitants of the woods, sought the nuts and wild fruits with which they abounded, the nimble squirrel in all its varied forms, the architect beaver, the savage raccoon, and the stately elk, where we should see nothing but awful solitudes, untrod by human foot.

Practical education.—"It is inconceivable how well these young travellers, taught by their Indian friends, and the experimental knowledge of their fathers, understood every soil and its productions. A boy of twelve years old would astonish you with his accurate knowledge of plants, their properties, and their relation to the soil and to each other. 'Here,' said he, 'is a wood of red oak: when it is grubbed up, this will be loam and sand, and make good Indian-corn ground. This chestnut wood abounds with strawberries, and is the very best soil for wheat. The poplar wood yonder is not worth clearing; the soil is always wet and cold. There is a hickory wood, where the soil is always rich and deep, and does not run out; such and such plants that dye blue, or orange, grow under it.'

"This is merely a slight epitome of the wide views of nature that are laid open to these people, from their very infancy, the acquisition of this kind of knowledge being one of their first amusements; yet those who were capable of astonishing you by the extent and variety of this local skill, in objects so varied and so complicated, never heard of a petal, corolla, or stigma, in their lives, nor even of the strata of that soil, with the productions and properties of which they were so intimately acquainted."

Reading Lesson CCXLI.

School of observation.—"Without compass, or guide of any kind, the traders steered through these pathless forests. In those gloomy days, when the sun is not visible, or in winter, when the falling snows obscured his beams, they made an incision on the bark, on the different sides of a tree: that on the north, was invariably thicker than the other, and covered with moss in much greater quantity; and this never-failing indication of the polar influence, was to those sagacious travellers, a sufficient guide. They had, indeed, several subordinate monitors. Knowing, so well as they did, the quality of the soil, by the trees or

plants most prevalent, they could avoid a swamp, or approach, with certainty, to a river or high ground, if such was their wish, by means that, to us, would seem incomprehensible. Even the savages seldom visited these districts, except in the dead of winter; they had towns, as they called their summer dwellings, on the banks of the lakes and rivers in the interior, where their great fishing-places were. In the winter, their grand hunting parties were in places more remote from our boundaries, where the deer, and other larger animals, took shelter from the neighborhood of man.

School of experience.—"These single adventurers sought the Indians in their spring haunts, as soon as the rivers were open: there they had new dangers to apprehend. It is well known, that, among the natives of America, revenge was actually a virtue, and retaliation a positive duty. While faith was kept with these people, they never became aggressors. But the Europeans, by the force of bad example, and strong liquors, seduced them from their wonted probity. Yet, from the first, their notion of justice and revenge, was of that vague and general nature, that, if they considered themselves injured, or if one of their tribe had been killed by an inhabitant of any one of our settlements, they considered any individual of our nation as a proper subject for retribution. This seldom happened among our allies; indeed, never, but when the injury was obvious, and our people very culpable. But the avidity of gain often led our traders to deal with Indians among whom the French possessed a degree of influence, which produced a smothered animosity to our nation. When, at length, after conquering numberless obstacles, they arrived at the place of their destination, these daring adventurers found occasion for no little address, patience, and, indeed, courage, before they could dispose of their cargo, and return safely with the profits.

Self-reliance.—"The successful trader had now laid the foundation of his fortune, and approved himself worthy of her for whose sake he encountered all these dangers. It is utterly inconceivable, how even a single season, spent in this manner, ripened the mind, and changed the whole appearance, nay, the very character of the countenance of these demi-savages; for such they seem on returning from among their friends in the forests. Lofty,

sedate, and collected, they seem masters of themselves, and independent of others; though, sunburnt and austere, one scarcely knows them till they unbend.

Fresh adventures.—"The joy that the return of these youths occasioned, was proportioned to the anxiety their perilous journey had produced. In some instances, the union of the betrothed immediately took place, before the next career of gainful hardships commenced. But the more cautious went to New York, in winter, disposed of their peltry, purchased a larger cargo, and another slave and canoe. The next year, they laid out the profits of their former adventures in flour and provisions, the staple of the province; this they disposed of at the Bermuda islands, where they generally purchased one of those light-sailing cedar schooners, for building of which those islanders are famous, and, proceeding to the Leeward islands, loaded it with a cargo of rum, sugar, and molasses.

Settling in life.—"They were now ripened into men, and considered as active and useful members of society, possessing a stake in the common weal. The young adventurer had generally finished this process by the same time he was one or, at most, two and twenty. He now married, or if married before, which pretty often was the case, brought home his wife to a house of his own. Either he kept his schooner, and, loading her with produce, sailed up and down the river, all summer, and, all winter, disposed of the cargoes he obtained in exchange, to more distant settlers; or he sold her, purchased European goods, and kept a store. Otherwise, he settled in the country, and became as diligent in his agricultural pursuits as if he had never known any other.

"It was in this manner that the young colonist made the transition from boyhood to manhood; from the disengaged and careless bachelor, to the provident and thoughtful father of a family; and thus was spent that period of life so critical in polished society, to those whose condition exempts them from manual labor.

"Such was the manner in which those colonists began life; nor must it be thought that those were mean or uninformed persons. Patriots, magistrates, generals, those who were afterwards wealthy, powerful, and distinguished, all, except a few elder brothers, occupied by

their possessions at home, set out in the same manner; and, in after-life, even in the most prosperous circumstances, they delighted to recount the humble toils and destiny obscure of their early years."

Reading Lesson CCXLII.

Scene of Indian trade.

"*Indian.*—Brother, I am come to trade with you; but I forewarn you to be more moderate in your demands than formerly."

"*Trader.*—Why, brother, are not my goods of equal value with those you had last year?"

"*Indian.*—Perhaps they may be; but mine are more valuable because more scarce. The Great Spirit, who has withheld from you strength and ability to provide food and clothing for yourselves, has given you cunning and art to make guns and provide scaura;* and, by speaking smooth words to simple men, when they have swallowed madness, you have by little and little purchased their hunting-grounds, and made them corn-lands. Thus the beavers grow more scarce, and deer fly farther back; yet, after I have reserved skins for my mantle, and the clothing of my wife, I will exchange the rest."

"*Trader.*—Be it so, brother; I came not to wrong you, or take your furs against your will. It is true the beavers are few, and you go farther for them. Come, brother, let us deal fair first, and smoke friendly afterwards. Your last gun cost fifty beaver-skins; you shall have this for forty; and you shall give marten and raccoon skins, in the same proportion, for powder and shot."

"*Indian.*—Well, brother, that is equal. Now for two silver bracelets, with long pendent ear-rings of the same, such as you sold to Cardarani, in the sturgeon month,† last year. How much will you demand?"

"*Trader.*—The skins of two deer for the bracelets, and those of two fawns for the ear-rings."

"*Indian.*—That is a great deal; but wampum grows scarce, and silver never rusts. Here are the skins."

* Scaura is the Indian name for rum.

† The Indians appropriate a month to catch fish or animals, which is, at that time, the predominant object of pursuit; as the bear month, the beaver month, &c.

"*Trader.*—Do you buy any more? Here are knives, hatchets, and beads of all colors."

"*Indian.*—I will have a knife and a hatchet; but must not take more: the rest of the skins will be little enough to clothe the women and children, and buy wampum. Your beads are of no value; no warrior who has slain a wolf will wear them."*

"*Trader.*—Here are many things good for you, which you have not skins to buy; here is a looking-glass, and here is a brass kettle, in which your woman may boil her maize, her beans, and above all her maple sugar. Here are silver broaches, and here are pistols for the youths."

"*Indian.*—The skins I can spare will not purchase them."

"*Trader.*—Your will determines, brother; but, next year, you will want nothing but powder and shot, having already purchased your gun and ornaments. If you will purchase from me a blanket to wrap round you, a shirt and blue stroud for under garments to yourself and your woman, and the same for leggings, this will pass the time, and save you the great trouble of dressing the skins, making the thread, &c., for your clothing; which will give you more fishing and shooting time, in the sturgeon and bear months."

"*Indian.*—But the custom of my fathers!"

"*Trader.*—You will not break the custom of your fathers by being thus clad, for a single year. They did not refuse those things which were never offered to them."

"*Indian.*—For this year, brother, I will exchange my skins; in the next, I shall provide apparel more befitting a warrior. One pack alone I will reserve to dress for a future occasion. The summer must not find a warrior idle."

"The terms being adjusted and the bargain concluded, the trader thus shows his gratitude for liberal dealing.

"*Trader.*—Corlaer has forbid bringing scaura to steal away the wisdom of the warriors; but we white men are

* Indians have a great contempt, comparatively, for the beads we send; they consider them as only fit for those plebeians who cannot by their exertions win any better. They estimate them, compared with their own wampum, as we do pearls compared with paste.

weak and cold; we bring kegs for ourselves, lest death arise from the swamps. We will not sell scaura; but you shall taste some of ours, in return for the venison with which you have feasted us."

"*Indian.*—Brother, we will drink moderately."

"A bottle was then given to the warrior, by way of present, which he was advised to keep long, but found it irresistible. He soon returned with the reserved pack of skins; earnestly urging the trader to give him beads, silver, broaches, and above all, scaura, to their full amount. This, with much affected reluctance at parting with the private stock, was, at last, yielded. The warriors now, after giving loose for awhile to frantic mirth, began the warwhoop, made the woods resound with infuriate howlings, and having exhausted their dear-bought draught, probably determined, in contempt of that probity which, at all other times, they rigidly observed, to plunder the instrument of their pernicious gratification. He, well aware of the consequences, took care to remove himself and his goods to some other place; and a renewal of the same scene ensued. Where, all this time, were the women, whose gentle counsels might have prevented these excesses? Alas! unrestrained by that delicacy which is certainly one of the best fruits of refinement, they shared in them, and sunk sooner under them.

"A long and deep sleep generally succeeded; from which they awoke in a state of dejection and chagrin, such as no Indian had ever experienced, under any other circumstances. They felt as Milton describes Adam and Eve to have done, after their transgression. Exhausted, and forlorn, and stung with the consciousness of error and dependence, they had neither the means nor the desire of exercising their wonted summer occupations with spirit. Vacancy produced languor; and languor made them again wish for the potion which gave temporary cheerfulness. They carried their fish to the next fort or habitation, to barter for rum. This brought on days of frenzy, succeeded by torpor.

"When again roused, by want, to exertion, they saw the season passing without the usual provision; and, by an effort of persevering industry, tried to make up for past negligence; and then, worn out by exertion, sunk into supine indolence, till the approach of winter called them

to hunt the bear; and the arrival of that (their busy season) urged on their distant excursions in pursuit of deer. Then they resumed their wonted character, and became what they used to be; but, conscious that acquired tastes and wants, which they had lost the habit of supplying themselves, would throw them again on the traders for clothing, &c., they were themselves outstraining every sinew, to procure enough of peltry to answer their purpose, and to gratify their newly-acquired appetites. Thus, the energy, both of their characters and constitutions, was gradually undermined; and their numbers as effectually diminished, as if they had been wasted by war."

Reading Lesson CCXLIII.

Social intercourse.—"While on the subject of Albanian manners, I must describe their amusements, and some other peculiarities in their modes of life. When I say their amusements, I mean those in which they differed from most other people. Such as they had in common with others, require no description. They were exceedingly social, and visited each other very frequently, besides the regular assembling together, in their porches, every fine evening. Of the more substantial luxuries of the table they knew little, and of the formal and ceremonious parts of good breeding, still less.

Visiting.—"If you went to spend a day anywhere, you were received in a manner we should think very cold. No one rose to welcome you; no one wondered you had not come sooner, or apologized for any deficiency in your entertainment. Dinner, which was very early, was served exactly in the same manner as if there were only the family. The house, indeed, was so exquisitely neat and well regulated, that you could not surprise these people; they saw each other so often and so easily, that intimates made no difference. Of strangers they were shy; not, by any means, from want of hospitality, but from a consciousness that people who had little to value themselves on but their knowledge of the modes and ceremonies of polished life, disliked their sincerity, and despised their simplicity. If you showed no insolent wonder, but easily and quietly adopted their manners, you would receive from them not only very great civility, but much essential kindness. Who-

ever has not common sense and common gratitude enough to pay this tribute of accommodation to those among whom he is destined, for the time, to live, must of course be an insulated, discontented being, and come home railing at the people whose social comforts he disdained to partake.

Tea.—"After sharing this plain and unceremonious dinner, which might, by the by, chance to be a very good one, but was invariably that which was meant for the family, tea was served in, at a very early hour. And here it was that the distinction shown to strangers, commenced. Tea, here, was a perfect regale, being served up with various sorts of cakes unknown to us, cold pastry, and great quantities of sweetmeats and preserved fruits of various kinds, and plates of hickory and other nuts ready cracked. In all manner of confectionary and pastry these people excelled; and having fruit, in great plenty, which costs them nothing, and getting sugar home, at an easy rate, in return for their exports to the West Indies, the quantity of these articles used in families, otherwise plain and frugal, was astonishing. Tea was never unaccompanied with one of these petty articles; but for strangers a great display was made.

Supper.—"If you stayed supper, you were sure of a most substantial, though plain one. In this meal, they departed, out of compliment to the strangers, from their usual simplicity. Having dined between twelve and one, you were quite prepared for it. You had either game or poultry roasted, and always shellfish in the season; you had also fruit, in abundance. All this, with much neatness, but no form. The seeming coldness with which you were first received, wore off by degrees. They could not accommodate their topics to you, and scarcely attempted it. But the conversation of the old, though limited in regard to subjects, was rational and easy, and had in it an air of originality and truth, not without its attractions. That of the young was natural and playful, yet full of localities, which lessened its interest to a stranger, but were extremely amusing when you became one of the initiated.

An Albanian picnic, in olden time.—"Their diversions, —I mean those of the younger class,—were marked by a simplicity, which, to strangers, appeared rude and childish.

In spring, eight or ten of one company, or related to each other, young men and maidens, would set out together in a canoe, on a kind of rural excursion, of which amusement was the object. Yet so fixed were their habits of industry, that they never failed to carry their work-baskets with them, not as a form, but as an ingredient necessarily mixed with their pleasures. They went without attendants; and steered a devious course of four, five, or perhaps more miles, till they arrived at some of the beautiful islands with which this fine river abounded, or at some sequestered spot on its banks, where delicious wild fruits, or particular conveniences for fishing, afforded some attraction. There they generally arrived by nine or ten o'clock, having set out in the cool and early hour of sunrise. Often they met another party, going, perhaps, to a different place, and joined them, or induced them to take their route. A basket with tea, sugar, and the other usual provisions for breakfast, with the apparatus for cooking it; a little rum and fruit for making cool weak punch, the usual beverage in the middle of the day, and, now and then, some cold pastry, were the sole provisions; for the great affair was to depend on the sole exertions of the *boys* in procuring fish, wild ducks, &c., for their dinner. They were all, like Indians, ready and dexterous with the axe, gun, &c.

"Whenever they arrived at their destination, they sought out a dry and beautiful spot, opposite to the river, and, in an instant, with their axes cleared so much superfluous shade or shrubbery, as left a semicircular opening, above which they bent and twined the boughs, so as to form a pleasant bower, while the girls gathered dry branches, to which one of the youths soon set fire with gunpowder; and the breakfast, a very regular and cheerful one, occupied an hour or two: the young men then set out to fish, or perhaps to shoot birds, and the maidens sat busily down to their work; singing and conversing with all the ease and gayety which the benign serenity of the atmosphere, and the beauty of the surrounding scene, were calculated to inspire. After the sultry hours had been thus employed, the *boys* brought their tribute from the river or the wood, and found a rural meal prepared by their fair companions, among whom were generally their sisters and the chosen of their hearts. After dinner, they all set

out together to gather wild strawberries, or whatever other fruit was in season; for it was accounted a reproach to come home empty-handed. When weary of this amusement, they either drank tea in their bower, or returning, landed at some friend's on the way, to partake of that refreshment. Here, indeed,

> 'Youth's free spirit, innocently gay,
> Enjoyed the most that innocence could give.'"

Reading Lesson CCXLIV.

Sleighing.—"In winter, the river, frozen to a great depth, formed the principal road through the country, and was the scene of all those amusements of skating and sledge races, common to the north of Europe. They used, in great parties, to visit their friends at a distance, and, having an excellent and hardy breed of horses, flew from place to place, over the snow or ice, in these sledges, with incredible rapidity; stopping, a little while, at every house they came to, where they were always well received, whether acquainted with the owners or not. The night never impeded these travellers; for the atmosphere was so pure and serene, and the snow so reflected the moon and starlight, that the nights exceeded the days in beauty.

"*Coasting.*"—"In town, all the *boys* were extravagantly fond of a diversion, that to us, would appear a very odd and childish one. The great street of the town, in the midst of which, as has been formerly mentioned, stood all the churches and public buildings, sloped down from the hill on which the fort stood, towards the river; between the buildings was an unpaved carriage-road, the footpath beside the houses being the only part of the street which was paved. In winter, this sloping descent, continued for more than a quarter of a mile, acquired firmness from the frost, and became extremely slippery. Then the amusement commenced. Every boy and youth in town, from eight to eighteen, had a little low sledge, made with a rope like a bridle to the front, by which one could drag it by the hand. On this, one or two, at most, could sit; and the sloping descent being made as smooth as a looking-glass, by sliders' sledges, &c., perhaps a hundred at once set out in succession, from the top of the street, each seated in his little sledge with the rope in his hand, which,

drawn to the right or left, served to guide him. He pushed it off with a little stick, as one would launch a boat; and then, with the most astonishing velocity, precipitated by the weight of the owner, the little machine glided past, and was at the lower end of the street, in an instant.

"What could be so peculiarly delightful in this rapid and smooth descent, I could never discover;* yet, in a more retired place, and on a smaller scale, I have tried the amusement; but to a young Albanian, sleighing, as he called it, was one of the first joys of life, though attended with the drawback of dragging his sledge to the top of the declivity, every time he renewed his flight; for such it might well be called. In the managing this little machine, some dexterity was necessary: an unskilful Phæton was sure to fall. The vehicle was so low, that a fall was attended with little danger, yet with much disgrace; for a universal laugh, from all sides, assailed the fallen charioteer. This laugh was from a very full chorus; for the constant and rapid succession of the train, where every one had a brother, lover, or kinsman, brought all the young people in town to the porticoes, where they used to sit, wrapped in furs, till ten or eleven at night, engrossed by the delectable spectacle.

"What magical attraction it could possibly have, I never could find out; but I have known an Albanian, after residing some years in Britain, and becoming a polished fine gentleman, join the sport, and slide down with the rest. Perhaps, after all our laborious refinements in amusements, being easily pleased is one of the great secrets of happiness, as far as it is attainable in this 'frail and feverish being.'

Winter scene on the Hudson.—"The sublime spectacle of the ice breaking up on the river, is an object that fills and elevates the mind with ideas of power, and grandeur, and, indeed, magnificence; before which, all the triumphs of human art sink into contemptible insignificance. This noble object of animated greatness, for such it seemed, I never missed; its approach being announced, like a loud and long peal of thunder, the whole population of Albany were down at the river-side in a moment; and if it happened, as was often the case, in the morning, there could

* Mrs. Grant, we must remember, was not, in this affair, "native, and to the manner born."

not be a more grotesque assemblage. No one who had a nightcap on, waited to put it off; as for waiting for one's cloak, or gloves, it was a thing out of the question; you caught the thing next you, that would wrap round you, and ran. In the way, you saw every door open, and pails, baskets, &c., without number, set down in the street. It was a perfect saturnalia. People never dreamed of being obeyed by their slaves, till the ice was past. The houses were left quite empty; the meanest slave, the youngest child, all were to be found on the shore. Such as could walk, ran; and they that could not, were carried by those whose duty would have been to stay, and attend them.

"When arrived at the *show-place*, unlike the audience collected to witness any spectacle of human invention, the multitude, with their eyes all bent one way, stood immovable, and silent as death, till the tumult ceased, and the mighty commotion was passed by; then every one tried to give vent to the vast conceptions with which his mind had been distended. Every child, and every negro, was sure to say, 'Is not this like the day of judgment?' and what they said, every one else thought.

"Now to describe this, is impossible; but I mean to account, in some degree, for it. The ice, which had been, all winter, very thick, instead of diminishing, as might be expected, in spring, still increased, as the sunshine came, and the days lengthened. Much snow fell in February, which, melted by the heat of the sun, was stagnant, for a day, on the surface of the ice, and then by the night frosts, which were still severe, was added, as a new accession to the thickness of it, above the former surface. This was so often repeated, that, in some years, the ice gained two feet in thickness, after the heat of the sun became such as one would have expected should have entirely dissolved it. So conscious were the natives of the safety this accumulation of ice afforded, that the sledges continued to drive on the ice, when the trees were budding, and every thing looked like spring; nay, when there was so much melted on the surface, that the horses were knee-deep in water, while travelling on it, and portentous cracks, on every side, announced the approaching rupture. This could scarce have been produced by the mere influence of the sun, till midsummer. It was the swelling of the waters

under the ice, increased by rivulets, enlarged by melted snows, that produced this catastrophe; for such the awful concussion made it appear. The prelude to the general bursting of this mighty mass, was a fracture, lengthwise, in the middle of the stream, produced by the effort of the imprisoned waters, now increased too much to be contained within their wonted bounds.

"Conceive a solid mass, from six to eight feet thick, bursting, for many miles, in one continued rupture, produced by a force inconceivably great, and, in a manner, inexpressibly sudden. Thunder is no adequate image of this awful explosion, which roused all the sleepers, within the reach of the sound, as completely as the final convulsion of nature, and the solemn peal of the awakening trumpet, might be supposed to do. The stream, in summer, was confined by a pebbly strand, overhung with high and steep banks, crowned with lofty trees, which were considered as a sacred barrier against the encroachments of this annual visitation. Never dryads dwelt in more security, than those of the vine-clad elms, that extended their ample branches over this mighty stream. Their tangled roots, laid bare by the impetuous torrents, formed caverns, ever fresh and fragrant, where the most delicate plants flourished, unvisited by scorching suns, or nipping blasts; and nothing could be more singular than the variety of plants and birds, that were sheltered in these intricate and safe recesses.

"But when the bursting of the crystal surface set loose the many waters that had rushed down, swollen with the annual tribute of dissolving snow, the islands and low lands were all flooded, in an instant; and the lofty banks, from which you were wont to overlook the stream, were now entirely filled by an impetuous torrent, bearing down, with incredible and tumultuous rage, immense shoals of ice; which,—breaking, every instant, by the concussion of others, jammed together, in some places, in others, erecting themselves in gigantic heights, for an instant, in the air, and seeming to combat with their fellow-giants crowding on, in all directions, and falling together with an inconceivable crash,—formed a terrible moving picture, animated and various beyond conception; for it was not only the cerulean ice, whose broken edges, combating with the stream, refracted light into a thousand

rainbows, that charmed your attention; lofty pines, large pieces of the bank, torn off by the ice, with all their early green and tender foliage, were driven on, like travelling islands, amid this battle of breakers; for such it seemed."

Reading Lesson CCXLV.

Character of the early French colonists.—"The superior moral and military character of the people of New York was, in the first place, owing to a well-regulated piety, less concerned about forms than essentials: next, to an influx of other than the original settlers, which tended to render the general system of opinion more liberal and tolerant. The French protestants, driven from their native land, by intolerant bigotry, had lived at home, excluded alike from public employments and fashionable society. Deprived of so many resources that were open to their fellow-subjects, and forced to seek comfort, in piety and concord, for many privations, self-command and frugality had been, in a manner, forced upon them; consequently, they were not so vain nor so volatile as to disgust their new associates; while their cheerful tempers, accommodating manners, and patience under adversity, were very prepossessing. These additional inhabitants, being such as had suffered real and extreme hardships, for conscience' sake, from absolute tyranny and the most cruel intolerance, rejoiced in the free exercise of a pure and rational religion, and in the protection of mild and equitable laws, as the first of human blessings; which privation had so far taught them to value, that they thought no exertion too great to preserve them."

German population.—"Besides the French refugees already spoken of, during the earliest period of the establishment of the British sovereignty in this part of the continent, a great number of the protestants, whom the fury of war and persecution, on religious accounts, had driven from the Palatinate,—during the successful and desolating period of the wars carried on against that unhappy country, by Louis XIV,—had found refuge here. The subdued and contented spirit, the simple and primitive manners, and frugal, industrious habits of these genuine sufferers for conscience' sake, made them an acquisition to any society which received them, and a most

suitable leaven among the inhabitants of this province; who, devoted to the pursuits of agriculture and the Indian trade, which encouraged a wild romantic spirit of adventure, little relished those mechanical employments, or that petty, yet necessary, traffic in shops, &c., to which a part of every regulated society must needs devote their attention.

"These civic toils were left to those patient and industrious exiles, while the friendly intercourse with the original natives, had strongly tinctured the first colonists with many of their habits and modes of thinking. Like them, they delighted in hunting,—that image of war, which, so generally, where it is the prevalent amusement, forms the body to athletic force and patient endurance, and the mind to daring intrepidity. The timorous deer or the feeble hare were not alone the objects of their pursuit; nor could they, in such an impenetrable country, attempt to rival the fox in speed or subtlety. When they kept their 'few sheep in the wilderness,' the she-bear, jealous for her young, and the wolf, furious for prey, were to be encountered in their defence. From their allies, too, many who lived much among them, had learned that fearless adherence to truth, which exalts the mind to the noblest kind of resolution.

Effects of forest life.—"The dangers to which they were exposed, of meeting wandering individuals, or parties of hostile Indians, while traversing the woods, in their sporting or commercial adventures, and the necessity that sometimes occurred of defending their families, by their own personal prowess, from the stolen irruptions of detached parties of those usually called the French Indians, had also given their minds a warlike bent; and as a boy was not uncommonly trusted, at nine or ten years of age, with a light fowling-piece, which he soon learned to use with great dexterity, few countries could produce such dexterous marksmen, or persons so well qualified for conquering those natural obstacles, of thick woods and swamps, which would at once baffle the most determined European. Not only were they strong of limb, swift of foot, and excellent marksmen—the hatchet was as familiar to them as the musket; and an amateur, who had never cut wood, but for his diversion, could hew down a tree with a celerity that would astonish and abash a professed woodcutter, in

England.—In short, when means or arguments could be used, powerful enough to collect a people so uncontrolled and so uncontrollable; and when headed by a leader whom they loved and trusted so much as they did colonel Schuyler, a well-armed body of New-York provincials had nothing to dread but an ague or an ambuscade, to both of which they were much exposed on the banks of the lakes, and amidst the swampy forests they had to penetrate in pursuit of an enemy; of whom they might say with the Grecian hero, that 'they wanted but daylight to conquer him.'"

STYLE OF LIVING AMONG THE WEALTHY LANDHOLDERS OF COLONIAL NEW YORK.

Reading Lesson CCXLVI.

The Schuyler family.—"The house I have so much delight in recollecting, had no pretension to grandeur, and very little to elegance. It was a large brick house of two, or rather three, stories; for there were excellent attics, besides a sunk story, finished with the exactest neatness. The lower floor had two spacious rooms, with large light closets; on the first, there were three rooms, and, in the upper one, four. Through the middle of the house was a very wide passage, with opposite front and back doors, which, in summer, admitted a stream of air, peculiarly grateful to the languid senses. It was furnished with chairs and pictures, like a summer parlor. Here the family usually sat in hot weather, when there were no ceremonious strangers.

"Valuable furniture,—though perhaps not very well chosen or assorted,—was the favorite luxury of these people; and in all the houses I remember, except those of the brothers, who were every way more liberal, the mirrors, the paintings, the china, but, above all, the state-bed, were considered as the family Teraphim, secretly worshipped, and only exhibited on very rare occasions. But, in colonel Schuyler's family, the rooms were merely shut up to keep the flies, which in that country are an

absolute nuisance, from spoiling the furniture. Another motive was, that they might be pleasantly cool, when opened for company.

"This house had also two appendages, common to all those belonging to persons in easy circumstances there. One was a large portico at the door, with a few steps leading up to it, and floored like a room; it was open at the sides, and had seats all round. Above, was either a slight wooden roof, painted like an awning, or a covering of lattice-work, over which a transplanted wild vine spread its luxuriant leaves and numerous clusters. The grapes, though small, and rather too acid, till sweetened by the frost, had a beautiful appearance. What gave an air of liberty and safety to these rustic porticoes, which always produced in my mind a sensation of pleasure that I know not how to define, was the number of little birds domesticated there. For their accommodation, there was a small shelf built within the portico, where they nestled safely from the touch of slaves and children, who were taught to regard them as the good genii of the place, not to be disturbed with impunity.

"I do not recollect sparrows there, except the wood-sparrow. These little birds were of various kinds peculiar to the country; but the one most frequent and familiar, was a pretty little creature, of a bright cinnamon color, called a wren, though faintly resembling the one to which we give that name, for it is more sprightly, and flies higher. Of these and other small birds, hundreds gave and received protection, around this hospitable dwelling. The protection they received, consisted merely in the privilege of being let alone. That which they bestowed, was of more importance than any inhabitant of Great Britain can imagine.

"In these new countries, where man has scarce asserted his dominion, life swarms abundantly on every side; the insect population is numerous, beyond belief; and the birds that feed on them, are in proportion to their abundance. In process of time, as their sheltering woods are cleared, all these recede before their masters, but not until his empire is fully established. Such minute aërial foes, are more harassing than the terrible inhabitants of the forest, and more difficult to expel. It is only by protecting, and in some sort, domesticating, these little winged allies, who

attack them in their own element, that the conqueror of the lion and tamer of the elephant, can hope to sleep in peace, or eat his meals unpolluted.

"While breakfasting or drinking tea in the airy portico, which was often the scene of these meals, birds were constantly gliding over the table, with a butterfly, grasshopper, or cicada in their bills, to feed their young, who were chirping above. These familiar inmates brushed by, without ceremony; while the chimney-swallow, the marten, and other hirundines, in countless numbers, darted past, in pursuit of this aërial population, and the fields resounded with the ceaseless chirping of many insects unknown to our more temperate summers. These were now and then mingled with the animated and not unpleasing cry of the tree-frog, a creature of that species, but of a light, slender form, almost transparent, and of a lively green: it is dry to the touch, and has not the dank moisture of its aquatic relations; in short, it is a pretty, lively creature, with a singular and cheerful note. This loud, and not unpleasing insect-chorus, with the swarms of gay butterflies in constant motion, enliven scenes to which the prevalence of woods, rising 'shade above shade,' on every side, would otherwise give a still and solemn aspect.

"Several objects, which, with us, are no small addition to the softened changes and endless charms of rural scenery, it must be confessed, are wanting there. No lark welcomes the sun that rises to gild the dark forest and gleaming lakes of America; no mellow thrush nor deep-toned blackbird warbles through these awful solitudes, or softens the balmy hour of twilight with

'The liquid language of the *groves*.'

"Twilight itself, the mild and shadowy hour, so soothing to every feeling, every pensive mind; that soft transition from day to night, so dear to peace, so due to meditation, is here scarce known, at least, only known to have its shortness regretted. No daisy hastens to meet the spring, or embellishes the meads in summer: here no purple heath exhales its wholesome odor, or decks the arid waste with the chastened glow of its waving bells. No *bonny* broom, such as enlivens the narrow vales of Scotland with its gaudy blow, nor flowering furze with its golden blossoms, defying the cold blasts of early

spring, animates their sandy wilds. There the white-blossomed sloe does not forerun the orchard's bloom, nor the pale primrose shelter its modest head beneath the tangled shrubs. Nature, bountiful, yet not profuse, has assigned her various gifts to various climes, in such a manner that none can claim a decided preëminence; and every country has peculiar charms, which endear it to the natives beyond any other.—I have been tempted, by lively recollections into a digression rather unwarrantable."

Reading Lesson CCXLVII.

Description of the family mansion of the Schuylers, continued.—"At the back of the large house, was a smaller and lower one, so joined to it as to make the form of a cross. There, one or two smaller rooms below, and the same number above, afforded a refuge to the family during the rigors of winter, when the spacious summer-rooms would have been intolerably cold, and the smoke of prodigious wood fires would have sullied the elegantly clean furniture. Here, too, was a sunk story, where the kitchen was immediately below the eating-parlor, and increased the general warmth of the house.

"In summer, the negroes inhabited slight outer kitchens, in which food was dressed for the family. Those who wrought in the fields, often had their simple dinner cooked without, and ate it under the shade of a great tree.

"One room, I should have said, in the great house only, was opened for the reception of company; all the rest were bedchambers for their accommodation; the domestic friends of the family occupying neat little bedrooms in the attics, or in the winter-house. This house contained no drawing-room; that was an unheard-of luxury: the winter-rooms had carpets; the lobby had oilcloth painted in lozenges, to imitate blue and white marble. The best bedroom was hung with family portraits, some of which were admirably executed; and, in the eating-room, which, by the by, was rarely used for that purpose, were some fine scripture-paintings; that which made the greatest impression on my imagination, and seemed to be universally admired, was one of Esau coming to demand the anticipated blessing; the noble, manly figure of the luck-

less hunter, and the anguish expressed in his comely, though strong-featured countenance, I shall never forget.

"The house fronted the river, on the banks of which, under shades of elm and sycamore, ran the great road towards Saratoga, Stillwater, and the northern lakes; a little, simple avenue of morella cherry-trees, enclosed with a white rail, led to the road and river, not three hundred yards distant. Adjoining to this, on the south side, was an enclosure subdivided into three parts, of which the first was a small hay-field opposite the south end of the house; the next, not so long, a garden; and the third, by far the largest, an orchard. These were surrounded by simple deal-fences.

"Now let not the genius that presides over pleasure-grounds, nor any of his elegant votaries, revolt with disgust, while I mention the unseemly ornaments which were exhibited on the stakes to which the deals of these same fences were bound. Truly, they consisted of the skeleton heads of horses and cattle, in as great numbers as could be procured, stuck upon the abovesaid poles. This was not mere ornament either, but a most hospitable arrangement for the accommodation of the small familiar birds before described. The jaws are fixed on the pole, and the skull uppermost. The wren, on seeing a skull thus placed, never fails to enter by the orifice, which is too small to admit the hand of an infant, lines the pericranium with small twigs and horsehair, and there lays her eggs, in full security. It is very amusing to see the little creature carelessly go out and in, at this aperture, though you should be standing immediately beside it. Not satisfied with providing these singular asylums for their feathered friends, the negroes never fail to make a small round hole in every old hat they can lay their hands on, and nail it to the end of the kitchen, for the same purpose. You often see, in such a one, at once, thirty or forty of these odd little domicils, with the inhabitants busily going out and in.

"Besides all these salutary provisions for the domestic comfort of the birds, there was, in clearing the way for their first establishment, a tree always left in the middle of the back-yard, for their sole emolument; this tree being purposely pollarded at midsummer, when all the branches were full of sap. Wherever there had been a

branch, the decay of the inside produced a hole; and every hole was the habitation of a bird. These were of various kinds: some had a pleasing note, but, on the whole, their songsters are far inferior to ours. I rather dwell on these minutiæ, as they not only mark the peculiarities of the country, but convey, very truly, the image of a people not too refined for happiness, which, in the process of elegant luxury, is apt to die of disgust."

Reading Lesson CCXLVIII.

A "Dutch" barn.—"Adjoining to the orchard was the most spacious barn I ever beheld; which I shall describe for the benefit of such of my readers as have never seen a building constructed on a plan so comprehensive. This barn, which, as will hereafter appear, answered many beneficial purposes, besides those usually allotted for such edifices, was of a vast size, at least a hundred feet long, and sixty wide. The roof rose to a very great height, in the midst, and sloped down till it came within ten feet of the ground, when the walls commenced; which, like the whole of this vast fabric, were formed of wood. It was raised three feet from the ground, by beams resting on stone; and, on these beams, was laid, in the middle of the building, a very massive oak floor. Before the door was a large sill, sloping downwards, of the same materials. A breadth of about twelve feet on each side of this capacious building, was divided off for cattle: on one side, ran a manger, at the above-mentioned distance from the wall, the whole length of the building, with a rack above it; on the other, were stalls for the other cattle, running also the whole length of the building. The cattle and horses stood with their tails turned to the wall, and their heads towards the thrashing floor. There was a prodigious large box, or open chest, in one side, built up for holding the corn after it was thrashed; and the roof, which was very lofty and spacious, was supported by large cross-beams. From one to the other of these was stretched a great number of long poles, so as to form a sort of open loft, on which the whole rich crop was laid up. The floor of those parts of the barn, which answered the purposes of a stable and cow-house, was made of thick slab deals, laid loosely over the sup-

porting beams. And the mode of cleaning those places was by turning the boards, and permitting the litter to fall into the receptacles left open below, for the purpose; thence, in spring, it was often driven down to the river; the soil, in its original state, not requiring the aid of manure. In the front* of this vast edifice, there were prodigious folding-doors, and two others that opened behind.

"Certainly never did cheerful rural toils wear a more exhilarating aspect, than while the domestics were lodging the luxuriant harvest in this capacious repository. When speaking of the doors, I should have mentioned that they were made in the gable ends; those in the back equally large to correspond with those in the front; while, on each side of the great doors, were smaller ones, for the cattle and horses to enter. Whenever the corn or hay was reaped or cut, and ready for carrying home, which, in that dry and warm climate, happened in a very few days, a wagon loaded with hay, for instance, was driven into the midst of this great barn; loaded also with numberless large grasshoppers, butterflies, and cicadas, which came along with the hay. From the top of the wagon, this was immediately forked up into the loft of the barn, in the midst of which was an open space, left for the purpose; and then the unloaded wagon drove, in rustic state, out of the great door at the other end. In the meantime, every member of the family witnessed or assisted in this summary process; by which the building and thatching of stacks was at once saved; and the whole crop and cattle were thus compendiously lodged under one roof.

"The cheerfulness of this animated scene, was much heightened by the quick appearance and vanishing of the swallows, which twittered among their high-built dwellings in the roof. Here, as in every other instance, the safety of these domestic friends was attended to, and an abode provided for them. In the front of this barn were many holes, like those of a pigeon-house, for the accommodation of the marten,—that being the species to which this kind of home seems most congenial; and, in the inside of the barn, I have counted above fourscore at once. In the winter, when the earth was buried deep in new-fallen snow, and no path fit for walking in was left,

* By the front is meant the gable end, which contains the entrance.

this barn was like a great gallery, well suited for that purpose; and furnished with pictures not unpleasing to a simple and contented mind.

"As you walked through this long area, looking up, you beheld the abundance of the year treasured above you; on one side, the comely heads of your snorting steeds presented themselves, arranged in seemly order: on the other, your kine displayed their meeker visages, while the perspective, on either, was terminated by heifers and fillies, no less interesting. In the midst, your servants exercised the flail, and, even while they thrashed out the straw, distributed it to the expectants on both sides; while the 'liberal handful' was occasionally thrown to the many-colored poultry on the sill. Winter itself never made this abode of life and plenty cold and cheerless. Here you might walk, and view all your subjects, and their means of support, at one glance; except, indeed, the sheep, for which a large and commodious building was erected very near the barn; the roof containing a loft large enough to hold hay sufficient for their winter's food.

"Colonel Schuyler's barn was by far the largest I have ever seen; but all of them, in that country, were constructed on the same plan, furnished with the same accommodation, and presented the same cheering aspect. The orchard, as I formerly mentioned, was on the south side of the barn; on the north, a little farther back towards the wood, which formed a dark screen behind this smiling prospect, there was an enclosure, in which the remains of the deceased members of the family were deposited. A field of pretty large extent, adjoining to the house on that side, remained uncultivated and unenclosed; over it were scattered a few large apple-trees of a peculiar kind, the fruit of which was never appropriated. This piece of level and productive land, so near the family mansion, and so adapted to various and useful purposes, was never occupied, but left open as a public benefit.

"From the known liberality of this munificent family, all Indians, or new settlers, on their journey, whether they came by land or water, rested here. The military, in passing, always formed a camp on this common; and here the Indian wigwams were often planted; here all

manner of garden-stuff, fruit, and milk, were plentifully distributed to wanderers of all descriptions. Every summer, for many years, there was an encampment, either of regular or provincial troops, on this common; and often, when the troops proceeded northward, a little colony of helpless women and children, belonging to them, was left, in a great measure, dependent on the compassion of these worthy patriarchs; for such the brothers might be justly called."

Reading Lesson CCXLIX.

The Johnson family.—"By the advice of the Schuylers, there was now, on the Mohawk river, a superintendent of Indian affairs; the importance of which charge began to be fully understood. He was regularly appointed and paid by government. This was the justly celebrated Sir William Johnson, who held an office difficult both to define and execute. He might, indeed, be called the tribune of the Five Nations: their claims he asserted, their rights he protected; and over their minds he possessed a greater sway than any other individual had ever attained.

"He was indeed calculated to conciliate and retain the affections of this brave people; possessing, in common with them, many of those peculiarities of mind and manners that distinguished them from others. He was an uncommonly tall, well-made man, with a fine countenance; which, however, had rather an expression of dignified sedateness, approaching to melancholy. He appeared to be taciturn, never wasting words on matters of no importance, but highly eloquent when the occasion called forth his powers. He possessed intuitive sagacity, and the most entire command of temper and of countenance.

"He did, by no means, lose sight of his own interest, but, on the contrary, raised himself to power and wealth, in an open and active manner; not disdaining any honorable means of benefiting himself. But, at the same time, the bad policy, as well as meanness of sacrificing respectability, to snatching at petty, present advantages, were so obvious to him, that he laid the foundation of his future prosperity on the broad and deep basis of honorable dealing, accompanied by the most vigilant attention to the objects he had in view; acting so as, without the least departure from

integrity on the one hand, or inattention to his affairs on the other, to give, by his manner of conducting himself, an air of magnanimity to his character, that made him the object of universal confidence.

"He purchased from the Indians,—having the grant confirmed by his sovereign,—a large and fertile tract of land upon the Mohawk river; where, having cleared and cultivated the ground, he built two spacious and convenient places of residence; known afterwards by the names of Johnson Castle, and Johnson Hall. The first was on a fine eminence, stockaded round, and slightly fortified; the last was built on the site of the river, on a most fertile and delightful plain, surrounded with an ample and well-cultivated domain; and that, again, encircled by European settlers, who had first come there as architects, or workmen, and had been induced by Sir William's liberality, and the singular beauty of the district, to continue.

"His trade with the Five Nations, was very much for their advantage; he supplying them on more equitable terms than any trader, and not indulging the excesses in regard to strong liquors, which others were too easily induced to do. The castle contained the store in which all goods meant for the Indian traffic were laid up, and all the peltry received in exchange. The hall was his summer residence, and the place round which his greatest improvements were made.

"Here this singular man lived like a little sovereign; kept an excellent table for strangers, and officers, whom the course of their duty now frequently led into these wilds; and, by confiding entirely in the Indians, and treating them with unvaried truth and justice, without ever yielding to solicitation what he had once refused, he taught them to repose entire confidence in him; he, in his turn, became attached to them, wore, in winter, almost entirely, their dress and ornaments, and contracted a kind of alliance with them; for, becoming a widower, in the prime of life, he had connected himself with an Indian maiden, daughter to a sachem, who possessed an uncommonly agreeable person, and good understanding; and, whether ever formally married to him, according to our usage, or not, contrived to live with him, in great union and affection, all his life.

"So perfect was his dependence on those people, whom

his fortitude and other manly virtues had attached to him, that when they returned from their summer excursions, and exchanged the last year's furs for fire-arms, &c., they used to pass a few days at the castle, when his family and most of his domestics were down at the hall. There they were all liberally entertained by their friend; and five hundred of them have been known, for nights together, after drinking pretty freely, to lie around him on the floor, while he was the only white person in a house containing great quantities of every thing that was to them valuable or desirable.

"While Sir William thus united in his mode of life, the calm urbanity of a liberal and extensive trader, with the splendid hospitality, the numerous attendance, and the plain though dignified manners of an ancient baron, the female part of his family were educated in a manner so entirely dissimilar from that of all other young people of their sex and station, that as a matter of curiosity, it is worthy a recital. These two young ladies, his daughters, inherited, in a great measure, the personal advantages and strength of understanding for which their father was so distinguished. Their mother dying when they were young, bequeathed the care of them to a friend. This friend was the widow of an officer who had fallen in battle; I am not sure whether she was devout, and shunned the world, for fear of its pollution, or romantic, and despised its selfish, bustling spirit: but so it was, that she seemed utterly to forget it, and devoted herself to her fair pupils. To these she taught needlework of the most elegant and ingenious kinds, reading, and writing: thus quietly passed their childhood; their monitress not taking the smallest concern in family management, nor, indeed, the least interest in any worldly thing but themselves: far less did she inquire about the fashions or diversions which prevailed in a world she had renounced; and from which she seemed to wish her pupils to remain forever estranged.

"Never was any thing so uniform as their dress, their occupations, and the general tenor of their lives. In the morning, they rose early, read their prayer-book, I believe, but certainly their Bible, fed their birds, tended their flowers, and breakfasted; then they were employed, for some hours, with unwearied perseverance, at fine needlework, for the ornamental parts of dress, which were the fashion

of the day, without knowing to what use they were to be put, as they never wore them; and had not, at the age of sixteen, ever seen a lady, excepting each other and their governess; they then read, as long as they chose, either the voluminous romances of the last century, of which their friend had an ample collection, or Rollin's ancient history, the only books they had ever seen; after dinner, they regularly, in summer, took a long walk; or an excursion in the sledge, in winter, with their friend; and then returned and resumed their wonted occupations, with the sole variation of a stroll in the garden, in summer, and a game at chess, or shuttlecock, in winter.

"Their dress was, to the full, as simple and uniform as every thing else; they wore wrappers of the finest chintz, over green silk under dresses; and this, the whole year round, without variation. Their hair, which was long and beautiful, was tied behind with a simple riband; a large calash shaded each from the sun; and, in winter, they had long scarlet mantles, that covered them from head to foot. Their father did not live with them, but visited them, every day, in their apartment. This innocent and uniform life they led till the death of their monitress, which happened when the eldest was not quite seventeen.

"These ladies married officers, who, in succession, lived aid-de-camps with their father. Their manners soon grew easy; they readily acquired the habits of society, and made excellent wives."*

* Farther mention of these ladies, occurs, on page 555, in an extract from Mr. Watson.

NOTICES

OF EARLY SETTLEMENTS, INLAND TOWNS, AND VILLAGES.

Reading Lesson CCL.

Introductory remarks.

The following interesting items of information, are extracted from the recent edition of Mr. John F. Watson's entertaining and instructive work, entitled Annals and Occurrences of New York City and State, in the Olden Time. By the author's kind permission, we are enabled to present to our readers some of the valuable results of his indefatigable labors in the field of our local antiquities. His volume offers a rich fund of traditional anecdote, from which the readers of our own pages may, in future hours of leisure, derive not only amusement, but much useful knowledge regarding facts and events connected with the progress of the city and state of New York.

Places on or near the Hudson.—"For many years after the first settlement, Albany constituted the remotest point of interior civilization and improvement. Even as late as the war of independence, the present flourishing towns of Troy and Lansingburgh were scarcely named. Saratoga Springs and Ballston, now so famed and so fashionable, were in their original barrens.

"Kinderhook, Esopus, and Rhinebeck, were among the earliest Dutch settlements along the banks of the Hudson. They are mentioned as early as 1651, by Joost Hartgers; and, in 1656, by Van der Donck.

"Saratoga Springs are situated in what was the Mohawks' country. They were discovered by a party of surveyors, in 1770, while the country was still a wilderness. Our troops at Saratoga, in the revolutionary war, used them: but the earliest regular notice of them was in a communication of Dr. Tanney of the army, who, in September, 1783, writing to a scientific society, said, 'I think

they only want a suitable introduction to the world, and some convenient houses for boarding and lodging patients, to render them of important service to the country.'

"It is supposed that the Indians knew and used them, before the whites.

Hudson city.—"Some Scotch presbyterians went out early under the auspices of the Livingston family. At the first settlement of Albany, Livingston was secretary to the Dutch government, his family being, at the same time, Brownists in Holland, from Scotland. I have seen an autograph letter of his mother, to his address, written from Amsterdam, when in the eightieth year of her age, and providing therein, for his receiving out fifty of that people at a time, as his working men, to serve seven years apiece, for only food and raiment;—all for the sake of freedom of conscience. The Livingston family settled near Hudson city; and one of the Livingstons, (Robert,) in later years, (1752,) took up 300,000 acres of forest land, extending from Esopus to the Delaware river.

"Hudson city is but a modern affair; having been, till the year 1784, cultivated as a farm. It was then purchased by a few enterprising persons of capital, from the eastward, chiefly for the purpose of conducting, there, the whale fishery to the Pacific ocean. Such was its rapid progress, that, in two years, there were as many as one hundred and fifty dwelling-houses erected.

"Newburg existed before the revolution; and, being a place beautifully situated, and not far from West Point, it was occasionally made a place of visit and relaxation, by general Washington, and other superior officers serving at that post.

"The Hasbrouck House, at Newburg,—though but of one story,—acquired eminence, as having been the humble quarters of general Washington. Though low in roof, it covered ground enough to contain many rooms. There, were received and entertained by the general, many distinguished men and officers of the revolution.

"When general Washington was at West Point and Newburg, in 1779, he wrote a facetious letter to Dr. Cochran, the director general of the hospitals, which will show a specimen of the homely fare of his table, and serve as a vestige of the Hasbrouck house and its concomitants.

'West Point, August 16th, 1779.

'DEAR DOCTOR,

'I have asked Mrs. Cochran and Mrs. Livingston, to dine with me to-morrow; but ought I not to apprise you of their fare? As I hate deception, even when imagination is concerned, I will.

'It is needless to premise that my table is large enough to hold the ladies: of this they had ocular demonstration, yesterday. To say how it is usually covered, is rather more essential; and this shall be the purport of my letter.

'Since my arrival at this happy spot, we have had a ham, sometimes a shoulder of bacon, to grace the head of the table. A piece of roast beef adorns the foot, and a small dish of green beans—almost imperceptible—decorates the centre. When the cook has a mind to cut a figure; and this, I presume, he will attempt to-morrow; we have two beef-steak pies, or dishes of crabs, in addition; one on each side of the centre dish, dividing the space, and reducing the distance between dish and dish, to about six feet, which, without them, would be nearly twelve apart. Of late, he has had the surprising luck to discover that apples will make pies; and it is a question if, amidst the violence of his efforts, we do not get one of apples, instead of having both of beef.

'If the ladies can put up with such entertainment, and submit to partake of it on plates, once tin, but now iron—not become so, by the labor of scouring—I shall be happy to see them.

'Dear sir, yours,

GEORGE WASHINGTON.'"

READING LESSON CCLI.

Places on or near the Mohawk.—"The Mohawk river, extending far westward, through a narrow and long valley of fruitful soil, presented the earliest allurement for agricultural purposes, inland; and yet it was not until after the war of independence that it began to be sought after, by white men. Filled, as its valley now is, with a prosperous and wealthy population; planted with numerous thriving villages; traced along its margin by the recent grand canal; and made the line of the grand tour to Niagara, by numer-

ous passengers from the opulent sea-board cities; yet it was not far beyond the period of that war, when it was still the beaver country of the aborigines, or the site of their wigwams; and the general region of country, their hunting-ground, through which ranged bears, foxes, wolves, deer, and other game. The Indians themselves called the lands *Couxsachraga*—the dismal wilderness.

"Men were still alive, in 1830, who, in the time of the revolutionary war, were at the defence of several of its military redoubts, as frontier posts. Mr. Parrish, Indian agent,—resident at Canandaigua, in the year last mentioned,—was with a predatory party of Indians, as a prisoner, when they came into the neighborhood of the present town of Herkimer, only eighty miles west of Albany. Colonel Fry, of Canajoharie, above ninety years of age, still alive at the same date, was commissary for these outposts, in the 'old French war.' In his vicinity,—at the town of Mohawk, but thirty-six miles west of Albany, at the junction of the Schoharie creek with the river Mohawk,—is the old Mohawk town; and their old church, still there, is the same built as a missionary station, in the reign of queen Anne; having fort Hunter to cover and defend it from predatory enemies. At this very place, the Mohawks were actually dwelling, as a nation, until the year 1780.

"Not far from the Little Falls, now so romantic and picturesque, by reason of its rocky rapids and the expensive constructions for the canal along its margin, once stood the advance post of fort Herkimer. An old church near it, was, in 1830, still standing, which was used as a place of defence against an Indian assault, even in the time of the revolution. From the village of Herkimer up to Canada creek,—a distance of fourteen miles,—are the very picturesque lands, embracing, now, the present fashionable resort and elegant place of entertainment, called Trenton Falls, which were once given by king Hendrick, 'our good ally,' to general Sir William Johnson. King Hendrick himself lived at Indian Castle, on the Mohawk river, sixty-six miles from Albany.

Utica.—"At the present flourishing city of Utica, only ninety-five miles west of Albany, once the site of old fort Schuyler, the settlement is so recent that, in 1794, it had but two houses; and, in 1785, the whole region of country

had but two families, dwelling in log houses, as advance pioneers.

Pioneers of Utica.—"When Utica first began its career, John Jacob Astor, and Peter Smith, travelled the ground from Schenectady to Utica, purchasing furs at the Indian settlements on the route. The Indians aided them in carrying them back to Schenectady. They opened a store in New York city, for their sale; and when their stock was exhausted, they again penetrated the lonely forests of the frontiers, and replenished their store. Astor continued his business many years, but Smith commenced the purchase of land, and died at Schenectady, very rich.

"Summers went and came; and wave after wave of emigration, rolled up the long defile of the Mohawk. Mark the change—Judge Smith died, leaving millions of acres to his heirs, but lived long enough, to travel from Schenectady to Utica, in four hours. And, to-day, when the sun's evening rays shall hide from the undimmed eye of John Jacob Astor, behind the blue hills of Jersey, its vertical beams will be falling on his fur-traders of our *new* limit, the mouth of the Oregon. Bishop Berkeley never dreamed of such changes, when he penned the line,—

'Westward the star of empire takes its way.'

"The name of the late judge Peter Smith,—father of Gerritt Smith, of Peterboro', stands in an interesting connection with the first white settlement in central New York, and especially with the small beginnings of the city of Utica.

"In the year 1787, judge Smith, not yet twenty years of age, left his clerkship in the store of Abraham Herring, an importing merchant in the city of New York, to seek his fortune, inland. He went to Fall Hill, near the village of Little Falls, and opened a store. The following year, he built a log store at fort Schuyler,—now Utica. The ground for it, which was, in 1830, a part of that occupied by Bagg's Tavern, he leased of the widow Daymuth, at the annual rent of *a pound of bohea tea!* There were, at that time, three other log, but no frame buildings, at fort Schuyler.

"It is worthy of mention, that, in the early times of which we are speaking, Mr. Astor was associated with

his friend Peter Smith, in the purchase of furs from the Indians, and, also, in the purchase of various tracts of land. Mr. Astor cherishes lively and pleasant reminiscences of their visit to Oneida castle, and other groups of Indian habitations in its vicinity. It is hardly probable, that it was amongst the dreams of the business efforts of these young gentlemen, that one of them should acquire one of the largest estates, and the other, the very largest estate, ever acquired in this country.

"Judge Smith frankly confessed that he was indebted to the Oneida Indians for a large share of his wealth. He spoke their language fluently, and had great influence with them. The steady friendship for him, of their distinguished chief, Skenandon, who died, very aged, in 1815, induced the judge to name his eldest son Skenandon;—a circumstance which added to the family influence, with those warm-hearted sons of the forest."

Reading Lesson CCLII.

Military lands.—"As we leave Utica, we enter upon the 'New York military lands,' containing twenty-eight townships, severally ten miles square; 'the proud and splendid monument of the gratitude of New York to her revolutionary heroes; giving to each of her soldiers, five hundred and fifty acres of lands, now so valuable.' The very gift of such lands, since the revolution, for services then performed, is, itself, the evidence of the recent cultivation of all those districts, now so essentially adding to the aggrandizement of this great state. Had the poor soldiers been individually benefited by this generosity, and had their descendants found an easy home on the soil, the reflection would be much more grateful; but rapacious speculators, in most instances, were the beneficiaries.

Phelps's purchase.—"Those military lands extended as far west as the Seneca lake, at which place begins the eastern boundary of that great purchase of the celebrated pioneer, Oliver Phelps, who, in 1787, purchased the immense and unexplored wilds of the west, from the line of that lake, to the west boundary of the state, comprising a mass of *six millions of acres*, for the inconsiderable sum, as we now think it, of one million of dollars. To

this Cecrops, this primary adventurer, the people of the west owe a lasting monument of gratitude and praise, for his successful efforts in opening to them and their children, their happy Canaan.

"In the year 1788, Phelps first penetrated the wilderness, taking his departure from Herkimer, the then most advanced settlement; and going thence, one hundred and thirty miles, through wilds and Indian hunting-grounds, to an Indian settlement, the present Canandaigua, a name then importing *chosen place*, where he held a treaty with the Six Nations, and purchased from them, their grant to the same, as far as to the Genesee river. In the next year, he opened his land office in that town, the first in America, for the sale of forest lands to settlers,—giving a model, since adopted, for selling all new lands in the United States, by 'townships and ranges.'

"In 1790, Phelps sold out 1¾ millions of his grant, to Robert Morris, the celebrated financier, for only 8*d. an acre:* the latter sold it to Sir W. Pulteney, whose land office is now opened at Geneva and Bath. In 1796, Robert Morris made a farther purchase, of about two thirds of the western part; a part of which he sold out to the Holland land company, which company, in 1801, opened their land office at Batavia.

"Canandaigua and Geneva,—now elegant towns, so delightfully placed by their several picturesque lakes,—had all their first houses constructed of logs. But, wild as the country was, it was all traversed in the summer of 1792-3, by the present Louis Philippe, king of France, and his two brothers, on horseback, making their rest, for a short time, at Canandaigua, at the house of Thomas Morris.

"Finally, such was the early history of a woody waste of country, so little valued then, and now so populous and productive. Through such regions, original settlers made their way, with families, cattle, provisions, wagons, and carts; crossing waters without bridges; sleeping and eating in forests; and, finally, dwelling without shelter, until they could build a log house and home. The obstacles, and hazards, and perils, which beset a pioneer family, going through a wilderness of hundreds of miles; their constructing of rafts and canoes, at water courses; their swimming of horses, oxen, sheep, and hogs; their occa-

sional mishaps and losses; their hopes and fears; altogether, might form an eventful tale of truth.*

"In the very midst of those great purchases of Phelps, and where his earliest efforts were concentred, is now the great and prosperous city of Rochester, filled with wealth, and luxury, and elegance; having a population, in 1827, of eight thousand persons, and *not one adult, a native of the place;* for then, the oldest person living, born in the place, was not seventeen years of age. The site was originally given to Phelps, by the Indians, as a mill-seat, in allusion to which they called him Kauskonchicos, 'waterfall.' The very territory in which it was situated, was, but forty years ago, the hunting-ground of such remnants of the Six Nations, as survived the chastisement of general Sullivan; and many a veteran warrior is still alive, on the neighboring reservations of Canawagus, Tonawanda, and Tuscarora, to recount to his surviving sons, the exploits of his meridian vigor, when not a white man's axe had been lifted in all their forests!

"Buffalo, too, now a second time a city, and aspiring to be the 'New York of the lake,' was only a frontier fort, at which were assembled, in 1796, *for the last time,* in treaty, with one thousand Indians, the last remains of the once mighty Six Nations. There, they then relinquished to us their feeble claims to their once vast domains!"

Reading Lesson CCLIII.

Johnstown.—"This place, near the Mohawk, was chosen as the home and settlement of Sir William Johnson, created a baronet, with a gift of five thousand pounds sterling, in consideration of his usefulness in bringing the 'old French war' to a successful termination.

"Here, he built himself the beautiful residence called Johnson Hall, where he lived many years, surrounded by the Mohawks, who regarded him with veneration and esteem, and always depending upon him, for advice and counsel. Colonel Guy Johnson had also a separate mansion: they both lived, essentially in the rank and abundance of noblemen.

"Sir William Johnson was born in Ireland, and came

* See narrative of "migration and settlement," on a subsequent page.

to the Mohawk in 1734, in consequence of the call of his uncle, admiral Warren, then residing in New York, and who, from marrying an American lady, had become possessed of a large estate, on or near that river, called Warren's Bush. While settled here, he made it his business to become acquainted with, and to conciliate the regard of the Indians.

"Sir William had two daughters. One of these, was married to colonel Guy Johnson, the other to colonel Claus. His only son, became afterwards, Sir John Johnson; and both he and colonel Guy Johnson joined the British, in the war against us, in the revolution, and did us much harm.

"Sir William died, just before the revolution began, but not until he was pained to see and hear of its approach, to wit, in July, 1774, in the fifty-ninth year of his age. He died suddenly, and was buried under the old stone church at Johnstown; but, in 1806, his bones were redeposited. In his coffin, was found the ball with which he was wounded, in his successful conflict with baron Dieskau, in 1757, at lake George.

"Many traditionary accounts, are still given in the neighborhood, of the rustic sports encouraged by Sir William, and of the influence, which he exerted over the Indians and white inhabitants. Among others, it is related that he showed his ingenuity and tact, with the celebrated old king Hendrick, who, from a desire to possess a military suit, had told Sir William, that he had dreamed that he had been given such a suit, by him: the suit was therefore given. Some time after, Sir William told to the old king, in turn, his dream, which was, that he had given him a tract of land, and described its position; the same, in the county of Herkimer, extending from East to West Canada creek, being about twelve miles square. The old king said he must have it, but also added, significantly, 'You must not dream again!' The title was confirmed by the king of England, and, in a double sense, was called, the 'Royal Grant!' Afterwards, these, and all the possessions of the Johnson family, were confiscated by the American congress, because of their tory adherence, and the number of royalists whom they won to their interest and faction, in the revolutionary struggle.

"When the revolutionary war began, colonel John Johnson, under pretext of keeping himself and his Indian

interests from violence, from the whigs, began to arm his tenants and dependents, and to erect defences around Johnson Hall; and when he was urged by the committees of vigilance, to desist, and was required by congress to say explicitly whether he would not allow the enrollment and discipline of the militia, in his district, he coolly answered, that they might take all *who would serve;* thus intimating, that he sufficiently understood their attachment to him, and his family interests. Not long after, Sir John was taken, for the public security, to Albany, and held as a prisoner, under his parole. This, however, he broke, and made his escape, with a large number of his tenants, to Montreal.

"At the time of which we speak, the country was uninhabited, with a few exceptions, from Johnson's Fish-house to Johnstown. Near the bridge at the Fish-house, formerly stood a house built by Sir William, where he generally spent the fishing season, surrounded by a few of his European friends, with some of the provincial officers that were attached to his suite, and the head men of the Mohawks.

"The first inhabitants of this section, formed the guard of the English frontier; and, from this exposed situation, they were, of necessity, compelled to act as farmer, hunter, or soldier, as the case required. The exciting incidents of such a life, laid the foundation of that high personal spirit and resolution, that love of adventure and liberty, which form a distinguishing feature in the American character. Such a location, so early formed, very naturally became, as it did in time, the proper capital of Tryon county.

Schoharie.—"This earliest settlement inland, in New York, began its operation, as early as 1713, when sundry German Palatinates, who had before been encouraged to emigrate to this country, under the auspices of queen Anne, went on from Albany and Schenectady, over the Helleberg, to Schoharie creek, where they settled the rich alluvial lands, bordering upon that stream. The queen, by her proclamation of 1709, in Germany, had promised land *gratis*, and an exemption from all taxes.

"Afterwards, small colonies going hence, and from Albany and Schenectady, established themselves in various places along the Mohawk; and, in 1722, had extended as far up as the German Flats, near where stands, the

present village of Herkimer; but, although these advanced pioneers knew very well, that they were wholly committed to the tender mercies of the Indians, when so remote from white population, they did not dare to venture beyond the neighborhood of boatable streams, which might serve them, in cases of emergency, for a better means of escape, when none had ventured out in that unbroken wilderness, which lay to the south and west of these settlements.

"In the neighborhood of Schoharie settlement, was the earliest and most inland fort of the British, to wit, old fort Hunter, situated at the mouth of Schoharie creek, where was also the old Mohawk town, and a missionary station, with a church for the Indians, founded under the auspices of queen Anne. Here the Indians made considerable advances in civilization, and did not abandon the place, till as late as 1780, when they went off, and settled in Canada.

"From the preceding period, down to the era of the revolution, the settlers went on prosperously and contented. They then heartily entered into the cause of the colonies, and appointed their committee of safety, &c.

"In the fall of 1777, the inhabitants began to suffer from the inroads of straggling parties of Indians: aid was sought from government; and three forts were erected, called the upper, middle, and lower forts. The middle fort was near where the village of Middletown now stands; they consisted of intrenchments of earth and wood, thrown up in the usual form, around some building, which could serve as a shelter for the women and children: the building in the middle fort, was a stone house; that in the lower fort, was a stone church. They were severally garrisoned with a few continental soldiers, and were each furnished with a small field-piece. Many of the inhabitants repaired to the forts, at night, and went abroad, in the mornings, to their employments on their farms; thus indicating, how very much a country so little in advance of Schenectady, could still be, in effect, an Indian country, and exposed to hostilities.

"During two or three years, these forts afforded protection near them; but, in the meantime, individuals and families were found missing in the outskirts; and the smoking ruins of their dwellings,—and the dead bodies

of men, and their domestic animals, were alone left to indicate their fate: occasionally, a prisoner returned to relate the secret of their destruction.

"In the fall of 1780, the perils and the evils of war, were visited again upon Schoharie, by a military force, under the command of Sir John Johnson, consisting of British regulars, loyalists, tories, and Indians. They had designed a surprise; but, on the timely discovery of their approach, they avoided the middle fort, and began their destruction first with the houses and barns, and the capture of the cattle. They next attacked the fort, containing but a few men. Major Woolsey, in the command, was despondent, and thought of treating for terms, but was prevented by the courage of Murphy and others. The assailants withdrew, and, proceeding down the creek, destroyed every thing in their progress, and, after a faint effort against the lower fort, pursued their course to fort Hunter, and thence upward along the Mohawk, devastating wherever they went, and burning the town of Caughnawaga.

"After so general a destruction of the Schoharie settlement, the place was allowed to repose; and, during the years 1781 and 1782, though often alarmed, they had no serious molestation."

Reading Lesson CCLIV.

Cherry Valley.—"The original patent for this place, was granted in 1738, by George Clark, to John Lindesay and three others. In the next year, it became wholly the property of these two named gentlemen; and Mr. Lindesay made his settlement on the farm, called Lindesay's Bush, afterwards successively owned by John Wells and judge Hudson. The country, at the time, was filled with elk and deer, and had a full proportion of bears, wolves, beavers, and foxes, and, for that cause, was the favorite hunting-ground of the Mohawks, where they erected their cabins, and hunted their game upon the mountains, seventeen hundred feet, in elevation, above the valley of the Mohawk. There, Mr. Lindesay, with his son-in-law, Mr. Congreve, a British lieutenant, dwelt in utter solitude; being fifteen miles from any settlement; and the intervening country could only be travelled by the Indian footpath.

"In the deep snow of 1740, they became wholly isolated, and cut off from all possibility of supplies; and, when likely to starve, they were visited by a friendly Indian, coming to them on his snow-shoes, who, from time to time, brought them such relief and necessaries,—carried on his back,—as preserved the lives of these first settlers.

"In the next year, they were joined by sundry Scotch Irish families, from Londonderry, New Hampshire; in all, about thirty persons. From these, their place of settlement, received the name of Cherry Valley, in allusion to the many fine wild cherry-trees, then growing there. For a long time, this, then far advanced settlement, became the distinguishing name of a large section of the country, south and west.

"These first settlers, under the influence of the Rev. Mr. Lindesay, became a strictly religious community. They made a log church and school-house, a grist and saw-mill. In the course of ten years, they were joined by John Wells, and two or three other families.

"In time, it occurred, that sundry disaffected Indians, of Oquago, began to threaten hostility, so that it became expedient, to raise a defence of eight hundred rangers, for Tryon county, and to place a company of them at Cherry Valley, under the command of captain McKean; and to these were joined the occasional services of the few inhabitants. Some of these went on to join Sir William Johnson, at fort Edward, in 1757, and survived to come back and tell of their doings, in many years of after life.

"During the harassing periods of the French wars, population continued to increase along the rivers and valleys; and, among the rest, sundry settlements had been made, in various positions, around Cherry Valley:—among these, came the family of the Harpers. These, afterwards, removed from the Valley, and established themselves at Harper's Field, in the present county of Delaware, where they became distinguished for their courage, and ardent attachment to the cause of American liberty.

"At the period of the revolution, the whole population of Cherry Valley was short of three hundred. Then came on the tug of war; and then this community came to learn all its terrors and its incidents, from the hostile incursions and ravages of the Indians, and their equally

savage allies, the tories,—stimulated and excited by such loyalists as colonels Guy Johnson, and Claus, Sir John Johnson, John and Walter Butler, and Joseph Brandt: all names of terror and affliction to the inland settlers, everywhere.

"In the summer of 1776, captain Robert McKean raised a company of rangers, for the defence of the Valley;—a breastwork of logs and earth, was thrown up around colonel Samuel Campbell's house and barn, as a place of refuge; and to these were added two block-houses;—afterwards a proper fort was erected there, at the instance of general Lafayette, then at Johnstown. To this, came in many of the inhabitants, from Unadilla and other towns —even the boys of the place formed themselves into companies of little soldiers. In one of their parades without the fort, they were seen by Brandt and his Indians, at a distance; and, taking them for real soldiers, he went off, without attempting his intended surprise. They, however, met with lieutenant Wormwood, bearing a message, who, being shot from his horse, was tomahawked by Brandt, though his personal friend, but who did not know it was he, at the time. In the same year, Brandt came with his party to Springfield, and burned it, carrying off several prisoners.

"At the close of the war, most of the surviving inhabitants of Cherry Valley, returned to their former homes: —the places of many, however, were never reöccupied by the same owners; and many a tear was shed, and many a bitter remembrance was occasioned by their absence, and the thought of the cause.

"It may possibly interest some, to know that this is the home and the birth-place of Cooper, who has so well succeeded in drawing the woodman's life, and the Indian's character."

Reading Lesson CCLV.

The German Flats and fort Herkimer.—"This place constituted the most advanced position of white population, lying on the north side of the Mohawk, sixty miles from Schenectady. It consisted of a village, called the German Flats, originally settled by Germans, under the auspices of queen Anne. There, a fort had been built, by colonel Charles Clinton, as early as 1758,—to which

was given the name, afterwards, of fort Herkimer, in honor of general Herkimer, of the militia, who fell in the battle of Oriskany, not far beyond the Flats. There was also another fort on the Flats, called fort Dayton, which was built in 1776, and named after colonel Dayton.

"The people of the Flats, were called out for the defence of their country, in the summer of 1777, by a proclamation of general Herkimer, wherein he required the services of every male person, of from sixteen to sixty years of age; and at the same time, all above sixty, were to remain at home, and to gather at a call, for the home defence of the women and children.

"After the battle of Oriskany, in which general Herkimer lost his life, the whole district of the German Flats, was filled with grief and mourning. Almost every family had lost some relatives. Wives lamenting husbands and sons,—sons, too, of only sixteen years of age; and their valued general, in whom they trusted, was also slain.

"When the German Flats were assaulted and burned, in 1778, by the Indians, the place consisted of thirty-eight dwellings, on the south side of the Mohawk river, and of as many on the north side. Happily, but two persons were killed; as the inhabitants had a previous intimation of the approach of the enemy, and got off in time to save their lives.

Fort Schuyler, at Rome.—"This post constituted, at the time, the most advanced military position inland, and was at the head of the Mohawk navigation. The fort was erected in 1776, by colonel Dayton, at the place now called Rome, upon the foundation of old fort Stanwix, begun in 1759, by general Bradstreet. At this time, *old* fort Schuyler, once at the place now Utica, was gone down, and out of use since the time of the French wars. The new fort, was at the proper carrying-place, between that river and Wood creek, whence the boats made their passage to Oswego and the lake.

"While the British were advancing, under Burgoyne, towards Albany, with the intention to open the communication, by the Hudson river, to New York, other expeditions were meditated, for the purposes of diversion and revenge, to operate along the line of the Mohawk.

"Colonel Claus, in Canada, who had gone from Johnstown, as a tory chief, was using his best exertions, to en-

gage the assistance of all the Indians, endeavoring to persuade them, that, with their assistance, he should be fully able to capture new fort Schuyler. This intimation gave rise to the appointment, of colonel Gansevoort, in April, 1777, with the third regiment, to that post. The command of the British force, was given to general St. Leger, who intended, after conquering that post, to pass down the Mohawk, and fortify himself at Johnstown; he arrived before the place, with a large force, via Oswego, in August, and, soon after, began his operations.

"In the meantime, general Herkimer, a native of the country, was approaching with his militia relief. These were assailed on the way, at Oriskany, at a ravine, a few miles from the fort, by colonel Butler, commanding the tories, and colonel Brandt, the Indian chief, commanding the Indians; and, being taken by surprise, they were of course, greatly cut up and dispersed, and their commander, general Herkimer, slain," as was related in the historical part of our volume. "In that bloody conflict, were found the Indian and the white man, born on the banks of the Mohawk, lying side by side, in the embrace of death. The militia fought with great desperation, and sold their lives with the sternest courage, fighting hand to hand, to the last.

"Numerous were the families along the Mohawk, who survived to lament the loss of their relatives, of husbands and brothers, in the terrible fight of Oriskany. General Herkimer was, doubtless, in fault, in having allowed himself to be surprised; but he redeemed his imprudence, by his courage. Early in the battle, which was waged for nearly five hours, the general had his leg fractured by a musket ball; he sat upon a stone, giving his orders to the last: mortification ensued from his wound; and he died, in a few days."

"About the year 1761, Mrs. Grant, when a child of seven years of age, was started, with her mother, in a military expedition,—her father being a British officer,—to go by the Mohawk and Wood creek, to reach the far distant post of Oswego.

"The place, then, was wholly wild, and a real Siberia in the winter, but abounded with fish and fowl; and the woods, then, were thick, lofty, and interminable. The present writer, when he made a tour by the military road

from Oswego to Rome, even as late as 1828, found it the very wildest region of New York, and the most occupied with the rude mud and mire bridges, popularly called corduroy,—logs laid transverse of the road, in all boggy and wet places. There were wolves and bears still to be occasionally killed there.

The Pulteney estate.—"The Pulteney estate, is of great extent and immense value,—comprising nearly all of Steuben and Ontario counties, the east range of townships in Alleghany county, and the east and principal parts of the counties of Livingston and Monroe. To the intelligent and industrious agent, captain Charles Williamson, the meed of praise is due for the stimulus to useful improvement. Captain Williamson began his enterprise in 1792, forcing his passage through a length of wilderness, which the oldest and most experienced woodmen could not be tempted to assist him to explore, although offered five times the usual wages: his only companions, were his friend, Mr. Johnstone, a servant, and one backwoodsman.

Bath.—"The same year, there was laid out the town of Bath, which came, in eight years afterwards, to contain about forty families. It was not until 1795, that the country could supply its inhabitants with food; for, till then, their flour was brought from Northumberland, and their pork from Philadelphia; yet, so rapidly has improvement advanced, and so quick has been the change, from the dark-tangled forest, (whose death-like silence yielded but to the growl of bears, the howl of wolves, and the yell of savages,) to smiling fields, to flocks and herds, and to 'the busy hum of men,' that, instead of being indebted to others for their support, they soon came to the profitable condition of making large exportations of their surplus.

"On the first settlement of the country around Bath, those mountainous districts were so little regarded, in comparison with the rich flats, of the Genesee country, that few of the early settlers could be prevailed upon to establish themselves there, till captain Williamson set the example;—and saying, 'As nature has done so much for the northern plains, I will be doing something for these southern mountains.' Captain Williamson made his beginning in Bath, by building himself a small log cabin for

his wife and family; and, if a stranger came to visit him, he built up a little nook to put his bed in. In a short time, a boarded or frame house was built for the captain. His subsequent residence is a very commodious, roomy house, situated to the right of where he had placed his first cabin,—since, consigned to the kitchen fire. In a few years, Williamson's mills, were constructed near by, for the benefit of the population on Conhocton creek.

Geneva.—"To the same captain Williamson, we are indebted, for the choice and beautiful site of Geneva, at the northwest end of Seneca lake. He, charmed with the peculiar beauty of the elevated plain which there commands so fine a view of the very picturesque lake, began to lay out his building lots for a town, parallel with, and facing the lake, and with conditions, that no buildings should be erected on the eastern side of the street, so as ever to obstruct the view of the lake.

"In 1792, Geneva did not contain more than three or four families; and in 1800, there was an accession of sixty families.

"*Canandaigua,*—near the lake of the same name,—had in 1792, but two frame houses, and a few log cabins, and soon advanced in population; say in 1800, to ninety families. This town, by the inconsideration of the first settlers, was placed, unlike Geneva, at a little distance from its beautiful lake, and has so lost, forever, all the charm which its superior water scenery could have afforded."

MIGRATION AND SETTLING.

Reading Lesson CCLVI.

Leaving home.—"We see two or three families, consisting severally of husbands, wives, and children, associating, in the year 1790, in one of the towns of New England, to form a little community to go into the wilds of the west. They had heard of fruitful soils and cheap; and, having growing and sturdy working boys and girls about them, they resolve to go as far as the Indian town of Canandaigua; or, if not there suited, to go still farther, to the country of the Genesee river. They sell out their little immovable property, for the sake of the cash; they gather about them wagons, carts, farming utensils; re-

serve some of their roughest furniture and of least weight of carriage; lay in their store of salted and smoked meats; procure baked biscuits; get Indian meal for 'journey-cakes;' gather around a whole stock of cows, pigs, sheep, and poultry; not forgetting their house dog and tabby cat.

First stages of the journey.—"We skip over the intermediate space of travel, wherein they could find huts and cottages at which to stop along their route, to as far as the present Utica, then the place of fort Schuyler; from this point, the united pioneers enter into the forest. The provisions, furniture, and smallest children, are placed in the wagon and set onward. The men, women, and boys and girls, follow, near by, driving, in their wake, their bullocks, cows, pigs, and sheep. Hung to the wagons, severally, were the poultry coops, containing ducks, geese, and fowls, the intended parent stock of the future poultry yard.

The journey through the wilderness.—"In their onward march, no road marks the direction of their way; but guided by the 'blazing of the trees,' (surveyor's marks cut on the sides of trees with a hatchet,) or, when at fault, by their pocket compass, they continue to go on their way westward. By and by, they halt to rest, and to feed their cattle and themselves. Their table, once an ironing-board, is set upon four upright stakes driven into the ground. Their seats are formed by two benches. Biscuits and cold meat form their food. At table, and in their mutual intercourse, they try to cheer and encourage each other with hopes and designs of the future. Soon, all are again set onward; water-courses and impediments in the way occasionally occur. Then the men and boys are the chief laborers; and to manage their cattle and get them over the sloughs, is their chief difficulty.

Indians.—"By and by, they approach the Oneida settlement of Indians, of which they have some forethought, by seeing a straggling hunter or two, and, after a while, hearing the shouts and noisy rejoicings of the tribe. At the sound, fears and apprehensions steal upon the soul. The younger members of the family get closer to their parents; and the parents themselves are not insensible to the fact, that they have no other security for their safety, than the general report of peace and amity. They enter their settlement; are surrounded; mutual wonder exists; civilities

are interchanged; and the settlers, not willing to abide, for a night, among them, go beyond them, and encamp, for the first night.

Night in the forest.—"What a new epoch for a family accustomed to civilization, to sit down in the gloom of the forest! They again prepare to eat and to feed their cattle. The fire is made for tea, and fresh journey-cake baked before the fire. The bedding and beds are prepared in the wagons. Watches are set to take turns, through the night, to preserve the cattle from straying, and the sheep from the prowling wolf. When all is prepared, the whole company surround their homely table, eat heartily, and talk cheerily. Some sing songs, some hymns; several recount the incidents of the day; all remember home, and talk of left friends and kindred; and some surmise the adventures before them. They all retire to rest, in due time, save the watch and the dogs. The fatigues of the day make many sleep soundly; and only now and then a wakeful ear hears the bark of the fox, the distant growl of the wolf, or the shriek of the owl. Soon as the ruddy morn peeps out from the east, the company are again all in action, preparing for their morning meal and onward journey.

The Onondagas.—"In two days more of similar journey, they reach the Indian settlement of the Onondagas,—Indians whom they feared more than the former, only because they were still more in their power, by being still more remote from country and friends. They still, however, received civility and kindness, in their rude but well-meant attentions. They brought them some of their game; and this, with successful shooting of their own, among the partridges and pheasants seen in their route, gave them the means of a grand repast of sylvan food, for their supper. They again spent their night much after the manner before mentioned, and not far from the ranges of those Indians.

Canandaigua.—"In a few days, they all reach the Indian village of Canandaigua, at which place the great purchaser, Phelps, had preceded them, for the sale of his land. In the intermediate space, they had had some new adventures; they had seen and shot several wild turkeys; and one or two of the party had surprised some deer, and succeeded in killing a couple. These were so many trophies

of their woodman character, and gave new life and feelings to the whole. They had, too, been obliged to make many devious wanderings, in search of their way. The route became dubious; and it was only after going off at sundry diverging points, that they could feel any assurance they were near the track they should take. To add to these embarrassments, they had encountered wider and deeper water-courses; such as they could not venture to traverse without some means to float over some of their articles. Here, therefore, they were obliged to fell trees, and construct rafts of timber, on which to convey what was needed, to the opposite bank.

Backwoodsmen.—"Once in a while, they came across a solitary hunter. Savage as he was, it was a cheering sight, because he was human. Man loves man of every form, when found in solitude. Occasionally, they came across tokens of encampment, known by the signs of former fires, the tracks of cattle, and the fragments of their feast. The very sight of such remains was cheering, and set all the company in good humor and fine spirits. But when, once in a long while, they could see, in the distance, the curling smoke of a log hut, and a little clearing, their rejoiced spirits triumphed aloud. It hardly mattered who they were, the sight of white faces was so welcome; but if they had also gentleness and goodness to recommend them, mutual hospitalities were unbounded."

Reading Lesson CCLVII.

The Genesee.—"At Canandaigua, one of the families made arrangements to remain and settle; but the other two families, allured to still stronger hopes by more distant settlement, determined to keep on to the Genesee river. To this they were more especially inclined by the descriptions and the promised guidance of some friendly Senecas. Taking leave of their former companions, and the few other white settlers found there, they once more put forward, in their former method of march; and, after many renewed difficulties of going up to the head of streams, or having to pass them by slight bridges or rafts, they, at length, arrived at the long sought *lonely home*, placed near the banks of the now beautiful Genesee.

The log hut.—"Here began a new era of toil, enter-

prise, and skill. Their business, now, was to fell trees, and cut logs, for their future dwelling, and to locate it near a spring. At the same time, the boughs, in leaf, were set up pointing, like the pitch of a roof, to serve as a temporary shed and shelter for sundry articles taken out of the wagons. The log house, of one story, being constructed, and placed north and south, as their domestic sun-dial, and covered over with a stave roof; having a wide chimney, made of stones and clay, into which a log of ten feet length could be rolled for fuel; the doors were left purposely so wide that the horse could draw in a log, by a chain, and, leaving his load, pass out at the opposite side. Such a house was destined, in time, to be a kitchen, when they could construct a better one, adjoining. In the meantime, one great room below, with a *ground* floor, served 'for parlor, kitchen, and hall;' and the loft above made one general chamber of rest, with, here and there, a coverlet partition pendent between the different sexes.

Clearing.—"Now, the family being housed, the 'clearing,' of vital importance to their future support and nourishment, was set upon. Along the outer margin, the trees were cut down, and rolled inward, towards the centre, so as to break the line of communication with the adjacent woods. Then the whole was set into one general conflagration, so as to kill the trees, and provide an opening for the rays of the sun upon the land. Smoke and the perils of fire were endured as well as they could. When sufficiently burned out, the plough and the hoe were set into the soil, to prepare for planting corn and other needful grain.

"The women, too, had their concern, to make out their little garden spot, where they might set in their garden seeds; such as salad, beans, peas, onions, and cabbages; and their intended nursery of apple-seeds, and peach, plum, and cherry-stones; for, in such a state, every thing is to begin.

Home in the forest.—"As time advanced, all these primary arrangements were enlarged; and comforts were increased. The men and boys labored, all day; and, at night, the girls spun, and the boys knit. Their evening hours were talked down, pleasantly, with fond remembrances of former homes, and fond hopes of future prosperity. When Sabbath came, they united in hearing the

perusal of the family Bible, or in reading family sermons; and the hymn book was used, for its remembered song of Zion. Now they had no church, no merry chime of bells, no pastoral guardian. They felt this the more keenly, because of its absence. Three families then constituted the number of all the settlers; but these were friendly, and mutually helpful when urgent occasion required. The Indians would come, occasionally, to look on, saluting always with a friendly '*Itah*,' or 'good be to you.' Often deer were started, sometimes shot. Bears were sometimes seen, and hunted off. Smaller game was always at hand, to shoot; and, in the stream, the finest fish abounded."

Reading Lesson CCLVIII.

The sugar-camp.—"By and by, new settlers came along, in families, one by one. They were always warmly welcomed, and diligently assisted to make their log structures. In the spring and fall, was a period of harvest, of honeyed sweet from the juice of the maple-tree. The sugar-camp, as it was called, made an occasion of cheerful gathering, especially among the children, who loved to partake from the sugar-pans.

Privations.—"When the winter came, the fall of snow was deep and lasting; abiding, all the winter, several feet deep, and requiring, occasionally, the use of snow-shoes. To make paths and roads, in cases of deep snow, they had to arrange their cattle and drive them in lines of two abreast, to the places required. They had then no mills to grind their grain, and made use of a wooden mortar, formed from a hollowed log set on end, to which they applied a pestle, attached to a sweep like the pole of a well.

Life of childhood.—"In giving a domestic picture of such a frontier family, we must not forget to show how the children were sometimes employed. They had no school; but they were not idle: they had snares and traps about in the woods, where they often succeeded in snaring game. Partridges and rabbits they caught so, in abundance. Raspberries, blackberries, gooseberries, and whortleberries, grew in rich abundance, and afforded them delightful repasts. They had squirrels and rabbits which they had tamed. The cat, too, was diligent, and often

brought in her captures; calling, by her known cry, the children around, and laying down ground-mice or squirrels. At one time, the boys found a brood of young raccoons, which, being brought home, were all domesticated by good-natured puss. By and by, their joy was made complete, by the arrival of an old soldier, escaped from captivity, who gladly made his home among them, and used to amuse their evenings, by telling the family circle of his many hair-breadth 'scapes. He loved a story and loved a song; and with these sweetly he beguiled the hours. Some of his tales of suffering captives among the Indians, were full of pathos and interest, filling the heart and extorting a tear.

Wild animals.—"A friend who has been conversant with frontier settlements, describes the same as being originally well stocked with bears, wolves, deer, and turkeys. The flesh of the two last, was not only a luxury, but a necessary article of food. The wolf occasionally made great havoc among the few sheep,—committing assaults, at the same time, upon the wild deer. He has been known to attack cows. The bear confined himself to hogs; and sundry instances are given of his successful capture of these from their pens. He springs suddenly upon his victim, grasps him in his arms, or fore-legs, with great force, erects himself upon his hind-legs, *like a man*, and makes off with his load. The piercing squeal of the distressed hog, is the first warning to the owner. In such a manner, the bear will make off faster through a thick wood, than a man on foot can follow. The groans and struggles of the animal in his embrace, become weaker and weaker, and soon entirely cease; the prey being literally hugged to death.

The bear-trap.—"When a settler came upon any partly eaten animal, left by a bear, he was sure to set a trap for him, which would take him, within the next twenty-four hours; because it was his nature to return to feed on the remainder, and to show little or no sagacity in avoiding the snare. For this purpose, a heavy steel trap was used, with smooth jaws, and a long drag-chain, with iron claws at the extremity. It was not fastened to the spot, because the great strength of the bear, would enable him to free himself; but as he ran, after being ensnared, the claws would catch upon the brush, retarding his flight,

and leaving a distinct trail, by which he could be traced and overtaken, in a couple of miles, in a state of much exhaustion, and killed. This was done, by first allowing the dogs to test their courage and dexterity in the assault, —before the *finale* should be produced by the ball of the sure rifle. In these battles, if the shackles were upon the hind legs, leaving the fore-paws free, there were but few dogs who could venture upon close conflict, a second time.

Hunting.—"It was, occasionally, a winter affair, to make a gathering of all the male population, far and near, to make '*a drive*,' or large hunt, for the purpose of ridding the country of the bear and wolf. At other times, it was done upon a smaller scale, by fewer neighbors, for the purpose of capturing a few deer and turkeys. A 'drive' was conducted by making a circuit of a large tract of wild land; placing the members on the outer circle, sufficiently near to be within calling distance of each other; and then, with loud shoutings, and blowing of tin horns, proceeding inward to a common centre, so as to enclose the destined prey. When within half a mile of the centre, to mark which, the trees had been previously blazed, they called a halt;—sending round a man or two on horseback, to see that all should be equally prepared, at the sound and call of a common assault, by rushing inward to the centre.

"By this time, the herd of deer might be seen occasionally rushing, in affright, from one line to the other. If the drive had been a successful one, great numbers of turkeys could be seen flying among the trees, away from the spot. Deer too, as the circle was closing, could be seen sweeping round the ring, panting and terrified, under an incessant fire. Innocent and timid, as seem these leathern-coated, and tear-dropping animals, when so closely pressed, they sometimes make for the line, at full speed; and if the men there are too numerous or resolute to give way, they actually leap over their heads, and over all the stakes, pitchforks, and guns raised to oppose them. By a concert of the regular hunters, gaps are sometimes purposely made, to allow them to escape, the better to secure the bear and the wolf. Then the wolf is seen skulking through the bushes, aiming to escape observation by concealment. The bears, at the same time, are seen to dash through the brush, highly enraged, and going from

one side of the field to the other, regardless of the bullets which are playing upon them.

"After the game is mostly killed, a few good marksmen and dogs scour the ground, to stir up what may be concealed or wounded. This over, they all advance to the centre with a shout, dragging along the carcasses which have fallen, for the purpose of counting the result of their exploit.

"Such exposing and exciting incidents, familiar to frontier men, have been fruitful in training a high spirit of soldierly and military prowess. Wolves were taken in steel traps, but not very readily, in that way. The easiest means of their capture was in log pens, prepared like the roof of a house, shelving inwards, on all sides. In this, was to be placed the half-devoured carcass of a sheep, upon which they had previously feasted. The wolf easily clambered up the exterior side of the log cabin, and entered at the top, which was left open for that purpose; and being once there, he could neither escape nor throw it down.

Game.—"Turkeys were taken in square pens, made of lighter timber, and covered at the top. They entered at an open door in the side, which was suspended by a string that led to a catch within. This string and catch were covered with chaff, which induced them to enter, and while engaged in scratching about the chaff, to get at the grain therein, some one among them would strike the catch, and let the door down behind them all. Another mode of taking turkeys, was to make them pass in, by a very small door, in which was laid corn, to entice them inward; and when they were in and fed, they would look *only upward* for a way of escape, as seemingly forgetting the way by which they came.

Progress of a settlement.—"At length population and improvement increased. Pleasant villages and cottage clusters were seen in the midst of the wilderness; and houses for the worship of God, and schools for the instruction of children, rose, where, not long before, the wild beast had his range or his lair. What had begun as little and lonely dwellings, 'few and far between,' came, in time, to be the nucleus around which gathered other settlers, and formed a town."

Reading Lesson CCLIX.

*The Progress of Civilization and Improvement.**

"Late, from this western shore, *that*† morning chased
The deep and ancient night, which threw its shroud
O'er the green land of groves, the beautiful waste,
Nurse of full streams, and lifter up of proud
Sky-mingling mountains that o'erlook the cloud.
Erewhile, where yon gay spires their brightness rear,
Trees waved, and the brown hunter's shouts were loud
Amid the forest; and the bounding deer
Fled at the glancing plume, and the gaunt wolf yelled near.

"And where his willing waves yon bright blue bay
Sends up, to kiss his decorated brim,
And cradles, in his soft embrace, the gay
Young group of grassy islands born of him,
And crowding nigh, or in the distance dim,
Lifts the white throng of sails, that bear or bring
The commerce of the world;—with tawny limb,
And belt and beads in sunlight glistening,
The savage urged his skiff like wild bird on the wing.

"Then, all this youthful paradise around,
And all the broad and boundless mainland, lay
Cooled by the interminable wood, that frowned
O'er mount and vale, where never summer ray
Glanced, till the strong tornado broke his way
Through the gray giants of the sylvan wild;
Yet many a sheltered glade, with blossoms gay,
Beneath the showery sky and sunshine mild,
Within the shaggy arms of that dark forest smiled.

"There stood the Indian hamlet,—there the lake
Spread its blue sheet, that flashed with many an oar,
Where the brown otter plunged him from the brake,
And the deer drank: as the light gale flew o'er,
The twinkling maize-field rustled on the shore;
And while that spot, so wild, so lone and fair,
A look of glad and innocent beauty wore,
And peace was on the earth and in the air,—
The warrior lit the pile, and bound his captive there:

"Not unavenged—the foeman, from the wood,
Beheld the deed, and, when the midnight shade
Was stillest, gorged his battle-axe with blood:
All died,—the wailing babe—the shrieking maid;
And, in the flood of fire that scathed the glade,
The roofs went down; but deep the silence grew,
When on the dewy woods the day-beam played;
No more the cabin smokes rose wreathed and blue,
And, ever by their lake, lay moored the light canoe.

* The above extract from Bryant, sums up, in language of peculiar beauty, the sentiment of progress, and delineates truly the rapid advance of improvement, in the vast interior of New York. We have transcribed it as an appropriate sequel to the preceding sketches of pioneer life. † The light of human melioration.

"Look now abroad—another race has filled
These populous borders;—wide the wood recedes,
And towns shoot up, and fertile realms are tilled;
The land is full of harvests and green meads;
Streams numberless, that many a fountain feeds,
Shine, disembowered, and give to sun and breeze
Their virgin waters; the full region leads
New colonies forth, that toward the western seas
Spread, like a rapid flame among the autumnal trees.

"Here the free spirit of mankind, at length,
Throws its last fetters off; and who shall place
A limit to the giant's unchained strength,
Or curb his swiftness in the forward race?
Far, like the comet's way through infinite space,
Stretches the long untravelled path of light,
Into the depths of ages: we may trace,
Distant, the brightening glory of its flight,
Till the receding rays are lost to human sight."

SKETCHES OF SCENERY.

LANDSCAPE.

Reading Lesson CCLX.

The Hudson River.

The main purpose for which our pages are designed, is, to furnish a course of instructive reading lessons, on subjects connected with the various sources of useful local information. But the claims of taste have their just place, as well as those of utility; and proficiency in an appropriate and impressive style of reading, demands a due attention to both. Our selections have also been made with a view, in part, to the cultivation of the sense of beauty, and an influence on imagination and mental character, as one of the most desirable results of education.

From no source, more rich or more ample, could we draw materials of this description, than from the natural scenery of New York. The grandeur and beauty of nature are nowhere more abundantly or more strikingly displayed, in every variety of form,—from that of the mountain streamlet, with its miniature cascades and shady pools, to the stupendous cliffs, and majestic windings of the Hudson, or the awful sublimity of Niagara itself;—from the enchanting scenes of fairy beauty, reposing amid the seclusion of our smaller lakes, to the magnificent and ocean-like expanse of Erie or Ontario; —from the pleasing aspect of our fertile and highly cultivated vales, to that of the wild sublimity of mountain and forest and naked crag, amid the solitudes of the Catskills or the peaks of the Adirondac range.

We commence, here, a brief succession of graphic descriptions of a few characteristic local scenes, as presented in the pages of distinguished writers. The following poetic, and imaginative sketch of the scenery of the Hudson, embodies, in the most felicitous manner, the

varied and powerful impressions which it is adapted to produce on the mind. The passage is from the pen of Washington Irving, whose descriptions of his native scenes are not more admirably beautiful in expression, than they are true and faithful transcripts of actual nature.

Our extract, in the present instance, is from a work which is too imaginative for reality, in the structure of its materials, as regards the alleged facts of history, or the forms of human life and character, but which interesperses with its frolic scenes of broad humor and caricature, many beautiful glimpses of natural scenery. Those of our readers who have not yet perused the fanciful pages of Diedrich Knickerbocker, may need to be reminded that the extract refers to an imaginary account of a voyage of governor Stuyvesant, up the Hudson river. The spirit of the actual scene is faithfully preserved in the following paragraphs, though tinged with the language of romance, as to incident and character.

"Wildness and savage majesty reigned on the borders of this mighty river: the hand of cultivation had not, as yet, laid down the dark forests, and tamed the features of the landscape; nor had the frequent sail of commerce yet broken in upon the profound and awful solitude of ages. Here and there might be seen a rude wigwam, perched among the cliffs of the mountains, with its curling column of smoke mounting in the transparent atmosphere,—but so loftily situated, that the whoopings of the savage children, gambolling on the margin of the dizzy heights, fell almost as faintly on the ear, as do the notes of the lark, when lost in the azure vault of heaven. Now and then, from the beetling brow of some rocky precipice, the wild deer would look timidly down upon the splendid pageant, as it passed below; and then, tossing his branching antlers in the air, would bound away into the thicket of the forest.

"Through such scenes did the stately vessel of Peter Stuyvesant pass. Now did they skirt the bases of the rocky heights of Jersey, which spring up like everlasting walls, reaching from the waves unto the heavens; and were fashioned,—if traditions may be believed,—in times long past, by the mighty spirit of Manetho, to protect his favorite abodes from the unhallowed eyes of mortals. Now did they career it gaily across the vast expanse of

Tappan Bay, whose wide extended shores present a vast variety of delectable scenery;—here, the bold promontory, crowned with embowering trees, advancing into the bay,—there, the long woodland slope, sweeping up from the shore in rich luxuriance, and terminating in the upland precipice; while, at a distance, a long waving line of rocky heights threw their gigantic shades across the water. Now would they pass where some modest little interval, opening among these stupendous scenes, yet retreating, as it were, for protection, into the embraces of the neighboring mountains, displayed a rural paradise fraught with sweet and pastoral beauties; the velvet-tufted lawn,—the bushy copse,—the tinkling rivulet, stealing through the fresh and vivid verdure,—on whose banks was situated some little Indian village, or, peradventure, the rude cabin of some solitary hunter."

Reading Lesson CCLXI.

The Hudson River, continued.

"The different periods of the revolving day, seemed each, with cunning magic, to diffuse a different charm over the scene. Now would the jovial sun break gloriously from the east, blazing from the summits of the hills, and sparkling the landscape with a thousand dewy gems; while, along the borders of the river, were seen heavy masses of mist, which, like midnight caitiffs disturbed at his approach, made a sluggish retreat, rolling, in sullen reluctance, up the mountains. At such times, all was brightness and life and gayety: the atmosphere seemed of an indescribable pureness and transparency; and the birds broke forth in wanton madrigals; and the freshening breezes wafted the vessel merrily on her course. But when the sun sunk amid a flood of glory in the west, mantling the heavens and the earth with a thousand gorgeous dyes,—then all was calm, and silent, and magnificent. The late swelling sail hung lifelessly against the mast; the seamen, with folded arms, leaned against the shrouds, lost in that involuntary musing which the sober grandeur of nature commands, in the rudest of her children. The vast bosom of the Hudson was like an unruffled mirror, reflecting the golden splendor of the heavens, excepting that, now and then, a bark canoe

would steal across its surface, filled with painted savages, whose gay feathers glared brightly, as, perchance, a lingering ray of the setting sun gleamed upon them from the western mountains.

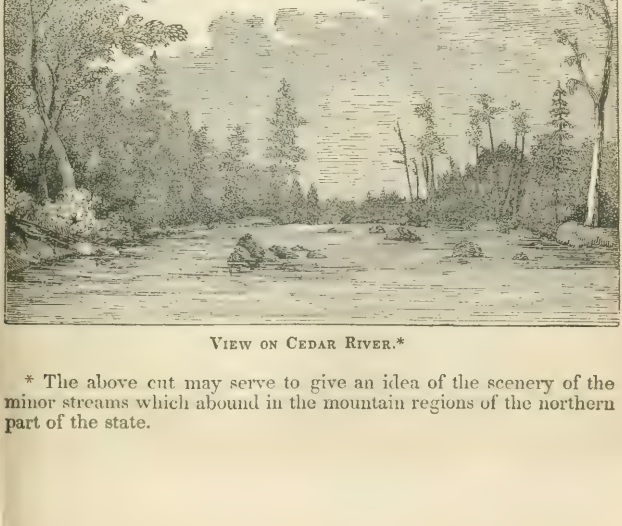
"But, when the hour of twilight spread its magic mists around, then did the face of nature assume a thousand fugitive charms, which, to the worthy heart that seeks enjoyment in the glorious works of its Maker, are inexpressibly captivating. The mellow dubious light that prevailed, just served to tinge, with illusive colors, the softened features of the scenery. The deceived but delighted eye sought, vainly, to discern, in the broad masses of shade, the separating line between the land and water; or to distinguish the fading objects that seemed sinking into chaos. Now did the busy fancy supply the feebleness of vision; producing, with industrious craft, a fairy creation of her own. Under her plastic wand, the barren rocks frowned upon the watery waste, in the semblance of lofty towers and high embattled castles; trees assumed the direful forms of mighty giants; and the inaccessible summits of the mountains seemed peopled with a thousand shadowy beings.

"Now broke forth, from the shores, the notes of an innumerable variety of insects, which filled the air with a strange but not inharmonious concert,—while, ever and anon, was heard the melancholy plaint of the whip-poor-will, who, perched on some lone tree, wearied the ear of night with his incessant moanings. The mind, soothed into a hallowed melancholy, listened, with pensive stillness, to catch and distinguish each sound that vaguely echoed from the shore,—now and then startled, perchance, by the whoop of some straggling savage, or the dreary howl of a wolf, stealing forth upon his nightly prowlings.

"Thus happily did they pursue their course, until they entered upon those awful defiles denominated The Highlands, where it would seem that the gigantic Titans had erst waged their impious war with heaven, piling up cliffs on cliffs, and hurling vast masses of rock, in wild confusion. But, in sooth, very different is the history of these cloud-capt mountains. These, in ancient days, before the Hudson poured his waters from the lakes, formed one vast prison, within whose rocky bosom the

omnipotent Manetho confined the rebellious spirits who repined at his control. Here, bound in adamantine chains, or jammed in rifted pines, or crushed by ponderous rocks, they groaned, for many an age. At length, the conquering Hudson, in his irresistible career towards the ocean, burst open their prison-house, rolling his tide triumphantly through its stupendous ruins.

"Still, however, do many of them lurk about their old abodes; and these it is, according to venerable legends, that cause the echoes which resound throughout these awful solitudes; and which are nothing but their angry clamors, when any noise disturbs the profoundness of their repose. For, when the elements are agitated by tempest, when the winds are up, and the thunder rolls, then horrible is the yelling and howling of these troubled spirits, making the mountains rebellow with their hideous uproar; for, at such times, it is said, they think the great Manetho is returning, once more to plunge them in gloomy caverns, and renew their intolerable captivity."



View on Cedar River.*

* The above cut may serve to give an idea of the scenery of the minor streams which abound in the mountain regions of the northern part of the state.

Reading Lesson CCLXII.

Otsego Lake.

The following vivid descriptions, though given in the homely language of a backwoodsman and a hunter, form a series of true and beautiful pictures of some of the most romantic spots that are to be found amid the seclusion of the lakes, or the solitudes of the mountain scenery of New York. The passage is enriched, rather than empoverished, by the peculiar dialect of the narrator. Our great artist, Washington Allston,—now no more,—once said, after reading the paragraphs quoted in the following extract, "I consider Leather-stocking the most original and beautiful creation of American genius."

The scene which we have transferred to our pages, occurs in captain Cooper's admirable delineations of local scenery, life, and character, embodied in his tale entitled the Pioneers. For the assistance of such of our young readers as may not have read the book, we may mention, —by way of explanation,—that, of the personages introduced in the extract, Edwards, the first speaker, is a youth whom circumstances have rendered intimate with, and much attached to, the others. These are the hunter, Natty Bumpo, or Leather-stocking, as he was called by the pioneer settlers, or Hawk-eye, by the Indians; and Mohecan, or Chingachgook, an aged chief of the Delaware tribe. At the time of their conversation, all three are engaged in fishing, in the waters of Otsego lake.

"'How beautifully tranquil and glassy the lake is!' said Edwards. 'Saw you it ever more calm and even than at this moment, Natty?'

"'I have known the Otsego water for five and forty years,' said Leather-stocking; 'and I will say that for it, which is, that a cleaner spring or a better fishing is not to be found in the land. Yes, yes—I had the place to myself once; and a cheerful time I had of it. The game was as plenty as heart could wish; and there was none to meddle with the ground, unless there might have been a hunting party of the Delawares crossing the hills, or, maybe, a rifling scout of them thieves, the Iroquois. There was one or two Frenchmen that squatted in the flats, further west, and married squaws; and some of the

Scotch-Irishers, from the Cherry Valley, would come on to the lake, and borrow my canoe to take a mess of parch, or drop a line for a salmon-trout; but, in the main, it was a cheerful place, and I had but little to disturb me in it. John would come; and John knows.'

"Mohegan turned his dark face, at this appeal, and, moving his hand forward with a graceful motion of assent, he spoke, using the Delaware language—

"'The land was owned by my people; we gave it to my brother, in council,—to the Fire-Eater; and what the Delawares give, lasts as long as the waters run. Hawk-eye smoked at that council; for we loved him.'

"'No, no, John,' said Natty, 'I was no chief; seeing that I know'd nothing of scholarship, and had a white skin. But it was a comfortable hunting-ground then, lad, and would have been so to this day, but for the money of Marmaduke Temple, and, may-be, the twisty ways of the law.'

"'It must have been a sight of melancholy pleasure, indeed,' said Edwards, while his eye roved along the shores and over the hills, where the clearings, groaning with golden corn, were cheering the forests with the signs of life, 'to have roamed over these mountains, and along this sheet of beautiful water, without a living soul to speak to, or to thwart your humor.'



"'Haven't I said it was a cheerful?' said Leather-stocking. 'Yes, yes—when the trees begun to be kivered with the leaves, and the ice was out of the lake, it was a second paradise. I have travelled the woods for fifty-three years, and have made them my home for more than forty; and I can say that I have met but one place that was more to my liking, and that was only to eyesight, and not hunting or fishing.'

"'And where was that place?' asked Edwards.

"'Where! why up on the Catskills.'"

Reading Lesson CCLXIII.

The Catskill Mountains.

"'I used often,' continued Leather-stocking, 'to go up into the mountains after wolves' skins, and bears; once they bought me to get them a stuffed painter; and so I often went. There's a place in them hills that I used to climb to, when I wanted to see the carryings on of the world, that would well pay any man for a barked shin or a torn moccasin. You know the Catskills, lad; for you must have seen them on your left, as you followed the river up from York, looking as blue as a piece of clear sky, and holding the clouds on their tops, as the smoke curls over the head of an Indian chief at a council fire. Well, there's the High-peak and the Round-top, which lay back, like a father and mother among their chidren, seeing they are far above all the other hills. But the place I mean, is next to the river, where one of the ridges juts out a little from the rest, and where the rocks fall for the best part of a thousand feet, so much up and down, that a man standing on their edges, is fool enough to think he can jump from top to bottom.'

"'What see you, when you get there?' asked Edwards.

"'Creation!' said Natty, dropping the end of his rod into the water, and sweeping one hand around him in a circle—'all creation, lad. I was on that hill, when Vaughan burnt 'Sopus, in the last war; and I seen the vessels come out of the Highlands as plain as I can see that lime-scow rowing into the Susquehanna, though one was twenty

times further from me than the other. The river was in sight for seventy miles, under my feet, looking like a curled shaving; though it was eight long miles to its banks. I saw the hills in the Hampshire grants, the high lands of the river, and all that God had done, or man could do, as far as eye could reach—you know that the Indians named me for my sight, lad—and from the flat on the top of that mountain, I have often found the place where Albany stands; and as for 'Sopus! the day the royal troops burnt the town, the smoke seemed so nigh, that I thought I could hear the screeches of the women.'

"'It must have been worth the toil, to meet with such a glorious view.'

"'If being the best part of a mile in the air, and having men's farms and housen at your feet, with rivers looking like ribands, and mountains bigger than the 'Vision,' seeming to be haystacks of green grass under you, gives any satisfaction to a man, I can recommend the spot. When I first come into the woods to live, I used to have weak spells, and I felt lonesome; and then I would go into the Catskills, and spend a few days on that hill, to look at the ways of man. But it's now many a year since I felt any such longings; and I'm getting too old for them rugged rocks.'"

Reading Lesson CCLXIV.

Fall on the Kaaterskill.

"'There's a place,* a short two miles back of that very hill, that, in late times, I relished better than the mountain; for it was more kivered with the trees, and was more nateral.'

"'And where was that?' inquired Edwards, whose curiosity was strongly excited by the simple description of the hunter.

"'Why, there's a fall in the hills, where the water of two little ponds that lie near each other, breaks out of their bounds, and runs over the rocks, into the valley. The stream is, maybe, such a one as would turn a mill, if so useless a thing was wanted in the wilderness. But the Hand that made that 'Leap,' never made a mill!

* The hunter continues his conversation with Edwards.

There the water comes crooking and winding among the rocks, first so slow that a trout could swim in it, and then starting and running, just like any creater that wanted to make a far spring, till it gets to where the mountain divides, like the cleft hoof of a deer, leaving a deep hollow for the brook to tumble into. The first pitch is nigh two hundred feet; and the water looks like flakes of driven snow, afore it touches the bottom; and there the stream gathers itself together for a new start, and, maybe, flutters over fifty feet of flat-rock, before it falls for another hundred, when it jumps about from shelf to shelf, first turning this-away, and then turning that-away, striving to get out of the hollow, till it finally comes to the plain.'

"'I have never heard of this spot before!' exclaimed Edward; 'it is not mentioned in the books.'

"'I never read a book in my life,' said Leather-stocking; 'and how should a man who has lived in towns and schools know any thing about the wonders of the woods? No, no, lad; there has that little stream of water been playing among them hills, since He made the world; and not a dozen white men have ever laid eyes on it. The rock sweeps like mason-work, in a half round, on both sides of the falls, and shelves over the bottom, for fifty feet; so that when I've been sitting at the foot of the first pitch, and my hounds have run into the caverns behind the sheet of water, they've looked no bigger than so many rabbits. To my judgment, lad, it's the best piece of work that I've met with in the woods; and none know how often the hand of God is seen in a wilderness, but them that rove it for a man's life.'

"'What becomes of the water? In which direction does it run? Is it a tributary of the Delaware?'

"'Anan!' said Natty.

"'Does the water run into the Delaware?'

"'No, no, it's a drop for the old Hudson; and a merry time it has, till it gets down off the mountain. I've sat on the shelving rock, many a long hour, boy, and watched the bubbles as they shot by me, and thought how long it would be before that very water, which seemed made for the wilderness, would be under the bottom of a vessel, and tossing in the salt sea. It is a spot to make

a man solemnize. You can see right down into the valley that lies to the east of the High-peak, where, in the fall of the year, thousands of acres of woods are before your eyes, in the deep hollow, and along the side of the mountain, painted like ten thousand rainbows, by no hand of man, though not without the ordering of God's providence.'"

Reading Lesson CCLXV.

Adirondac Pass.

The sublime and impressive scene described in the following extract from professor Emmons's Report, is one of the many which have been explored and delineated during the researches, made in connection with the geological survey of the state.



View of the Adirondac mountains, from lake Sandford.

"In the midst of the mountains of Essex county, at the source of one of the main branches of the Hudson river, there is a deep, narrow gorge, which has been denominated the Adirondac Pass.*

* The Adirondac river and mountains, in common with this pass, have received their name from that of the Adirondacs, or Algonquins, an Indian tribe who were the original occupants of the circumjacent region, previous to their expulsion by the Iroquois.

"This pass may be approached, in one direction, from the Adirondac iron-works, from which it is distant about five miles. In this route, the above-mentioned branch of the Hudson is followed, up the whole distance, even to its source,—at the very base of the immense precipice that forms one side of the pass.

"The whole journey has to be performed on foot; as it is impossible for any vehicle or domestic animal to reach this gorge. The mountains which are concerned in its formation, are Mount McIntyre upon the east, and the wall-faced mountain,—as it is termed by some,—on the west.

"The route from the Adirondac iron-works, is a rapidly ascending one; the rise equalling about two hundred feet per mile; so that the pass is one thousand feet above the level of the iron-works, and about twenty-eight hundred feet above tide. The highest point, in the pass, however, is two or three hundred feet above the base of the perpendicular rocks.

"The last half mile towards this place, ascends with increasing rapidity; and, on this part of the route, lie numbers of immense rocks, thirty and forty feet high, scattered over the surface; some of which may be ascended; and upon their tops sufficient vegetable mould has accumulated to support a growth of trees, fifty feet in height. The sides of the mountain, opposite the perpendicular wall, are literally strewed with these rocks; and as they are not properly boulders, they are objects of great curiosity themselves. Some of them have fallen partly over, or incline in such a position as would afford a safe shelter to a score of men. Others stand upright upon a narrow base; and we wonder how, upon such a narrow foundation, so large and towering a mass of stone could have been placed in equilibrium, especially upon a sloping surface.

"But the object of greatest interest, is the perpendicular precipice of a thousand feet,—a naked wall of rock. The face of this wall rises from the midst of an immense mass of loose rocks, which have been falling from its side, from time immemorial; and, viewing them as they now lie, they seem to fill an immense cleft between the mountains; and, probably, the bottom of this perpendicular precipice is really as deep below, as its top is high above the surface; or, at least, its extent be-

low the surface, where we take the measurement, must be one-half as great as it is above. Upon the perpendicular surface, the rock is naked; but where there is a fissure, or a jutting mass, small stunted shrubs find a place for establishing themselves. This wall extends one-half or three-fourths of a mile; and in no place is it less than five hundred feet perpendicular.

"In viewing this great precipice, no feeling of disappointment arises, in consequence of the expectation having exceeded the reality. The conception of this imposing mass of rock, necessarily falls greatly short of what is experienced, when it comes to be seen. Those who visit this pass, ought, by no means, to be satisfied with seeing it from below: they should look down from above, and over the hanging precipice. This may be done safely, by using due caution, in approaching its edge. No one, however, will attempt it without being supported, or venture to act under the impression that he has sufficient nerve to balance himself over such an abyss, where all objects below become indistinct, and nothing remains on which to rest the eye, and thus give certainty and precision to the movements of the muscles concerned in maintaining the equilibrium of the body.

"The geological facts revealed in this great exposure of rocks, do not differ materially from those which are exhibited on all sides, in this region. We are taught, however, something of the dynamics of geology, and of the inconceivable powers of those agents once active beneath the crust of the earth; for this immense mass has not only been elevated, but broken from one once continuous with it; and, probably, we see only a small part of that which has been thus broken and elevated.

"In conclusion, I remark that I should not have occupied so much space for the purpose of describing merely a natural curiosity, were it not for the fact that, probably, in this country, there is no object of the kind, on a scale so vast and imposing as this. We look upon the Falls of Niagara with awe, and a feeling of our insignificance; but much more are we impressed with the great and the sublime, in the view of the simple naked rock of the Adirondac Pass."

We regret that our limits will not admit any farther extension of these scenic descriptions. We have selected

a few, only, of the most interesting and peculiar. Such as are accessible in our school manuals of geography,—Niagara, for instance, and the lakes,—we have intentionally omitted; our design being, not to exhaust any branch of our subject, but rather to indicate to our readers as many as possible of the different sources from which they may, at moments of leisure, derive instruction and entertainment, in the perusal of works relating to their native state.—A few selections from local specimens in the department of animated nature, must now bring the descriptive part of this volume to a close.



LAKE SCENE IN HAMILTON COUNTY.*

* The above representation forms another interesting specimen of the scenery of the smaller lakes in the northern region of the state.

LOCAL
OUTLINES OF NATURAL HISTORY.

ANIMALS.

Reading Lesson CCLXVI.

Introductory Observations.

A volume designed for practical reading lessons, although it does not admit subjects of a purely scientific character, or in a strictly systematic form, may justly be permitted to select, from the wide field of science, such facts as are most striking or attractive, and best adapted to the exercise of reading aloud. The following brief descriptions will, we think, be found interesting, either as recalling familiar and pleasing objects, or gratifying the natural curiosity of the mind regarding what is comparatively rare.

The natural history of New York, forms an ample and rich field for study, to the mind which loves to contemplate the works of creative Wisdom; and it is among the many advantages enjoyed by the youth of our day, that they possess facilities, hitherto rare, for exploring the world of nature, by resorting to its actual scenes and objects, with the aid of cabinets and specimens, as well as books and instruction.

Our aim, in the following selections, is, while furnishing entertaining and instructive subjects for reading exercises, to contribute, in our sphere, to the formation of an early taste for the study of natural history,—a branch of information of indispensable utility, and abounding in the richest sources of genuine mental enjoyment.

Our immediate purpose, however, will only permit us to offer a few selections from the most striking characteristics of the various animated tribes which are found within the limits of the state of New York; and our descriptions turn, chiefly, on such as are most closely connected with the matter contained in previous pages of this work.

For the following preliminary remarks, and the descriptive details to which they are prefixed, we are indebted, chiefly, to the instructive and interesting researches of Dr. James E. De Kay, as they are presented in the ample volumes of the State Reports,—a noble monument of the munificence of the state toward the interests of science and of education. To these volumes, we trust, all our readers will, at future opportunity, resort for personal information on the rich subjects of which they treat.

REPTILES.

"So general is the repugnance of mankind to the animals composing these classes, that their study has been overlooked; and they have usually been considered as beings which it was not only necessary but meritorious to destroy. A part of this vulgar prejudice is derived from education; and, perhaps, some of it may originate from the fact that several of them are furnished with venomous fangs, capable of causing intolerable sufferings and death.

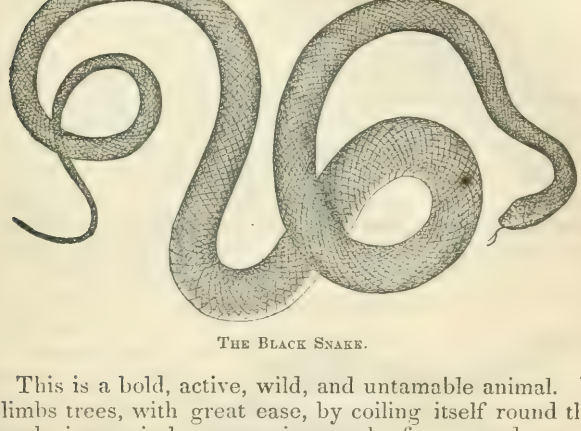
"To the naturalist and physiologist, however,—to those who study nature, through her various modifications of form and structure, they present some of the most interesting objects of contemplation. Their utility,—either in diminishing the number of noxious animals, or in furnishing food themselves to others,—has been lost sight of; and, because they are cold to the touch, with a naked, slimy skin, without hair or feathers, they have been considered as loathsome and hideous, although their structure displays as much of the omnipotence and care of the Creator, as can be seen in those which are considered to be the most gorgeous and beautiful of animated beings.

"The number of known reptiles and amphibious animals, throughout the world, has been variously estimated. It seems to be considered, by some writers, to reach to one thousand, three hundred species; whilst others suppose that one thousand, five hundred scarcely comprise them all. As the greater number inhabit the torrid zone, we are not to expect to find many in the United States."

In the work of Dr. De Kay, are enumerated one hundred and sixty-one species; and sixty-three species

are described and figured, as found in the state of New York; but he supposes the list to be far from being exhausted.

Reading Lesson CCLXVII.



The Black Snake.

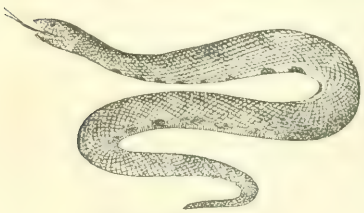
This is a bold, active, wild, and untamable animal. It climbs trees, with great ease, by coiling itself round the trunk, in a spiral manner, in search of eggs and young birds. Although perfectly free from any venomous qualities,* black snakes will, on some occasions, make considerable resistance, and even pursue an enemy who retreats before them. In various parts of the state, they have the popular names of "racer," "pilot," and "black snake." They feed on frogs, toads, and the smaller quadrupeds and birds.—The system of mutual destruction, which is, so extensively, a part of the law of nature, in relation to the inferior animals, was once strikingly exemplified, in the case of a black snake. A Georgian negro boy,—disposed to make a display of his personal courage, before his juvenile masters and their teacher,—

* A planter, in South Carolina, wishing to overcome the cowardice, as he termed it, of the horse he was riding, compelled it to approach and tread on a black snake, from which it had shrunk with violent trembling. The snake reared its head, and struck its fangs into the leg of the horse. Fortunately, no worse consequence ensued than a large swelling around the wounded spot.

not satisfied with killing a large reptile of this species, by the blow of a club, continued to strike it, for some time. The body of the black snake was thus laid open, and that of a "ground rattlesnake" disclosed within it. The little African, exulting in his double victory, commenced beating the "ground-rattle," when,—to his great delight,—the undigested carcase of a field-mouse was, in turn, disengaged from the crushed body of the smaller snake.

The lovers of the marvellous have attributed to this and many other species, the power of fascination. This wonderful power seems to be confined exclusively to birds. All the phenomena witnessed on such occasions, may be readily solved by the terror occasioned by the snake's appearance near their young, and by the well-known artifices resorted to, by many birds, to mislead an enemy.

This is a vicious reptile; and its bite is justly dreaded. Its poison is considered as deadly as that of a rattlesnake; and an instance is recorded, where a horse, struck by one of these reptiles, died in a few hours.

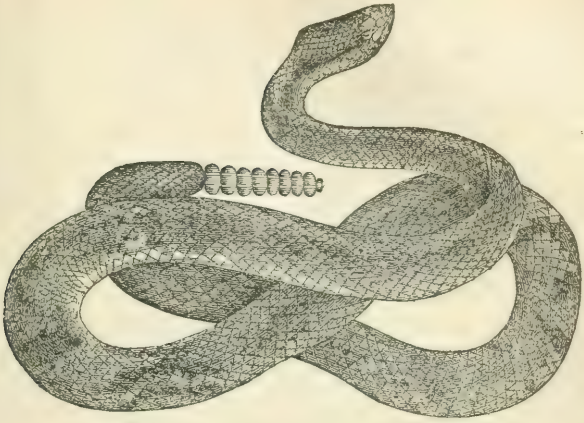


THE COPPER-HEAD.

It has various popular names, in different districts: the most common of these are, in this state, "copper-head," "red adder," and "dumb rattlesnake."

The motions of this animal are sluggish; and, when approached, it assumes a threatening aspect; raising its head and throwing out its tongue. It is found chiefly in pastures and low meadow grounds; feeding on field-mice, frogs, and the smaller disabled birds.

Many vegetable antidotes have been proposed, against the venomous bite of this and the rattlesnake; but they all seem to depend, mainly, upon their being infused in large quantities of fluid. When the parts can be reached, after the application of a ligature, sucking the wound, if long continued, is commonly sufficient, together with copious draughts of oil, milk, or even warm water.



The Northern Rattlesnake.

Although furnished with such deadly weapons, the rattlesnake can scarcely be termed a vicious animal; for he rarely strikes, unless almost trodden upon. When suddenly disturbed, he throws himself into a coil, and warns the aggressor, by rapidly vibrating his rattles; these can scarcely be heard beyond the distance of a few yards. This is most usually the case; but they occasionally strike without the slightest warning.

Dr. De Kay relates the following anecdote, of the impressions of the Indians regarding the rattlesnake:—"Some years since, I was at an Indian settlement, in the western part of the state, when, as we passed through a thick undergrowth of bushes, one of the Indians was struck in this sudden manner; but as his legs were enveloped in thick leggings, the stroke was harmless. The other Indians immediately hunted down and killed the reptile. They assured me, that, whenever a rattlesnake sprung his rattle, it was a sign that he himself was alarmed, and that, in such cases, they invariably spared his life."

It is a popular but erroneous belief, that a rattle is added each year. This is controverted by Dr. Holbrook, who has known two rattles added in one year; and Dr. Bachman has observed four produced in the same period. The upper jaw of this reptile is furnished with long, curved,

acute, and hollowed fangs, which are replaced by others in the rear, when broken off. A poison-bag which occupies the whole length of the jaw beneath the skin, communicates with these fangs, at their bases. At the moment the snake strikes, he ejects the venom forcibly into the wound.

In an instance of a very large rattlesnake, from Florida, which was irritated, he struck violently against the iron wire on the side of the cage, and ejected the venom to the distance of three feet. The absurd notion of fascination is entertained by few, at the present day.*

The rattlesnake is common, in various parts of the state, and, in the northern states, generally, appears to prefer rocky situations. These reptiles abound in Clinton, Essex, and Warren counties, along the shores of lakes Champlain and George. Some idea may be formed of their numbers, in certain districts in this state, by the following extract from a Warren county paper:—"Two men, in three days, killed eleven hundred and four rattlesnakes, on the east side of Tongue mountain, in the town of Bolton. Some of the reptiles were very large, carrying from fifteen to twenty rattles. They were killed for their oil, or grease, which is said to be very valuable."

Although numerous, in the rocky, mountainous districts of this state, they are rare, or entirely wanting, in those elevated regions which give rise to the Moose, the Raquet, and the Hudson rivers. They are found in the counties of Sullivan, Ulster, Orange, and Greene. A few still linger in the swamps of Suffolk county.

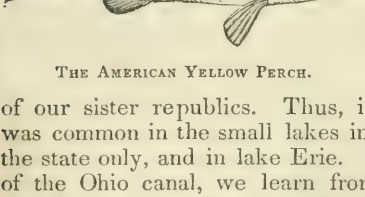
* The fascination is undoubtedly but the paralyzing effect of fear. The following instance may be cited. A healthy, active, and courageous negro slave, of a plantation in the state of South Carolina, having rowed his master across the Savannah river, on his way to a shooting match, hauled up his canoe on the bank, and proceeded to fasten it, —for greater security,—to a stake, near the water's edge. All this he had done, in a low stooping attitude, without happening to look around him. When about to raise his head, his eye fell on the form of a huge rattlesnake, with head raised "in act to strike," and within a few feet of his face as he stooped. The negro was struck both dumb and motionless with terror. His master, now at some distance, called to him, reproving him for loitering; but seeing the slave still stooping, yet not stirring, he came back to see what could be the cause. He no sooner approached, a few steps, than he saw how matters stood, and, bringing his loaded rifle to the level, shot the reptile through the head, with the unerring aim of a Carolinian planter. The disenchanted African sprang up, and capered for joy at his escape.

It is a popular belief that hogs are particularly destructive to these reptiles. This may be true to a certain extent; but neither their bristly hide, nor their thick teguments, afford them perfect immunity from the fangs of this serpent.* I was informed by a respectable farmer in Dutchess county, that he lost three hogs, in one season, by the poison either of the copper-head or rattlesnake. The more probable explanation is, that the rattlesnake gradually disappears, and is finally extirpated, before the progress of cultivation.

Reading Lesson CCLXVIII.

FISHES.

The following accounts, as given by Dr. De Kay, may prove interesting to young readers. They regard fishes of which most of them possess a degree of personal knowledge, more or less extensive, according to their situation and opportunities.



The American Yellow Perch.

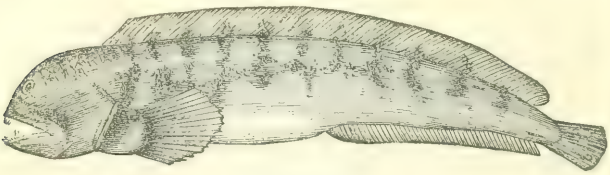
The common yellow perch is one of the best known and widely distributed of all our river fishes. Its geographical distribution has been much extended, within a few years, by the artificial water channels created by the enterprise of several of our sister republics. Thus, in the state of Ohio, it was common in the small lakes in the northern parts of the state only, and in lake Erie. Since the construction of the Ohio canal, we learn from Kirtland that it has found its way into the Ohio river, and may soon be observed in the Mississippi.

It is common, in almost every pond and stream, throughout the northern and middle states, and in all the great lakes. It has, occasionally, been transported from one pond to another, with complete success. In 1790, Dr. Mitchill transferred some of them from Ronkonkama to

* The destruction of the young rattlesnake, by the pigs, while ranging the woods, is no unusual sight, in our Southern states.

Success pond, a distance of forty miles, where they soon multiplied.

In 1825, a similar experiment was made, by transporting perch from Skaneateles to Otisco and Onondaga lakes. In this latter case, the perch increased remarkably. The fish vary considerably, in size, in different localities. "I have caught them," says Dr. De Kay, "in Otsego lake, weighing nearly three pounds, and have heard of them exceeding this weight."



THE SEA WOLF.

The voracious and savage character of this fish, is manifest, in the formidable array of teeth with which he is provided, and by his vicious and pugnacious propensities, when first drawn from the water. Marvellous tales are related of the strength and power of his jaws; but these more properly belong to the romance of natural history.

He is known under the various popular names of "cat," "wolf fish," and "sea cat." His ill-favored aspect causes him to be regarded with aversion by fishermen; but his flesh is by no means unsavory: when smoked, it is said to have somewhat the flavor of salmon.

Sea wolf are not unfrequently taken off Rockaway beach, in company with the common cod. This Dr. De Kay supposes to be their extreme southerly limit, yet observed. In high northern latitudes, the sea wolf is said to attain the length of six and eight feet.



THE TWO-SPINED TOAD-FISH.

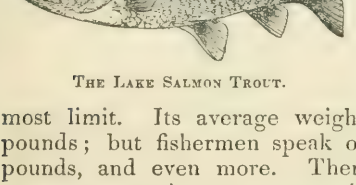
This little fish is usually found on muddy bottoms. Dr. De Kay mentions it as having frequently been brought to him, enclosed between the two valves of an oyster. "I should think it abundant," he says, "in our waters, from the following circumstance. In the summer of 1824,

a number of these fish were found in the streets of New York, after a heavy shower; and many idle speculations were hazarded in the papers of the day, as to their origin.

"An eminent ichthyologist, of that period, spoke of them 'as unknown to our waters, and not described in the books of ichthyology.' 'The speculation is an exceedingly curious one, how fishes could be elevated into the atmosphere, and by what means kept alive, after they are raised.' Showers of fish are not uncommon, and are susceptible of an easy solution. They are raised by whirlwinds or water-spouts; and the tenacity of life, in the species under consideration, accounts for their being found alive."

Reading Lesson CCLXIX.

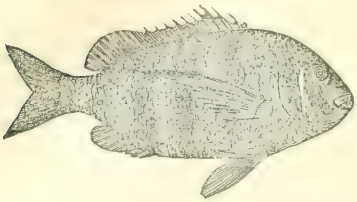
The "lake salmon," "lake trout," or "salmon trout," of the state of New York, occurs in most of the northern lakes of this state; and it has been observed in Silver lake, Pennsylvania, adjacent to Broome county, which, is its southernmost limit. Its average weight is from eight to ten pounds; but fishermen speak of some weighing thirty pounds, and even more. There is, however, such a strong propensity to exaggeration, in every thing pertaining to aquatic animals, that strict dependence cannot be placed on cases derived from such sources.



The Lake Salmon Trout.

The lake trout furnish an important, and often necessary article of food, to the frontier settler. They frequent the deepest part of the lake, and, unlike most other trout, never rise to the fly. In order to take them, particular deep spots are selected and marked by buoys. Large quantities of small fish are then cut up, and thrown in at the buoys, for several days in succession. After having been thus baited, and accustomed to resort to the spot, they are then readily taken by the hook. Some idea of their abundance may be formed from the fact, that a single fisherman has been known to capture, on Paskungameh or Long Lake, five hundred weight, in the course of a week.

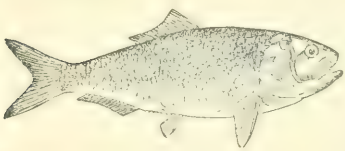
This fish,—which has its name, probably, more from the appearance of its mouth and teeth, than from the profile of its head, and its curved nose and forehead,—appears on our shores in June. They enter the shallow bays on Long Island, where they are caught by the seine, occasionally, in great numbers. They are a wary, timid fish; and to take them by the hook, requires much dexterity. If the season is mild, they are found here as late as the middle of October, but more usually they disappear in September.



The Sheepshead.

Dr. Mitchill supposes that the sheepshead depart from our shores to the unknown depths of the ocean; it is more probable that they return to warmer latitudes, along the coast. They occasionally weigh from twelve to fifteen pounds, but are then not as valuable as those of a smaller size.

This fish is known under the various names of "bony-fish," "hard-head," "mossbonkers," (or as it is pronounced by our Dutch inhabitants, "morsebonkers,") "panhagen" and "menhaden;" the last being the name given by the Manhattans, and "panhagen," the Narraganset epithet. At the east end of the island, they are called "skippangs" or "bunkers."



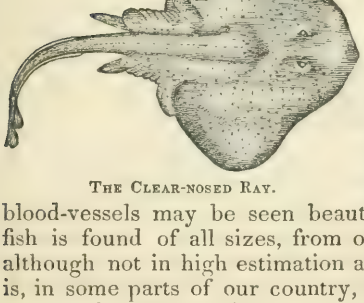
The Mossbonker.

Although seldom eaten,—as it is dry, without flavor, and full of bones,—yet this is one of the most valuable fish found within our waters. Its use, as a manure, is well known, in the counties of Suffolk, Kings, and Queens, where it is a source of great wealth to the farmer who lives upon the seacoast. Mossbonkers are used in various ways: for Indian corn, two or three are thrown upon a hill; for wheat, they are thrown broadcast on the field, and ploughed under; although it is not uncommon to put them in layers

alternately with common mould, and, when decomposed, to spread the compost, like any other. Its effects in renovating old grass-fields, are very remarkable.

The mossbonkers appear on the shores of Long Island, about the beginning of June, in immense *scholes*;* and as they frequently swim with a part of the head above or near the surface of the water, they are readily seen and captured. They are commonly sold, on the spot, at the rate of two dollars the wagon-load, containing about a thousand fish. At Bridgehampton, at the east end of the island, eighty-four wagon-loads, or in other words, eighty-four thousand fish, were, in one instance, taken at a single haul.

This common fish has one rare and beautiful peculiarity, connected with light and color. It has, on each side of the snout, a space extending backward, nearly to the orbits, so translucent, that any dark substance may be seen through it. This space is filled with gelatinous fluid, through which the blood-vessels may be seen beautifully displayed. This fish is found of all sizes, from one to three feet; and, although not in high estimation as a luxury of the table, is, in some parts of our country, extensively used as an article of substantial food.



THE CLEAR-NOSED RAY.

The Oceanic Vampire, or Sea Devil.—This is one of those huge monsters of the deep, which are occasionally captured along our shores. It has been known to seize the cables of small vessels at anchor, and draw them for several miles, with great velocity. An instance of this kind was related by a credible eye-witness, as having occurred in the harbor of Charleston. A schooner lying at anchor, was suddenly seen moving across the harbor, with great rapidity, impelled by some unknown and mysterious power. Upon approaching the opposite shore, its course

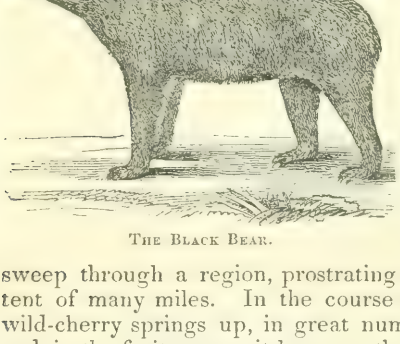
* Dr. De Kay justly remarks that this word should always preserve this primitive orthography, as the proper distinction from the merely popular corruptions of "shoal" and "school."

was changed so suddenly as nearly to capsize the vessel, when it again crossed the harbor, with its former velocity; and the same scene was repeated, when it approached the shore. These mysterious flights across the harbor, were repeated, several times, in the presence of hundreds of spectators,—then suddenly ceased.

Reading Lesson CCLXX.

QUADRUPEDS.

This animal, once so numerous in this state,—is now chiefly to be found in the mountainous and thinly-inhabited districts. It does not eat animal food from choice, and never, unless pressed by hunger: it prefers berries and fruits.



The Black Bear.

In the forests in the northern parts of the state, a tornado will sometimes sweep through a region, prostrating the pines, to an extent of many miles. In the course of a few years, the wild-cherry springs up, in great numbers, on this tract; and, in the fruit season, it becomes the resort of numerous bears.* It also feeds upon the whortle-berry, grapes, honey, persimmons, and roots of various kinds.

Its fondness for sweet things, is evident whenever it enters an apple orchard, invariably selecting the sweetest kinds. It will also devour eggs, insects, and small quadrupeds, and birds; but when it has abundance of its favorite vegetable food, will pass the carcass of a deer without touching it. The bear is an imitative animal;

* The effects of such a tornado were observed in Hamilton county in the summer of 1840, near Eighth lake. The course of the windfall,—as it is popularly called,—was from west to east. It extended thirty miles, with a breadth varying from half a mile to two miles. This occurred fifteen years ago. It has been subsequently burned over, and abounds in poplar, white birch, wild-cherries, wild raspberries, etc., which attracted to this district great numbers of deer and numerous bears.

and hence, when it meets a man, it will rise on its hind-legs, but is apparently soon satisfied with the comparison, and endeavors to make its escape. It is a great traveller, and, when pursued by tracking, has been known to perform long journeys. It never makes immediately for its retreat, but approaches it in a circling manner.

A bear was started, near Schroon, some years since, and, after a chase of eighteen days, was finally killed. Although seldom seen during the chase, yet he appeared to be fully aware that he was an object of pursuit; and the worn and lacerated condition of his feet testified to his exertions to escape.

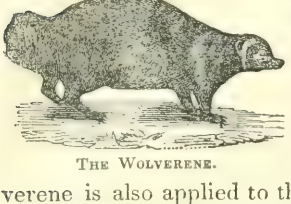
Bears are numerous along the borders of the Saranac, and in the mountainous regions of Rockland and Greene. Occasionally, they invade the enclosures of the farmer, in search of potatoes and Indian corn. Their depredations are, however, speedily checked; for they are timid, and will never attack a man, unless previously wounded, or in defence of their young.

Some of the hunters imagine that there are two varieties of the common black bear, viz., the short-legged and the long-legged; but others think that the difference is owing entirely to the fact that some are fatter and more robust, which produces an apparent difference in the length of their legs.

The "yellow bear" of Carolina, and the "cinnamon bear" of the northern regions, are varieties of this species. In this state, they retire with the first fall of snow, to caverns, or to the hollow of some decayed tree, or beneath a prostrate tree, during the winter, and pass three or four months in a state of torpidity. For more southern latitudes, the hybernation is of shorter duration, and ceases to occur, when the mildness of the winter enables them to procure food. They are fat, when they enter their winter quarters, and much emaciated, when they leave them in the spring. Indeed, this condition of fatness is so necessary, that, when the supply of food is cut off, instead of retiring to winter quarters, they migrate southwardly to warmer regions.

The flesh of the bear is savory, but rather luscious, and tastes not unlike pork. It was once so common an article of food in New York, as to have given the name of "bear market" to one of the principal markets in the city.

This is a very troublesome and destructive animal. It has been known to follow "a sable line" of forty or fifty miles, destroying every trap for the purpose of obtaining the bait. Much of the fictitious history of this animal is founded on the circumstance that the name of wolverene is also applied to the Bay lynx; and in this way we are to account for its habit of climbing trees, etc. attributed to it by Lawson, Buffon, and others. It destroys great numbers of the smaller quadrupeds. The celebrated half-breed Indian, John Hunter, informed Dr. De Kay that it was called *gwing-gwah-gay* by the Indians of his tribe, which he interpreted "a tough thing," or, as he afterwards explained it, "a hard character,"—in allusion to its mischievous disposition. He said that he had known it to be domesticated, and employed by the Indians to catch beaver.

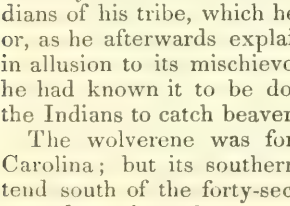


The Wolverene.

The wolverene was formerly found as far south as Carolina; but its southern limits, at present, do not extend south of the forty-second degree. To the north, it extends to the polar sea, as high as the seventy-fifth degree of north latitude.

Reading Lesson CCLXXI.

This is a very pretty and active little animal, inhabiting the elevated and wooded districts in the northern parts of the state. It lives entirely in trees, and is a nocturnal animal, and excessively carnivorous; feeding on mice, birds' eggs, squirrels, etc. The females are said to be smaller than the males. It has been tamed; but from its petulant character, is never docile.



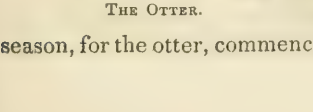
The Sable.

The fur of this animal is exceedingly beautiful, and highly esteemed. The hunters say that, as you proceed north, the fur becomes darker and more valuable; but this seems rather a peculiarity in certain districts.

The sable is exceedingly active, and destroys great quantities of squirrels,—the red squirrel only occasionally escaping by its superior agility. It is so prolific, and finds the means of living with so much ease, that it would long since have multiplied to a great extent, were it not hunted so perseveringly, for its fur.

The hunting season for the sable, in this state, begins about the tenth of October, and ends in the middle of April. The hunters assert, that in the beech-nut season, when they are very abundant, the sable will not touch bait of any kind; believing that, at that time, it feeds upon these nuts. It is probable, however, that the abundance of nuts attracts great numbers of the smaller quadrupeds, which are thus offered an easy prey to the sable.

A line of traps for these animals, technically called "a sable line," sometimes extends sixty or seventy miles, containing six to ten traps in a mile, according to the nature of the ground. The construction of these traps is exceedingly simple. The hunter cuts off long chips from the nearest tree, and drives them into the ground, forming three sides of a square, about six inches across; the top is covered with spruce boughs. The bait, which is either a bit of venison, mice, or red squirrel, or any other small animal, is put on the end of a round stick, and placed within the trap, resting on a round stick lying on the ground across the open end; on this rests a short, upright stick, supporting a heavy log or small tree. Any disturbance of the bait causes the log to fall, and crush the animal. These traps are visited once a fortnight, and oftener, if practicable. The wolverene, as we have before remarked, will often destroy these traps, by breaking into them behind, and eat up not only the bait, but the captured animal.



THE OTTER.

The American otter,—once so numerous in every part of of the state,—is now exceedingly scarce. In the counties of Kings, Queens, Suffolk, and Richmond, it is now extirpated. In the northern districts, it is yet sufficiently numerous to become an object of pursuit. The hunting season, for the otter, commences, there, about the twentieth

of September, and continues until the middle of May; and its fur ranks, in value, next to that of the beaver: a good skin is worth eight dollars. They are used by hatters for the finer sorts of hats, and are also converted into costly caps.

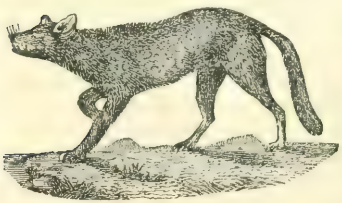
The otter is a sagacious, wary animal; selecting low swampy grounds, near a pond or running stream, for his abode. He makes an excavation in the bank, which opens under water, and a small breathing-hole to the surface of the ground. Like the beaver, he is too sagacious to be caught by any bait in a trap; and, accordingly the steel trap is placed in the water, beneath the exit from their burrow, or at the bottom of one of their "slides."

These "otter-slides,"—as they are termed—form one of the most interesting peculiarities in the history of the animal, and almost approach the fabulous. In winter, they select a high bank of snow, and amuse themselves for hours in sliding down, head foremost. In summer, they choose a steep bank by the side of a stream, which terminates in deep water, and indulge there in the same recreation.—Dr. De Kay says, that, although he had never seen the animal thus employed, the alleged habit is universally believed among hunters; and he mentions that he had seen, in the uninhabited northern districts of the state, many of the places which had been used as slides, and which pointed out, to the keen eye of the hunter, a sure sign of numerous otters in the vicinity.

The otter is capable of being domesticated, and lives principally on fish and other aquatic animals. They live in small families, like the beaver.

Reading Lesson CCLXXII.

This animal, in this state, confines its depredations, chiefly, to deer and other animals. In some of the southern counties, where they were formerly so numerous as to require legislative enactments, they are now entirely extirpated. Van der Donck, when writing from New



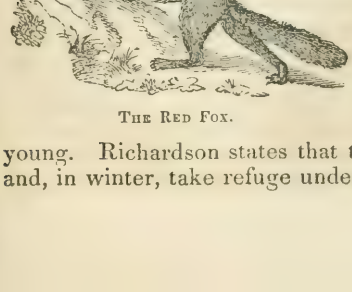
The American Wolf.

York, about the year 1645, says, that one of the principal objections to keeping sheep in the colony, was the number of wolves. They are still found in the mountainous and wooded parts of the state, and, we believe, are most numerous in St. Lawrence and the adjacent counties.

We have been assured by intelligent hunters, that their ravages among deer are so great, that they destroy five to one killed by man. They follow deer either singly, or in packs of eight or ten, with all the ardor of a pack of hounds, and with a prolonged howl. They usually select a young or injured deer, and trust more to tire him down, than to overtake him by superior speed.

In summer, their prey easily escapes by taking to the water; but in winter, the same instinct leads to his immediate capture; for, on the ice, the wolf quickly overtakes him. Towards spring, there is scarcely a lake, in the north of the state, that has not numerous carcasses of deer on its frozen surface. In most of the counties, bounties, varying from ten to twenty dollars a head, are offered for the wolf,—paid partly by the state, and partly by the county and the township.

Our wolves are equally voracious and cowardly,—flying before man. These animals have been known, however, when satiating their hunger, over the carcass of a deer, to snarl and snap at the approach of a man, and only to leave their prey reluctantly, when he arrived almost within striking distance.

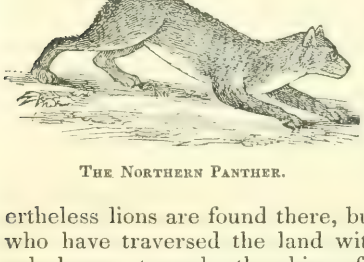


The Red Fox.

This animal varies, considerably, in weight and size; some weighing fifteen pounds; but such are not common: the more usual weight is from eight to ten pounds. Although foxes of this species burrow well, yet it is not uncommon to find them taking possession of the burrows of the skunk, for the purpose of rearing their young. Richardson states that they burrow, in summer, and, in winter, take refuge under a fallen tree.

They feed on the smaller quadrupeds and birds, and are accused of destroying lambs. They make occasional forays upon the barnyard; but, in this respect, they are not so daring as the other species, and, perhaps, in some measure compensate for these injuries, by destroying field-mice and other noxious vermin.

The grey fox is bolder and more astute, if possible, than the red one, and more frequently prowls about barn-yards. Very little, however, is known of his habits, beyond his destructive propensities.



The Northern Panther.

In the early settlement of this state, this animal was believed to be a lion; and we find in Van der Donck's History of the New Netherlands, the following passage in relation to this subject: "Although the New Netherlands lie in a fierce climate, and the country, in winter, seems rather cold, nevertheless lions are found there, but not by the christians, who have traversed the land without seeing one. It is only known to us by the skins of the females, which are sometimes brought in for sale, by the natives. In reply to our inquiries, they say that the lions are found far to the southwest,—a distance of from fifteen to twenty days' journey; that they live in very high mountains, and that the males are too active and fierce to be taken."

In this state, the panther is most numerous in the rocky northern districts, and, particularly, in the counties of Herkimer, Hamilton, and St. Lawrence. Panthers are occasionally seen among the Kaaterskill mountains; and the specimen in the New-York museum, which has served as a basis for many marvellous legends, was obtained from this locality.

The animal appears rarely by daylight, unless hard pressed for food, but usually conceals itself behind fallen trees or rocks, until evening. It prefers, for its usual retreat, ledges of rocks, inaccessible to man, which are known familiarly to the hunters, under the name of

"panther ledges." This animal wanders, however, over large tracts of country, in search of its prey, but rarely leaves the forests. When followed by dogs, it takes to the nearest tree, and, looking down upon its assailants, makes a noise like the purring of a cat, but much louder. The screams attributed to this animal, during the night, are supposed, by many hunters, to proceed from some species of owl. It preys upon deer, and all the smaller quadrupeds, not even refusing the Canada porcupine. Occasionally, this creature takes to the water, but swims deeply and badly.

The panther is an animal of undoubted strength and ferocity; and, under certain circumstances, such as are so graphically depicted by our celebrated novelist Cooper, may be induced to take a stand before the hunter. Dr. De Kay says, that, notwithstanding the various stories of their ferocity and courage, he had never met with a well authenticated account of the panther having attacked a man. In this, he says, he is sustained by the testimony of every hunter he has conversed with; they represent these creatures as uniformly cowardly, and retreating as quickly as possible from the face of man. Professor Emmons states, that most of the tales relating to its depredations, are fictitious; and that, in the part of St. Lawrence county where they were most numerous, no instance is known of their having destroyed a single individual, man or child.

"I was told," says Dr. De Kay, "by a hunter, that, upon one occasion, he met with a female panther and two of her cubs. They were quite helpless, and he took them up in his arms; the mother following at some distance, and stopping whenever he stopped, without venturing to attack him. In this way, she followed him, for two or three miles, when, as he approached a settlement, she finally disappeared.

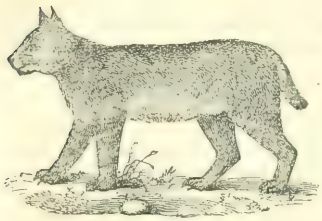
"Panthers have been known, however, to approach the shanty of the hunter, attracted, no doubt, by the fire or the smell of victuals; but the smallest movement on the part of the hunter, would be the signal for their disappearance."

The geographical range of the cougar, panther or catamount, is very extensive. About fifteen years ago, one was shot near Montpelier, in Vermont; and a few have been occasionally observed in Massachusetts. The present northern limits of this animal, do not, probably,

extend beyond New York. To the south, its limits are not well defined. It is said to extend through the intertropical regions to Paraguay.

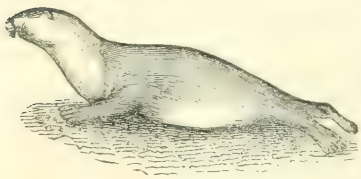
Reading Lesson CCLXXIII.

The "wild cat," or bay lynx, is one of the animals mentioned as very common in the colony, at its first settlement. A hundred and thirty years ago, they were so numerous in Suffolk county, as to require the interposition of the legislature. An act was passed in the general assembly, to encourage the destruction of wild cats; and, in 1745, it was still found necessary to renew this act. At present, it is believed that they are entirely extirpated from the eastern counties of the state. They are still found in the more northern and western counties, in the wooded districts, where they prey upon birds and the smaller quadrupeds.



The Wild Cat.

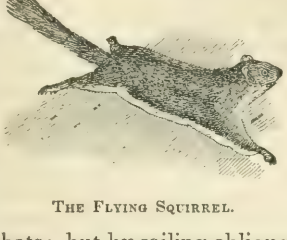
The common seal, or sea dog, as it is frequently called, is now comparatively rare in our waters, but was formerly very abundant. A certain reef of rocks in the harbor of New York, is called "Robin's reef," from the numerous seals which were accustomed to resort there; *robin* or *robyn* being the name, in Dutch, for *seal*. At some seasons, even at the present day, they are very numerous, particularly about the Execution rocks in the Sound; but their visits appear to be very capricious.



The Seal.

In the warm weather of summer, they are often to be seen, swimming with their heads above the water, and, occasionally, basking on the low reefs, in the bays and along the shores of New England.

This little animal is well known, throughout this state.



The Flying Squirrel.

The expanded fold of its skin is, in many species, supported by a small bone, articulated to the wrist. In the American species, this is rudimentary. By the aid of this membrane, they are enabled to dart from one tree to another, not by an actual movement of the membrane, as we have seen among bats; but by sailing obliquely, downwards, and rising suddenly, when within a few inches of the tree upon which they mean to alight. In this sailing movement, they are aided, and, perhaps, slightly guided, by their broadly-expanded tail.

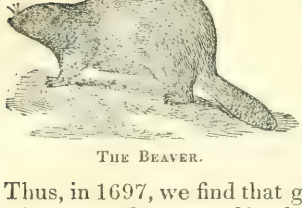
They form their nests in hollow trees, from which they are easily roused by striking on the trunk. They are of a gentle disposition, and easily domesticated; are fond of warmth, and will sleep during the whole day, closely pressed against the body of their master. At twilight, they arouse themselves, and afford much entertainment by sailing about the room; always commencing their flight by climbing to a chair, table, or shelf. They live exclusively on nuts, seeds, and buds.

The woodchuck, or *ground-hog*,—as it is sometimes called,—is common in almost every county in the state. In some places, it appears to select pine forests for its abode; and, in others, it appears to prefer cleared lands and old pastures.

It feeds on clover and other succulent vegetables, and hence is often injurious to the farmer. Its gait is awkward, and not rapid; but its extreme vigilance and acute sense of hearing prevent it from being often captured. It forms deep and long burrows in the earth, to which it flies, upon the least alarm.

It appears to be social in its habits; for, upon one occasion, were noticed some thirty or forty burrows in a field of about five acres. These burrows contain large excavations, in which the woodchucks deposit stores of provisions. This animal hybernates during the winter, having first carefully closed the entrance of its burrow.

Reading Lesson CCLXXIV.



The Beaver.

This animal, whose skin once formed so important an article of commerce to this state, as to have been incorporated in the ancient armorial bearings of the colony, is now nearly extirpated within its limits. Beaver-skins even constituted a certain standard of value, and were a portion of the circulating medium. Thus, in 1697, we find that governor Fletcher made a certain grant of a tract of land on the Mohawk; and the consideration named in the deed, was one beaver-skin for the first year, and five, annually, forever after.

According to a letter, from the Dutch West-India company, preserved in the Albany records, we learn, that, in 1624, four hundred beaver-skins and seven hundred otter-skins were exported; the number increased in 1635, to fourteen thousand, eight hundred and ninety-one beaver-skins, and one thousand, four hundred and thirteen otter-skins; and the whole number, in ten years, was eighty thousand, one hundred and eighty-three beavers, and seven thousand, three hundred and forty-seven otters; amounting, in value, to seven hundred and twenty-five thousand, one hundred and seventeen guilders.

In the same letter, the directors complain that beavers have become exceedingly scarce; having been sold at seven guilders apiece, and even more. One of the earliest legislative enactments by the rulers of the colony, was in reference to the peltry trade; and William De Kay, the ancestor of the distinguished naturalist, was appointed receiver of the duties on beaver and bear skins.

In 1815, a party of St. Regis Indians, from Canada, ascended the Oswegatchie river, in the county of St. Lawrence, in pursuit of beaver. In consequence of the previous hostilities between this country and England, this district had not been hunted, for seven years; and the beaver had consequently been undisturbed. The party, after an absence of a few weeks, returned with three hundred beaver-skins. But, since that time, very few have been observed.

The beaver has been so much harassed in this state, that it has ceased making dams, and contents itself with making large excavations in the banks of streams. Within the year 1841, beaver were seen on Indian and Cedar rivers, and at Paskungameh or Tupper's lake; and, although they are not numerous, yet they are still found, in scattered families, in the northern part of Hamilton, the southern part of St. Lawrence, and the western part of Essex counties.

The beaver exercises great ingenuity in the construction of its dwelling; but this ingenuity has been much exaggerated; and, perhaps, no animal has served for the foundation of so many fables. The instinct of self-preservation is, doubtless, very strong; and its sagacity is such, that, were it not for the signs near its abode, made evident by the stout twigs and trees gnawed and cut down, it would never be discovered. Whenever these chips are noted, the wary hunter proceeds to examine the bank, in order to detect at what particular spot the beaver takes to the water. The castor bags of the beaver, or "bark-stone," as it is termed by the hunters, is then rubbed on twigs near the spot, and a common steel trap is so placed, under the water, as to spring when the animal dives against it.

The beaver is strictly a nocturnal animal, and is exceedingly active in its movements. It advances, on land, by a series of successive leaps, of ten or twelve feet, in which it is powerfully assisted by its tail, which it brings down with a resounding noise.

It feeds chiefly upon the roots of aquatic plants, and the bark of soft-wooded trees, such as birch, poplar, willow, and elder. We have been assured by hunters, that beavers feed, also, on fish; and for this, their aquatic abodes and habits would appear well adapted. It may be, that, in the selection of their dwellings, they design to protect themselves against carnivorous animals.

"The materials," says Dr. Godman, "used for the construction of their dams, are the trunks and branches of small birch, mulberry, willow, and poplar trees. When they build on a running stream, their timber is always cut, or rather, gnawed down, at a place higher up the stream, than that of their residence, and floated down to it. Their building material they begin to cut down

early in summer; but their edifices are not commenced till the middle or latter part of August. The strength of their teeth, and their perseverance in their work, may be fairly estimated by the size of the trees they cut down. We were shown, while on the banks of the Little Miami river, several stumps of trees,—which had been evidently felled by these animals,—of at least five or six inches in diameter." The number of trees cut down, near a single dam, is, sometimes, so large as to leave the appearance of a "clearing" effected by the hand of man.



The American Porcupine.

This is an inoffensive animal, and very gentle in its manners. It feeds on the leaves and bark of the hemlock, the basswood, and the ash. It is also fond of sweet apples, maize, &c., and will scarcely refuse any vegetable offered to it, when tamed. Porcupines move very sluggishly, dragging their tail on the ground.

When irritated, they make a faint, whining noise, and by a strong, circular, muscle the spines of the back and sides are erected, and extended in various directions; the tail is also erected; and, by a very sudden movement of it, the animal is enabled to strike, leaving the loosened spines in the body of his opponent. From their peculiar structure, these penetrate, at every movement, until they reach a vital part. Hence the porcupine is rarely attacked, although the hunters easily kill it by a blow on its nose.

The Indians esteem its flesh,—which resembles young pork,—very highly. The animal dwells in hollow trees, or in caves under rocks. The spines are employed extensively by the Indians, after having been dyed of various colors, to form ornaments for their dresses.

The porcupine is found in all the Northern states; in New York, Pennsylvania, the northern parts of Virginia, Kentucky, and through the western regions, to the Rocky Mountains. In this state, more particularly in the northern and western counties, the species are quite numerous.

Reading Lesson CCLXXV.

This well-known animal is still found in almost every part of the state, where there is sufficient forest to afford it food and covert. From the mountainous regions of Orange, Rockland, and Delaware, the city market of New York is supplied, in great abundance, during the winter. In the most northerly counties, these animals are not numerous; and, in other counties, the united attacks of men and wolves, are daily decreasing their number. In some insulated districts, as on Long Island, where the wolf has been extirpated, and the deer are placed under the protection of the laws, during certain seasons, although more than a hundred are annually killed by sportsmen, yet it is believed that their number is actually on the increase.



The American Deer.

When alarmed, they stamp, quickly and often, on the ground, and emit a sound like a shrill whistle, which may be heard at a great distance. When mortally wounded, they often give a faint bleat, like that of a calf. When brought to bay, the deer throws off its habitual timidity; its eyes glare fiercely around, every hair on its body bristles up, and appears as if directed forward; and it dashes boldly upon its foe.

The horns of this animal are cast, usually, in the winter; but the period appears to depend much on the latitude, and the mildness or severity of the season. While growing, the horns are covered with a velvet-like membrane, which peels off, as soon as they have attained their growth. It has often been a matter of surprise, that, while so many horns are annually cast, so few are ever found. This is to be explained by the fact, that, as soon as shed, they are eaten up by the smaller gnawing animals.

The deer is an exceedingly useful animal,—not only as furnishing an excellent article of food to the settlers in frontier counties, where it would be impracticable to obtain any other meat, but, also, as furnishing the buckskin of commerce. It feeds on buds and twigs of trees, shrubs, berries, and grasses. It appears to be particularly fond of the buds and flowers of the pond-lily.

The moose, in its ungainly form and awkward movements, presents a singular contrast to the elegance and graceful motions of the other members of its family. It is known, with us, under the various names of "flat-horned elk," "black elk," "moose," and "black moose," the name "moose" being a corruption of the Indian appellation, *musee*, or *wood-eater*.

In the earliest history of our state, (that of Van der Donck,) the following allusion is made to this animal: "There is also another kind, which are represented to be large, and about which strange stories are related. I heard from the mouth of a Jesuit, who had been taken prisoner by the Mohawk Indians, that there were many wild forest oxen in Canada and Nova-Scotia, as large as horses; having long hair on their neck, like the mane of a horse, but with cloven hoofs; and their habits were not fierce."

In the summer, the moose frequents the neighborhood of lakes and streams, frequently swimming in the water, and feeding upon aquatic plants, among which the roots of the pond-lily appear to be most greedily devoured. It also feeds upon the high coarse grasses, and twigs of trees, more especially of the striped maple, which has consequently received the name of "moose-wood." It likewise peels old trees, and feeds upon the bark.

In winter, the moose herd together for mutual protection, selecting hilly woods, and feeding exclusively on young twigs, and the moss and bark of trees. Occasionally, several of these herds unite; and when the snow lies deep, they will tread down a space of several acres, which are termed by the hunters, "moose-yards." At this season, and, in such situations, the hunters attack them most successfully.

They are yet numerous in the unsettled portions of the state, in the counties of Essex, Herkimer, Hamilton, Franklin, Lewis, and Warren; and, since the gradual

removal of the Indians, they are now believed to be on the increase.

The moose is a timid, wary animal; and its senses of hearing and smelling are so acute, that it requires the greatest caution, on the part of the hunter, to approach it.

The moose furnishes an excellent material, from its hide, for moccasins and snow-shoes. The best skin is obtained from the male moose, in October. These animals were formerly so numerous about Raquet lake, that the Indians and French Canadians resorted thither, to obtain their hides, for the purpose mentioned; and hence we have the origin of the name of that lake, the word *raquet* meaning "snow-shoes." The moose still exists in the neighborhood.

This animal, when pursued, trots off with great rapidity, but in an awkward manner; its hoofs, at the same time, making a crackling noise. At this gait, it soon leaves the hunter far behind, stepping with great ease over fallen timber of the largest size. When hard pressed by the hunters, on snow-shoes, if it breaks up into a gallop, they are sure of overtaking it soon. Its flesh is much esteemed; and the meat of the young can scarcely be distinguished from the best veal. The moose, when taken young, is easily domesticated, and has been used, in this state, for draught.

The American stag has long been confounded with the stag of Europe; but was first fully described and figured by Dr. Smith, in the Medical Repository, from living individuals, obtained from the state of Maine. It has also, from the popular names applied to it, been confounded with the American moose just noticed. It is called, in various parts of the country, "red deer," "stag," "grey moose," "la biche," "wapiti," "grey elk," and "round-horned elk." It is surprising that, for so large, and, in some districts, so common an animal, so little is known of its habits. Animals of this species feed on grass, and the young shoots of trees, and are represented as being easily tamed, and have been trained to go in harness. Hearne observes that they are the most stupid of the deer kind, and make a shrill whistling noise, not very unlike the braying of an ass. Other writers, however, represent them as exceedingly astute and wary, exercising great sagacity to avoid the snares of the hunter.

The stag is still found in the state of New York, but very sparingly, and will, doubtless, be extirpated, before many years. It is found in the northwestern counties of Pennsylvania, and the adjoining counties of New York.

Reading Lesson CCLXXVI.

The Great Mastodon.—From an early period in the history of this country, after its settlement by Europeans, large bones were occasionally found, which excited considerable speculation. They were considered,—according to the intelligence of their respective discoverers and commentators,—as having belonged to a race of giants or fallen angels, or to have belonged to elephants. It was reserved for Cuvier, to show that they belonged to an animal generically distinct from the elephant, but allied to it in bulk, habits, and other particulars. Since that time, numerous species have been described, in various parts of the world.

In this state, the remains of this animal were discovered near Claverack, as early as 1705, and formed the subject of a note from the celebrated Dr. Mather, which appeared in the English Philosophical Transactions, 1705, July 23: "There is a prodigious tooth brought here, supposed to be the tooth of a man, from the shape. It weighs four pounds and three quarters. It was dug up on the side of a hill, thirty or forty feet under ground, near a place called Claverack; about thirty miles this side of Albany. It is looked upon here as a mighty wonder, whether the tooth be of man or beast. Other bones were dug up, which crumbled away, upon exposure to air. They say one of them, which is thought to be a thigh bone, was seventeen feet long."

In 1702, remains of this animal were found in a swamp near Montgomery, Orange county, and, in greater numbers, at Shawangunk, Ulster county. Shortly after, portions of eight distinct individuals were discovered within eight or ten miles of Montgomery. In 1801, Mr. Peale succeeded in disinterring, from this region, an almost entire skeleton.

Since that period, other localities have been discovered.

The great mastodon, or mammoth,* as it is sometimes

* The impropriety consists merely in using a term which had been specially applied, by the inhabitants of Siberia, to a fossil elephant.

improperly called, equalled or exceeded the elephant, in bulk, and greatly resembled him, in shape. The greatest difference, in this latter particular, was in the elevation of the fore-shoulders; while, in the elephant, the back was regularly arched.

Cuvier, from examination, inferred that the lower part of the body must have been smaller, than in the elephant; and this, in connection with the structure of the teeth, leads us to the conclusion that the mastodon did not exclusively feed on leaves, limbs and tops of young trees. The molars, which diverge in front from each other, also vary in their position, from those of the elephant, and much more nearly resemble those of the hog and hippopotamus.

To these animals, it would seem, he is still farther allied, in his fondness for swamps and marshy places, where his bones are, for the most part, found, under circumstances which lead to the irresistible conclusion that he lived and perished in those places.

It was at first supposed that the mastodon was exclusively a northern animal, and, like the fossil elephant of Siberia, furnished with hair adapted for its residence in a cold region. Other species, however, were soon discovered in South America, and, subsequently, in the Burman empire.

The genus mastodon, then, embraces species found in almost every part of the world, and in all latitudes. In the United States, but a single species has been found; and its remains, thus far, have been found along the Atlantic coast, from New York to the gulf of Mexico.

The geological period at which this huge animal existed, has occasioned much attention. It must have been among the most recently extinct of all quadrupeds, unless we except some species whose generic types still exist on this continent. It has certainly been discovered in positions indicating that the animal perished, and left its bones, on or near the surface where they are now found.

Cuvier states that the mastodons discovered near the Great Osage river, were, almost all, found in a vertical position, as if the animals had merely sunk in the mud. Since that time, many others have been found in swamps, a short distance beneath the surface, in an erect position; conveying the perfect impression that the animal,—prob-

ably in search of his food,—had wandered into a swamp, and, unable to extricate himself, had died on the spot.

"Such an incident, doubtless, occurred to the animal whose bones," says Dr. De Kay, "we assisted to disinter, some years ago, at Longbranch, New Jersey. He was in a natural vertical position; his body supported by the turf soil or black earth, and his feet resting upon a gravelled bottom.

"The occurrence of the bones of other animals, not yet extinct, in company with those of the mastodon, is not a conclusive evidence of their contemporaneous existence; but we cannot deny that it furnishes strong reasons for believing them to have been of a very recent date. We think it highly probable, that the mastodon was alive, in this country, at a period when its surface was not materially different from its actual state, and that he may have existed contemporaneously with man."

Reading Lesson CCLXXVII.

BIRDS.

Introductory remarks.—The vast variety of surface and of climate, which the state of New York affords, renders it a wide and interesting range for the ornithologist. Its northern borders are frequented by the birds of the colder regions of the British provinces; and its southern districts furnish abundant specimens of the feathered tenants of the more genial clime which comprises the southern portion of the middle states, and the northern parts of those which lie more to the south.

Our selections, in the following lessons, are principally from Dr. De Kay, whose researches in this department of zoölogy, presented in the State Reports on the Natural History of New York, and in other works, have done so much to verify information, and extend the field of knowledge, in this department of science. The design of the present volume restricts us, as hitherto, to descriptions possessing general interest, and adapted to the purposes of a reading-book, in which the object in view is not systematic exposition or scientific detail, but the poetic interest of natural beauty in objects, whether rare or familiar, which lie within the scope of observation in our own state.

We shall feel happy to contribute, in any degree, to the diffusion, among our youth, of a taste for the beautiful branch of natural history to which the following paragraphs relate. We hope that the day is not distant, when even our primary schools shall be amply furnished with cabinets of local specimens, in every department of natural history, furnished by the zeal and diligence of pupils themselves. Next in value to actual objects, are drawings and descriptions of them; and the last of these aids, although inferior in interest and attraction, may occasionally serve to produce a desire for observing and studying the first, while they furnish the mind with an abundant source of innocent pleasure and useful knowledge.



The Brown or Bald Eagle.

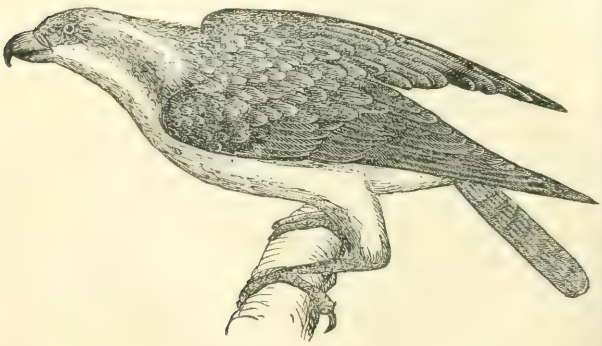
This noble bird is found in every part of the United States. It feeds upon fish, wild fowl, and small quadrupeds. Along the coast, it is frequently seen pursuing the fish hawk, and, compelling him to drop his prey, seizes it before it touches the water. It builds its nest in trees, and lays two or three dull-white, unspotted eggs. Birds of prey are seldom gregarious; yet I have known the bald eagle to appear in flocks of from fifteen to twenty, on the marshes near the seacoast of Long Island, after a violent northeast storm. The inhabitants, on such occasions, approach them on horseback, and, after killing many outright, dispatch the remaining wounded ones, with clubs.

The nest of the bald eagle has been found in the neighborhood of New York. This bird is accidental, in the northern parts of Europe. In this country, it ranges from Mexico to the 62d parallel of latitude.

This bird is comparatively rare; a single pair appearing to monopolize a large district. It usually selects inaccessible rocky peaks for its abode, where it builds its nest. The eggs are usually two, brownish-white, with scattering brownish streaks, and about thirty-five inches in length. The food of the golden eagle, consists of living quadrupeds, birds, etc.; as it rarely touches dead bodies. Birds of this species are frequently observed near the Highlands, on the North river, and are sometimes seen on lake Erie. The golden eagle is common to Europe and America.



The Golden Eagle.



The American Ospray.

The American ospray, or fish-hawk, occurs in every

part of the state, in the vicinity of fresh or salt water. It constructs a large nest of sticks and seaweed, in which it deposits from three to four dull-white eggs, thickly spotted with brown. It feeds, exclusively, on fish, and other aquatic animals: it is therefore harmless, and should claim the protection of the farmer; but it so closely resembles its congeners, that it usually shares their fate. Until recently, it has been confounded with the ospray of Europe.

Reading Lesson CCLXXVIII.

The whippoorwill, called "quock-korr-ee," by our Dutch progenitors, appears, in this state, by the latter end of April, or later, according to the season. It is found, occasionally, as high as the 48th degree of north latitude; but its southern limits have not been ascertained. Audubon asserts that it is never heard, and scarcely ever seen, in Louisiana. It breeds in this state, placing its nest on or near the ground, and laying two or three bluish-white eggs, with numerous dark-olive and bluish blotches. Every one is familiar with the plaintive notes of the bird, which, in the language of one of our poets,

> "Mourns unseen, and ceaseless sings
> Ever a note of wail and wo."

They are strictly nocturnal in their habits, and feed exclusively on winged insects.

The Night-Hawk, in spite of its popular name, is scarcely nocturnal. It is seen, in the afternoon, high in air: towards evening, and in the twilight, it skims over the ground, and is actively engaged in the search of winged insects. It appears, in our state, at the same time with the whippoorwill, or sometimes earlier. Its first appearance is known by a booming sound, heard high in air, while the bird itself is unseen.

"When a boy at school, I remember," says Dr. De Kay, "to have heard this mysterious sound along the Connecticut river, and was told that it was the 'shad spirit,' announcing to the scholes of shad, about to ascend the river, their impending fate. This may probably have been derived from the traditionary myths of the Indians."

This species is often confounded with the whippoorwill, by persons not conversant with natural history; but a slight attention to their generic differences, will establish their distinctive characters.

From the shortness of the legs and feet of the night-hawk, it is always observed, when perched, to be sitting lengthwise of the branch. The night-hawk has a wide range,—from Mexico to the arctic islands, where, as the sun never sets during its stay, it cannot be considered as a nocturnal species.

The Chimney Swallow appears in New York, about the latter end of April, from the tropical regions. Its name is derived, as every one knows, from its selecting a chimney in which it builds its nest. In the unsettled districts, it builds in hollow trees and caverns. Audubon relates that he counted nine thousand of these swallows roosting in the hollow trunk of a plane-tree. This occurred in Kentucky.

In this state, these birds build, exclusively, in chimneys; forming their nests of dead twigs, which they break off with their feet, and agglutinate together. The eggs are four in number, white, unspotted; and two broods are frequently raised in a season. The chimney swallow feeds on insects, which it captures on the wing. It ranges as far north as the 50th parallel, and westward to the Pacific ocean, but is peculiar to America.

The Purple Marten.—This is the largest American species of the family. They reach this state, from the south, about the middle of April. They are bold and active; attacking and pursuing all the larger birds who venture to approach their nests. They are, consequently, general favorites; and boxes are usually prepared for them against dwelling-houses, of which they take possession, driving off any previous occupant.

The marten commences building its nest almost immediately after its arrival, laying from four to six pure white eggs, and often raising two broods in a season. It feeds upon various winged insects, such as wasps, bees, and large beetles.

This bird leaves us, on its southern migration, about the middle of August. Its geographical range is very great. It has been observed as far south as Pernambuco,

in 9° south latitude, and also at Bahia, in about 12° south. To the north, it penetrates the arctic circle. It is peculiar to America.

The White-Bellied Swallow.—Birds of this species are very numerous in the low marshes on the southern shores of Long Island. They are slaughtered by thousands, and sent to market, and are as much esteemed by gourmands as some small species of snipe.

This bird feeds partly on insects and partly on berries, particularly the fruit of the wax-berry, on which it becomes exceedingly fat. It builds in hollow trees, and also occupies boxes in the neighborhood of dwellings. Its eggs number from four to six, pure white.

This species ranges from the gulf of Mexico to the 60th parallel of north latitude. A few, according to Audubon, winter in the neighborhood of New Orleans. These birds appear, in this state, about the middle of April, and leave us, on their southern migration, in the early part of September. They are peculiar to America.

The Bank Swallow.—This is one of our earliest swallows, arriving from the south, in the vicinity of New York. These birds dig horizontal holes in high sandy bluffs, at the extremity of which they form their nest of grass and feathers, and lay about five white eggs. They live on insects, which they take on the wing. Their geographical range is very great. Their southern limits are not yet established; but they occur in Louisiana, and have been observed at the mouth of Mackenzie's river, in the 68th degree of north latitude. This species is common to Europe and America, and is found, indeed, in almost every quarter of the globe.

The Barn Swallow is one of our most common visitors. It makes its nest of pellets of mud, mixed with grass, and attached to the rafters or eaves of outhouses. It deposits from four to six white eggs, sparsely spotted with reddish brown. It destroys numerous noxious winged insects.

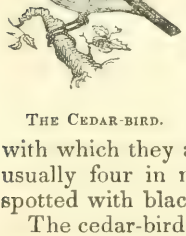
This bird has been observed in Mexico. It usually appears in Louisiana, about the latter end of February, and, in this state, about the latter end of March or beginning of April. It leaves this state about the end of August. It has been observed as far north as 67° 50′. It is peculiar to America, but is confounded, by many, with the European swallow.

The Cliff Swallow.—The history of this species is curious. It was first observed at St. Domingo and Porto Rico, in large flocks, in the middle of May. Nothing farther was known about it, until Say observed it, in 1820, in great numbers, in the Rocky mountains. In the interim, a solitary pair appeared near Whitehall, at the south end of lake Champlain; and, every succeeding year, birds of this species appeared in greater numbers, and extended farther west and south, through this state.

De Witt Clinton, in 1824, sent a description of this bird to the lyceum of natural history of New York. In 1820, it was observed by captain Franklin, in latitude 65° north. It has appeared on the coast of this state, within the last two years; and its nest has been observed in Rockland county.

Reading Lesson CCLXXIX.

This bird appears in flocks, and lives chiefly upon whortleberries, cedar-berries, persimmons, grapes, and cherries. Cedar-birds are best known by their fondness for cherries, which they devour with great avidity, and in large quantities. They are not, however, exclusively frugivorous, but repay the comparatively unimportant injuries which they inflict on man, by ridding trees of the small beetles, caterpillars, and cankerworms, with which they are infested. The eggs of this bird are usually four in number, white, tinged with purple, and spotted with black.



The Cedar-bird.

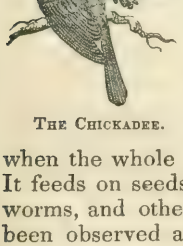
The cedar-bird is capable of braving a low temperature, and is frequently seen with us, during the whole winter. It ranges from the equator to the 50th degree of north latitude.

The Red-Throated Humming-bird.—This is the smallest species of bird occurring in this state; and, in particularly warm seasons, it is found here, in great numbers. It reaches the southern parts of the state, about the commencement of May, and almost immediately begins to construct its nest, which is usually placed on the upper

side of a limb, and coated with moss or lichens, in order to make it resemble the tree to which it is attached. It lays two white, unspotted eggs.

This bird feeds on the sweet juices of flowers, and, according to the observations of Wilson, undoubtedly destroys small insects. It is active and fearless, entering outhouses and dwellings. "In one instance," says Dr. De Kay, "a humming-bird flew into my hall, and was captured. It appeared as if dead; and, while the children were busily engaged in examining it, it suddenly darted away, apparently uninjured."

The humming-bird ranges from Mexico to 57° north, where it even breeds. It leaves us, for the south, about the beginning of October, and sometimes even earlier. In common with the whole family, it is peculiar to America.



The Chickadee.

The "*chickadee*," or black-cap titmouse, is a truly northern species: so abundant, indeed, are these birds in the fur countries, that a family of them may be found in almost every thicket. They are equally numerous in our state,—particularly in the northern counties,—throughout the year. In the southern district, this bird is rather rare. Dr. De Kay speaks of having seen it in his vicinity, in the depth of winter, when the whole country was buried under a deep snow. It feeds on seeds and nuts, and also on spiders, canker-worms, and other injurious insects. The chickadee has been observed as far north as the 65th parallel, and, according to Audubon, has been seen as far south as Maryland. It has also been observed in Kentucky. It builds its nest, usually, in the hole of a squirrel or woodpecker, laying from six to eight pure white eggs, and often raising two broods in a year. Some writers describe the eggs as minutely sprinkled with red.

The Bluebird, or, *Blue Robin*, as it is often called, in the western counties, resembles very much, in its manners and habits, the robin redbreast of Europe, and is hailed, with us, as the first harbinger of spring. A few individuals contrive, by seeking out some warm sunny

spot, to linger out the winter with us; but this is a rare occurrence.

This bird appears, in the southern counties, about the middle of March, and, sometimes, even earlier. In the autumn, usually in November, it leaves us for the south, as far as Mexico. Along the Atlantic, it ranges to Nova Scotia. The blue-bird is very prolific; laying from four to six blue, unspotted eggs, and raising several broods in the year. It is very useful in destroying multitudes of noxious insects. In autumn, it feeds on cedar-berries, wild cherries, etc.

The Mocking-Bird, the peculiar ornament of the forests of the southern and some of the middle states, is comparatively rare in New York; although some are occasionally found even in Rhode Island and Massachusetts. The unrivalled powers of song, attributed to this bird, are too well known to be repeated here. It is found 25 degrees south of the equator, and ranges to 44° of north latitude. It lays from four to six pale-green eggs, spotted, and blotched with brown. It has been observed, with us, towards the end of May. Its food is various, consisting of berries of the holly, sumach, etc., and of insects, worms, and spiders. This bird is peculiar to the torrid and temperate zones of the two Americas.

The Brown Thrush.—This delightful songster has various popular names in different districts. He is called the "French mocking-bird," "ground-thrasher," "ground mocking-bird," and, "brown thrasher." Although a few have been known to remain during a mild winter, in the state, yet it usually winters farther south. It ranges throughout North America, from 30° to 54° north. It usually arrives here, from the south, towards the end of April, and breeds in every part of the state. Its nest is built on or near the ground: the eggs are from four to six, greenish-white, with numerous dots of brown. It feeds on worms, insects, and various kinds of berries, and is readily domesticated.

The Cat-Bird.—This familiar bird ranges from Mexico to the 54th degree of north latitude. It arrives in this state at the beginning or middle of April, according to the tem-

perature of the season. It lays from four to five unspotted greenish eggs. Its food consists of berries, worms, wasps, and other insects. This is one of our most useful birds, but usually doomed to persecution and death, by thoughtless ignorance. Its notes are eminently beautiful; although few suppose it capable of emitting any other sound than the harsh and discordant *mew* which has given rise to its trivial name.

The American Robin.—This familiar species is a resident in this state, throughout the year; and those which thus remain, probably advance farther north, to breed. The eggs are from four to six: bluish-green, unspotted. Birds of this species feed on worms, insects, berries, and fruits, and range from the equator to the 67th degree of north latitude. The popular name of robin was given to this bird, by the early English colonists, from its supposed resemblance to the robin redbreast of Europe, which, however, is a much smaller bird, and is remarkable for its melodious song, which it keeps up through the winter season,—the period when it delights to frequent the abodes of man, even in the suburbs of the largest cities.

The Wood-Thrush.—This little thrush reaches this state, (where it domesticates itself for the season,) about the beginning of May. It has various popular names, such as "wood-robin," "ground-robin," and "little brown thrasher." Its food consists of various berries, caterpillars, etc. It is well known for its distinct, rich, and varied song.

Some of our readers may remember the beautiful and eloquent apostrophe with which our venerable ornithologist, Andubon, opens his truly poetic description of this delightful bird. He speaks of it as having often cheered him with its hope-inspiring notes, when rising from his wet couch and quenched fire, after a rain-storm, amid the solitudes of our central forests, during those remote excursions which his enthusiasm for the study of living nature so often induced him to undertake.

The thrilling notes of this bird, when reëchoed from the opposite sides of a deep ravine, or from the vast columnar stems of the "tulip-tree," are the true forest-hymn of America. The melody of the wood-thrush is peculiarly

deep, sweet, pathetic, and solemn, when heard under the circumstances just mentioned.

The wood-thrush is shy and retired in its habits; and its eggs, except in size, do not differ from those of the robin. It ranges from Mexico to the 50th degree of north latitude, and is found, during the whole winter, in Louisiana.

Reading Lesson CCLXXX.

The Summer Yellow-Bird.—This is a very common species in our state, and is called "summer yellow-bird," to contradistinguish it from the common yellow-bird, which is seen here, at all seasons of the year. The summer yellow-bird breeds in every part of the state; laying four or five light, bluish-white eggs, dotted with brown, at the larger end; and rearing two broods in the season.

This species is remarkable for its instinctive sagacity in getting rid of the eggs of the "cow black-bird." As the egg is too large to be thrust out, the summer yellow-bird commences a new nest above it; thus almost hermetically closing it up, and then proceeds to deposit her own eggs.—In one instance, this reconstruction was twice effected; thus forming a nest of three stories.

This species appears in Louisiana from Mexico, about the beginning of March; and, by the end of that month, has spread over all the Atlantic states, and penetrates as high as the 68th parallel.

The King-Bird, as it is called in this state, or "field marten,"—as it is termed elsewhere,—is a well-known and common species. It winters in Mexico, enters Louisiana about the middle of March, and appears here, in the latter part of April or the beginning of May. It continues its northward course as far as the 57th parallel of latitude. It spreads over the continent, to Columbia river.

It leaves us, for its winter quarters, in September or October, according to the season, and builds in all parts of the state; laying from four to six yellowish-white eggs, with a few spots of deep brown. It feeds on berries and seeds, beetles, canker-worms, and insects of every description. By this habit, and by its inveterate hostility to

rapacious birds, it more than compensates for the few domestic bees with which it varies its repasts.

The Northern Butcher-Bird.—This bold and ferocious little bird is found, at all seasons of the year, in this state, where it builds, laying from four to six pale, ashy-white eggs, thickly marked, at the larger end, with reddish spots and streaks.

From its attempts to imitate the notes of other birds, it is sometimes called "mocking-bird," in Canada and the eastern states. The name of "nine-killer" is derived from the popular belief that it catches and impales nine grasshoppers in a day. It is exceedingly destructive; waging war upon all birds, and destroying even large ones, with great ease. It builds from Pennsylvania northward, but is found, in the winter, still farther south. It is found as far north as the 60th parallel of latitude.

The Blue Jay.—This familiar and elegant bird is common throughout the United States. It lays four or five dull-olive eggs, spotted with brown. It is exceedingly mischievous; but as it rarely appears, except in small numbers, its injuries are of little moment. It feeds on chestnuts, acorns, corn, cherries, large insects, caterpillars, and, in times of scarcity, has been known to feed on carrion. It is also fond of the eggs of the smaller birds, and will not hesitate to devour the callow young. It is found from Texas to the 56th parallel of north latitude. In this state, it is observed throughout the year.

The "Golden Oriole," "hang-bird," "fire hang-bird," or "golden robin,"—for it is known under all these names,—is found, in the summer season, throughout the state. Its nest is well known, from its being suspended from trees, by two or more strings. Its eggs are bluish-white, with pale-brown spots and lines. Its food consists chiefly of flies, beetles, and caterpillars; and its services, in destroying these insects, are invaluable. It



THE GOLDEN ORIOLE.

ranges over the whole Union, from Mexico to 55° north latitude. It is easily domesticated, and imitates the notes of other birds.

The Orchard Oriole is more common than the preceding species, in the the southern district of this state, where it is seen from May to September, when it migrates southwardly. Its nest does not hang free and pendulous, like that of the golden oriole, but is firmly attached, all around its margin; in other respects, it is interwoven in the same manner: the eggs are bluish-white, sprinkled with brown.

An eminent writer, speaking of animal instinct, has said that the bird of the nineteenth century builds its nest after precisely the same fashion as the first of the species, at the dawn of the creation. This remark will not hold true always of the orchard oriole, or "hang-bird," as it is commonly called. This bird, if it can find twine or packthread, judiciously substitutes it for twigs or fibres, with which to form the orifice of its nest, and fasten its domicile to the branches and twigs of the tree in which it builds.—An academy boy, in a New-England village, once amused his teacher by bringing to him an oriole's nest, in which the twine, used as mentioned, had some bits of sealing-wax still attached to it, and even some scraps of wrapping paper, with the words of the author's customary death-warrant, "more copy wanted," plainly legible upon them. The wonder was sufficiently explained by the fact that the elm-tree, from which the nest had been obtained, grew not far from a printing-office attached to a distinguished professional seminary.

Another instance may here be mentioned, still more unfriendly to the limitation of animal sagacity. An orchard oriole had chosen, as the site of its nest, a tree growing on the side of one of the beautiful secluded lanes, so frequent in New England, formed by an old road, abandoned by carriages, but still used by foot-travellers,—especially children going to school. It would seem that, on a warm day, when one of the little pupils had felt her stockings to be more trouble than comfort to her, she had taken them off, and inadvertently dropped one. The oriole, as if it had imbibed the local feeling of economy, along with the air it had come to breathe, and had resolved that a useful article should not be thrown away, picked up the dropped

stocking; and, using the garter, which some good, careful mother had prudently sewed to it, to prevent the loss of it, the thrifty bird actually made the two ends of it serve as suspenders, by which to hang the stocking from two opposite twigs. With the usual appliances of fibres and thread, the mouth of the little sock was duly converted into the proper entrance, while the foot of it formed a convenient pocket, for the deposit of the eggs, on a few such materials as the bird commonly uses. The nest was found by a father and his son, on an autumn walk, when the leaves were partly fallen, and this singular specimen of ornithological architecture was disclosed dangling from the boughs of a dwarf elm.

This bird ranges from the equator to 49° north latitude. Mr. Audubon states that he had seen it in the state of Maine; but it has not yet been noticed in the adjoining state of Massachusetts.

The oriole feeds on crickets, grasshoppers, spiders, larvæ of insects, and occasionally, on juicy fruits and berries. The notes of this bird are peculiarly melodious: the natural quality of the tone is mellow, soft, and sweet, to a remarkable degree.

The Boblink, or *Bob-o'link*,—as it is called, in this state,—is known, in others, by the various names of "reed-bird," "May-bird," "meadow-bird," "American ortolan," "butter-bird," and "skunk blackbird." In the southern states, where it is highly prized by epicures, it is usually known under the name of "rice-bird."

It arrives in this state, about the first week in May, and returns to the south, about the middle or latter part of October. The northern migration of these birds, appears to be chiefly by night; but, on their return southwardly, they fly by day.

Their eggs are of a faint bluish-white, irregularly spotted with black, and placed in a nest on the ground. Their food consists of crickets, grasshoppers, beetles, spiders, and seeds of various kinds, particularly of the grasses.

They have been observed on the Rocky Mountains; and their geographical range on the Atlantic side of the continent, extends from Mexico to the 54th parallel of north latitude.

Reading Lesson CCLXXXI.



The Wild Turkey.

This is a species peculiar to North America. It was sent to Europe, about twenty years after the discovery of this country. Here the domesticated and the wild are frequently mingled together, and produce a highly prized variety, scarcely inferior to the wild turkey, in the metallic brilliancy of its tints.

In its wild state, the turkey feeds on beech-nuts, acorns, berries, and grass, and likewise on beetles and tadpoles. It lays from ten to twelve eggs.

The wild turkey may be said to be a resident from Mexico to Canada; making irregular migrations from one place to another, in search of food. It has, however, almost entirely disappeared from the Atlantic states. A few are yet found about Mount Holyoke, in Massachusetts, and in Sussex county, in New Jersey. "I have not met with them," says Dr. De Kay, "in this state,

where they were once exceedingly numerous, but, as I am well informed, are now only found in the counties of Sullivan, Rockland, Orange, Allegany, and Cattaraugus."

Van der Donck, who describes this state as it appeared at its first settlement by Europeans, speaks thus: "The most important fowl of the country is the wild turkey. They resemble the tame turkey of the Netherlands. These birds are common in the woods all over the country, and are found in large flocks, from twenty to forty in a flock. They are large, heavy, fat, and fine, weighing from twenty to thirty pounds each; and I have heard of one that weighed thirty-two pounds. They are best in the fall of the year, when the Indians will sell a turkey for ten stivers; and, with the christians, the price is a daelder each. They are caught with dogs, in the snow; but the greatest number are shot, at night, from the trees. The Indians take many in snares, when the weather changes, in winter. Then they lay bulbous roots, which the turkeys are fond of, in the small rills and streams of water, which the birds take up; when they are ensnared and held, until the artful Indian takes the turkey as his prize."

The Snow-bird occurs in this state, at all seasons of the year. It is a shy, timorous bird, and hence is rarely seen, except during snow-storms, when it appears in flocks, close to dwellings. It is a northern species. It breeds among the mountains in Oswego county, and doubtless, in other parts of the state. It makes its nest on the ground, and lays about four spherical yellowish-white eggs, sprinkled with reddish-brown dots. It builds as far south as Virginia. It feeds on grass-seeds, berries, insects, and their larvæ.

The snow-bird migrates in the night, from the north, and descends as low as the 30th parallel of latitude. It has been noticed as high as 57° north latitude, where, however, it appears to be only a summer resident. It is common to America and the northern parts of Europe.

The Red-bird, or *Summer Red-bird*, comes to us from the south, but not in great numbers, and only during the hottest part of the summer: it rarely passes east of this state. It is not known to breed here. The eggs are of

a light-blue color. The red-bird feeds on insects, and, more especially, the larger beetles. It properly belongs to Mexico, and even farther south; and scarcely remains within the limits of the United States, (where it breeds,) more than four months.

The Crested Woodpecker.—This is the largest woodpecker found in our state, and is particularly abundant in the uncleared forests, where he is known under the names of "log-cock," and "wood-cock." This bird is almost unknown in the Atlantic district of the state. It feeds on the larvæ of insects, which it obtains from beneath the bark of trees, and on Indian corn, chesnuts, acorns, and fruits. It forms its nests in excavations in decaying trees: its eggs are five or six in number, and white in color. It occurs from Texas to the 63d parallel, and appears to be resident in every part of the United States, during the whole year.

The Red-headed Woodpecker,—or as he is sometimes called, the "red-head,"—arrives in this state from the south, in the early part of May, and, after breeding, leaves us again, in September: occasionally, a few remain during the winter.

This bird feeds on juicy fruits, as cherries, apples, pears, etc.; on Indian corn, in the milk, and on the insects which infest decaying trees. Its eggs are white, with reddish spots at the larger end. It occurs at Columbia river, and ranges from Mexico to the 50th parallel of north latitude; but it is less common, now, in the Atlantic district of this state, than formerly.

The Wild Pigeon,—as it is universally called, in this country,—builds in this state, where it is found at all seasons of the year. In certain years, wild pigeons make their appearance, in almost incredible numbers, literally darkening the air, and breaking down trees with their weight. Their appearance and disappearance are at very irregular and uncertain intervals, and although, in a great measure, connected with a search for food, do not always seem to depend upon that cause. Thus, in February, 1742, when the Hudson was frozen solid at New York, and the snow a foot deep, flocks of these birds appeared in greater numbers that were ever before known. Large

flocks were also observed about Albany, and in the northern parts of the state, during the winter of 1819.

Mr. Clark, of Albany, succeeded in raising the wild pigeon in confinement; and, from his successful experiments, we learn that it lays two eggs, which are hatched in fifteen days. In eight days after being hatched, the young are completely feathered, and fly from the nests. There are three or four broods hatched between May and September.—The same success has attended the experiments of lord Stanley, in England, upon a number sent out to him, from this country.

It is very desirable to domesticate this very prolific species; although its extremely erratic disposition will probably render this difficult. Its food consists of beechnuts, acorns, berries, rice, seeds, etc. It ranges throughout North America, from 25° to 62° north latitude.

Reading Lesson CCLXXXII.

The common American "*Quail*," or "partridge,"—as it is indifferently called in various sections of the country,—occurs in every part of the state, where it is a constant resident. The flight of the quail is rapid, but short; and birds of this species usually occur in large bevies. Their nest is built on the ground, and contains from eight to eighteen pure-white eggs: they raise a single brood in a season. Their food consists of grains, seeds, and berries.



The American Quail.

Various attempts have been made to domesticate quails; but, hitherto, with but limited success, owing to their restless and timorous habits.

In spring, the male has a loud whistle, of two or three notes, which is thought, by the country people, to resemble the words, "buck wheat," and "Bob White."

The quail is eagerly sought after, as a game bird, and is caught, in great numbers, by traps, horsehair nooses, nets, and other devices. When flushed, they frequently take to trees; but they commonly roost on the ground, in a circle, with their heads outwards.

The common quail ranges from Honduras to Massachusetts.

The Common "Partridge," or Ruffed Grouse.—The "pheasant," or "partridge,"—by which latter name it is generally known in this state,—is a constant resident with us, in every part of the state. It makes an exceedingly inartificial nest of dried leaves, usually by the side of a decayed log, or the root of a tree, in which it lays from six to twelve eggs, of a dull brownish color. Its flight is rapid, but short, and, when suddenly aroused, with a loud whirring noise, such as we have observed in the quail. It feeds on seeds and berries of various kinds, grapes, and other fruits. The meat of the partridge is occasionally poisonous, which has been attributed to their feeding on the leaves of the kalmia. In winter, they feed on the leaves of various trees. The American partridge has a a wide geographical range, along the coast, from Mexico to the 56th parallel of latitude, and extends across the continent to the Pacific ocean.



The Pinnated Grouse.

This species is known under the various names of "grouse," "pinnated grouse," "heath-hen" and "prairie-hen," in different sections of the country. In this state, these birds are now almost entirely extirpated. They are still found in a few districts of the Atlantic states, in a few of the islands on the coast of Massachusetts, and the mountainous regions of Pennsylvania. They are also said to have been seen, recently, at Schooley's mountain, in New Jersey, and a few are still said to linger about Orange county, in this state. They are so readily killed, that they soon disappear as the country becomes settled.

The female builds her nest on the ground, depositing from eight to twelve eggs, of a dull-brown color. The grouse is easily tamed, and, with a little care, might soon be domesticated. It feeds on buds and berries. Its geo-

graphical range is from Texas to Maine; and it is common through the regions west of the Mississippi.

The Spruce or Spotted Grouse, or Canada Grouse, or "spruce partridge,"—as it is called in this state,—is yet common in the northern counties. "In June," says Dr. De Kay, "I saw them in Hamilton county, among the sources of the Raquet. They appear to be particularly attached to the forests of spruce and larch; feeding on the buds and cones, with great avidity."

Although, by appearance and habits, associated with game birds, the flesh is bitter, and has a peculiar taste, as if boiled in turpentine. This bird lays from twelve to fourteen fawn-colored eggs, with irregular blotches of brown.

In the United States, it ranges through Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont, and the northern part of this state.

The Turnstone.—This bird, which is generally distributed over Europe and America, arrives in this state, from the south, at the commencement of April, and proceeds northwardly, about the last of May. It is known among our "gunners," (a class of men who earn a livelihood by shooting birds,) under the names of "brant-bird," "heart-bird," "horsefoot snipe," and "beach-bird." The young are often designated as "beach-birds." These birds live on marine animals, turning over stones and seaweed during their search,—whence their name of "turnstone." The turnstone is very fond of the eggs of the horsefoot. Its own eggs are pale greenish, with patches and streaks of red. The bird returns to our state, in September, and remains until late in autumn. It does not appear to go far inland, but is confined to the Atlantic coast. A few winter in the southern states. It ranges from the tropics to the Arctic ocean, and builds from Maine northwardly.

The American Bittern,—also familiarly known under the names of "poke," "Indian hen," "Indian pullet," "look-up," "stake-driver," and in Louisiana, "*garde-soleil*,"—is a southern species, migrating northwardly, in spring, and retreating to the south, in autumn. It appears along our maritime borders in April, and leaves us in October. It hatches in this state, laying three or four pale bluish eggs. It is a shy and solitary bird; preferring the depths of swamps

and marshes, and feeding on meadow-mice, aquatic reptiles, fishes, and the larger winged insects. Our species ranges between the thirty-eighth and fifty-eighth parallels.



THE SANDPIPER.

The Little Sandpiper, commonly known as the "peep," from its usual note, and as the "ox-eye," from the size and brilliancy of its eye, is one of our most abundant species. It pervades the whole of North America, from Mexico to 68° north latitude; occurring, equally, on the coast, and through the interior, to Columbia river. It builds from Labrador to the Arctic circle.

Except during its short hatching season, it is a resident on the coast of this state. In September and October, it is in good order; and, though small, is exceedingly savory.* Its eggs are, usually, from three to four in number, of a cream-yellow, blotched and dotted with reddish brown. Its food consists of larvæ, minute shellfish, and insects on the salt marshes. It has been denominated "Wilson's sandpiper," in honor of that celebrated ornithologist.

The Spotted Sand Lark.—This is a familiar bird, found, in small families, along every stream, and the borders of ponds and lakes, throughout the Union. It is known, in the books, under the names of "spotted sandpiper," and "tattler," but is better known, among the people, by the name of "peet-weet," in allusion to its notes; or of "teeter" and "tiltup," from its often-repeated, grotesque, jerking motions.

It appears, with us, in April, from its southern winter quarters, and disappears about the beginning of November. It builds in this state and farther north; laying pale yellowish eggs, which are spotted with dark brown. Its food consists of insects and worms. It ranges from Mexico to the 57th parallel, and has been accidentally found in Europe.

* This beautiful and harmless little creature, like many others of the feathered race, would seem, by its very diminutiveness, to appeal to man for protection. But, unfortunately, the relish of its flesh is, too generally, considered a sufficient warrant for its destruction. This would not be the case, if the intelligent love and study of living nature, were made, as it ought to be, a part of early education.

Reading Lesson CCLXXXIII.

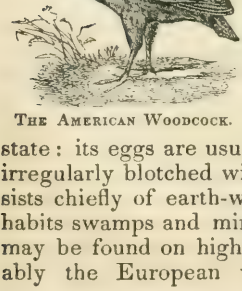
The Common American Snipe, or "English Snipe"—as it is ignorantly called, from its resemblance to the common snipe of Europe,—reaches this state about the latter end of March, or the beginning of April. It builds from Virginia northwardly, and ranges between the 28th and 55th parallels. It abounds in this state, particularly in wet swampy places. The "Drowned Lands,"—as they are called,—of Orange county, are particularly remarkable as a locality for its nests. But it occurs, likewise, in every part of the state. Its eggs are yellowish, with spots and blotches, which form a crowded circle round the larger end.



The American Snipe.

Early in the spring, it soars high in the air, making a booming sound, difficult to describe. In Kentucky, and the southern states, it is a resident during the winter. In this state, it remains with us until winter, or until the ground is so much frozen as to deprive it of its usual food. Its flesh is much esteemed.

This well known and highly prized bird appears in this state, from the south, early in March, and remains with us until January; although many pass on to higher latitudes. "My venerable friend, Mr. T. Cozzens, informs me," says Dr. De Kay, "that as late as 1814, it was abundant in many places on the island of Manhattan, which are now entirely covered with houses."



The American Woodcock.

It builds in every part of the state: its eggs are usually four in number, dull yellowish, irregularly blotched with reddish brown. Its food consists chiefly of earth-worms and aquatic insects. It inhabits swamps and miry places; but, in wet seasons, it may be found on high grounds. It resembles considerably the European woodcock, but is smaller; and

the lower parts are plain-colored, without the black bars.

Woodcocks are among the very few birds protected by law: they are not allowed to be exposed for sale until after the first of July. They are distributed through the interior, and range from 26° to 52° north latitude, and are winter residents of the southern states.

The "great diver," or "big loon," may be regarded as a perpetual resident in this state. It is mostly found in the interior, hatching in the neighborhood of our many beautiful sheets of water, during the summer, and occurring on our seacoast, in winter.



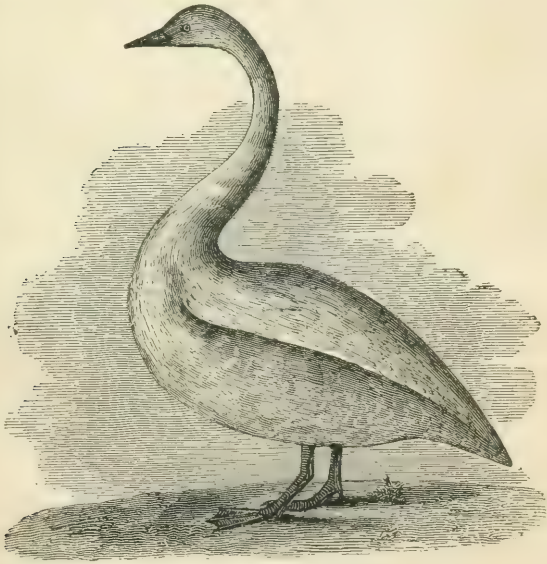
THE GREAT LOON.

This species occurs throughout the Union, from Texas to Maine, and throughout the interior, to the Columbia river. It nests from Maryland, northwardly. Its geographical range is from 28° to 70° north latitude: it is common to Europe and America.

The Wild Goose observes the usual migrations of its tribe, but hatches throughout a very extensive range of country. It was observed nesting in Missouri, by Mr. Nuttall. It builds sparingly from Mississippi to Nova Scotia, according to Mr. Audubon, and abundantly in Labrador, and between the 60th and 70th parallels of latitude. It appears, with us, in large flocks, late in the autumn, from the north, and remains until the bays are frozen over; affording much amusement to the sportsmen, and profit to the gunners who pursue it, as a business. The wild goose returns in the earliest spring, and soon migrates again to the north. The eggs of this bird are of a dull yellowish green. It is frequently kept in a state of domestication.

The Brant is considered as one of our most savory birds. In its transit from its nesting places, near the Arctic sea, it appears, in great numbers, on the coast of New York, in the first or second week in October,

and continues passing on to the south, until December. Some few have been observed to remain all winter. They are again seen, with us, in April and May, on their way north, when they are in the best condition. The brant feeds, exclusively, on eelgrass, and other marine plants. The history of its migrations is not yet complete. On the Atlantic coast, it has been observed, from 73° to 38° north. On the Pacific, it appears to range from Columbia river, to the 26th parallel. The brant is capable of domestication, and is found on both continents.



The American Swan.

This species was first shown to be distinct from those of Europe, by Dr. Sharpless. It breeds in high northern latitudes, and enters the United States, through the interior; a few only appearing along the coast.

In the uninhabited regions of Hamilton and Herkimer counties, in this state, this species, "as I was informed,"

says Dr. De Kay, "by trustworthy hunters, remains during the whole year."

The outlet of lake Paskungameh, or Tupper's lake, was specified as a spot to which it was particularly attached. The eggs are from five to seven in number, and of a greenish color. It is very common on the Chesapeake bay, during the winter,—abundant, also, on the Pacific coast of America.

APPENDIX.

STATE INSTITUTIONS, CONNECTED WITH EDUCATION.

Introductory Observations.

The character of the information contained in the subsequent portion of this volume, is not such as to admit of its being thrown into the form of reading lessons. Yet its importance, as regards the history of the state, seemed to require a place in our pages.

A few brief notices, however, of prominent institutions, connected with the diffusion of education, are all that the design of this work will admit. Had our limits permitted, we would gladly have dwelt on the character and plan of the various philanthropic and benevolent institutions of our state. Teachers, —we would respectfully suggest,—may, individually, do much to create, in the minds of their pupils, an intelligent interest in such institutions, by preparing, and reading to their classes, appropriate abstracts of the progress of these establishments, as presented in their respective annual reports.

Colleges.

Columbia (*originally King's*) *College.*—The early history of this institution, forms, it will be recollected by our readers, a subject of not unfrequent notice in previous pages of our work. We need only mention, here, that, after the unavoidable interruption caused by the war of the revolution, the college was reörganized, in 1787, under the superintendence of the newly constituted body, denominated "regents of the university,"* and then received its present name.

* As early as 1784, a legislative act was passed, erecting a university within the state. The principal officers of the state, were made, *ex officio*, "regents." To these were added twenty-four other persons. The regents were empowered to establish colleges and schools which should be considered as parts of the university. The law here referred to, was revised in 1787; and the constitution of the university remains, substantially, as then decided.

In the historical part of our work, we had occasion to advert to the obligations which this respected seat of learning has conferred, not only on the state of New York, but the Union, in the many distinguished men which it has educated. Great expectations are justly entertained of the benefit which the alumni of Columbia college have undertaken to confer on science and their country, by the establishment of an astronomical observatory in the vicinity of New York.

Union college, at Schenectady, was established by the regents, in 1795. This institution, which has furnished so many active and useful members to all the professions, in our own state and others, has been distinguished for the eminently practical character of the education which it confers.

Hamilton college, at Clinton, was founded by the regents, in 1812. This institution holds a respectable rank among the more recent of our literary establishments.

Geneva college, incorporated in 1825, renders accessible to the western portion of the state the benefits of a liberal education.

The University of the city of New York, established in 1830, having successfully struggled through the impediments of its earlier years, is now in a prosperous condition, both in its medical and academical departments.

Academies.

We cannot attempt, here, to enumerate the many seminaries of this description, established throughout the state. These institutions amounted in 1842,—the date of the State Reports,—to upwards of one hundred and thirty; were furnishing the advantages of superior education to upwards of eleven thousand pupils, and were deriving, from the public literature fund of the state, an aggregate annual aid of forty thousand dollars.

By a law passed in 1841, each academy receives from the state an annual sum of two hundred and fifty dollars, which, added to an equal amount, contributed by the patrons of each academy, is applied to the purchase of text-books, globes, maps, and philosophical apparatus.

Academies for the education of females, are quite numerous in the state of New York; many of which are conducted under the sanction and superintendence of the regents of the university, and derive aid, in common with our classical academies, from the public fund of the state. The number of pupils in institutions of the latter class, amounted, in 1842, to no fewer than fifteen hundred and seventy.

The seminary at Troy, established by Mrs. Emma Willard, was one of the first to furnish a model of superior education for

females. Rutgers Institute in the city of New York, the Albany Female Academy, and the Brooklyn Female Academy, in the city of Brooklyn, with many others, in various parts of the state, may be mentioned as instances in which the education of the female sex is carried to an extent of substantial and useful acquirement, rarely attempted in other parts of the world, although not unprecedented in similar institutions for female education, in New England, and other parts of our own country.

Common Schools.

An important part of the history of education in New York, is that which regards the public measures adopted for securing the general education of youth, by means of public schools. In few parts of the world have the means and opportunities of universal education been more extensively or successfully diffused, than in this state.

The operation of the common school system of the state, is thus described by governor Seward, in his Introduction to the State Reports. "Commissioners of common schools are annually chosen by the people, in the several towns; and the towns are divided, by the commissioners, into school districts. The inhabitants of each district elect trustees. In every district, a school-house is erected and maintained by funds derived from the tax levied upon the inhahitants by the trustees, in virtue of a resolution passed at an annual meeting of the inhabitants. The teachers of the schools are such individuals as are approved by inspectors elected by the people. In each school district, a contribution is levied, by taxation, to an amount equalling the sum annually apportioned to the district from the public funds. Deficiencies, if any such exist, in relation to the actual support of schools, are made up by tuition-fees, charged to parents who are of sufficient ability. From such charge the poor are expressly exempted. The annual duration of the period for which the public schools must be kept open, for actual instruction, is not allowed to fall short of four months. The schools are visited and examined by the inspectors, and by a deputy superintendent of common schools for each county, who is appointed by the supervisors. The supervision and care of the whole school system of the state, are devolved on the secretary of state, who is superintendent of common schools, and, aided by a deputy general superintendent, receives, from the trustees of each district, an annual report of the condition and progress of their respective schools, and submits, annually, to the legislature, a comprehensive report of the condition of the schools, throughout the state. Schools are maintained, wherever necessary, for children of African descent. A state normal school for the education of

teachers, is maintained at Albany;* and a periodical journal, devoted to education, containing the laws of the state, and the regulations adopted by the superintendent, for the organization and management of schools, is distributed to each school in the state."

The results of the operation of the state school-system, for the year 1845–6, are thus presented in the annual report of Mr. Benton, the secretary of state, and superintendent of common schools.

On the 1st day of July, 1846, the aggregate of all the common, and unincorporated, select and private schools, was 12,738. The whole number of children in the state, on the 31st day of December, 1845, between the ages of five and sixteen, was 703,399: the whole number of children of all ages under instruction, in common schools, during parts of the year 1845, was 742,433,—in private schools, 31,240,—in the city of New York, 8,854,—in academies, (though not for classical studies,) 11,692; engaged in classical studies, 13,481:—aggregate,—under education,—807,200.—The aggregate population of the state, July 1st, 1945, 2,604,495. Four persons of every thirteen, therefore, were receiving the benefits of education.

The following items regarding our Indian population, possess peculiar interest.

It appears that school-houses have been erected on the Onondaga and St. Regis reservations, and that schools opened for the instruction of Indian children, are now in successful operation.

The superintendent's concluding remarks on this subject are as follows:—

"The duty of taking the census of the Indians on the several reservations in this state, was performed by gentlemen long familiar with the Indian character, their customs, manners, and habits; and the results given are relied upon as accurate. The whole number of Indian children residing upon the several reservations in the State, on the first day of July, 1845, given in the census reports, was nine hundred and eighty-four, (984) distributed as follows:—On the Oneida reservation, 59; Onondaga, 169; Tuscarora, 63; Buffalo, 117; Cattaraugus, 121; Cayugas, on the Cattaraugus reservation, 21; Allegany, 227; Tonawanda, 126; St. Regis, 81. The aggregate of the whole Indian population upon these reservations, is 3,753; and the proportion of children, of the above ages, to the whole population, is nearly one to four, or twenty-five per cent, a ratio almost as large as that given by the census, for the white population in the state."

* This institution promises an aid more effectual than any yet afforded, to the advancement of popular education.

School Libraries.

A most efficient collateral aid to general education, and to the extensive diffusion of knowledge, among the people of the state, is the system of school-district libraries, for the support of which, in every district, a certain appropriation is made from the funds of the state, in addition to the voluntary local contributions made for this purpose, by individuals. This invaluable provision for extending and completing the plan of popular education, enables the children of the state, generally, to secure benefits, previously enjoyed by such only as were furnished with such aids at home. It presents, to all, the advantages of a library adapted specially to juvenile readers, and carefully selected, with reference to the best influence on the young mind. The public system of general education, was necessarily imperfect in its results, while there was no inducement offered to youth to pursue the career of mental cultivation beyond the elements taught at school. But, by the system of school libraries, many of the most interesting and useful branches of science and art, are laid open to all who choose to avail themselves of the opportunity of enjoying the pleasures of knowledge, or of cultivating a taste for reading. The future effects of this liberal addition to the means of self-education, among all classes of the people, it would be difficult to calculate: they can be measured by no standard of ordinary computation: they extend to all the varieties of mental character, in the youth of our state,—to all the departments of science, and art, and literature,—and to all the advantages and honors accruing from the progress of our state, in every department of its intellectual, moral, and social relations.

The following eloquent passage from some editorial remarks, in the District School Journal, for May, 1846, by Mr. Randall, the deputy superintendent of our state schools, every observer must feel to be as true as it is pleasing to the mind.

"We are, we think, fully justified in asserting that at no period in our history as a state, have our common schools, collectively considered, been in a more flourishing condition, than at the present time. The various influences which have been brought to bear upon them, during the past five or ten years, and which are now widely and extensively felt, have resulted in a vastly improved system of intellectual and moral culture,—a higher and more enlightened and devoted class of teachers,—and a deeper and more profound interest, on the part of parents and the community generally. It is impossible for a dispassionate observer, acquainted with the state of things which existed, in these respects, but a few years since, to witness the daily exercises of any of these institutions, of the average grade of excellence, throughout the state, without being forcibly struck with the contrast which is exhibited, when a comparison is instituted between the present and the past. The district school

is no longer the repulsive, dreary, and tedious place of mental and bodily torture, which has furnished the fertile theme of wit and sarcasm, to so many of the highest class of minds. Music and innocent hilarity; play-grounds adorned with the choicest flowers, and cultivated with the most assiduous care; walls ornamented with the most tasteful and attractive drawings, and seats and desks arranged with utmost regard for the comfort and convenience of the occupant; kind, attentive, and faithful teachers, and cheerful, obedient, and happy pupils; now meet the eye on every hand: and the work of education is everywhere progressing, with a power and a success hitherto unknown."

CONSTITUTION

OF THE

STATE OF NEW YORK,

ADOPTED NOVEMBER 3, 1846.*

WE THE PEOPLE of the State of New York, grateful to Almighty God for our Freedom, in order to secure its blessings, DO ESTABLISH this Constitution.

Article I.

Section 1. No member of this State shall be disfranchised, or deprived of any of the rights or privileges, secured to any citizen thereof, unless by the law of the land, or the judgment of his peers.

Section 2. The trial by jury, in all cases in which it has been heretofore used, shall remain inviolate forever. But a jury trial may be waived by the parties in all civil cases, in the manner to be prescribed by law.

Section 3. The free exercise and enjoyment of religious profession and worship, without discrimination or preference, shall forever be allowed in this State to all mankind; and no person shall be rendered incompetent to be a witness on account of his opinions on matters of religious belief; but the liberty of conscience hereby secured shall not be so construed as to excuse acts of licentiousness, or justify practices inconsistent with the peace or safety of this State.

Section 4. The privilege of the writ of *habeas corpus* shall not be suspended, unless when, in cases of rebellion or invasion, the public safety may require its suspension.

Section 5. Excessive bail shall not be required, nor excessive fines imposed; nor shall cruel and unusual punishments be inflicted, nor shall witnesses be unreasonably detained.

Section 6. No person shall be held to answer for a capital or otherwise infamous crime, (except in cases of impeachment, and in cases of militia when in actual service; and the land and naval forces in time of war, or which this State may keep with the consent of Congress in time of peace; and in cases of petit larceny, under the regulation of the Legislature,) unless on presentment or indictment of a grand jury; and in any trial in any court

* Our intention, originally, was, to give an account of the successive modifications of the state constitution. On farther reflection, however, it seemed preferable to present the document itself, as an appropriate appendage to the historical part of the volume.

whatever, the party accused shall be allowed to appear and defend in person and with counsel, as in civil actions. No person shall be subject to be twice put in jeopardy for the same offence; nor shall he be compelled in any criminal case, to be a witness against himself; nor be deprived of life, liberty or property without the process of law; nor shall private property be taken for public use without just compensation.

Section 7. When private property shall be taken for any public use, the compensation to be made therefor, when such compensation is not made by the State, shall be ascertained by a jury, or by not less than three commissioners appointed by a court of record, as shall be prescribed by law. Private roads may be opened in the manner to be prescribed by law; but in every case the necessity of the road, and the amount of all damage to be sustained by the opening thereof, shall be first determined by a jury of freeholders, and such amount, together with the expenses of the proceeding, shall be paid by the person to be benefitted.

Section 8. Every citizen may freely speak, write and publish his sentiments on all subjects, being responsible for the abuse of that right; and no law shall be passed to restrain or abridge the liberty of speech or of the press. In all criminal prosecutions or indictments for libels, the truth may be given in evidence to the jury; and if it shall appear to the jury that the matter charged as libellous is true, and was published with good motives and for justifiable ends, the party shall be acquitted; and the jury shall have the right to determine the law and the fact.

Section 9. The assent of two-thirds of the members elected to each branch of the Legislature, shall be requisite to every bill appropriating the public moneys or property for local or private purposes.

Section 10. No law shall be passed, abridging the right of the people peaceably to assemble and to petition the government, or any department thereof, nor shall any divorce be granted, otherwise than by due judicial proceedings, nor shall any lottery hereafter be authorized or any sale of lottery tickets allowed within this State.

Section 11. The people of this State, in their right of sovereignty, are deemed to possess the original and ultimate property in and to all lands within the jurisdiction of the State; and all lands the title to which shall fail, from a defect of heirs, shall revert, or escheat to the people.

Section 12. All feudal tenures of every description, with all their incidents, are declared to be abolished, saving however, all rents and services certain which at any time heretofore have been lawfully created or reserved.

Section 13. All lands within this State are declared to be allodial, so that, subject only to the liability to escheat, the entire and absolute property is vested in the owners according to the nature of their respective estates.

Section 14. No lease or grant of agricultural land, for a longer period than twelve years, hereafter made, in which shall be reserved any rent or service of any kind, shall be valid.

Section 15. All fines, quarter sales, or other like restraints upon alienation reserved in any grant of land, hereafter to be made, shall be void.

Section 16. No purchase or contract for the sale of lands in this State, made since the fourteenth day of October, one thousand seven hundred and seventy-five; or which may hereafter be made,

of or with the Indians, shall be valid, unless made under the authority, and with the consent of the Legislature.

Section 17. Such parts of the common law, and of the acts of the Legislature of the colony of New York, as together did form the law of the said colony, on the nineteenth day of April, one thousand seven hundred and seventy-five, and the resolutions of the Congress of the said colony, and of the Convention of the State of New York, in force on the twentieth day of April, one thousand seven hundred and seventy-seven, which have not since expired, or been repealed or altered, and such acts of the Legislature of this State as are now in force, shall be and continue the law of this State, subject to such alterations as the Legislature shall make concerning the same. But all such parts of the common law, and such of the said acts, or parts thereof as are repugnant to this Constitution, are hereby abrogated; and the Legislature, at its first session after the adoption of this Constitution, shall appoint three commissioners, whose duty it shall be to reduce into a written and systematic code the whole body of the law of this State, or so much and such parts thereof as to the said commissioners shall seem practicable and expedient. And the said commissioners shall specify such alterations and amendments therein as they shall deem proper, and they shall at all times make reports of their proceedings to the Legislature, when called upon to do so; and the Legislature shall pass laws regulating the the tenure of office, the filling of vacancies therein, and the compensation of the said commissioners; and shall also provide for the publication of the said code, prior to its being presented to the Legislature for adoption.

Section 18. All grants of land within this State, made by the King of Great Britain, or persons acting under his authority, after the fourteenth day of October, one thousand seven hundred and seventy-five, shall be null and void; but nothing contained in this Constitution shall affect any grants of land within this State, made by the authority of the said King or his predecessors, or shall annul any charters to bodies politic and corporate, by him or them made, before that day; or shall affect any such grants or charters since made by this State, or by persons acting under its authority, or shall impair the obligation of any debts contracted by this State, or individuals, or bodies corporate, or any other rights of property, or any suits, actions, rights of action, or other proceedings in courts of justice.

Article II.

Section 1. Every male citizen of the age of twenty-one years, who shall have been a citizen for ten days, and an inhabitant of this State one year next preceding any election, and for the last four months a resident of the county where he may offer his vote, shall be entitled to vote at such election, in the election district of which he shall at the time be a resident, and not elsewhere, for all officers that now are or hereafter may be elective by the people; but such citizen shall have been for thirty days next preceding the election, a resident of the district from which the officer is to be chosen for whom he offers his vote. But no man of color, unless he shall have been for three years a citizen of this State, and for one year next preceding any election shall have been seized and possessed of a freehold estate of the value of two hundred and fifty dollars,

over and above all debts and incumbrances charged thereon, and shall have been actually rated and paid a tax thereon, shall be entitled to vote at such election. And no person of color shall be subject to direct taxation unless he shall be seized and possessed of such real estate as aforesaid.

Section 2. Laws may be passed excluding from the right of suffrage all persons who have been or may be convicted of bribery, of larceny, or of any infamous crime; and for depriving every person who shall make, or become directly or indirectly interested in any bet or wager depending upon the result of any election, from the right to vote at such election.

Section 3. For the purpose of voting, no person shall be deemed to have gained or lost a residence, by reason of his presence or absence, while employed in the service of the United States; nor while engaged in the navigation of the waters of this State, or of the United States, or of the high seas; nor while a student of any seminary of learning; nor while kept at any alms house, or other asylum, at public expense; nor while confined in any public prison.

Section 4. Laws shall be made for ascertaining by proper proofs the citizens who shall be entitled to the right of suffrage hereby established.

Section 5. All elections by the citizens shall be by ballot, except for such town officers as may by law be directed to be otherwise chosen.

Article III.

Section 1. The legislative power of this State shall be vested in a Senate and Assembly.

Section 2. The senate shall consist of thirty-two members, and the Senators shall be chosen for two years. The Assembly shall consist of one hundred and twenty-eight members, who shall be annually elected.

Section 3. The State shall be divided into thirty-two districts, to be called Senate Districts, each of which shall choose one Senator. The districts shall be numbered from one to thirty-two inclusive.

District number one (1) shall consist of the counties of Suffolk, Richmond and Queens.

District number two (2) shall consist of the county of Kings.

Districts number three (3) number four (4) number five (5) and number six (6) shall consist of the city and county of New York; and the board of supervisors of said city and county shall, on or before the first day of May one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven, divide the said city and county into the number of Senate Districts to which it is entitled, as near as may be of an equal number of inhabitants, excluding aliens and persons of color not taxed, and consisting of convenient and contiguous territory; and no Assembly District shall be divided in the formation of a Senate District. The board of supervisors, when they shall have completed such division, shall cause certificates thereof, stating the number and boundaries of each district, and the population thereof, to be filed in the office of the Secretary of State, and of the clerk of the said city and county.

District number seven (7) shall consist of the counties of Westchester, Putnam and Rockland.

District number eight (8) shall consist of the counties of Dutchess and Columbia.

District number nine (9) shall consist of the counties of Orange and Sullivan.

District number ten (10) shall

consist of the counties of Ulster and Greene.

District number eleven (11) shall consist of the counties of Albany and Schenectady.

District number twelve (12) shall consist of the county of Rensselaer.

District number thirteen (13) shall consist of the counties of Washington and Saratoga.

District number fourteen (14) shall consist of the counties of Warren, Essex and Clinton.

District number fifteen (15) shall consist of the counties of St. Lawrence and Franklin.

District number sixteen (16) shall consist of the counties of Herkimer, Hamilton, Fulton and Montgomery.

District number seventeen (17) shall consist of the counties of Schoharie and Delaware.

District number eighteen (18) shall consist of the counties of Otsego and Chenango.

District number nineteen (19) shall consist of the county of Oneida.

District number twenty (20) shall consist of the counties of Madison and Oswego.

District number twenty-one (21) shall consist of the counties of Jefferson and Lewis.

District number twenty-two (22) shall consist of the county of Onondaga.

District number twenty-three (23) shall consist of the counties of Cortland, Broome and Tioga.

District number twenty-four (24) shall consist of the counties of Cayuga and Wayne.

District number twenty-five (25) shall consist of the counties of Tompkins, Seneca and Yates.

District number twenty-six (26) shall consist of the counties of Steuben and Chemung.

District number twenty-seven (27) shall consist of the county of Monroe.

District number twenty-eight (28) shall consist of the counties of Orleans, Genesee and Niagara.

District number twenty-nine (29) shall consist of the counties of Ontario and Livingston.

District number thirty (30) shall consist of the counties of Allegany and Wyoming.

District number thirty-one (31) shall consist of the county of Erie.

District number thirty-two (32) shall consist of the counties of Chautauque and Cattaraugus.

Section 4. An enumeration of the inhabitants of the State shall be taken, under the direction of the Legislature, in the year one thousand eight hundred and fifty-five, and at the end of every ten years thereafter; and the said districts shall be so altered by the Legislature, at the first session after the return of every enumeration, that each Senate district shall contain, as nearly as may be, an equal number of inhabitants, excluding aliens, and persons of color not taxed; and shall remain unaltered until the return of another enumeration, and shall at all times consist of contiguous territory; and no county shall be divided in the formation of a Senate district, except such county shall be equitably entitled to two or more Senators.

Section 5. The members of Assembly shall be apportioned among the several counties of this State, by the Legislature, as nearly as may be, according to the number of their respective inhabitants, excluding aliens, and persons of color not taxed, and shall be chosen by single districts.

The several boards of supervisors in such counties of this State, as are now entitled to more than one member of Assembly, shall assemble on the first Tuesday of January next, and divide their respective counties into Assembly districts equal to the num-

ber of members of Assembly to which such counties are now severally entitled by law, and shall cause to be filed in the offices of the Secretary of State and the clerks of their respective counties, a description of such Assembly districts, specifying the number of each district and the population thereof, according to the last preceding State enumeration, as near as can be ascertained. Each Assembly district shall contain, as near as may be, an equal number of inhabitants, excluding aliens and persons of color not taxed, and shall consist of convenient and contiguous territory; but no town shall be divided in the formation of Assembly districts.

The Legislature, at its first session after the return of every enumeration, shall re-apportion the members of Assembly among the several counties of this State, in manner aforesaid, and the boards of supervisors in such counties as may be entitled, under such re-apportionment, to more than one member, shall assemble at such time as the Legislature making such re-apportionment shall prescribe, and divide such counties into Assembly districts, in the manner herein directed; and the apportionment and districts so to be made, shall remain unaltered until another enumeration shall be taken under the provisions of the preceding section.

Every county heretofore established and separately organized, except the county of Hamilton, shall always be entitled to one member of the Assembly, and no new county shall be hereafter erected, unless its population shall entitle it to a member.

The county of Hamilton shall elect with the county of Fulton, until the population of the county of Hamilton shall, according to the ratio, be entitled to a member.

Section 6. The members of the Legislature shall receive for their services a sum not exceeding three dollars a day, from the commencement of the session; but such pay shall not exceed in the aggregate three hundred dollars for per diem allowance, except in proceeding for impeachment. The limitation as to the aggregate compensation shall not take effect until the year one thousand eight hundred and forty-eight. When convened in extra session by the Governor, they shall receive three dollars per day, They shall also receive the sum of one dollar for every ten miles they shall travel in going to and returning from their place of meeting on the most usual route. The speaker of the Assembly shall, in virtue of his office, receive an additional compensation equal to one-third of his per diem allowance as a member.

Section 7. No member of the Legislature shall receive any civil appointment within this State, or to the Senate of the United States, from the Governor, the Governor and Senate, or from the Legislature, during the term for which he shall have been elected; and all such appointments, and all votes given for any such member, for any such office or appointment, shall be void.

Section 8. No person being a member of Congress, or holding any judicial or military office under the United States, shall hold a seat in the Legislature. And if any person shall, after his election as a member of the Legislature, be elected to Congress, or appointed to any office, civil or military, under the government of the United States, his acceptance thereof shall vacate his seat.

Section 9. The elections of Senators and members of Assembly, pursuant to the provisions of this Constitution, shall be held on

the Tuesday succeeding the first Monday of November, unless otherwise directed by the Legislature.

Section 10. A majority of each house shall constitute a quorum to do business. Each house shall determine the rules of its own proceedings, and be the judge of the elections, returns and qualifications of its own members, shall choose its own officers; and the Senate shall choose a temporary president, when the Lieutenant-Governor shall not attend as president, or shall act as Governor.

Section 11. Each house shall keep a journal of its proceedings, and publish the same, except such parts as may require secrecy. The doors of each house shall be kept open, except when the public welfare shall require secrecy. Neither house shall, without the consent of the other, adjourn for more than two days.

Section 12. For any speech or debate in either house of the Legislature, the members shall not be questioned in any other place.

Section 13. Any bill may originate in either house of the Legislature, and all bills passed by one house may be amended by the other.

Section 14. The enacting clause of all bills shall be "The people of the State of New York, represented in Senate and Assembly, do enact as follows," and no law shall be enacted except by bill.

Section 15. No bill shall be passed unless by the assent of a majority of all the members elected to each branch of the Legislature; and the question upon the final passage shall be taken immediately upon its last reading, and the yeas and nays entered on the journal.

Section 16. No private or local bill, which may be passed by the Legislature, shall embrace more than one subject, and that shall be expressed in the title.

Section 17. The Legislatnre may confer upon the boards of supervisors of the several counties of the State, such further powers of local legislation and administration, as they shall from time to time prescribe.

Article IV.

Section 1. The executive power shall be vested in a Governor, who shall hold his office for two years: a Lieutenant Governor shall be chosen at the same time, and for the same term.

Section 2. No person, except a citizen of the United States, shall be eligible to the office of Governor; nor shall any person be eligible to that office, who shall not have attained the age of thirty years, and who shall not have been five years next preceding his election, a resident within this State.

Section 3. The Governor and Lieutenant Governor shall be elected at the times and places of choosing members of the Assembly. The persons respectively having the highest numbers of votes for Governor and Lieutenant Governor, shall be elected; but in case two or more shall have an equal and the highest number of votes for Governor, or for Lieutenant Governor, the two houses of the Legislature, at its next annual session, shall, forthwith, by joint ballot, choose one of the said persons so having an equal and the highest number of votes for Governor, or Lieutenant Governor.

Section 4. The Governor shall be commander-in-chief of the military and naval forces of the State. He shall have power to convene the Legislature (or the Senate only) on extraordinary occasions.—He shall communicate by message to the Legislature, at every session, the condition of the State,

and recommend such matters to them as he shall judge expedient. He shall transact all necessary business with the officers of government, civil and military. He shall expedite all such measures, as may be resolved upon by the Legislature, and shall take care that the laws are faithfully executed. He shall, at stated times, receive for his services a compensation to be established by law, which shall neither be increased nor diminished after his election and during his continuance in office.

Section 5. The Governor shall have the power to grant reprieves, commutations and pardons after conviction, for all offences except treason and cases of impeachment, upon such conditions, and with such restrictions and limitations, as he may think proper, subject to such regulation as may be provided by law relative to the manner of applying for pardons. Upon conviction for treason, he shall have power to suspend the execution of the sentence, until the case shall be reported to the Legislature at its next meeting, when the Legislature shall either pardon, or commute the sentence, direct the execution of the sentence, or grant a further reprieve. He shall annually communicate to the Legislature each case of reprieve, commutation or pardon granted; stating the name of the convict, the crime of which he was convicted, the sentence and its date, and the date of the commutation, pardon or reprieve.

Section 6. In case of the impeachment of the Governor, or his removal from office, death, inability to discharge the powers and duties of the said office, resignation or absence from the State, the powers and duties of the office shall devolve upon the Lieutenant-Governor for the residue of the term, or until the disability shall cease. But when the Governor shall, with the consent of the Legislature, be out of the State in time of war, at the head of a military force thereof, he shall continue commander-in-chief of all the military force of the State.

Section 7. The Lieutenant-Governor shall possess the same qualifications of eligibility for office as the Governor. He shall be President of the Senate, but shall only have a casting vote therein. If during a vacancy of the office of Governor, the Lieutenant-Governor shall be impeached, displaced, resign, die, or become incapable of performing the duties of his office, or be absent from the State, the President of the Senate shall act as Governor, until the vacancy be filled, or the disability shall cease.

Section 8. The Lieutenant-Governor shall, while acting as such, receive a compensation which shall be fixed by law, and which shall not be increased or diminished during his continuance in office.

Section 9. Every bill which shall have passed the Senate and Assembly, shall, before it becomes a law, be presented to the Governor: if he approve, he shall sign it; but if not, he shall return it with his objections to that house, in which it shall have originated; who shall enter the objections at large on their journal and proceed to reconsider it. If after such reconsideration, two-thirds of the members present shall agree to pass the bill, it shall be sent, together with the objections to the other house, by which it shall likewise be re-considered; and if approved by two-thirds of all the members present, it shall become a law, notwithstanding the objections of the Governor. But in all such cases, the votes of both houses shall be determined by yeas and nays, and the names of the members voting for and against the bill,

shall be entered on the journal of each house respectively. If any bill shall not be returned by the Governor within ten days (Sundays excepted) after it shall have been presented to him, the same shall be a law, in like manner as if he had signed it, unless the Legislature shall, by their adjournment, prevent its return; in which case it shall not be a law.

Article V.

Section 1. The Secretary of State, Comptroller, Treasurer and Attorney-General shall be chosen at a general election, and shall hold their offices for two years. Each of the officers in this Article named (except the Speaker of the Assembly,) shall at stated times, during his continuance in office, receive for his services, a compensation, which shall not be increased or diminished during the term for which he shall have been elected; nor shall he receive, to his use, any fees or perquisites of office, or other compensation.

Section 2. A State Engineer and Surveyor shall be chosen at a general election, and shall hold his office two years, but no person shall be elected to said office who is not a practical engineer.

Section 3. Three Canal Commissioners shall be chosen at the general election which shall be held next after the adoption of this Constitution, one of whom shall hold his office for one year, one for two years, and one for three years. The Commissioners of the Canal Fund shall meet at the Capitol on the first Monday of January, next after such election, and determine by lot which of said Commissioners shall hold his office for one year, which for two, and which for three years; and there shall be elected annually, thereafter, one Canal Commissioner, who shall hold his office for three years.

Section 4. Three Inspectors of State Prisons, shall be elected at the general election which shall be held next after the adoption of this Constitution, one of whom shall hold his office for one year, one for two years, and one for three years. The Governor, Secretary of State, and Comptroller, shall meet at the Capitol on the first Monday of January next succeeding such election, and determine by lot which of said Inspectors shall hold his office for one year, which for two, and which for three years; and there shall be elected annually thereafter one Inspector of State Prisons, who shall hold his office for three years; said Inspectors shall have the charge and superintendence of the State Prisons, and shall appoint all the officers therein. All vacancies in the office of such Inspector shall be filled by the Governor, till the next election.

Section 5. The Lieutenant-Governor, Speaker of the Assembly, Secretary of State, Comptroller, Treasurer, Attorney-General and State Engineer and Surveyor, shall be the Commissioners of the Land-Office.

The Lieutenant-Governor, Secretary of State, Comptroller, Treasurer, and Attorney-General, shall be the Commissioners of the Canal Fund.

The Canal Board shall consist of the Commissioners of the Canal Fund, the State Engineer and Surveyor, and the Canal Commissioners.

Section 6. The powers and duties of the respective boards, and of the several officers in this Article mentioned, shall be such as now are or hereafter may be prescribed by law.

Section 7. The Treasurer may be suspended from office by the Governor, during the recess of the Legislature, and until thirty days after the commencement of

the next session of the Legislature, whenever it shall appear to him that such Treasurer has, in any particular, violated his duty. The Governor shall appoint a competent person to discharge the duties of the office, during such suspension of the Treasurer.

Section 8. All offices for the weighing, gauging, measuring, culling or inspecting any merchandize, produce, manufacture or commodity, whatever, are hereby abolished, and no such office shall hereafter be created by law; but nothing in this section contained, shall abrogate any office created for the purpose of protecting the public health or the interests of the State in its property, revenue, tolls, or purchases, or of supplying the people with correct standards of weights and measures, or shall prevent the creation of any office for such purposes hereafter.

Article VI.

Section 1. The Assembly shall have the power of impeachment, by the vote of the majority of all the members elected. The court for the trial of impeachments, shall be composed of the President of the Senate, the Senators, or a major part of them, and the judges of the court of appeals, or the major part of them. On the trial of an impeachment against the Governor, the Lieutenant-Governor shall not act as a member of the court. No judicial officer shall exercise his office after he shall have been impeached, until he shall have been acquitted. Before the trial of an impeachment, the members of the court shall take an oath or affirmation, truly and impartially to try the impeachment according to evidence; and no person shall be convicted without the concurrence of two-thirds of the members present. Judgment in cases of impeachment shall not extend further than to removal from office, or removal from office and disqualification to hold and enjoy any office of honor, trust or profit under this State; but the party impeached shall be liable to indictment, and punishment according to law.

Section 2. There shall be a Court of Appeals, composed of eight judges, of whom four shall be elected by the electors of the State for eight years, and four selected from the class of Justices of the Supreme Court having the shortest time to serve. Provision shall be made by law for designating one of the number elected, as chief judge, and for selecting such Justices of the Supreme Court, from time to time, and for so classifying those elected, that one shall be elected every second year.

Section 3. There shall be a Supreme Court having general jurisdiction in law and equity.

Section 4. The State shall be divided into eight judicial districts, of which the city of New York shall be one, the others to be bounded by county lines and to be compact and equal in population as nearly as may be. There shall be four Justices of the Supreme Court in each district, and as many more in the district composed of the city of New York, as may from time to time be authorized by law, but not to exceed in the whole such number in proportion to its population, as shall be in conformity with the number of such judges in the residue of the State in proportion to its population. They shall be classified so that one of the justices of each district shall go out of office at the end of every two years. After the expiration of their terms under such classification, the term of their office shall be eight years.

Section 5. The Legislature shall have the same powers to alter and regulate the jurisdiction and proceedings in law and equity, as they have heretofore possessed.

Section 6. Provision may be made by law for designating from time to time, one or more of the said justices, who is not a judge of the court of appeals, to preside at the general terms of the said court to be held in the several districts. Any three or more of the said justices, of whom one of the said justices so designated, shall always be one, may hold such general terms. And any one or more of the justices may hold special terms and circuit courts, and any of them may preside in courts of oyer and terminer in any county.

Section 7. The judges of the court of appeals and justices of the supreme court shall severally receive at stated times for their services, a compensation to be established by law, which shall not be increased or diminished during their continuance in office.

Section 8. They shall not hold any other office or public trust. All votes of either of them, for any elective office, (except that of justice of the supreme court, or judge of the court of appeals), given by the Legislature or the people, shall be void. They shall not exercise any power of appointment to public office. Any male citizen of the age of twenty-one years, of good moral character, and who possesses the requisite qualifications of learning and ability, shall be entitled to admission to practice in all the courts of this State.

Section 9. The classification of the justices of the supreme court; the times and place of holding the terms of the court of appeals, and of the general and special terms of the supreme court within the several districts, and the circuit courts and courts of oyer and terminer within the several counties, shall be provided for by law.

Section 10. The testimony in equity cases shall be taken in like manner as in cases at law.

Section 11 Justices of the supreme court and judges of the court of appeals, may be removed by concurrent resolution of both Houses of the Legislature, if two-thirds of all the members elected to the Assembly and a majority of all the members elected to the Senate, concur therein. All judicial officers, except those mentioned in this section, and except justices of the peace, and judges and justices of inferior courts not of record may be removed by the Senate on the recommendation of the Governor; but no removal shall be made by virtue of this section, unless the cause thereof be entered on the journals, nor unless the party complained of, shall have been served with a copy of the complaint against him, and shall have had an opportunity of being heard in his defence. On the question of removal, the ayes and noes shall be entered on the journals.

Section 12. The judges of the court of appeals shall be elected by the electors of the State, and the justices of the supreme court by the electors of the several judicial districts, at such times as may be prescribed by law.

Section 13. In case the office of any judge of the court of appeals, or justice of the supreme court, shall become vacant before the expiration of the regular term for which he was elected, the vacancy may be filled by appointment by the Governor, until it shall be supplied at the next general election of judges, when it shall be filled by election for the residue of the unexpired term.

Section 14. There shall be elected in each of the counties of this State, except the city and county of New York, one county judge, who shall hold his office for four years. He shall hold the county court, and perform the duties of the office of surrogate. The county court shall have such jurisdic-

tion in cases arising in justices courts, and in special cases, as the Legislature may prescribe; but shall have no original civil jurisdiction, except in such special cases.

The county judge with two justices of the peace to be designated according to law, may hold courts of sessions, with such criminal jurisdiction as the Legislature shall prescribe, and perform such other duties as may be required by law.

The county judge shall receive an annual salary, to be fixed by the board of supervisors, which shall be neither increased nor diminished during his continuance in office. The justices of the peace, for services in courts of sessions, shall be paid a per diem allowance out of the county treasury.

In counties having a population exceeding forty thousand, the Legislature may provide for the election of a separate officer to perform the duties of the office of surrogate.

The Legislature may confer equity jurisdiction in special cases upon the county judge.

Inferior local courts, of civil and criminal jurisdiction, may be established by the Legislature in cities; and such courts, except for the cities of New-York and Buffalo, shall have an uniform organization and jurisdiction in such cities.

Section 15. The Legislature may, on application of the board of supervisors provide for the election of local officers, not to exceed two in any county, to discharge the duties of county judge and of surrogate, in cases of their inability or of a vacancy, and to exercise such other powers in special cases as may be provided by law.

Section 16. The Legislature may reörganize the judicial districts at the first session after the return of every enumeration under this Constitution, in the manner provided for in the fourth section of this Article and at no other time; and they may, at such session, increase or diminish the number of districts, but such increase or diminution shall not be more than one district at any one time. Each district shall have four justices of the Supreme Court; but no diminution of the districts shall have the effect to remove a judge from office.

Section 17. The electors of the several towns, shall, at their annual town meeting, and in such manner as the Legislature may direct, elect justices of the peace, whose term of office shall be four years. In case of an election to fill a vacancy occurring before the expiration of a full term they shall hold for the residue of the unexpired term.—Their number and classification may be regulated by law. Justices of the peace and judges or justices of inferior courts not of record and their clerks may be removed after due notice and an opportunity of being heard in their defence by such county, city or state courts as may be prescribed by law, for causes to be assigned in the order of removal.

Section 18. All judicial officers of cities and villages, and all such judicial officers as may be created therein by law, shall be elected at such times and in such manner as the Legislature may direct.

Section 19. Clerks of the several counties of this State shall be clerks of the Supreme Courts, with such powers and duties as shall be prescribed by law. A clerk for the Court of Appeals, to be ex-officio clerk of the Supreme Court, and to keep his office at the seat of government, shall be chosen by the electors of the State; he shall hold his office for three years, and his compensation shall be fixed by law and paid out of the public Treasury.

Section 20. No judicial officer, except justices of the peace shall

receive to his own use, any fees or perquisites of office.

Section 21. The Legislature may authorize the judgments decrees and decisions of any local inferior court of record of original civil jurisdiction, established in a city, to be removed for review directly into the Court of Appeals.

Section 22. The Legislature shall provide for the speedy publication of all statute laws, and of such judicial decisions as it may deem expedient. And all laws and judicial decisions shall be free for publication by any person.

Section 23. Tribunals of conciliation may be established, with such powers and duties as may be prescribed by law, but such tribunals shall have no power to render judgment to be obligatory on the parties, except they voluntarily submit their matters in difference and agree to abide the judgment, or assent thereto, in the presence of such tribunal, in such cases as shall be prescribed by law.

Section 24. The Legislature at its first session after the adoption of this Constitution, shall provide for the appointment of three commissioners, whose duty it shall be to revise, reform, simplify and and abridge the rules and practice, pleadings, forms and proceedings of the courts of record of this State, and to report thereon to the Legislature, subject to their adoption and modification from time to time.

Section 25. The Legislature at its first session after the adoption of this Constitution, shall provide for the organization of the Court of Appeals, and for transferring to it the business pending in the Court for the Correction of Errors, and for the allowance of writs of error and appeals to the Court of Appeals, from the judgments and decrees of the present Court of Chancery and Supreme Court, and of the courts that may be organized under this Constitution.

Article VII.

Section 1. After paying the expenses of collection, superintendence and ordinary repairs, there shall be appropriated and set apart in each fiscal year out of the revenues of the State canals, commencing on the first day of June, one thousand eight hundred and forty-six, the sum of one million and three hundred thousand dollars until the first day of June, one thousand eight hundred and fifty-five, and from that time the sum of one million and seven hundred thousand dollars in each fiscal year, as a sinking fund, to pay the interest and redeem the principal of that part of the State debt called the canal debt, as it existed at the time first aforesaid, and including three hundred thousand dollars then to be borrowed, until the same shall be wholly paid; and the principal and income of the said sinking fund shall be sacredly applied to that purpose.

Section 2. After complying with the provisions of the first section of this article, there shall be appropriated and set apart out of the surplus revenues of the State canals, in each fiscal year, commencing on the first day of June, one thousand eight hundred and forty-six, the sum of three hundred and fifty thousand dollars, until the time when a sufficient sum shall have been appropriated and set apart, under the said first section, to pay the interest and extinguish the entire principal of the canal debt; and after that period, then the sum of one million and five hundred thousand dollars in each fiscal year, as a sinking fund, to pay the interest and redeem the principal of that part of the State debt called the General Fund debt, including the debt for loans of the State credit to railroad

companies which have failed to pay the interest thereon, and also the contingent debt on State stocks loaned to incorporate companies which have hitherto paid the interest thereon, whenever and as far as any part thereof may become a charge on the Treasury or General Fund, until the same shall be wholly paid; and the principal and income of the said last-mentioned sinking fund shall be sacredly applied to the purpose aforesaid; and if the payment of any part of the moneys to the said sinking fund shall at any time be deferred, by reason of the priority recognized in the first section of this article, the sum so deferred, with quarterly interest thereon, at the then current rate, shall be paid to the last mentioned sinking fund, as soon as it can be done consistently with the just rights of the creditors holding said canal debt.

Section 3. After paying the said expenses of superintendence and repairs of the canals, and the sums appropriated by the first and second sections of this article, there shall be paid out of the surplus revenues of the canals, to the Treasury of the State, on or before the thirtieth day of September, in each year, for the use and benefit of the General Fund, such sum, not exceeding two hundred thousand dollars, as may be required to defray the necessary expenses of the State; and the remainder of the revenues of the said canals shall, in each fiscal year, be applied, in such manner as the Legislature shall direct, to the completion of the Erie Canal enlargement, and the Genesee Valley and Black River canals, until the said canals shall be completed.

If at any time after the period of eight years from the adoption of this Constitution, the revenues of the State, unappropriated by this article, shall not be sufficient to defray the necessary expenses of the government, without continuing or laying a direct tax, the Legislature may, at its discretion, supply the deficiency, in whole or in part, from the surplus revenues of the canals, after complying with the provisions of the first two sections of this article, for paying the interest and extinguishing the principal of the Canal and General Fund debt; but the sum thus appropriated from the surplus revenues of the canals shall not exceed annually three hundred and fifty thousand dollars, including the sum of two hundred thousand dollars, provided for by this section for the expenses of the government, until the General Fund debt shall be extinguished, or until the Erie Canal Enlargement and Genesee Valley and Black River Canals shall be completed, and after that debt shall be paid, or the said canals shall be completed, then the sum of six hundred and seventy-two thousand five hundred dollars, or so much thereof as shall be necessary, may be annually appropriated to defray the expenses of the government.

Section 4. The claims of the State against any incorporated company to pay the interest and redeem the principal of the stock of the State loaned or advanced to such company, shall be fairly enforced, and not released or compromised; and the moneys arising from such claims shall be set apart and applied as part of the sinking fund provided in the second section of this article. But the time limited for the fulfillment of any condition of any release or compromise heretofore made or provided for, may be extended by law.

Section 5. If the sinking funds, or either of them, provided in this article, shall prove insufficient to enable the State, on the credit of such fund, to procure the means to satisfy the claims of the creditors

of the State as they become payable, the Legislature shall, by equitable taxes, so increase the revenues of the said funds as to make them, respectively, sufficient perfectly to preserve the public faith. Every contribution or advance to the canals, or their debt, from any source, other than their direct revenues, shall, with quarterly interest, at the rates then current, be repaid into the Treasury, for the use of the State, out of the canal revenues as soon as it can be done consistently with the just rights of the creditors holding the said canal debt.

Section 6. The Legislature shall not sell, lease, or otherwise dispose of any of the canals of the State; but they shall remain the property of the State and under its management, forever.

Section 7. The Legislature shall never sell or dispose of the salt springs, belonging to this State.—The lands contiguous thereto and which may be necessary and convenient for the use of the salt springs, may be sold by authority of law and under the direction of the commissioners of the land office, for the purpose of investing the moneys arising therefrom in other lands alike convenient; but by such sale and purchase the aggregate quantity of these lands shall not be diminished.

Section 8. No moneys shall ever be paid out of the Treasury of this State, or any of its funds, or any of the funds under its management, except in pursuance of an appropriation by law; nor unless such payment be made within two years next after the passage of such appropriation act; and every such law, making a new appropriation, or continuing or reviving an appropriation, shall distinctly specify the sum appropriated, and the object to which it is to be applied; and it shall not be sufficient for such law to refer to any other law to fix such sum.

Section 9. The credit of the State shall not, in any manner, be given or loaned to, or in aid of any individual association or corporation.

Section 10. The State may, to meet casual deficits or failures in revenues, or for expenses not provided for, contract debts, but such debts, direct and contingent, singly or in the aggregate, shall not at any time, exceed one million of dollars; and the moneys arising from the loans creating such debts, shall be applied to the purpose for which they were obtained, or to repay the debt so contracted, and to no other purpose whatever.

Section 11. In addition to the above limited power to contract debts, the State may contract debts to repel invasion, suppress insurrection, or defend the State in war; but the money arising from the contracting of such debts shall be applied to the purpose for which it was raised, or to repay such debts, and to no other purpose whatever.

Section 12. Except the debts specified in the tenth and eleventh sections of this article, no debt shall be hereafter contracted by or on behalf of this State, unless such debt shall be authorized by a law, for some single work or object, to be distinctly specified therein; and such law shall impose and provide for the collection of a direct annual tax to pay, and sufficient to pay the interest on such debt as it falls due, and also to pay and discharge the principal of such debt within eighteen years from the time of the contracting thereof.

No such law shall take effect until it shall, at a general election, have been submitted to the people, and have received a majority of all the votes cast for and against it, at such election.

On the final passage of such bill in either house of the Legislature, the question shall be taken by ayes

and noes, to be daily entered on the journals thereof, and shall be: "Shall this bill pass, and ought the same to receive the sanction of the people?"

The Legislature may at any time, after the approval of such law by the people, if no debt shall have been contracted in pursuance thereof, repeal the same; and may at any time, by law, forbid the contracting of any further debt or liability under such law; but the tax imposed by such act, in proportion to the debt and liability which may have been contracted, in pursuance of such law, shall remain in force and be irrepealable, and be annually collected, until the proceeds thereof shall have made the provision herein before specified to pay and discharge the interest and principal of such debt and liability.

The money arising from any loan or stock creating such debt or liability, shall be applied to the work or object specified in the act authorizing such debt or liability, or for the repayment of such debt or liability, and for no other purpose whatever.

No such law shall be submitted to be voted on, within three months after its passage, or at any general election, when any other law, or any bill, or any amendment to the Constitution shall be submitted to be voted for or against.

Section 13. Every law which imposes, continues or revives a tax, shall distinctly state the tax and the object to which it is to be applied; and it shall not be sufficient to refer to any other law to fix such tax or object.

Section 14. On the final passage, in either house of the Legislature, of every act which imposes, continues, or revives a tax, or creates a debt or charge, or makes, continues or revives any appropriation of public or trust-money or property, or releases, discharges, or commutes any claim or demand of the State, the question shall be taken by ayes and noes, which shall be duly entered on the journals, and three fifths of all the members elected to either house, shall, in all cases, be necessary to constitute a quorum therein.

Article VIII.

Section 1. Corporations may be formed under general laws; but shall not be created by special act, except for municipal purposes, and in cases where in the judgment of the Legislature, the objects of the corporation cannot be attained under general laws. All general laws and special acts passed pursuant to this section, may be altered from time to time or repealed.

Section 2. Dues from corporations shall be secured by such individual liability of the corporators and other means as may be prescribed by law.

Section 3. The term corporations as used in this article, shall be construed to include all associations and joint-stock companies having any of the powers or privileges of corporations not possessed by individuals or partnerships. And all corporations shall have the right to sue and shall be subject to be sued in all courts in like cases as natural persons.

Section 4. The Legislature shall have no power to pass any act granting any special charter for banking purposes; but corporations or associations may be formed for such purposes under general laws.

Section 5. The Legislature shall have no power to pass any law sanctioning in any manner, directly or indirectly, the suspension of specie payments, by any person, association or corporation issuing bank notes of any description.

Section 6. The Legislature shall provide by law for the registry of all bills or notes, issued or put in

circulation as money, and shall require ample security for the redemption of the same in specie.

Section 7. The stockholders in every corporation and joint-stock association for banking purposes, issuing bank notes or any kind of paper credits to circulate as money, after the first day of January, one thousand eight hundred and fifty, shall be individually responsible to the amount of their respective share or shares of stock in any such corporation or association, for all its debts and liabilities of every kind, contracted after the said first day of January, one thousand eight hundred and fifty.

Section 8. In case of the insolvency of any bank or banking association, the bill-holders thereof shall be entitled to preference in payment, over all other creditors of such bank or association.

Section 9. It shall be the duty of the Legislature to provide for the organization of cities and incorporated villages, and to restrict their power of taxation, assessment, borrowing money, contracting debts and loaning their credit, so as to prevent abuses in assessments, and in contracting debt by such municipal corporations.

Article IX.

Section 1. The capital of the Common School Fund; the capital of the Literature Fund, and the capital of the United States Deposite Fund, shall be respectively preserved inviolate. The revenue of the said Common School Fund shall be applied to the support of common schools; the revenues of the said Literature Fund shall be applied to the support of academies, and the sum of twenty-five thousand dollars of the revenues of the United States Deposite Fund shall each year be appropriated to and made a part of the capital of the said Common School Fund.

Article X.

Section 1. Sheriffs, clerks of counties, including the register and clerk of the city and county of New York, coroners, and district attorneys, shall be chosen, by the electors of the respective counties, once in every three years, and as often as vacancies shall happen. Sheriffs shall hold no other office, and be ineligible for the next three years after the termination of their offices. They may be required by law, to renew their security, from time to time, and in default of giving such new security, their offices shall be deemed vacant. But the county shall never be made responsible for the acts of the sheriff.

The Governor may remove any officer, in this section mentioned, within the term for which he shall have been elected; giving to such officer a copy of the charges against him, and an opportunity of being heard in his defence.

Section 2. All county officers whose election or appointment is not provided for, by this Constitution, shall be elected by the electors of the respective counties, or appointed by the boards of supervisors, or other county authorities, as the Legislature shall direct. All city, town and village officers, whose election or appointment is not provided for by this Constitution, shall be elected by the electors, of such cities, towns and villages, or of some division thereof, or appointed by such authorities thereof, as the Legislature shall designate for that purpose. All other officers whose election or appointment is not provided for by this Constitution, and all officers whose offices may hereafter be created by law, shall be elected by the people, or appointed, as the Legislature may direct.

Section 3. When the duration of any office is not provided by this Constitution, it may be declared by law, and if not so declared, such office shall be held, during the pleasure of the authority making the appointment.

Section 4. The time of electing all officers named in this article shall be prescribed by law.

Section 5. The Legislature shall provide for filling vacancies in office, and in case of elective officers, no person appointed to fill a vacancy shall hold his office by virtue of such appointment longer than the commencement of the political year next succeeding the first annual election after the happening of the vacancy.

Section 6. The political year and legislative term, shall begin on the first day of January; and the Legislature shall every year assemble on the first Tuesday in January, unless a different day shall be appointed by law.

Section 7. Provision shall be made by law for the removal for misconduct or malversation in office of all officers (except judicial) whose powers and duties are not local or legislative, and who shall be elected at general elections, and also for supplying vacancies created by such removal.

Section 8. The Legislature may declare the cases in which any office shall be deemed vacant, where no provision is made for that purpose in this Constitution.

Article XI.

Section 1. The militia of this State, shall at all times hereafter, be armed and disciplined, and in readiness for service; but all such inhabitants of this State of any religious denomination whatever as from scruples of conscience may be averse to bearing arms, shall be excused therefrom, upon such conditions as shall be prescribed by law.

Section 2. Militia officers shall be chosen, or appointed, as follows:—captains, subalterns and non-commissioned officers shall be chosen by the written votes of the members of their respective companies. Field officers of regiments and separate battalions, by the written votes of the commissioned officers of the respective regiments and separate battalions; brigadier-generals and brigade inspectors by the field officers of their respective brigades; major generals, brigadier generals and commanding officers of regiments or separate battalions, shall appoint the staff officers to their respective divisions, brigades, regiments or separate battalions.

Section 3. The Governor shall nominate, and with the consent of the Senate, appoint all major generals, and the commissary general. The adjutant general and other chiefs of staff departments, and the aids-de-camp of the commander-in-chief shall be appointed by the Governor, and their commissions shall expire with the time for which the Governor shall have been elected. The commissary general shall hold his office for two years.—He shall give security for the faithful execution of the duties of his office, in such manner and amount as shall be prescribed by law.

Section 4. The Legislature shall, by law, direct the time and manner of electing militia officers, and of certifying their elections to the Governor.

Section 5. The commissioned officers of the militia shall be commissioned by the Governor; and no commissioned officer shall be removed from office, unless by the Senate on the recommendation of the Governor, stating the grounds on which such removal is recommended, or by the decision of a court martial, pursuant

to law. The present officers of the militia shall hold their commissions subject to removal, as before provided.

Section 6. In case the mode of election and appointment of militia officers hereby directed, shall not be found conducive to the improvement of the militia, the Legislature may abolish the same, and provide by law for their appointment and removal, if two-thirds of the members present in each house shall concur therein.

Article XII.

Section 1. Members of the Legislature and all officers, executive and judicial, except such inferior officers as may be by law exempted, shall, before they enter on the duties of their respective offices, take and subscribe the following oath or affirmation:—

"I do solemnly swear (or affirm, as the case may be) that I will support the Constitution of the United States, and the Constitution of the State of New York; and that I will faithfully discharge the duties of the office of according to the best of my ability."

And no other oath, declaration, or test shall be required as a qualification for any office or public trust.

Article XIII.

Section 1. Any amendment or amendments to this Constitution may be proposed in the Senate and Assembly; and if the same shall be agreed to by a majority of the members elected to each of the two houses, such proposed amendment or amendments shall be entered on their journals with the yeas and nays taken thereon, and referred to the Legislature to be chosen at the next general election of Senators, and shall be published for three months previous to the time of making such choice, and if in the Legislature so next chosen, aforesaid, such proposed amendment or amendments, shall be agreed to, by a majority, of all the members elected to each house, then it shall be the duty of the Legislature to submit such proposed amendment or amendments to the people, in such manner and at such time as the Legislature shall prescribe; and if the people shall approve and ratify such amendment or amendments, by a majority of the electors qualified to vote for members of the Legislature, voting thereon, such amendment or amendments shall become part of the constitution.

Section 2. At the general election to be held in the year eighteen hundred and sixty-six, and in each twentieth year thereafter, and also at such time as the Legislature may by law provide, the question, "Shall there be a Convention to revise the Constitution, and amend the same?" shall be decided by the electors qualified to vote for members of the Legislature; and in case a majority of the electors so qualified, voting at such election, shall decide in favor of a Convention for such purpose, the Legislature at its next session, shall provide by law for the election of delegates to such Convention.

Article XIV.

Section 1. The first election of Senators and Members of Assembly, pursuant to the provisions of this Constitution, shall be held on the Tuesday succeeding the first Monday of November, one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven.

The Senators and members of Assembly who may be in office on the first day of January, one thousand eight hundred and forty-

seven, shall hold their offices until and including the thirty-first day of December following, and no longer.

Section 2. The first election of Governor and Lieutenant-Governor under this Constitution, shall be held on the Tuesday succeeding the first Monday of November, one thousand eight hundred and forty-eight; and the Governor and Lieutenant-Governor in office when this Constitution shall take effect, shall hold their respective offices until and including the thirty-first day of December of that year.

Section 3. The Secretary of State, Comptroller, Treasurer, Attorney General, District Attorney, Surveyor General, Canal Commissioners, and inspectors of State Prisons in office when this Constitution shall take effect, shall hold their respective offices until and including the thirty-first day of December, one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven and no longer.

Section 4. The first election of judges and clerk of the Court of Appeals, justices of the Supreme Court, and county judges, shall take place at such time between the first Tuesday of April and the second Tuesday of June, one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven, as may be prescribed by law. The said courts shall respectively enter upon their duties, on the first Monday of July, next thereafter; but the term of office of said judges, clerk and justices as declared by this Constitution, shall be deemed to commence on the first day of January, one thousand eight hundred and forty-eight.

Section 5. On the first Monday of July, one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven, jurisdiction of all suits and proceedings then pending in the present supreme court and court of chancery, and all suits and proceedings originally commenced and then pending in any court of common pleas, (except in the city and county of New York), shall become vested in the supreme court hereby established. Proceedings pending in courts of common pleas and in suits originally commenced in justices courts, shall be transferred to the county courts provided for in this Constitution, in such manner and form and under such regulation as shall be provided by law. The courts of oyer and terminer hereby established shall, in their respective counties, have jurisdiction, on and after the day last mentioned, of all indictments and proceedings then pending in the present courts of oyer and terminer, and also of all indictments and proceedings then pending in the present courts of general sessions of the peace, except in the city of New York, and except in cases of which the courts of sessions hereby established may lawfully take cognisance; and of such indictments and proceedings as the courts of sessions hereby established shall have jurisdiction on and after the day last mentioned.

Section 6. The chancellor and the present supreme court shall, respectively, have power to hear and determine any of such suits and proceedings ready on the first Monday of July, one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven, for hearing or decision, and shall, for their services therein, be entitled to their present rates of compensation until the first day of July, one thousand eight hundred and forty-eight, or until all such suits and proceedings shall be sooner heard and determined. Masters in chancery may continue to exercise the functions of their office in the court of chancery, so long as the Chancellor shall continue to exercise the functions of his office

under the provisions of this Constitution.

And the Supreme Court hereby established, shall also have power to hear and determine such of said suits and proceedings as may be prescribed by law.

Section 7. In case any vacancy shall occur in the office of chancellor or justice of the present Supreme Court, previously to the first day of July, one thousand eight hundred and forty-eight the Governor may nominate, and by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, appoint a proper person to fill such vacancy. Any judge of the Court of Appeals or justice of the Supreme Court, elected under this Constitution, may receive and hold such appointment.

Section 8. The offices of chancellor, justice of the existing supreme court, circuit judge, vice-chancellor, assistant vice-chancellor, judge of the existing county courts of each county, supreme court commissioner, master in chancery, examiner in chancery, and surrogate, (except as herein otherwise provided,) are abolished from and after the first Monday of July, one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven, (1847.)

Section 9. The Chancellor, the justices of the present Supreme Court, and the circuit judges, are hereby declared to be severally eligible to any office at the first election under this Constitution.

Section 10. Sheriffs, clerks of counties, (including the register and clerk of the city and county of New York) and justices of the peace, and coroners, in office, when this Constitution shall take effect, shall hold their respective offices until the expiration of the term for which they were respectively elected.

Section 11. Judicial officers in office when this Constitution shall take effect, may continue to receive such fees and perquisites of office as are now authorized by law, until the first day of July, one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven, notwithstanding the provisions of the twentieth section of the sixth article of this Constitution.

Section 12. All local courts established in any city or village, including the Superior Court, Common Pleas, Sessions and Surrogate's Courts of the city and County of New York shall remain, until otherwise directed by the Legislature, with their present powers and jurisdictions; and the judges of such courts and any clerks thereof in office on the first day of January one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven, shall continue in office until the expiration of their terms of office, or until the Legislature shall otherwise direct.

Section 13. This Constitution shall be in force from and including the first day of January, one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven, except as is herein otherwise provided.

DONE, In Convention, at the Capitol, in the City of Albany, the ninth day of October in the year one thousand eight hundred and forty-six, and of the Independence of the United States of America the seventy-first.

In witness whereof, we have hereunto subscribed our names.

JOHN TRACY, President,
And Delegate from the County of Chenango.

JAMES F. STARBUCK,
H. W. STRONG,
FR. SEGER,
} *Secretaries.**

* With a view to present an exact copy of the above document, its style of expression, even to the punctuation, has been strictly copied; although the system does not coincide with that of the body of our work.

THE END.

VALUABLE SCHOOL CLASSICS

RECENTLY PUBLISHED BY

HARPER AND BROTHERS, NEW YORK.

ECLECTIC MORAL PHILOSOPHY.
By Rev. J. R. BOYD, A.M. 12mo, $1 00.

ELEMENTS OF RHETORIC AND LITERARY CRITICISM.
On the Basis of the recent Works of Reid and Connell: with other Additions By J. R. BOYD, A.M. 18mo, half bound, 50 cents.

LETTERS ON ASTRONOMY.
By DENISON OLMSTED, LL.D. 12mo, 75 cents.

THE USEFUL ARTS,
Considered in connection with the Application of Science. By J. BIGELOW, M.D 2 vols. 12mo, $1 50.

LOOMIS'S TREATISE ON ALGEBRA.
8vo, Sheep, $1 25.

CLARK'S ELEMENTS OF ALGEBRA.
8vo, Sheep extra, $1 00.

HACKLEY'S TREATISE ON ALGEBRA.
Containing the latest improvements. 8vo, Sheep extra, $1 50.

PROF. SALKELD'S FIRST BOOK IN SPANISH. (In press.)

PROF. SALKELD'S CLASSICAL ANTIQUITIES.
1 vol. 12mo, 37½ cents.

M'CLINTOCK AND CROOKS'S FIRST BOOK IN LATIN.
12mo, Sheep extra, 75 cents.

TREATISE ON ORGANIC CHEMISTRY.
By JOHN WILLIAM DRAPER, M.D. Engravings. 4to, Muslin gilt, $2 50.

TEXT-BOOK ON CHEMISTRY.
By JOHN W. DRAPER, M.D. Nearly 300 Engravings. 12mo, Sheep, 75 cents

KANE'S ELEMENTS OF CHEMISTRY.
Edited by JOHN W. DRAPER, M.D. 250 Plates. 8vo, Muslin, $2 00.

FIRST PRINCIPLES OF NATURAL PHILOSOPHY.
By JAMES RENWICK, LL.D. Engravings. 18mo, 75 cents.

FIRST PRINCIPLES OF CHEMISTRY.
By JAMES RENWICK, LL.D. Engravings. 18mo, 75 cents.

PRACTICAL MECHANICS.
By JAMES RENWICK, LL.D. Engravings. 18mo, half Sheep, 90 cents.

LOGIC, RATIOCINATIVE AND INDUCTIVE.
By J. STUART MILL. 8vo, Muslin gilt, $2 00.

AIDS TO ENGLISH COMPOSITION.
By RICHARD GREEN PARKER, A.M. 18mo, Muslin, 80 cents; Sheep extra, 90 cts

NEW PICTORIAL SCHOOL GEOGRAPHY.
By SIDNEY E. MORSE, A.M. Embellished by nearly One Hundred and Fifty Engravings, and about Fifty Cerographic Maps, in Colors. Price 50 cents.

PLATO AGAINST THE ATHEISTS.
By TAYLER LEWIS, LL.D. 12mo, Muslin gilt, $1 50.

THE PRACTICAL ASTRONOMER.
By THOMAS DICK, LL.D. Illustrated with One Hundred Engravings. 12mo Muslin gilt, 50 cents.

ELEMENTS OF MORALITY,
including Polity. By WILLIAM WHEWELL, D.D. 2 vols. 12mo, Muslin gilt, $1 00.

THE CAPTIVES, A COMEDY OF PLAUTUS.
With English Notes, for the Use of Students. By JOHN PROUDFIT, D.D. 18mo, 37½ cents.

A CLASSICAL DICTIONARY.
By CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. Royal 8vo, Sheep, $4 75.

A DICTIONARY OF GREEK AND ROMAN ANTIQUITIES.
Edited by W. SMITH, Ph.D. First American edition, corrected and enlarged by CHARLES ANTHON, LL D. 8vo, Sheep, $4 75.

DICTIONARY OF ANTIQUITIES, ABRIDGED.
With Corrections and Improvements, by CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. 12mo, half Sheep, $1 25.

NEW GREEK AND ENGLISH LEXICON.
By HENRY DRISLER, A.M., under the Supervision of Prof. Anthon. 8vo, $5 00.

A GRAMMAR OF THE LATIN LANGUAGE.
By C. G. ZUMPT, Ph.D. Corrected and enlarged by CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. 12mo, Sheep extra, 90 cents.

THE ECLOGUES AND GEORGICS OF VIRGIL.
With English Notes, critical and explanatory. By CHARLES ANTHON, LL D 12mo, Sheep extra, $1 50.

THE ANABASIS OF XENOPHON.
With English Notes, critical and explanatory. By CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. 12mo, Sheep extra. (In press.)

GREEK READER.
Principally from Jacobs. Edited by CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. 12mo, Sheep extra, $1 75.

CÆSAR'S COMMENTARIES ON THE GALLIC WAR.
Edited by CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. Map, Portrait, &c. 12mo, Sheep extra, $1 40.

SYSTEM OF LATIN VERSIFICATION.
By CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. 12mo, Sheep extra, 90 cents.

THE ÆNEID OF VIRGIL.
Edited by CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. Portrait and many Illustrations. 12mo, Sheep extra, $2 00.

THE WORKS OF HORACE.
Edited by CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. 12mo, Sheep extra, $1 75.

LATIN GRAMMAR, PART I.
By CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. 12mo, Sheep extra, 90 cents.

LATIN GRAMMAR, PART II.
By CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. 12mo, Sheep extra, 90 cents.

SYSTEM OF LATIN PROSODY AND METRE.
By CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D 12mo, Sheep extra, 90 cents.

SELECT ORATIONS OF CICERO.
Edited by CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. Portrait, 12mo, Sheep extra, $1 20

SALLUST'S JUGURTHINE WAR AND CONSPIRACY OF CATILINE. Edited by CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. 12mo, Sheep extra, 87½ cents

GREEK LESSONS, PART I.
By CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. 12mo, Sheep extra, 90 cents.

GREEK LESSONS, PART II.
By CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. 12mo, Sheep extra, 90 cents.

SYSTEM OF GREEK PROSODY AND METRE.
By CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. 12mo, Sheep extra, 90 cents.

HOMER'S ILIAD.
Edited by CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. 12mo, Sheep extra, $1 50

GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK LANGUAGE.
By CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. 12mo, Sheep extra, 90 cents.

NEW GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK LANGUAGE,
From the German of Kühner, Matthiæ, Buttmann, Rost, and Thiersch. By CHAS. ANTHON, LL.D. 12mo, Sheep extra, 90 cents.

FAMILY CLASSICAL LIBRARY,
Comprising Translations of the best Classics. 36 vols. 18mo, Muslin gilt, 45 cents each.

ELEMENTS OF MENTAL PHILOSOPHY.
By Professor THOMAS C. UPHAM. 2 vols. 12mo, Sheep extra, $2 50.

The same Work abridged. 12mo, Sheep extra, $1 25.

A PHILOSOPHICAL AND PRACTICAL TREATISE ON THE WILL. By Professor THOMAS C. UPHAM. 12mo, Sheep extra, $1 25.

J 928

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS
0 014 114 809 6